

I JANUARY - FEBRUARY
MARCH - APRIL
2003

Euro 2,10



RIVISTA MILITARE

JOURNAL OF THE ITALIAN ARMY FOUNDED IN 1856

WOMEN ARE PROTAGONISTS IN THE MODERN ARMY

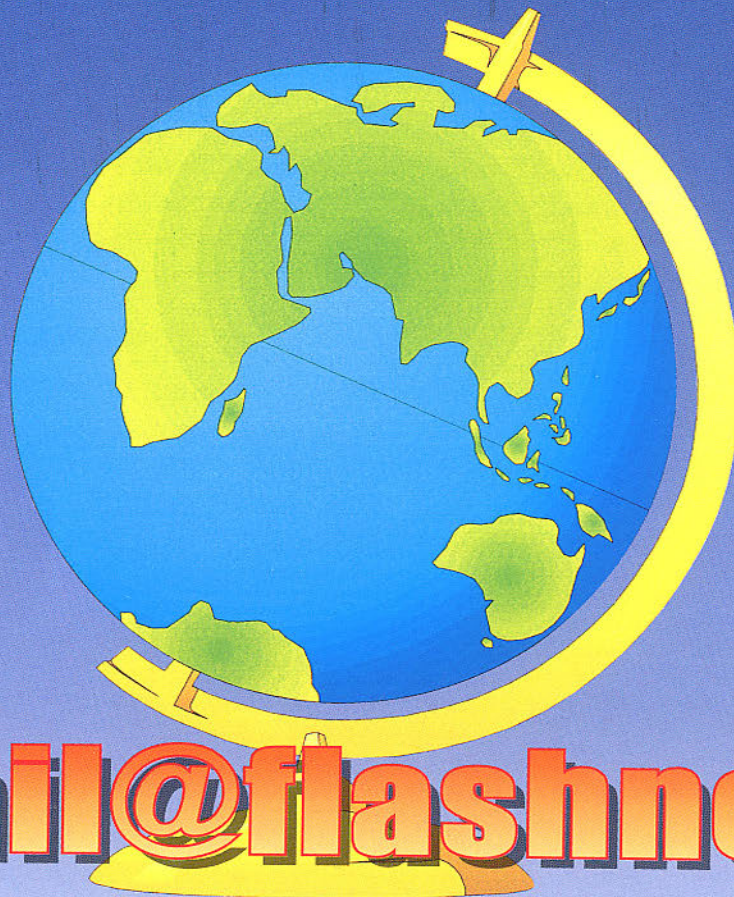
REFLECTIONS OF THE
ARMY CHIEF OF STAFF

THE NATO HQ
AT SOLBIATE OLONA IS
NOW A SPLENDID REALITY

THE MALAISE OF AFRICA

ENGLISH EDITION





riv.mil@flashnet.it

...is the e-mail address of

RIVISTA MILITARE



REFLECTIONS OF THE ARMY CHIEF OF STAFF

The first number of "Rivista Militare" of 2003 gives me the opportunity of sharing some reflections with the readers of this prestigious publication, in particular with Cadres, Soldiers and civilian Personnel, both on active duty and retired.

The year just concluded was characterized by a very important step forward for the Italian Army. In fact, with the validation of the Corps Command established at Solbiate Olona (NATO Rapid Deployable Corps – NRDC-IT) our Service, and therefore the whole Defence system, can have at last at its disposal a modern Command- and Control instrument, a decisive value added within the framework of the evolution of the national policy of defence and security.

The attainment of this very important objective, on which we have worked incessantly for three years, makes me very proud and everybody should feel the same. On the other hand, this result should not be seen as a goal, but rather as the beginning of a profitable road, along which the Italian Army will be more and more integrated in the alliances to which it belongs and, from now on, ready to assume the role of leader in multinational operations, and not only that of contributor of forces.

Naturally, I do not want to expound here the details of the NRDC-IT project; on the contrary my intention is, starting from a concrete and modern element, to make some remarks that could be useful also for non-expert readers, in order to better inform them about our organization and our Institution: the Army.

Probably not many know that the NRDC structure is based on a national "framework", completed with significant contributions of personnel from friendly and allied Nations, which give the Command its multinational characteristic. This is an element of strength which underlines the will and resolve with which the process of international integration is increasingly asserting itself also within the military.

This implies continuous contacts with men and women from other armies, as well as the opportunity of learning from others, and leads to the consideration that the differences existing in this type of Command are a wealth rather than a limitation or a difficulty.

The particular nature of the Solbiate Olona Command underlines the specific need for a constant and updated professional training, going from the linguistic to the doctrinal and procedural sectors, obviously subtending essential cultural values. In view of this, great efforts have been made in order to qualify the personnel, both for the Italian-led NRDC and for the equivalent Commands being constituted by other Nations, and very satisfactory results have been achieved. Nevertheless, we must abandon the logic of the "momentary solutions" and enter decidedly into the logic of "prevision of the needs". In other words, first we must, firmly and resolutely, continue to follow the road leading to the anticipated determination of the Service's needs, rather than running after them, and secondly plan and programme in good time, with an eye to the future, getting organized for the attainment of the objectives, pursuing them with resolution and consistence.

This approach is even more necessary owing to the technological improvements occurring in society as a whole and, consequently, also within the various components of the Service: these improvements concern, an will concern, everybody, without exception. The "senior" generations, therefore, will have to overcome the resistance to changes, while the young, already naturally immersed in the new realities, will have to be the leading actors and announcers of this "technological" philosophy, which is going to be the real power multiplier for the armies of the future.

On the other hand, the continuous professional improvement should not be understood as an end in itself but will have to be oriented towards the achievement of higher and higher levels of real operational capability: this is what the Country expects of its Armed Forces, and we must direct all our efforts towards this goal.

Obviously, this implies an adequate financial obligation in the training sector as well as in the field of equipment, weapon systems and infrastructure, but it mainly requires full awareness of the "crucial challenges" of tomorrow; if we do not win those, any ambition will be vain. Thus, in connection with the end of conscription, we must recruit quantitatively and qualitatively adequate professional soldiers and decidedly improve the standard of life of our personnel.

Therefore: professionalism, real operational capabilities, financial resources, volunteers and quality of life. These are five aspects of a single problem, interconnected in different ways and degrees but, actually, all of them deal with personnel of every class, order or rank.

These personnel must certainly find in their ideal values – courage, spirit of sacrifice, honour, patriotism, selfishness – the strength necessary to take up a profession characterized by constitutional obligations and exacting engagements. But our soldiers, in order to give their best, must see that those five aspects are considered and resolved according to a farsighted project, capable of consolidating what has been achieved so far, paving the way for a better future, meeting the expectations of a modern Country, which holds an important position in the international arena.

All this is well known in the Institutional environment, and efforts in this direction are under way, in order to start, already in the coming months, an adequate process leading to the solution of the most pressing problems. In this regard, our Service has made the requested contributions and will continue to pursue the positive outcome of the initiatives under way at various levels.

What I really want to stress here is that the Army is well aware of the fact that any future project cannot but continue to be centred on the human being, which is the weapon system par excellence, a real "producer of security".

Therefore he – or she – must be given top priority: any other investment would be senseless if, first of all, we did not meet the requirements of men who are, at the same time, objects and bearers of changes and improvements. Therefore, this is the component to which our best energies must be addressed. The crisis situations which occurred in the world during the last decade confirmed that the great strategies, the increasingly complex operations and the emerging capabilities end up by having their synthesis in the Army soldier who, by being the bearer of values, professionalism and experience, is the authentic decisive element. All the other elements concur in the operation, but success – or defeat – are determined by the Army soldier, with his presence and his capability of conquering and keeping the land.

This is the message with which I would like the Italian Army to start working in 2003. The multinational dimension, the more and more advanced armaments and materials, the achievements at home and abroad should not make us forget our main concern, i.e. the care of the real professional man resulting from a harmonic three-dimensional development: to know, to be able to do, to exist, supported by the high quality of the human resources provided by the Nation and helped by a public opinion which seems to know and progressively appreciate its Armed Forces.

The Italian Army will proceed along this road: we are certain it is the right one. But, if it is true that the individual growth brings about the growth of the whole organization, we should not forget that we all must contribute to the achievement of the objective.

We should not believe that our small gestures and our daily engagements are insignificant or imperceptible within the general perception, because any thing we neglect, any idea we do not give, any improvement we do not propose because "nobody listens to us anyway", is a missed opportunity to bring the real model closer to the ideal one and to make the organization to which we belong "our" organization, at the unconditional service of the Nation.

We have an enormous potential, which usually emerges fully in contingent and exceptional situations, such as operations, natural disasters etc., probably because in those moments each of us forgets his own very human and understandable egoism in order to give something more, something that can change a mediocre organization into a successful structure. Now I ask everybody to do his best to make our action permanently characterized by this generosity, for which we are a cut above, not only as Soldiers but as People as well.

The over 6000 Army men and women engaged outside the national territory, from the Balkans to Lebanon and Afghanistan, are setting a good example for us, together with the thousands of soldiers who, inside the Country, give their contribution in fighting against terrorism and safeguarding human lives, as is the case with the populations of Molise and Sicily, severely hit by natural disasters. They represent all of us with full honour, at home and abroad; we are proud of them and send them our affectionate greetings to which I am sure I can add the warm embrace of all our compatriots.

Good work to all!

Lieutenant General Gianfranco Ottogalli



CONTENTS



Number One 2003

January - February

March - April

Rivista Militare aims at broadening and updating the technical and vocational training of Officers and NCOs. It is thus a means of propagating the military way of thinking and a forum of study and debate. Through the publication of articles of technical and scientific interest, Rivista Militare also aims at informing the general public on the Army and on military issues.

I Reflections of the Army Chief of Staff

Politics, Economics and Strategy

2 The NATO HQ at Solbiate Olona is Now a Spendid Reality

(Roberto Speciale)

14 On Both Sides of the Dividing Lines

(Fabio Mini)

32 The Malaise of Africa

(Maurizio Coccia)

44 The Wise Adaptability of the Atlantic Alliance

(Giuseppe Cucchi)

54 Wind of Change from Eastern Europe Exclusive Interview with Colonel General Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev, Army Commander-in-Chief and Deputy Defence Minister of the Russian Federation

(Enrico Magnani)

76 Towards a Common European Identity Interview with Brigadier Rupert C. Montanaro, Commander of the Armed Forces of Malta

(Enrico Magnani)

86 The FINABEL Committee (Tasks, structure, organization)

(Giangiacomo Calligaris)

Sociology

92 Women Enrich the Army

(Isabella Lo Castro)

History

98 The Enigma of the Fox

(Nicola Pignato)

108 The Legionary Medical Service

(Gerardo Restaino)

119 Sommaire - Inhalt - Resumen



Instructions for Contributors: Anyone may contribute. To guarantee the highest objectivity of information, Rivista Militare leaves contributors ample freedom, though it does not necessarily share their opinions. The Author is thus solely responsible for the articles which, published unedited and without editorial ties, exclusively reflect his personal ideas. Articles must be original in thought and should not exceed ten typewritten pages. Once the Author receives his fee, he loses all exclusive rights. Rivista Militare may then pass the article on to other publications and EMPA (European Military Press Association) periodicals. Articles should be accompanied by suitable photographs, illustrations, explanatory tables, together with a photograph of the Author, a brief «curriculum vitae» and a ten-line typewritten summary. Rivista Militare reserves the right to change the title of articles and choose the typeface deemed most suitable. Rivista Militare is equipped with a computerized system for phototypesetting and videopaging. In order to make the production of the articles more expeditious, it is desirable that the Authors provide, besides the text on paper, also the diskette with the text files of the article. Any system and type of computer can be used.

The Italian engagement in Afghanistan emphasizes the value and bravery of the "Alpini". Also these mountain troops have female personnel in their ranks, and they are well-prepared and extremely motivated. As in the whole of society, the women of today are protagonists in the modern professional Army.

FOUR-MONTHLY

Supplement to numbers 1 and 2 of Rivista Militare Italian Edition

Editor in Chief:

Giseppe Maria Giovanni
TRICARICO

Management and Editorial Office

8, Via di S. Marco

00186 Rome

Phone 0039 0647357373

Advertising

Care of the Secretariat

of Rivista Militare

Phone 0039 066795027

Printer

Stilgrafica

31, Via Ignazio Pettinengo,

00100 Rome

Photoprocessing

Studio Lodoli

Phone 0039 065898780

Subscription and forwarding

By mail

Taxe perçue - Tax collected

Conditions for 2003:

One number: Euro 2,10

One back number: Euro 4,20

Subscription rates

Italy: Euro 11,40 a year

Abroad: Euro 15,50 a year

Payment must be made on postal

account No. 22521009 - SME

Centro pubblicitaria dell'Esercito

123/A, Via XX Settembre - Rome

Residents abroad may remit

payment through bank cheque or

international postal order

Authorized by the Court of Rome

under No. 944 of the Registry by

Decree 7-6-1949

2003

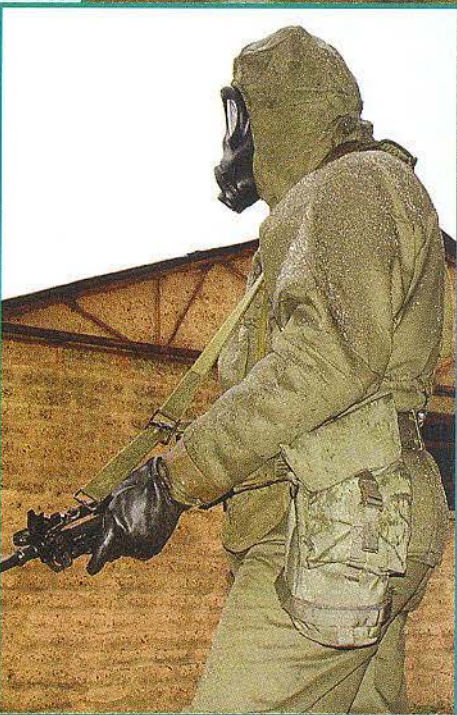
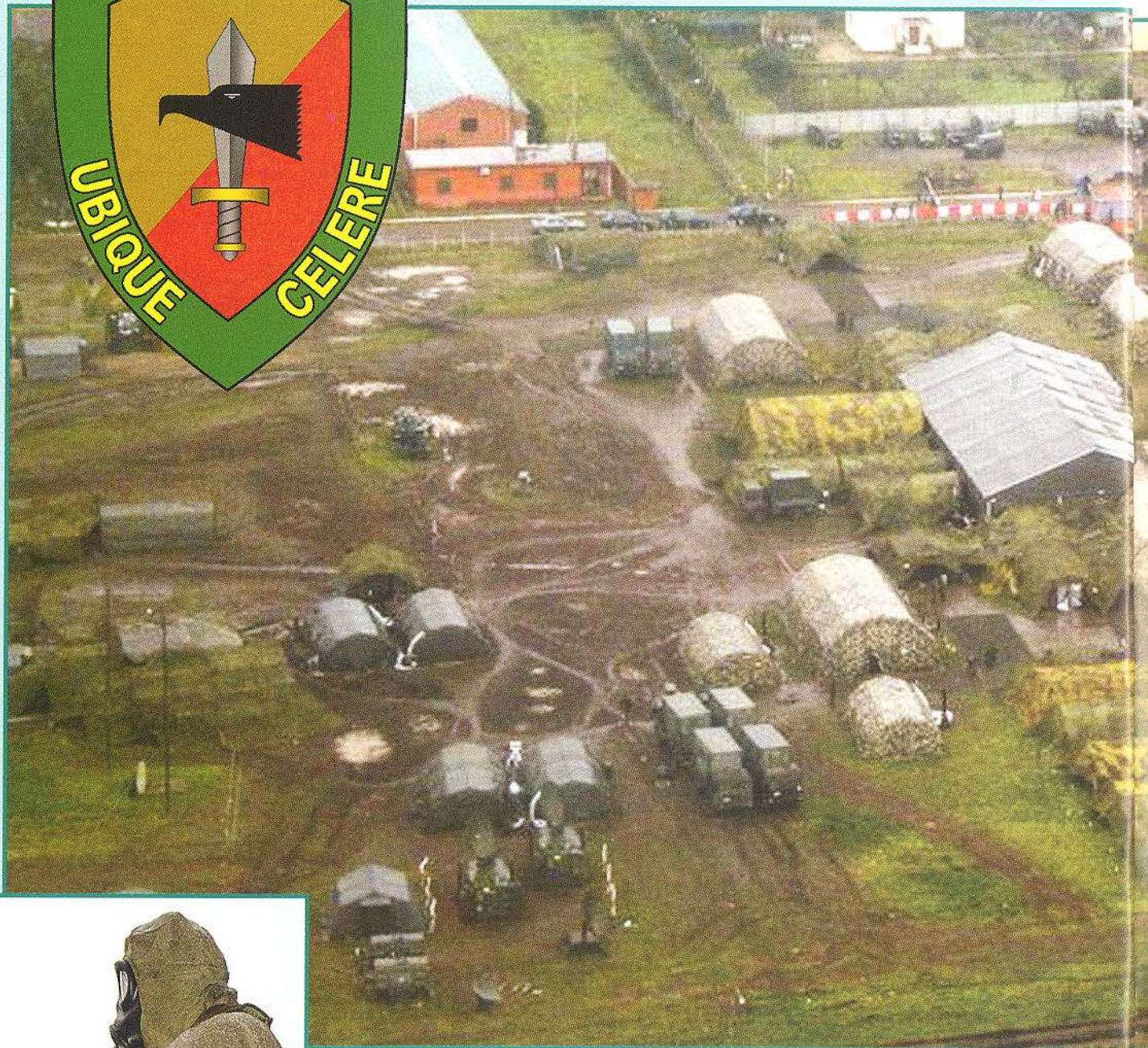
© Copyright by

Rivista Militare



ASSOCIATED TO USPI
UNIONE STAMPA
PERIODICA ITALIANA

The production of this magazine
has been supervised
by Omero Rampa



The realization of what appeared as an ambitious project is another important goal achieved by our Country and , in particular, by the Defence Administration. Credit must be given to the political and military management of our Defence and, above all, to the constant and persevering efforts lavished by the Army for the timely achievement of the full operational capability of its Corps for NATO, to the extraordinary motivation of everyone and, last but not least, to the excellent professional and spiritual qualities of our men and women in uniform. The most precious resource of the Italian Army of today.

The Italian-led Major unit has recently achieved its full operational capability, after a long series of extremely selective evaluations

THE NATO HQ AT SOLBIATE OLONA IS NOW A SPLENDID REALITY

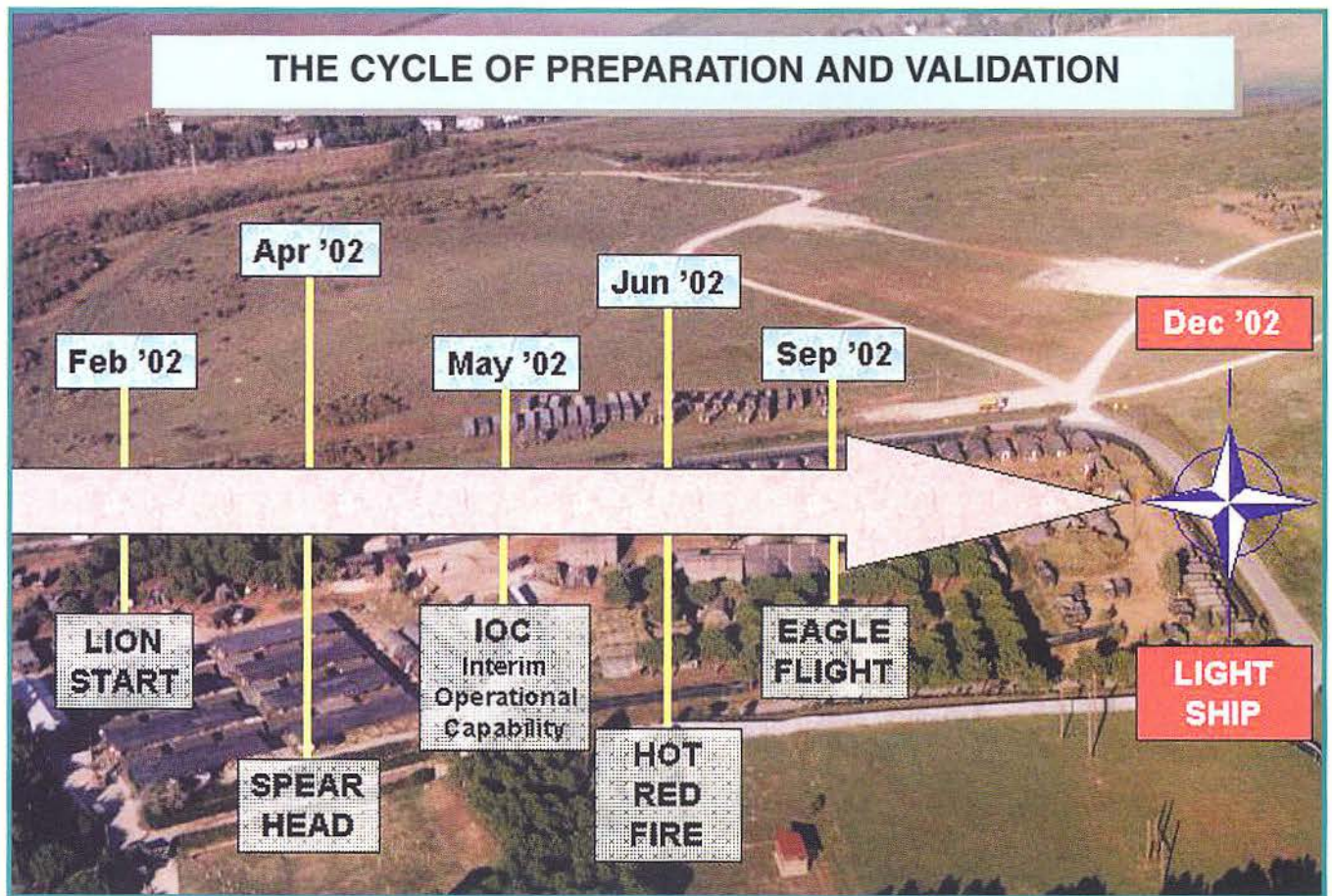
*A FUNDAMENTAL STEP TOWARDS
A FULLY PROFESSIONAL ARMY,
THE NEW HEADQUARTERS WILL
ALSO BE THE SERVICE'S TRAINING
MODEL FOR THE PROJECTABLE
DIVISIONS AND BRIGADES OF THE
FUTURE*

by Roberto Speciale *



On December 12, 2002 the Italian-led "NATO Rapid Deployable Corps - IT HQ", located at Solbiate Olona, was attributed its Full Operational Capability. The evaluation, conducted by a specialized team from SHAPE, was passed with extremely positive results.

This success was the outcome of the concerted effort of all the Army components, which for the last two years have been working towards this prestigious goal. The considerable capabilities acquired by the Headquarters give a substantial contribution to the process of



renewal of the structures of the Alliance and open new prospects for the whole Italian land instrument.

At this point, it seems appropriate to go over the steps which led to the establishment of this new NATO Command and its full operational capability, pointing out the basic components and outlining its possible future development lines.

ORIGINS OF THE PROJECT

The constitution in Italy of a High-Readiness Projectable Multinational Headquarters, dedicated to NATO, shows the national will to concretely contribute to the "NATO Force Structure Review". In particular, the project of establishing high-readiness, projectable Headquarters derived from the need to provide the Alliance with an instrument capable of

facing the threats to the security and stability of the member Nations, as defined at the NATO Summit held in Washington in April 1999.

These HQs will have to allow NATO to carry out both classic operations for collective defence (contemplated by art. 5 of the Treaty) and operations directed to the management of interventions included in the category of Crisis Response Operations (CRO). On the whole, managing units of multinational forces of variable size, up to a maximum of approximately 60,000 men and for long periods, activating a rotation cycle among the HQs made available.

In addition to the Italian project, 5 more "High-Readiness Force (Land) Headquarters (HRF (L) HQ) projects have been submitted. They are all politically and operationally very valuable: ACE Rapid Reaction Corps (ARRC) located

After numerous and intense training activities, the personnel at Solbiate Olona is ready for every type of operation, from traditional ones to PSO.

at Rheindalen, Germany, with UK as leader Nation and the participation of other 15 Allied Nations, Italy among them; German/Dutch Army Corps, located in Muenster, Germany, with Germany and Holland as leading Nations; Eurocorps in Strasbourg, France, with Belgium France, Germany, Luxembourg and Spain as leader Nations; 3rd Turkish Corps (Istanbul), with Turkey as leader Nation; High-Readiness Corps in Valencia, Spain, with Spain as leader Nation.

Furthermore Greece, together with a three-national organization constituted by Denmark, Germany and Poland, offered to realize a joint "Force of Lower

The new NATO HQ is characterized by a marked multinationality.

Readiness" (FLR) HQ, resulting from the reconfiguration of the present Corps HQ located in Thessaloniki, Greece (C Corps) and the Multinational Corps Northeast (MNC NE) located in Stettin, Poland.

THE PREPARATION AND VALIDATION CYCLE

The preparation and validation cycle has been an extremely important passage in view of a possible successive employment in operations. The procedure of operational validation conducted by NATO referred to a series of military requirements (about 500). In order to meet them, it was necessary to develop real operational capabilities in every functional sector of the Headquarters, in particular projectability and mobility. In this prospect, the preparation of the NRDC-IT followed two directions. The first concerned essentially the individual training, with a remarkable effort in the sectors

of languages and NATO procedures. This phase was very active in 2001, but considering the normal rotation of personnel, the same situation will cyclically come up again.

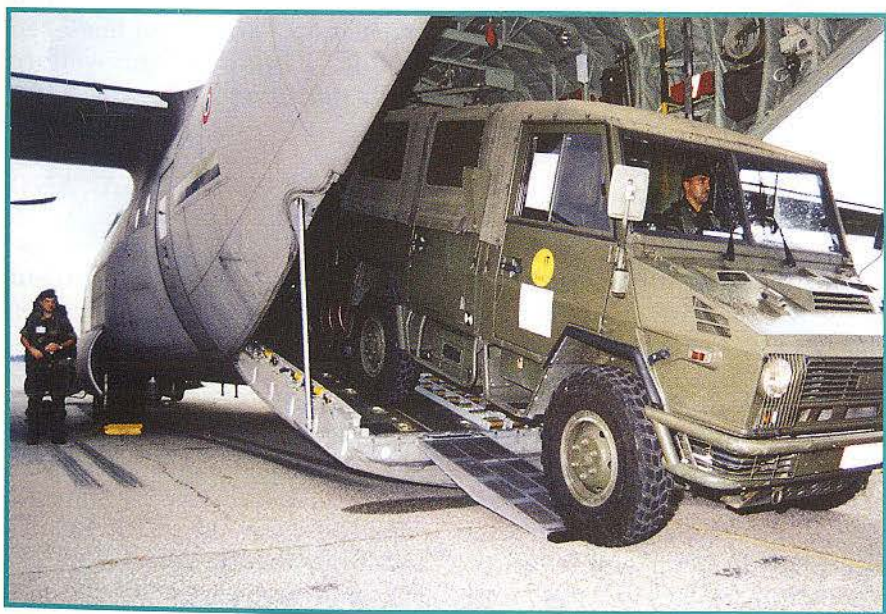
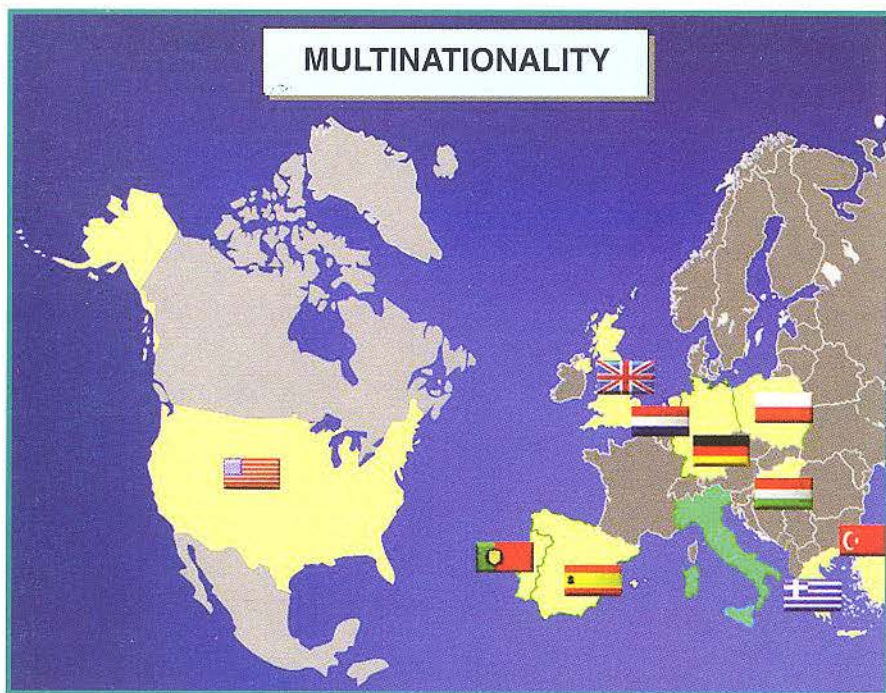
The second direction, developed in 2002, concerned activities not immediately connected with the training of the HQ and will continue at regular intervals, in order to maintain and improve the acquired capabilities.

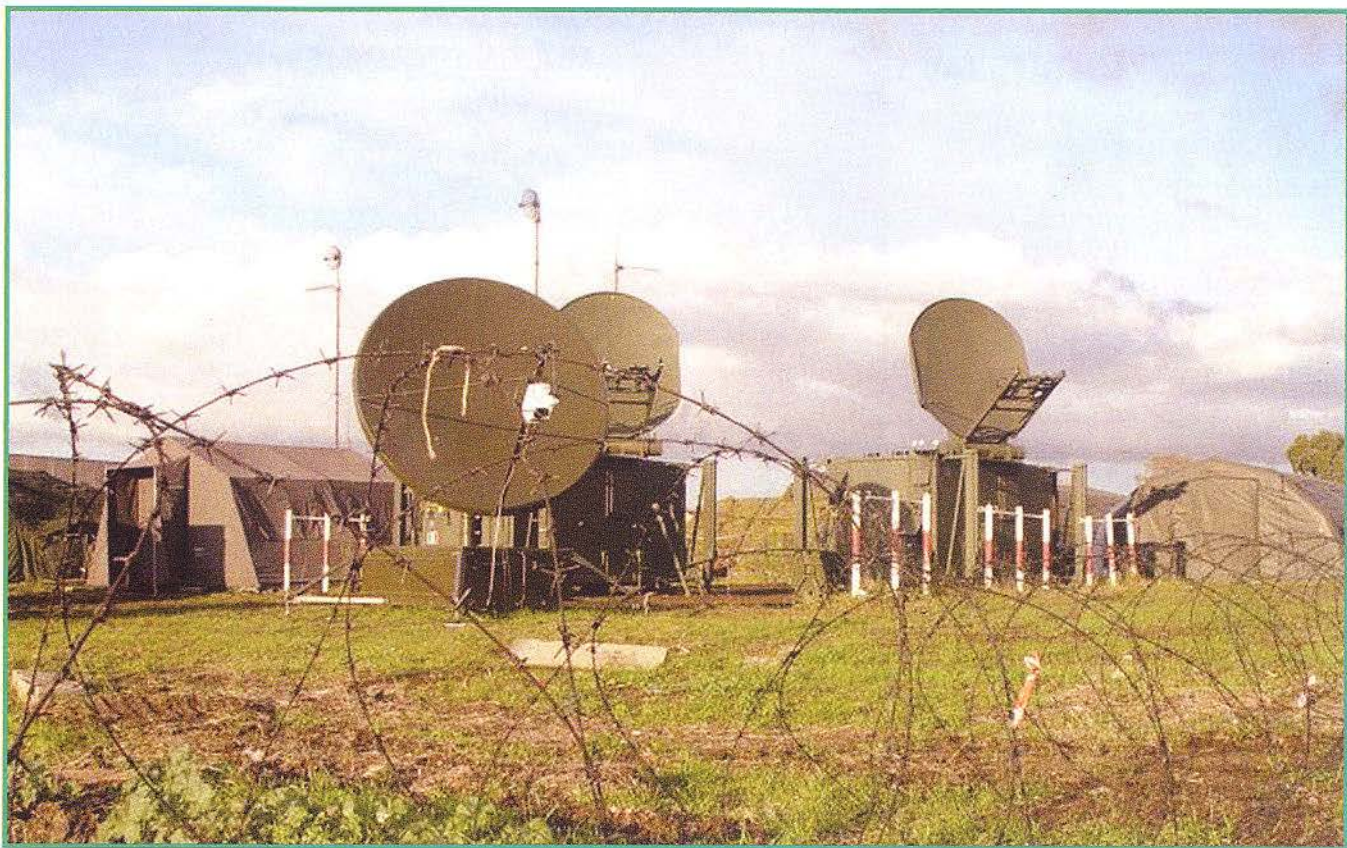
The preparation of the HQ involved numerous exercises,

with the employment of considerable human, material and financial resources. Among the most important ones, we can mention "Lion Start" (February 2002) and "Spear Head" (April 2002), two "Computer Assisted Exercises". "Spear Head" was conducted at the "Combat Preparation Centre" of the US Army in Ramstein, Germany, where our HQ trained in the application of NATO's "Standard Operating Procedures" (SOP) and in the employment in war-fighting and CRO situations. Furthermore "Hot Red Fire", a Command Post Exercise (CPX) was conducted in June 2002, followed, in September and October, by "Eagle Flight", a complex redeployment exercise in the Civitavecchia area, with the participation of more than 1400 men and 500 air, naval, railway and wheeled carriers, employed for the deployment of the Headquarters.

Successively, the SHAPE validation team, in order to certify

Extreme projectability is an indispensable prerequisite for all modern operational realities.





The modern Command and Control system is the nervous centre which permits to receive, transmit and use all available data.

the achievement of the "Full Operational Capability", subjected the NRDC-IT to a final evaluation which coincided with a multinational exercise, "Lightship 2002", which was carried out in the Civitavecchia/Monte Romano area from 7 to 13 December 2002, with the participation of more than 3000 officers and NCOs (staff personnel included) from the 10 allied Nations which had joined the Italian project (Germany, Greece, Holland, Hungary, Poland, Portugal, Spain, Turkey, the United Kingdom and the United States).

Already on September 23, 2000, before the FOC certification, the Solbiate Olona HQ had acquired the status of multinational Headquarters and moved under

SACEUR' Operational Command, with the denomination of NRDC-IT, following the signature of a specific Memorandum of Understanding (MOU). It should be noted that, according to the Command-and-Control Technical Arrangements (TA) between Italy and NATO, the HQ can be employed in European-led operations, subject to the authorization of the Alliance.

THE SELECTION OF SOLBIATE OLONA

The Rapid Deployable Corps has been constituted through the reconfiguration of the pre-existing Army Projection Forces HQ (FOP), formerly located in Milan.

The choice of the "Ugo Mara" Barracks at Solbiate Olona (Varese) was justified by a number of reasons: operational ones, in that the preexisting FOP-HQ had already been employed in Operation "Alba" in 1997, and

was an excellent and tested reference for the setting up of the project; geographical ones, because the area is provided with many airports, roads and railways and is also sufficiently close to ports, which could enhance its projectability; infrastructural reasons, since the garrison includes spaces for possible improvements and extension of the buildings used for the HQ and for the welfare of the personnel.

MULTINATIONALITY AND PERSONNEL

As we said the Italian-led project was joined by 10 allied Nations, with the contribution of 95 elements between Officers and NCOs, i.e. 25% of the HQ staff. The Peace Establishment (PE) consists of 402 members between Officers, NCOs and enlisted men, both nationals and from the 10 allied Nations. This number practically doubles

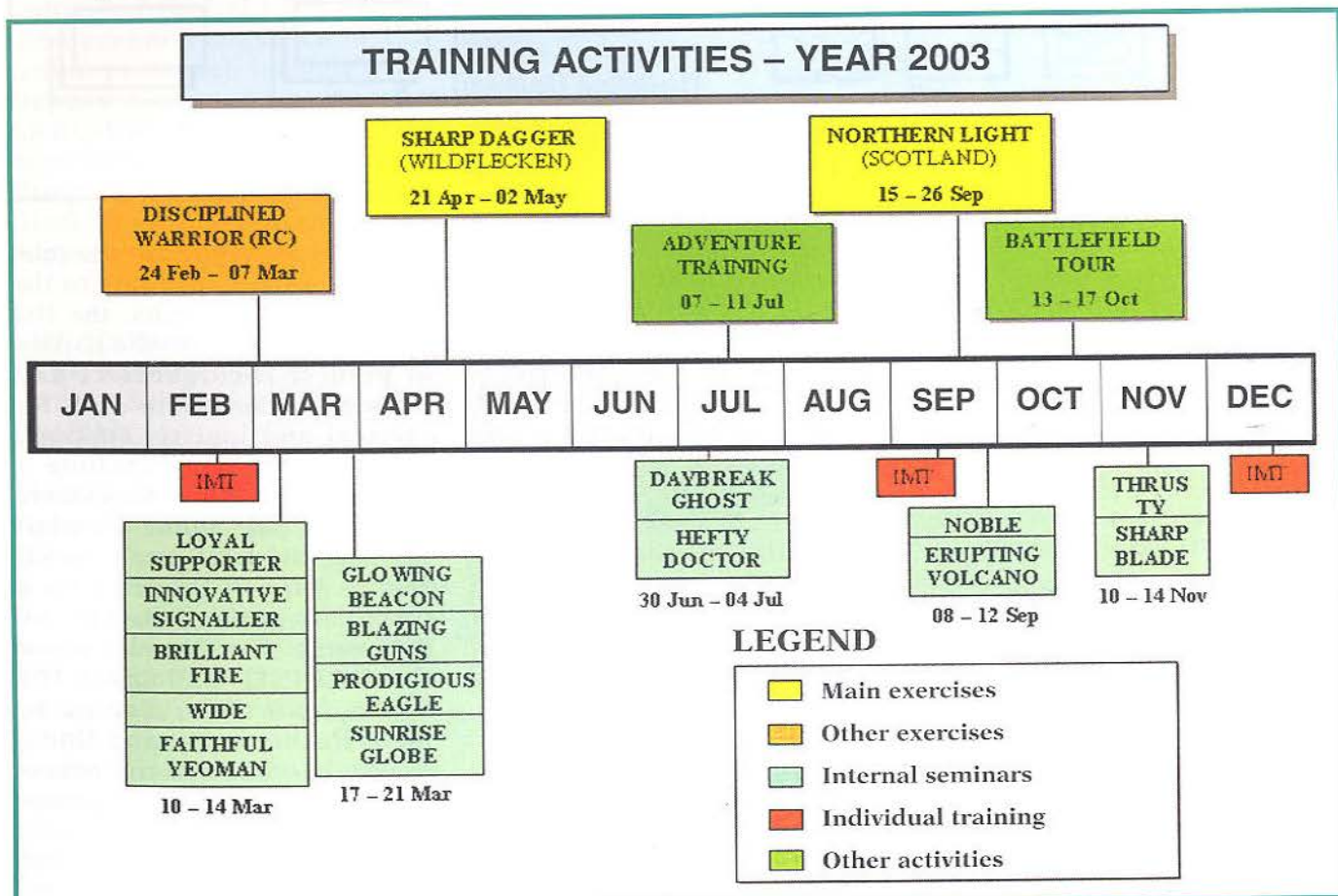
Aerial view of the "Ugo Mara" Barracks, home of the new Rapid Deployable Corps.

Other important activities will be carried out this year in preparation of different types of missions.

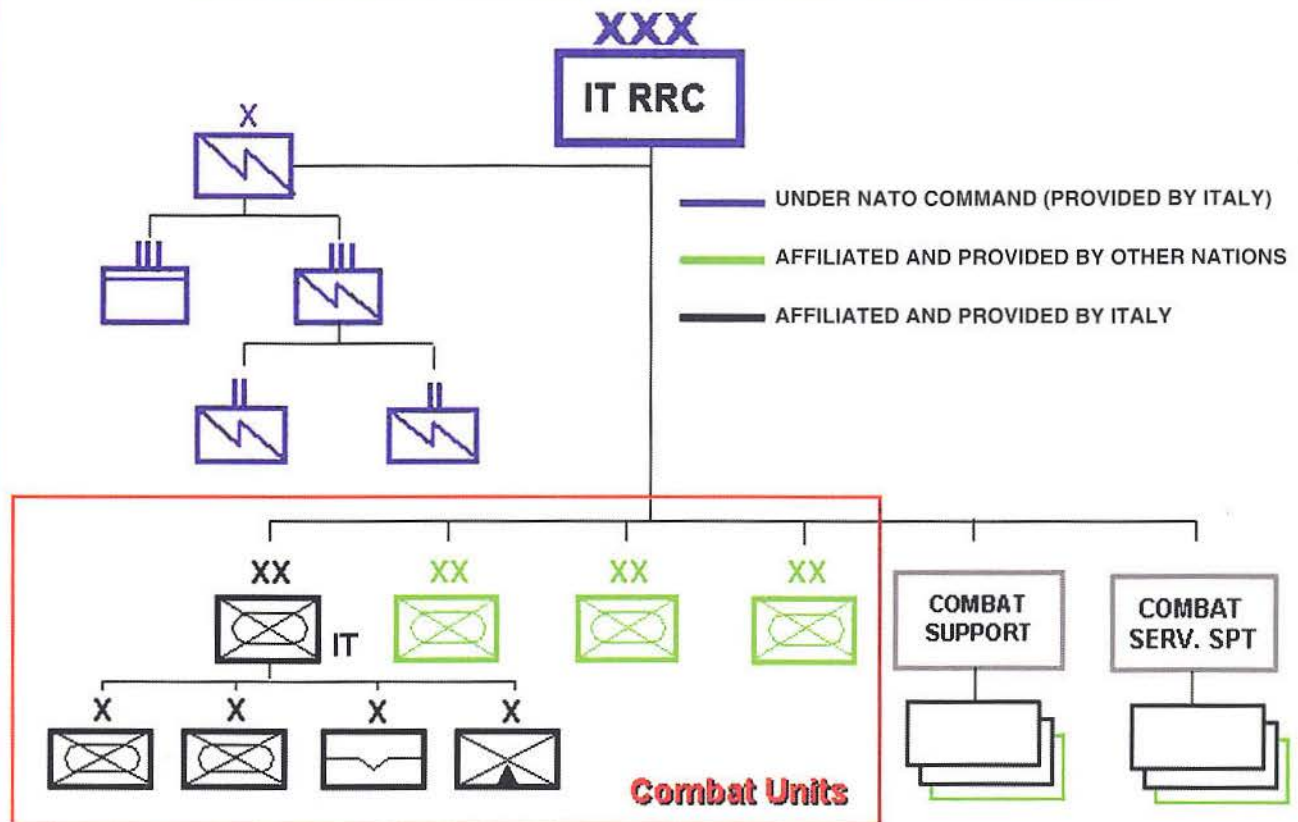
The contribution of multinational personnel to the NRDC-IT HQ is by far the highest among the newly established HRF (L) Headquarters with Italian, Spanish and Turkish framework. The presence of these personnel is regulated by the Memorandum of Understanding signed by the representatives of Italy, the 10 Nations and NATO. The MOU is based on the "Paris Protocol" (1), which covers the status of NATO personnel and Headquarters.

by the United Kingdom – 24 men, including the Deputy Commander, (a General), reciprocating the arrangement ex-

Likewise, Italian Officers and



STRUCTURE AND FORCES OF THE NRCD-IT HQ



A national support structure – a Signal Brigade – is permanently under NATO-OPCOM with its combat and support units.

NCOs have been assigned to the equivalent German, Dutch, Spanish, Turkish and Greek Headquarters, on a reciprocity basis, according to the contributions made to the Solbiate Olona HQ.

Besides the Multinational Staff (402 men) the HQ includes the Signal Brigade with its 1st Signal Regiment, stationed in Milan's "Santa Barbara" Barracks, the Support Regiment and the Headquarters Command, both

stationed in the "Ugo Mara" Barracks. This Major Unit provides the HQ with a real capability in communications, logistic support and in-garrison security, both in training and in operations. The Brigade HQ is also in charge of all strictly national activities concerning Italian personnel. As a whole, the NRDC-IT HQ and the Signal Brigade (also under NATO OPCOM) employ about 2400 Italian professional soldiers; 20 of them belong to the Navy, the Air Force and the Carabinieri.

AFFILIATED HEADQUARTERS AND UNITS

In case of operations and exer-

cises and as needed for the mission received, in addition to the abovementioned units, the HQ will have at its disposal a national pool of Headquarters and associated manoeuvre units for tactical and logistic support. This support may include 1 Division Hq, 4 or 5 Manoeuvre Brigades plus some Combat Support Brigades and Combat Service Support Brigades, for a total of approximately 40 Regiments. The Commander of the NRDC-IT will issue the appropriate instructions to these Headquarters and Units, in order to achieve the necessary standardization of procedures and training. The Italian Headquarters and units will be joined by the multi-

Right and below

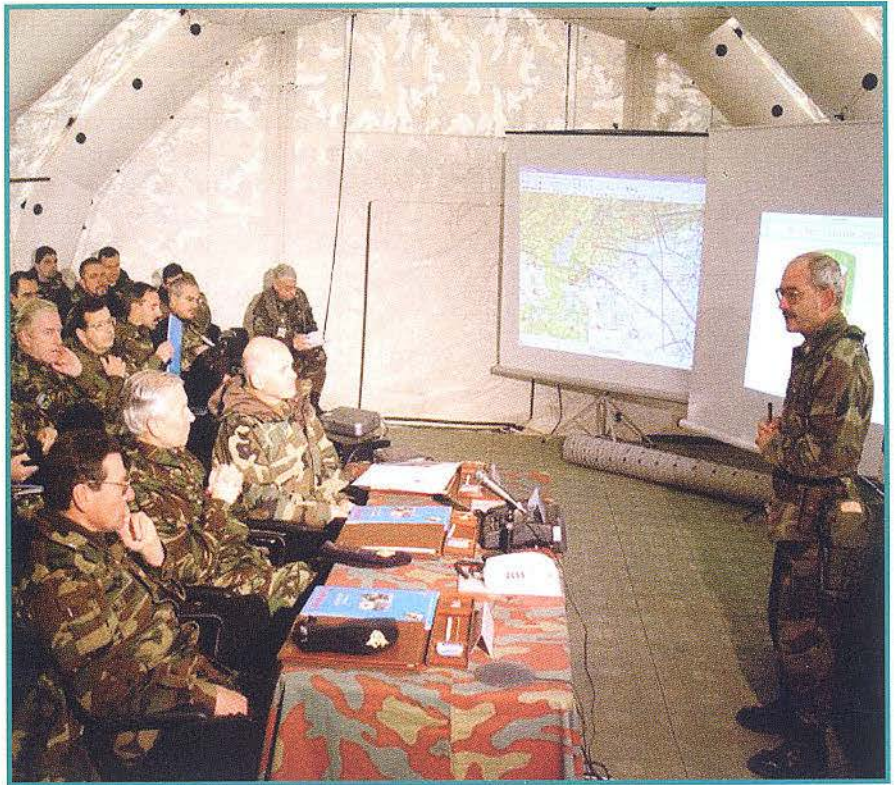
Exercise "Lightship 2002". The numerous training activities carried out by the Rapid Reaction HQ were unanimously praised by the highest Italian and international political and military authorities.

national ones made available by the contributing Nations in compliance with the so-called "affiliation" agreements, which establish a de-facto connection between those multinational units and the Solbiate Olona HQ, without having to go through their respective National Military Authorities.

In particular, it should be underlined the advanced state of such activities carried out together with the British Military Authorities and aimed at affiliating, for training purposes, one of their Divisions to the NRDC-IT. This is a token of the strong British support to the Italian-led HRF (L) HQ and of the decennial presence of the Italian personnel, including the Deputy Commander, in the ARRC-UK. Furthermore, the negotiations with Greece and Hungary for the affiliation of Divisions, Brigades and Supports are almost concluded.

THE "COMMUNICATION AND INFORMATION SYSTEM (CIS)" AND THE FIELD COMPONENT

The CIS system is one of the key elements of the whole project. Its full operational capability influences directly the Headquarters' capability to manage the subordinate units. The architecture of the Command, Control and Communications system is totally based on materials developed and produced nationally, subdivided into a field component and a garrison component. The field component ensures the



CIS support to the units in operations and the connections of the HQ to 4 Divisions and up to 20 tactical and logistic support units. Among the most significant systems, we can mention:

new-generation Command-Post containers; multi-channel satellite terminals that can operate with the Italian military system SICRAL and with commercial systems; a new version of the

national automated Command and Control system SIACCON 1/A, with a man/machine English-language interface, in line with the envisaged standard of international interoperability (MIP-ATCCIS) (2).

We must moreover underline the high potential of the "Integrated Command and Control" system (ICC) of the Headquarters' "Air Operation and Coordination Centre" (AOCC), the most advanced among those used by the equivalent HRF (L) Headquarters. (Only SHAPE has an identical one).

The garrison component at the "Ugo Mara" Barracks envisages the establishment of a System Centre for Communications and Information, to which the corresponding NATO and national systems will be linked, as well as the establishment of local computerized networks for the connections of the HQ Staff.

Finally, among the materials employed by the field component, we should point out the more than 60 shelters for various services and over 200 pneumatic pressurized tents, whose combined use by modules ensures a level of flexibility and mobility fully adequate to the different conditions of employment.

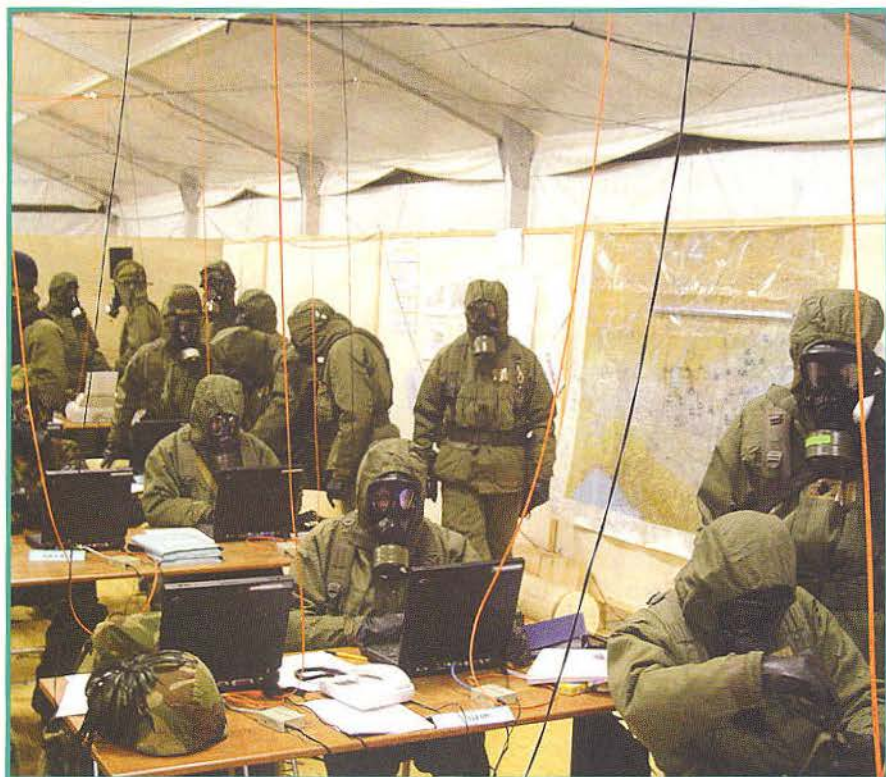
IMPROVEMENT AND ADAPTATION OF THE INFRA-STRUCTURE

The infrastructure aspect concerns directly the Headquarters' ability to be ready for employment in a suitable and adequate setting, considering the functionality and "quality of life" standards normally expected in NATO and multinational environments. Moreover, it is actually our "visiting card" for the allied personnel participating in the project, with a consequent great impact on the credibility

and visibility of our Country on the international scene.

In this connection, the infrastructural project consists of two segments. The first refers to the improvement and adaptation of the operational structures of the "Ugo Mara" Barracks.

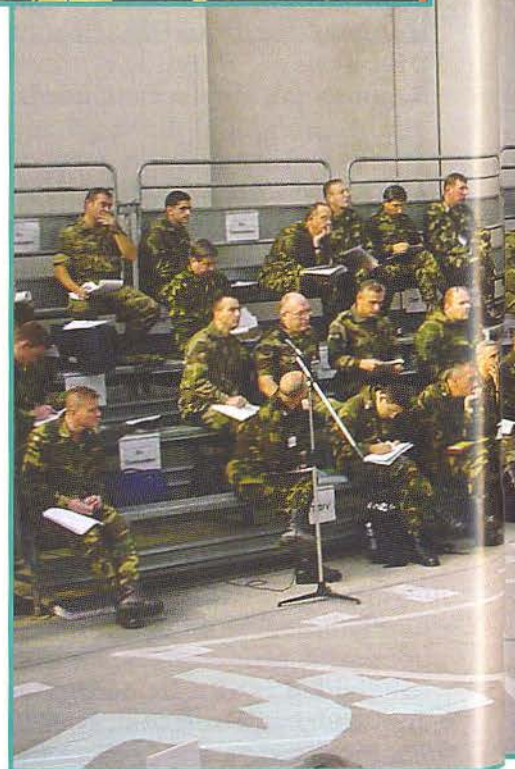
tion of the "U. MARA" Barracks, many substantial infrastructural works have been started on all the existing buildings and two new structures are under construction. One, made by heavy prefabricated material, is ready to house the Staff; the other is



Above
Training for survival in environments contaminated by nuclear, biological or chemical elements.

Right
Operational simulations are effective training integrations and good reminders of what was previously learned.

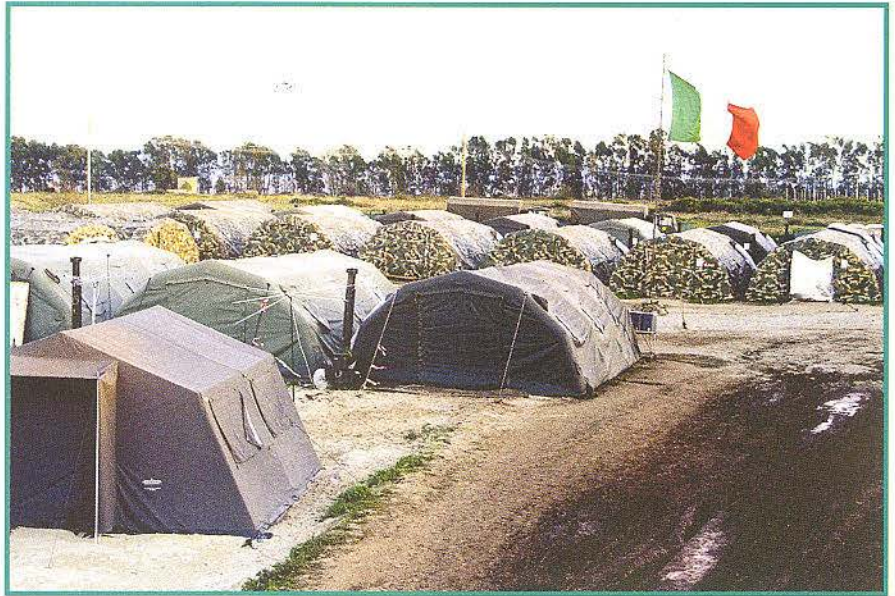
The second concerns the provision of lodgings for Italian and foreign personnel. As regards this second aspect, a special agency was created for the acquisition of apartments on the free market. The apartments will be assigned with procedures similar to those envisaged for service lodgings. As concerns the improvement and adapta-



lighter and will accommodate the Headquarters of the Support Signal Brigade and other multinational elements.

Moreover, for the correlated ceremonial needs, the Solbiate Olona HQ will continue to have at its disposal Palazzo Cusani in Milan, the former headquarters of the Projection Forces.

As far as the quality of life is concerned, we should mention the adaptation and upgrading of sport installations and equipment (tennis courts, athletic track, gym, etc.) and the restructuring of the recreational facilities for the staff.



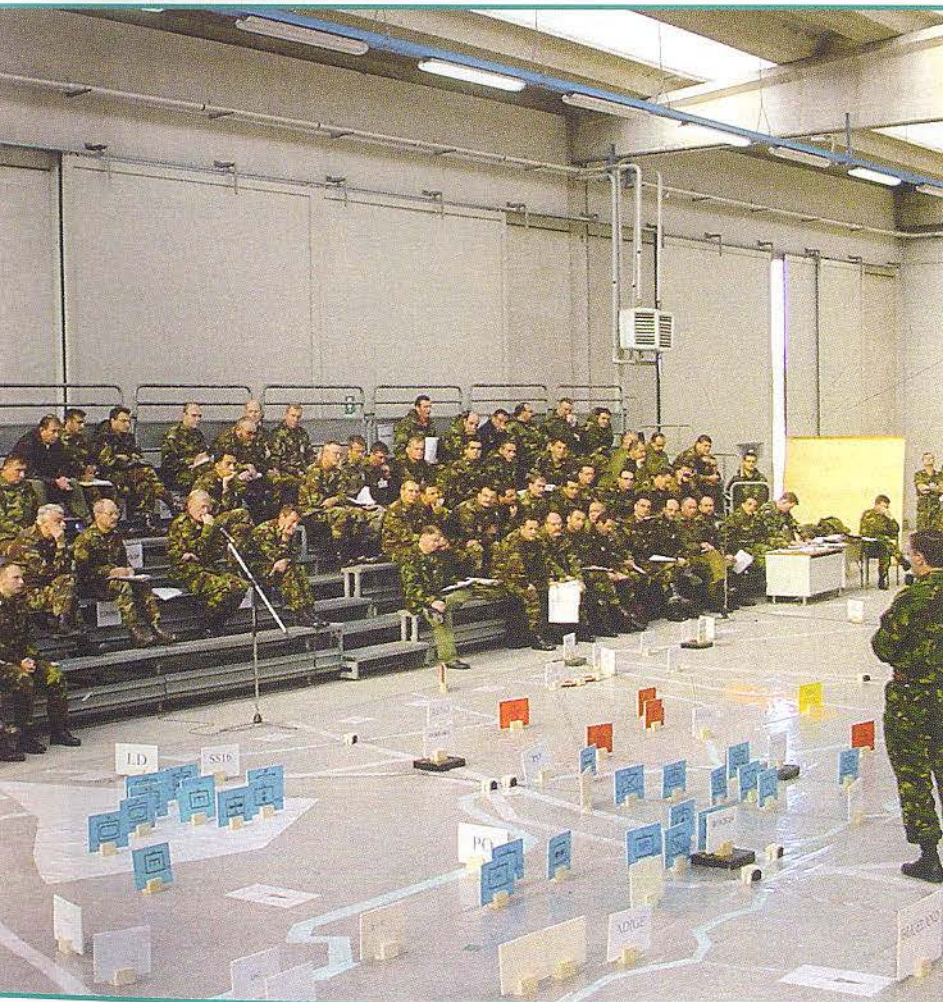
EVOLUTION OF THE PROJECT

The validation of its "Full Operational Capability" marks

the full-fledged transition of the NRDC-IT into the group of NATO Commands.

Within this framework, the training cycle continues without

The Headquarters, equipped with shelters and pressurized pneumatic tents, can operate in extreme conditions.



interruption, in order to ensure the Solbiate Olona HQ an operational standard adequate to the tasks it could be asked to perform in the future.

At the same time, the "pairing and exercising" agreements between pairs of new HRF (L) HQs is very likely to be formalized. For Italy this could imply the twinning with the Headquarters of the British ARRC. This solution, mainly aimed at sharing the training burdens (exercise direction, reinforcements, affiliated units), envisages an alternation of the two Headquarters: the supported one will be ready to perform its operational task, while the supporting one will work as "trainer" and reinforcement.

The Solbiate Olona NRDC-IT HQ, together with the other HRF (L) HQs will play a very prominent role in the constitution of the NATO Response Force, whose concept of employment and configuration will be defined by the Alliance within the first half of this year. As regards the national affilia-



Left

The Minister of Defence, Hon. Antonio Martino, the Chief of Staff of Defence, Gen. Rolando Mosca Moschini and the Army Chief of Staff, Lt. Gen. Gianfranco Ottogalli during their visit to Exercise "Lightship 2002".

Below

The HQ personnel is trained for long operations in extreme conditions.

similar characteristics at the "Santa Barbara" Barracks in Milan.

CONCLUSIONS

The ambitious goal, achieved with the "Full Operational Capability" in a synergic effort supported by both the political and military leadership of the Italian Defence, with the involvement *in primis* of every component of the Army, confirms the success of the initiative and represents the recognition of the efforts made by our Nation. The Rapid Deployable Corps of

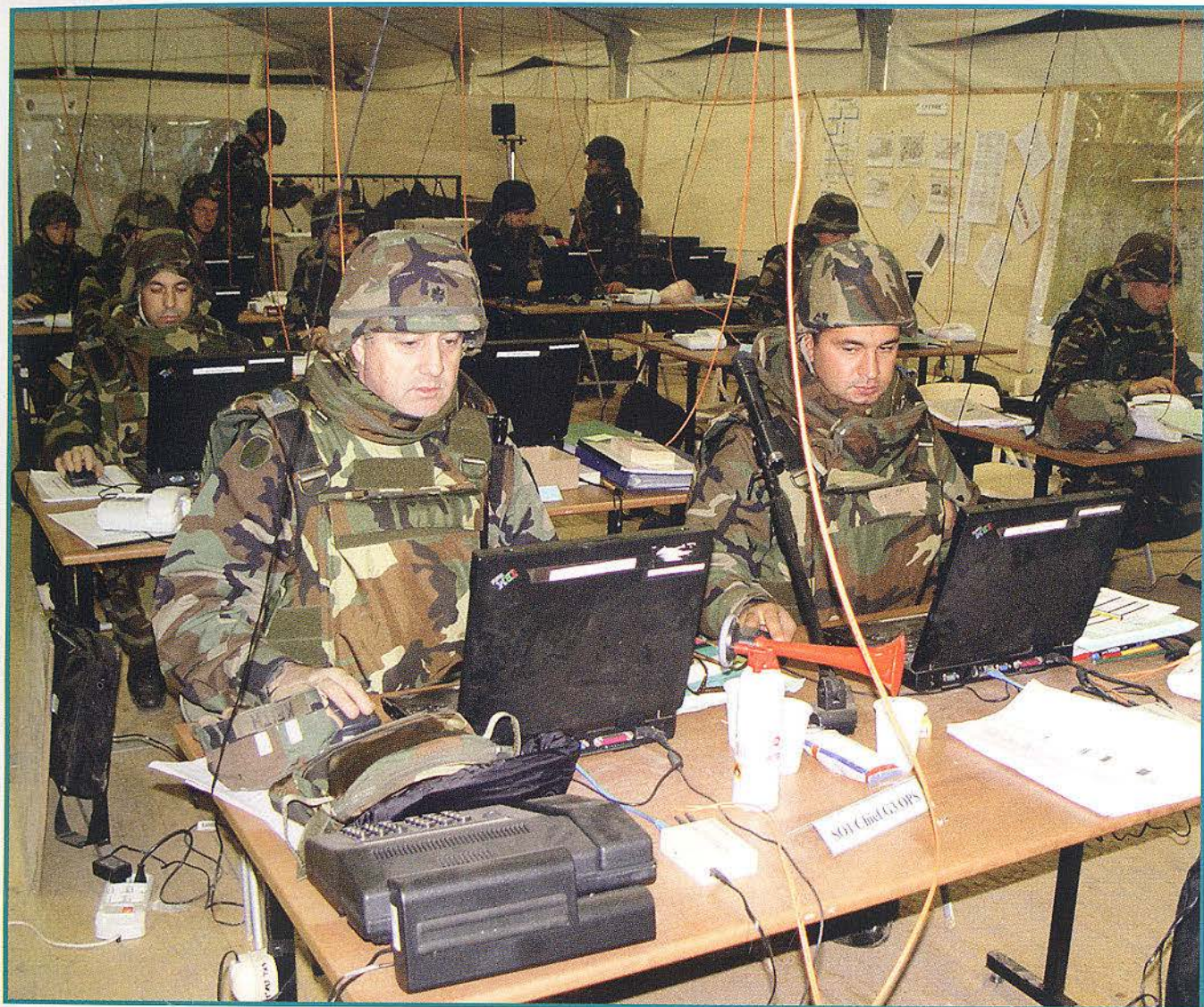
ted units, the Corps will be the catalyst of all training activities connected with the preparation of the projectable Division Headquarters, Brigades and relevant CS and CSS assets. It is easy to imagine the enormous spin-offs in terms of force readiness and operational capabilities, as well as in terms of knowledge of NATO procedures.

Finally, the modernization and acquisition plans for materials will be completed, particularly in the CIS sector and in the field component. A special impulse will be given to the accomplishment of the works necessary for the adaptation of the infrastructure.

Concerning this latter aspect, the very advanced projects for the construction of the "Monte Rosa" village will start this year in a large area adjoining the "Ugo Mara" Barracks. This high-quality enterprise includes the construction of 211 different apartments, schools, cinemas, sport installations, a bank, a

post office and all the other structures necessary to guarantee a high quality of life to the families of the personnel. Furthermore, there will be another housing complex with





Solbiate Olona is now a solid reality, strategically very valuable to the Defence and the Country.

In the wider context of the structural revision of our Service, the realization of the NRDC-IT HQ is a timely and fundamental step on the road towards a fully professional Army.

In view of this, the Solbiate Olona HQ will be a training ground for the cadres of the entire Army and the "reference model" for the development and complete implementation of similar capabilities in the projectable Division Headquarters.

The success of the initiative required a remarkable engagement of human, material and financial resources. Nevertheless,

considering the very short time at our disposal, it is evident that the achievement of this ambitious objective must be ascribed, first of all, to the professionalism and hard work of all members of the Army.

Therefore, we can be certain that this commitment will continue in the future, with the achievement of further significant goals in which the Armed Forces, and Italy as a whole, will be engaged as protagonists in the field of international security.



**Lieutenant General,
Deputy Chief of Staff
of the Army*

The Operations Centre is the propulsive system of all operational and coordinative activities

NOTES

(1) Signed in Paris on August 28, 1952 by the member Countries of the Atlantic Alliance, it lays down a status of supranational rules on the legal status of multinational and Host-Nation personnel employed in NATO HQs established on the territory of one of the signatory Nations.

(2) NATO acronym for "Multilateral Interoperability Program - Army Tactical Command and Control Information System".

ON BOTH SIDES OF THE DIVIDING LINES

**THE 20TH CENTURY SAW AN
ENORMOUS ENLARGEMENT OF
CONFLICT AREAS AS COMPARED TO
OTHER HISTORIC PERIODS, BUT
HUMAN AND TECHNOLOGICAL
RESOURCES STILL PLAY A PIVOTAL
ROLE IN ALL CONFLICTS**

by Fabio Mini *

Symmetrical and linear conflicts are developing into asymmetrical and non-linear confrontations and the meaning of war is dramatically changing. Threats are now based on deceitful weapons, just as terrible as the traditional ones. Destruction is no longer limited by moral bounds or by territorial borders, but is still driven by human and material resources as it was in the past.

The West and the East are not separate by definite borders, which reflect clear geographical concepts, and are not divided by ideological and religious barriers. In fact, they are closer than expected, as they also embody a state of mind. However, we must not be scared by imponderables. According to the Persian religious thinker, Zarathustra (VI century B.C.) "one must have chaos in oneself in order to give birth to a dancing star".





BETWEEN TWO CENTURIES

The concept of symmetric and linear warfare was practically ruled out at the end of the 20th century, which saw the highest number of conflicts with the highest death toll ever. The apotheosis of war was first reached in the concept of global war and then in a non-war situation; i.e. a war between two geopolitical blocs which was potentially so devastating to become impossible though perfectly understood by western rationalist views.

The 21st century has opened

with a totally asymmetric and non-linear conflict which is so distant from the western way of thinking to become, in our view, irrational.

Between these two centuries, during a very short span of time, warfare was first declared buried to pave the way to the so called peace operations and then was brought back to life to be waged again in its most archaic and at the same time most technologically developed forms.

The reality of a non-linear war, as evoked by the terrorist attack of September 11, unleashed our

fears and took us and our defense capabilities by surprise.

The loss of a traditional frame of reference to help us understand this type of war gave way to the development of extremist concepts. On the one hand, every social, political, economic, financial and military event is considered as a war action, while on the other, any violent attack on us is generally described as originated by a well-known background, which therefore is hypocritically deemed reassuring.

And even though war is no longer limited by traditional territo-



Kabul: trooper of the "Guide " standing guard.

rial borders, it remains unchanged as it still depends on those who wage it and on their equipment: i.e. troops and their means.

Two Chinese Colonels, however, Qiao Liang and Wang Xiangsui, wrote a book in Chinese (therefore for Chinese readers) on war with no limits (1)¹

They started analyzing the Gulf War which, in their opinions, witnessed the triumph of technology, of the killing power of traditional weapons and of asymmetry.

Before September 11, in the

western world too, a debate was carried out on the future of warfare, but, while the Chinese warned everybody on the threat posed by non traditional weapons or even non-weapons used in sneaky and secret wars, no less devastating than traditional conflicts, Westerners were developing plans to scrap military and intelligence assets.

In fact, peace support operations could not justify a huge military instrument or expensive technological innovations. The USA was not developing its national missile defense system any longer and even NATO, the only military alliance still alive after the Cold War, was reflec-

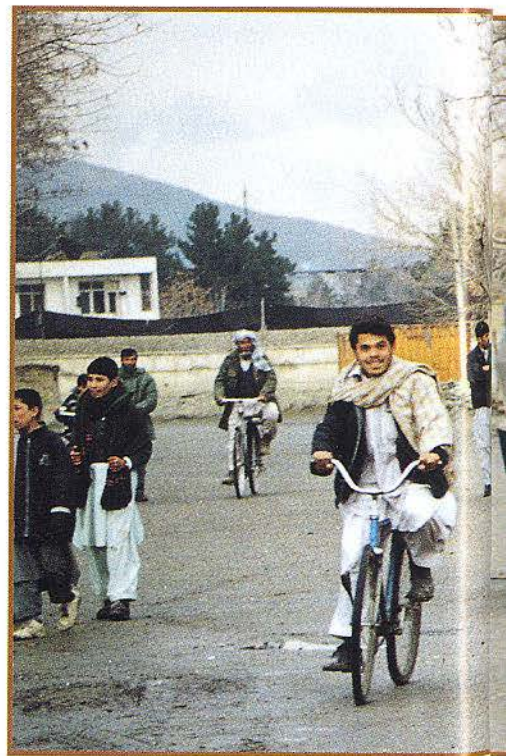
ting on its own future.

The terrorist attack of September 11 came as a complete surprise

THE WEST AND THE EAST OF WAR

The reason why the western world is so disorientated and uncertain in understanding new forms of war is because it is incapable of accepting a non linear way of thinking and acting.

There are many ways to classify the world in order to better study it: northern and southern areas, rich and poor countries, developed and developing nations, idealists and materialists, white, black and yellow people.



As regards warfare and its different forms, the most important difference lies in the fact that one part of the world adopts linear systems in waging war and the other part privileges a non-linear approach. Consequently, if we consider the Western world (i. e. our world and our social, political and economic reference system) as the

paradigm of linearity and rationality, we automatically think that in the Eastern world the opposite rule applies. But this is once again a linear approach and it is not valid in itself as it requires a previous definition of "the West and the East of war". This definition must then be compared with our present situation, also in the light of the globalization process. The resulting classification of the world is not so linear as expected and therefore it is much more credible than the initial definition. In fact, as regards the interpretation or philosophy of war, the West and the East are not geographical concepts and not even subdivisions between races, reli-

world lies also in the very concept of war.

On one side of this dividing line there is the Western world which has adopted the concept of a linear time: i.e. a straight line running from minus to plus infinity. Space is a dimension external to men and it is not chaotic.

Life and Death only refer to the biological dimension of men; there is a beginning and an end, which are at opposite ends. Everything has its opposite. Men are at the center of everything and are the term of reference for everything, divinity included.

Kabul: motorized patrol in action



gions and political systems. It is a sort of cultural subdivision but only as regards cultural contributions to the concept of war. The parameters on which this classification is based are the different ideas of Time, Space, Life and Death. As Life and Death are also the fundamental dimensions of war, the difference between the two parts of the

On the other side of the dividing line there is the Eastern World with its idea of a cyclical and even circular time. The idea is that space (universe) is both internal and external to men and is chaotic: all sentient beings are closely involved in the Life and Death cycle. The two conditions endlessly alternate. Men are only a projection of this eternal move-

ment and have a value of their own in that they are part of a whole. Here Life and Death are complementary and everything does not have an opposite but a complement. Divinity or the relation with transcendental experiences is based on the transcendental component and on the cosmic balance, not on the single man. In between the two extremes, there is a wide range of different overlapping positions and nuances. To further clarify the extreme positions, it is necessary to stress that as regards the western reference system, war is an instrument in the powerful hands of men, while in the eastern reference model, it is a task men have to carry out to the benefit of the transcendental component or of their communities. In the first system, war has a logical beginning and an end while in the other, there is no beginning and therefore no end. The first defines victory as neutralization of the enemies; the second defines it as a balanced situation. In the western world, man wages war using all the means at his disposal; in the eastern world, man is the instrument of war. The first sees the degree of acceptance of Life and Death as one of the major factors in a war, the second does not consider either aspect as important as they are complementary, indivisible parts of an uncontrollable plan. How one lives and dies is much more important than just living and dying.

Geographical considerations are irrelevant to all this. There are ancient cultures geographically distant from our world which share the same principles in waging war as ours, while other cultures geographically closer and integrated in our world adopt totally opposite principles.

Thanks to the globalization process and the enhanced possibilities of exchanging communications and travelling, the West and the East are more physically

intermingled than ever, but , at the same time, they have never been so conceptually distant .

However, the gaps among cultures, as identified by Mr Huntigton, do not exist and trying to define them at all costs only adds political problems to cultural difficulties. This is the reason why Huntigton's vision is misleading. But it is also true that the so called *melting-pots* do not exist; they have only been invented to dupe minorities or cultures other than the dominating one.

Even those who belong to

the colonists, unlike the Australian aborigines.

Russia, Belarus and Ukraine belong to the West but in central Asia republics and in the Caucasus there are pockets of populations of purely Eastern origin.

Asian populations of Chinese culture (Japan included) as well as communities comprising Mongols or pre-Mongols, Hindus and Buddhists, central Asians and Persians, Muslims and Polynesians, follow the Eastern philosophy of war.

Northern Africa belongs to the

totally founded on the Jewish-Christian tradition which flourished in a geographically Asian area. The Jewish religion is purely occidental while the Christian religion is essentially oriental.

The biblical approach to war is linear. An eye for an eye. Every reaction is proportional to the offence suffered. All wars described in the Bible are balanced and rational battle. The direct divine intervention is the secret weapon of the Israelites. But it is also the token of their faithfulness to the only God. The Alliance with God is more political and military than religious. Violating the Alliance or being unfaithful to it carries horrible punishments.

When Sodom and Gomorra reached the limit of impiety, they were set on fire.

Today, an effort is being made to demonstrate that it was not fire but nuclear weapons. It would not come as a great surprise.

Therefore, it is quite easy to understand why Christian confessions which refer to the old testament, as in the case of Protestantism, are culturally much more distant from Catholicism than from Buddhism.

The Christian evangelic doctrine is linear , nonetheless it is different from the biblical doctrine in the way it deals with war. Here, it becomes non -linear, almost irrational and sometimes incomprehensible even for the apostles. "Give Caesar what belongs to Caesar" is linear reasoning just as "Forgive us our trespasses as we forgive those who have trespassed against us" but "if anyone hits you on the right cheek, offer him the other as well" is non-linear reasoning. The same can be said for "not protecting our Lord with our sword". Disarming powerful countries by martyrdom is non-linear and extremely asymmetric reasoning.

Eastern cultural entities are not



Kabul: marksman controlling his fire sector.

hybridized races do not represent merged and integrated cultures, but only the contradictions of their original cultures.

With all due exceptions, the conceptual approach to war of the whole sub-Saharan Africa down to South Africa is typical of the western world. Australia (except for the aborigines) belongs to the West, while New Zealand with its Maori aborigines belongs to the West thanks to the fact that they fiercely fought

eastern world and the Basques are much more oriental than the Arabs.

European countries in the Balkans belong to the East and, in a certain sense, a large part of Italy is instinctively more eastern than western oriented. In fact, Venice is the most "oriental" of western cities and this is the reason why Italy and Venice have always understood and loved the East.

As regards religion, geographical reasons are not so important even in the separation of the East from the West.

The western world is almost

Kabul: soldier garrisoning the Italian HQ.

different by virtue of their geographical positions, but their diversity from our culture does not mean that they are all culturally homogeneous. Although fragmented, they find a unifying value in the cultural opposition against the West. However, while the opposition against the West may be a unifying aspect, the reasons for this opposition are different. This is why it is not possible to rely on the consensus of one component to gather the consensus of all. It is necessary to win total consensus.

THE WESTERN MILITARY PHILOSOPHY

There is even greater confusion in the field of military and strategic studies.

In the western world, the way to interpret military actions, as well as warfare philosophy and behavior, is deeply rooted in the thought of the Enlightenment, rationalist and romantic periods. No other expression of human thought as the military philosophy has such close ties with the Enlightenment and the romantic period.

Western philosophy has developed since then. After Voltaire and Kant, there have been Nietzsche and Freud who contributed to dismantling all certainties of the 19th century and its rationalistic principles, which Schopenhauer and Kierkegaard had already discussed. These two thinkers, the first a philologist and the second a doctor, criticized the central position of language in Hegel as well as Marxist materialism and scientific positivism. These were philosophies which had in common an exaggerated faith in future progress. To this end, they criticized the strongest tenets of the western civilization. Nietzsche, in

particular, is one of the representatives of the vitalistic doctrine which exalted life and its inner irrational aspects. In "Thus spake Zarathustra" he wrote: "one must have chaos in oneself in order to give birth to a dancing star".

Physics has abandoned Newtonian mechanics and has discovered the theory of relativity and structured chaos, mathematics and biology have discovered the theory of complexity; social systems have changed and those which have originated from the highest expressions of the post-Enlightenment period have collapsed.

Unlike the above mentioned disciplines, war philosophy and strategy still refer to doctrinal and mental parameters set by von Clausewitz for warfare in general and land warfare in particular. His concepts have been of major importance also in the development of air and naval strategic doctrines. *Seapower* is a typically Anglo-Saxon concept, which has been developed by geopolitical experts like the American Admiral Alfred Thayer Mahan and the British Admiral Julian G. Corbett. As regards air strategy, the impact of Clausewitz on Douhet and Mecozzi is evi-

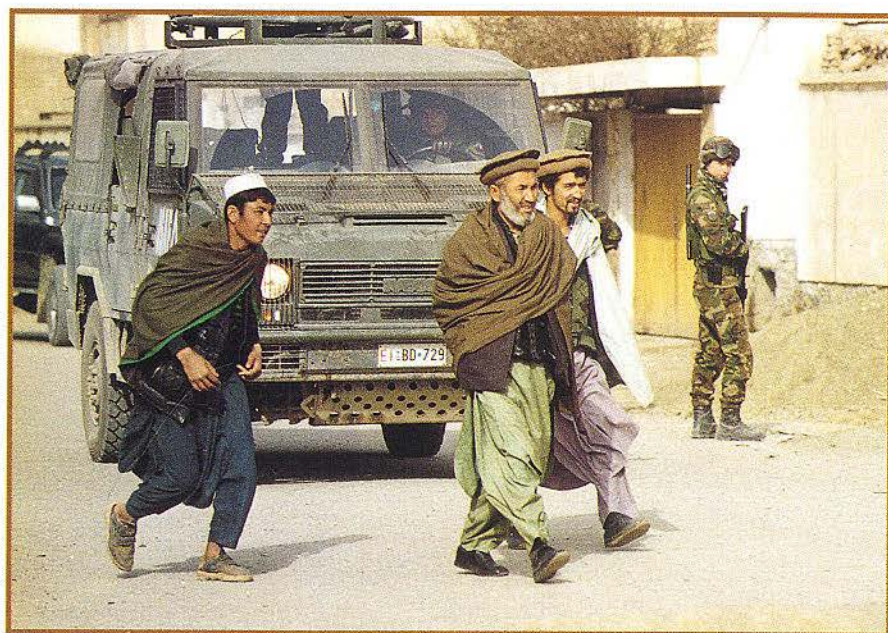


dent, even though there is a wide range of opinions on the nature of air power doctrines. In the western world, no military philosophy has ever been so prevailing as von Clausewitz' war doctrine which, however, has not been the only military doctrine and may not have been the most refined one.

Some analysts underlined the importance of the works of Raimondo Montecuccoli (1609-1680)(2)² and their impact on Napoleon who considered Montecuccoli as an unparalleled master of the art of war. As regards

result of the European culture of the Enlightenment period, reinterpreted in the light of romanticism. But, its being the only war doctrine had the negative consequence that its impact was felt only within the military world, thus contributing to the separation of it from the rest of the society, given the specialized, rationalist and scientific nature of the military thought. This specific nature which in the past

Kabul: Italian patrol carrying out a surveillance action.



other correlated aspects, Machiavelli, Baldassarre Graziano, the great theorists Maurice of Saxe, Frederic II, Guibert and others have shaped the history of the political-strategic thought.

However, their teachings, like those of Montecuccoli, Gustav Adolf, von Bulow, the Archduke Charles, and even Jomini who was the only one to counter the advance of clausewitzan doctrine, were forgotten in the period of Napoleon and in the following development of von Clausewitz doctrine which, as a mere consequence, emerged as the prevailing philosophy.

Clausewitzan doctrine was the

characterized military philosophy as elitist, is considered today as a severe setback.

Since the 19th century, all wars have been waged based on Clausewitzan doctrine, namely his war of physical annihilation of the enemy. This remark is not aimed at criticizing von Clausewitz' system but only at underlining that all conflicts which affected mankind at large have always been first a European prerogative and then a western specialty, from a cultural point of view. So far, the most devastating conflicts have been fought in the West and always by warring parties which shared the

same war philosophy even though with different operational concepts and rules of engagement based on the available means.

The two cultural extremes of the West and the East of war have never met. They have confronted each other for ages, but always within the same reference model of warfare.

Alexander the Great fought in India just as he would fight in Greece.

The caliphs who opposed Christian faith and threatened western culture, adopted the same philosophy of war as the crusaders. The pre-clausewitzan philosophy of war was globally accepted at least as far as the Chinese borders and, as the Chinese borders were never crossed, the two systems never got into contact.

All fightings between the East and the West were never considered as wars but as catastrophes.

Barbarian and Mongolian incursions have been the only examples of the eastern concept of war seen in the West for centuries. On those occasions, the western world was helpless. The asymmetry was evident in combat behaviors but again the difference was mainly cultural. In the case of barbarian incursions, it is the culture of movement versus a static culture. It is the different way to understand and use Time and Space (their ratio equals velocity) and it is also the different way to understand Life and Death and, in particular, the way it is worth living and dying.

At that time, the West tried to rationalize the cultural diversity of the ferocious barbarians who did not respect any rule. The result of this effort was that the western world did not understand any cultural difference and accepted barbarian incursions as natural disasters. This went on for centuries and when the West became mechanized and more rationalized this diversity grew even stronger.

The 19th century was another important step. At that point, the western world was deeply rooted in the Enlightenment period doctrines which charmed the eastern world so strongly that easterners were ready to accept a sort of cultural compromise.

Japan left the west of war in which it had lived in isolation for more than ten centuries by adopting the Dutch Navy disciplinary regulations and starting an industrialization process which would transform the whole country into a regional power, capable of conquering the south east of Asia and defeating an imperial power like czarist Russia.

The agony of the Chinese empire coincided with the invasion of western military "experts" and the modernization efforts.

Before the Enlightenment period, however, the European concept of war was much more "oriental" than it is now. Suffice it to think to the low impact of the Time factor on holy wars, dynastic wars (The Hundred Years' War, the Thirty Years' War, etc.) and sieges. The same applied to the Space factor: battle space was strictly limited to the area of operations where small formations of élite or mercenary armies confronted each other; combat was ritualized (fighting between "champions") and ethical and chivalry codes focused not on winning or losing but on the noble ways of dying or winning.

Victories were never decisive and defeats in the field could also be transformed into political advantages.

This system collapsed with Napoleon who established mass armies, enlarged the areas of the battle space and reduced the time of maneuvers.

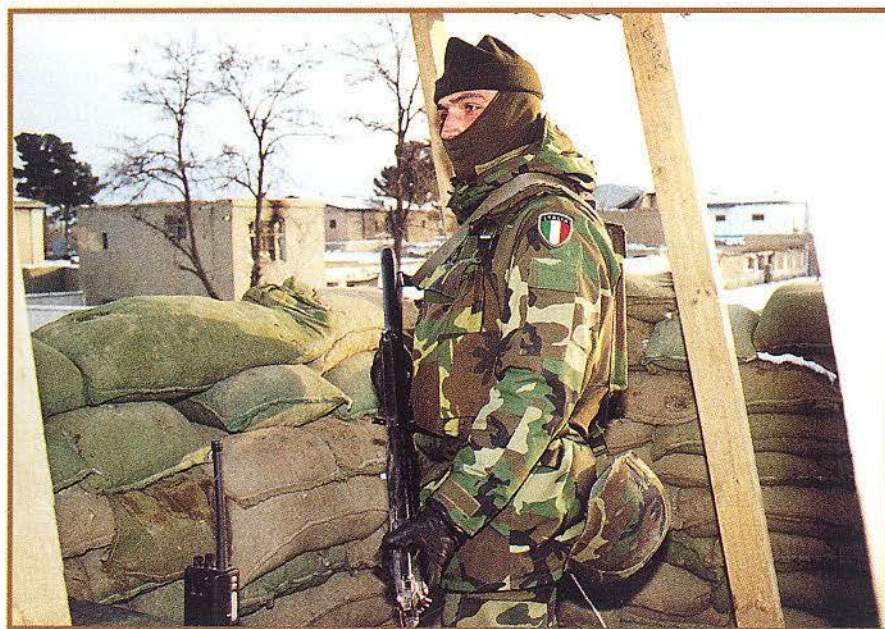
Victory was necessary at all costs, defeat in the field entailed the collapse of political systems. Clausewitz built on Napoleon's experiences and further widened the gap between the western phi-

losophy of modern war and the eastern and the pre-enlightenment war doctrine.

This does not mean that linear and rational ideas are conceptually superior or that symmetry is necessarily linked to them.

Colonial wars which gave Europe the supremacy over the entire known world up to WW2, are the epitome of the imperial and linear philosophy of the

Kabul: control of the territory is one of the tasks assigned to our contingent.



West, even though they were totally asymmetric.

Sea dominance which is absolutely necessary to colonial expansion has been achieved by winning few battles and by conducting a race war (officially or unofficially) which is not only non linear and asymmetric, but it is a barbaric war where movements are the key factor and the space of the battle has no limits, like the prairies from Mongolia to Hungary in the first case or sea fields in the second.

In fact, a linear and rational idea of war has never prevailed in all modern wars which saw the West and the East confronting

each other, even when supported by a clear supremacy in technology and forces.

Every time the East has followed traditional parameters in conducting war, it has been successful, while it has always been a loser when it has made reference to western models and systems.

ISLAM

It is very easy to understand why Islam is that part of the East which raises the concern of all westerners.

Many people thought that it was a western and therefore predictable cultural system. In fact, the truly oriental nature of Islamic fundamentalists, and not of Islamic rulers, had been forgotten due to the fighting for the price of oil at the stock exchanges, the battles against OPEC, the rhetoric image of Lawrence of Arabia, the linearity of the Arab Israeli conflicts and of the war on Iraq.

In the hope of exorcising all fears, the West had classified fundamentalism as a sort of a mere fanatic deviance and revelled in the support of those governments which apparently

followed western ways of thinking. But, once again, the calculation turned out to be wrong.

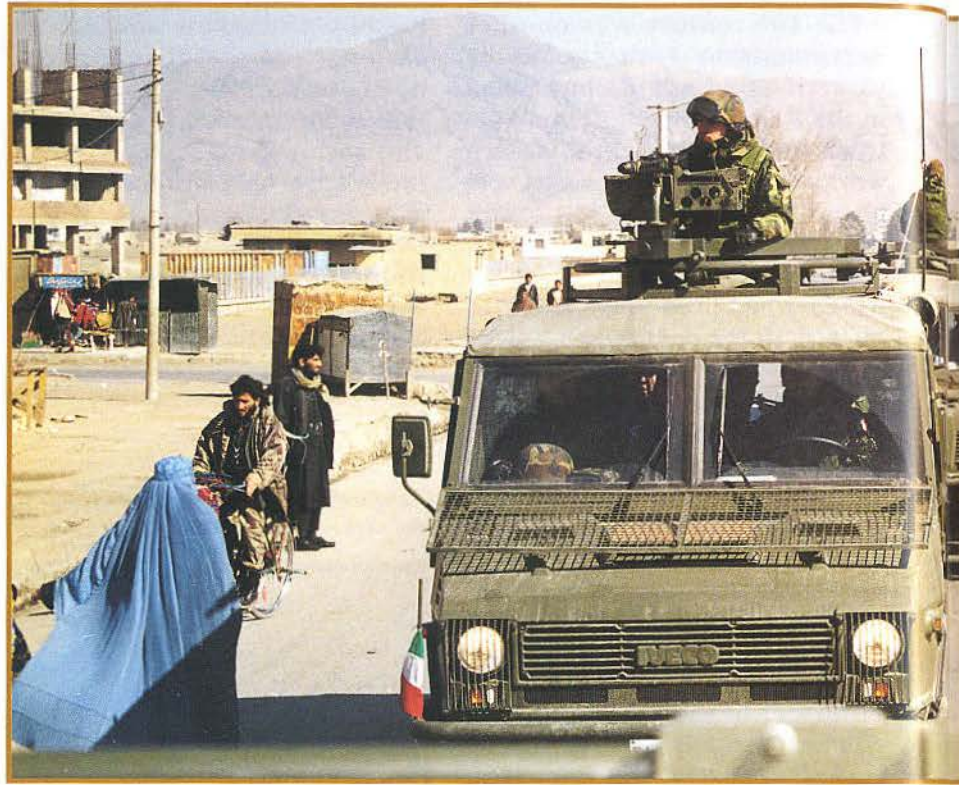
Bernard Lewis (3) has very clearly highlighted the complete isolation of the Christian from the Arab world over the centuries. In fact, these two worlds have never developed a mutual knowledge even though they have come into contact, have been obliged to a forced integration and have in turn reciprocally dominated one another.

The Arab Palestinian /Israeli conflict clearly shows how deep is the mutual ignorance even though the two entities belong to the same race and Islam shares the same roots as Hebraism and Christianity.

Islam is still an unknown entity, but now it freely circulates throughout the world, having both the necessary resources and reasons, and when the Islamic ideas of Time, Space, Life and Death enter our world, the blow is devastating.

According to Braudel: *Islam is a long road which goes from the Atlantic to the Pacific Ocean and crosses the rigid and powerful Old World. Islam is an austere and demanding religion for men who are used to living in that human emptiness which is called the desert and was filled by the incarnate word of a man touched by Grace. The desert is an obsessive and nostalgic presence in Islam as Revelation came from the dunes, but it is the urban environment which is more in keeping with Islam.. In fact, an Islamic believer always leads his life within his community and therefore develops a strong feeling of belonging to his group, clan, community. It is a well structured organization".*

According to Igor Man (4): *religious pillars are: profession of faith, prayer, alms, abstinence and pilgrimage. And faith is everything. But Islam has left the desert and now lives in Western and eastern*



towns and cities and is often embodied by fundamentalists who move freely throughout the world.

Ruhollah Khomeini who ousted the Shah, had studied Greek philosophers and in particular Plato's "The Republic". When he became the head of Iran, he dreamt of building an Islamic Republic, just as a western ruler, but the result was completely different and Iran fell prey to pazdaran.

After the expulsion of the Soviets, Afghanistan was in the hands of its Koran students.

In other areas, there are the hezbollahs who show where Islam's real driving force is.

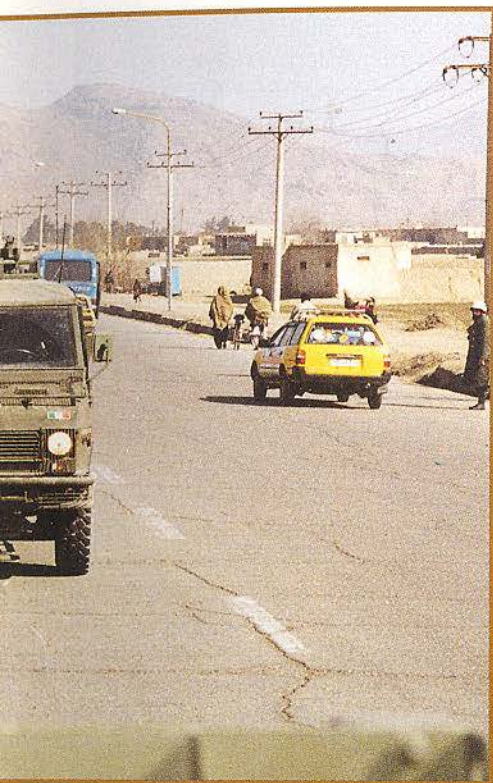
Saddam Hussein is an Islamic believer, but he promotes the cult of his own figure just as western rulers and eastern emperors do. Saudi kings and the emirs of the "oil area" are more at ease in the luxury hotels they own in the west than in the desert, but their power still lies in the clan they belong to and in the fact that their role as champions of the faith is accepted.

Even Gheddafi dreams of an

Islamic regime based on western models, but he is more in keeping with traditions than all the other leaders. He lives in the desert for security reasons and to remember that he, as a Bedouin, belongs to the desert.

Even though Islamic Head of States cannot be trusted, the reason why Islam raises the concern of westerners paradoxically lies in the fact that it is out of the control of Islamic rulers and that the West has understood that Islam is a totally different way of thinking and living. It is ethics in all the possible meanings of the word. Ethics generally translate the list of rules that men set as regards what they think is morally right or wrong. In the case of Islam, God set these rules as well as the criteria to distinguish what is true from what is false, given that the quest for truth and the need to communicate it to other human beings are moral values in themselves.

Islamic religion can be considered as the most complete ethics, as all moral values mankind has developed over its history have



been set by Allah, since the very beginning. It is this set of ideas and beliefs which is now under discussion, being considered as the expression of a fanatical attitude. Today, those Islamic believer who are underprivileged and disparaged embody Nietzsche's forecasts on slavery. He thought that what is generally accepted as "good" or "evil" had been defi-

Left

Kabul : Italian patrol in the southern periphery.

Below

Kabul : rangers clearing a building.



ned as such by the "owners", thus coming incredibly close to the ideas Marx was developing in that same period.

It may happen, however, that another kind of ethics be developed by those who are slaves, because they are weak and want to deny the right of their masters by opposing their "ethics of resentment".

This perspective, which has been developed based on ancient sophists' discussions,

has led to rejecting first of all Plato, who in his "Republic" had objected to the idea of "might is right" supported by Trasimachus, then Christianity as a strong supporter of the equality of all men in front of God, to end with Democracy and socialism as an example of a moral Christian ideals badly misunderstood. In the end, Nietzsche makes a sensational discovery: the ethics of the weak may become the ethics of injustice, because, when the slaves unite they can impose their values both forcibly and peacefully. This translates into a sort of nihilistic attitude, which can be divided into passive or active nihilism.

This philosophic reasoning is similar to the one developed by Islamic fundamentalists who have identified the enemy of the Islamic faith in the USA and, therefore, move against our philosophic foundations, Christianity, democracy, socialism and obviously always against the strongest.

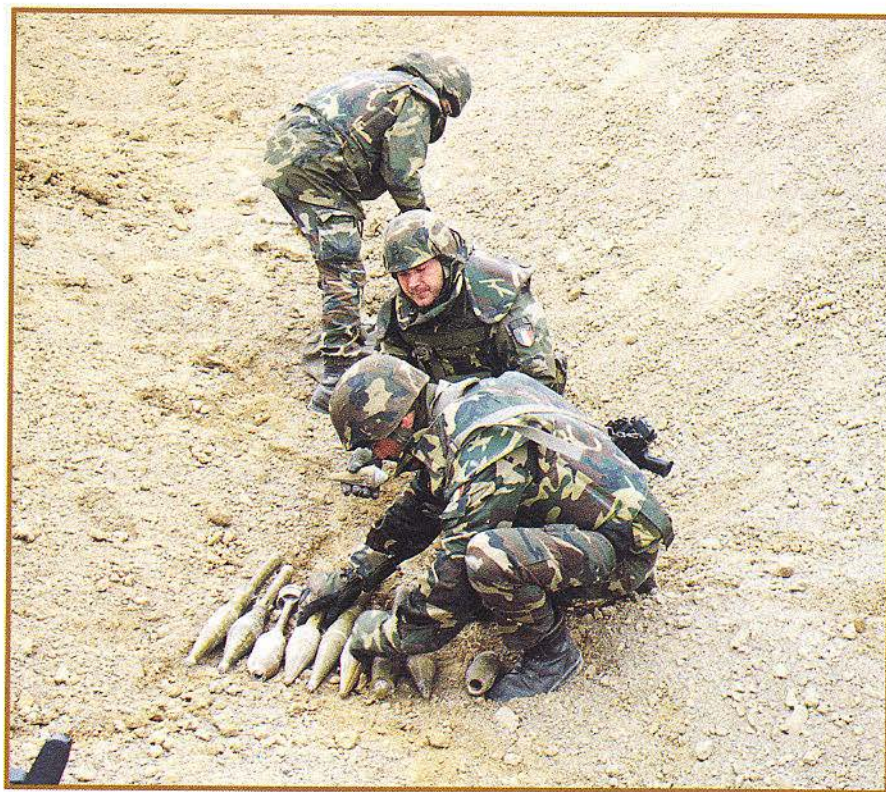
The ethics of resentment becomes the ethics of injustice and active nihilism, whose most sophisticated instruments are the isolated suicide attackers. For this reason, there are widespread fears which are completely justified, also because the ethics of resentment does not belong only to Islam and can very easily be followed by any other entity which thinks it is dominated by a stronger power.

THE WARS OF THE XXI CENTURY

The Afghan model

After September 11, analysts of conflicts focused their attention on terrorism to discover that suddenly the most powerful and protected part of the world had become vulnerable and unprotected.

Kabul: artificers setting up the blast hole for RPG rockets and mortar bombs left by the Talebans.



Discussions on defence instruments are only one of the aspects of the deeply felt concern. America's reaction against Afghanistan, though clearly asymmetric, has highlighted the technical and logistic difficulties of a traditional military action.

Theatres distant from all friendly bases, hostile natural environments and almost unknown territories were the reasons for signing agreements, bilateral alliances and establi-

shing ad hoc coalitions which contributed to a severe destabilization of the entire south eastern Asiatic theatre and to the setting up of new geo-political aggregations, which were at the same time encouraging and alarming.

For a short period, the war in Afghanistan has been considered as the repetition of the Gulf war: technology, air bombings, "zero casualties". But then it became clear that notwithstanding bombings and thermobaric weapons, state-of-the-art technologies were almost use-

less as it was impossible to "digitally" know the territory. And they were also extremely expensive.

Land forces were necessary to direct smart weapons and above all seize the territory. Therefore the employment of special forces was an unescapable choice. Traditional land units, necessary to conduct operations, were not available and, moreover, could not be accepted by the so called Northern Alliance. Special for-

ces, which in their nature are reduced and unconventional, were the spearhead for Afghani forces and their special capabilities were only used to brush up old offensive techniques and improve their skills in riding mules. Some thought that the reference model for the wars of our century could be the war in Afghanistan in the light of the new alliances, the acquisition of logistic and operational bases in central Asia, the concurrent employment of new generation weapons, special forces, Afghani forces as well as the lack of operational and counterterrorism intelligence. Today the war in Afghanistan is virtually over and is already being discussed as a reference model for future conflicts. It is necessary to rethink global terrorisms seen as the pattern of conflict between different civilizations and as a new ideological threat to the West, which calls for a global and unified answer. While the idea of the axis of evil is losing support, the idea of eliminating those regimes which harbour terrorism or have mass destruction weapons is still widespread. The systems of choice will be open war or destabilization from abroad, aimed at supporting coups d'état. Some analysts, not particularly informed on Islam, dream of helping peoples of Iraq, Iran, Sudan, Libya, Saudi Arabia and other countries oust their regimes. All analyses and studies are now in a thick fog, also because international terrorism has cast a shadow on everything and made the tasks of decision makers very difficult.

However, the Afghani model can still be taken into consideration when preparing a war at global level.

Lessons learned in Afghanistan have shown that all powers aiming at playing a role at global level need to develop a global operational and logistic network, based on bilateral agreements.



Kabul: Italian patrol in action.

Future scenarios

It has always been very risky to make forecasts on future wars and the risk has been worth running only in very few cases. However, there are two important kinds of clues which can make this task easier. The first is the scenario of wars with no boundaries.

According to this scenario, wars of the XXI century will not be fought between different cultures in those areas where these cultures come into touch, as Huntington thought. These wars will be fought between different "warfare cultures" and, therefore, will be asymmetric. It is not important to know the names of the warring parties, what really matters is the fact that weapons and goals will be different and asymmetric.

Conflicts will take place everywhere and in the place of choice of the weapon or "non-weapon" which either party will use.

If the East chooses terrorism, the place of choice of its actions will be any symbolic, highly vulnerable place where the number of casualties would be very high and psychological and material damage remarkably severe.

When the target is information technology, the place of choice would be both the East and the West, mainly where IT is widely used and less protected. If the weapon is financial destabilization, the place of choice would be stock exchanges and business banks, if it is political destabilization, these places would be diplomatic buildings, national or international political headquarters by means of those *influence operations* which have assumed an increasingly growing importance since their first timid appearance with lobbying grou-

ps. These wars will be fought at sub-regional level between nations or non-nations (private wars) and for non state reasons which require an external military intervention. They will be pre-emptive operations against terrorism, illegal trafficking, threats posed by mass destruction weapons and crimes against humanity. But, they will be mainly wars fought on behalf of new empires: the web, communications, IT and intellectual resources for research.

These new wars could also see the deployment of regular armies and the employment of traditional techniques, but the mobilization of public opinion or of opinion makers will always be necessary.

These new wars will employ economic and financial, political and diplomatic, intelligence, information and any other deterrence means.

The most important, supporting or provocative roles will be

played by supranational economic and financial institutions, NGOs, multinational or national corporations, intelligence assets, mafia groups and also individuals covered by one of the collective nouns like Luther Blisset which are common on the web. There will also be Nations with their resources and armies to make up possible coalitions or alliances.

According to this order of priority, soldiers are in the last place, even though they will be the first or may be the only to appear.

In this framework, the USA is the nation with the strongest intervention capabilities. But the USA is still a structured national entity which needs its people's consensus and international support. Adventures are possible only when both American people and the rest of the world approve them passively and actively.

However, rich countries, irrespective of their geographical positions, are capable of conducting wars with no need for public debate or consensus.

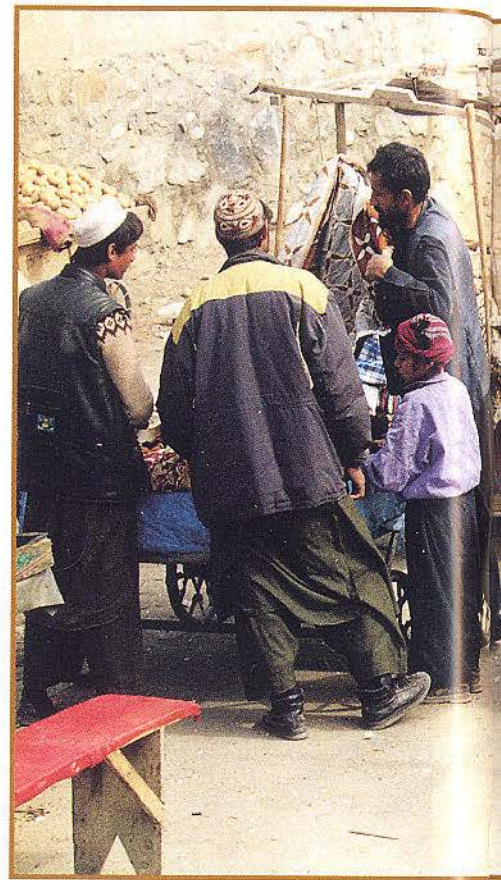
Poor countries have the same capability, especially if underprivileged people or those who feel slave of an alien and evil power succeed in exploiting vulnerabilities or inertia of the rich and powerful.

Chinese Colonels who will go down in history only to join the group of those who have been misunderstood, have already highlighted the possibility that terrorist and fundamentalist organizations can launch powerful attacks with asymmetric means and methods. However, they have also denounced that there are aggressive businessmen who act like terrorists and that dubious policies of international financial institutions can cause more serious damage than a war and bring entire social and political systems to their knees. They have clearly explained that America is still sticking to the traditional pattern of war and

has not dared adopting asymmetric methods and its various non-weapons as strategic reference models. They openly accuse America for being limited by technology. According to these colonels, the American military strategic thought still relies on technology and is therefore strictly limited by technological developments. Thus it follows a linear and rational path, based on Newtonian mechanics. With some minor exceptions, these remarks can be applied to the whole western school of thought.

Technology, however, does not fix a limit to the use of violence and power. Conversely, the West has always transformed any technological development into new means of war and destruction. Technological developments have always been applied first to weapon systems and then to the civilian sector. Giving technology an excessive importance can be a limit but has no practical consequences.

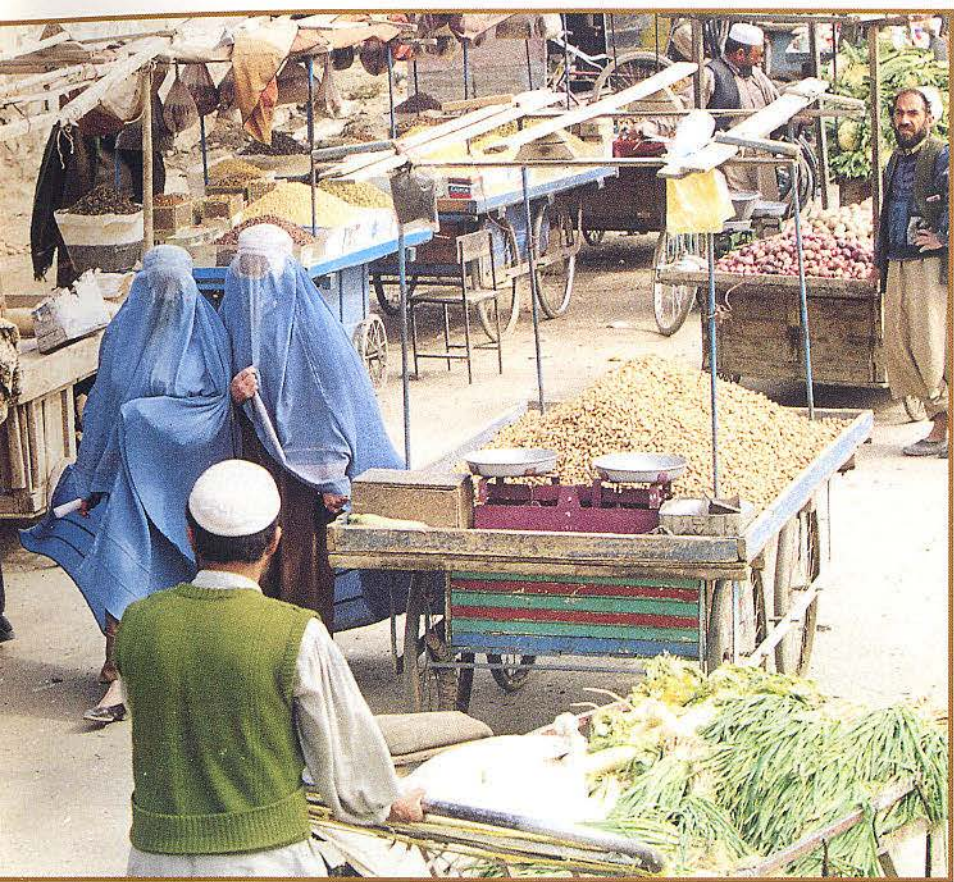
What Chinese colonels have not clearly explained is that if Western institutional organizations do not develop a non linear military thought, other entities not completely linked to the establishment or even totally inde-



Above
Kabul: one of the town markets.

Below
Anti-personnel mines, used by the Talebans, before being destroyed.





pendent can have the opportunity and the capability to make use of extreme means.

Corporations, NGOs, private companies, crime and terrorist organizations have been clearly identified by those colonels, but nobody has believed them.

After September 11, tough, the US has taken diplomatic, political and military initiatives which are rather innovative, as compared to the past. Future wars will increasingly be characterized by the adoption of imaginative and unusual solutions and the use of all available means, both lawful and unlawful. Means which are unlawful for certain entities are lawful for others as lawfulness only depends on coded ethics and laws. So far, no universal code has been laid down.

The second future scenario is drawn from an even more clear clue: today's official plans of the USA.

This scenario sees the war on terrorism as the starting point.

The ultimate goal, i.e. the liberation of the world from any fear of terrorist attacks, has turned out to be the only reason capable of mobilizing more resources than those needed for a world war. This is an unexpected advantage. War on crime, drug and illegal trafficking are side products which are given priority one only if they hamper war on terrorism.

The imminent war is therefore a war to free us from any fear. It is a war as old as time, but it adds a new kind of war to the list of institutional and private conflicts, i.e. an all-out pre-emptive war.

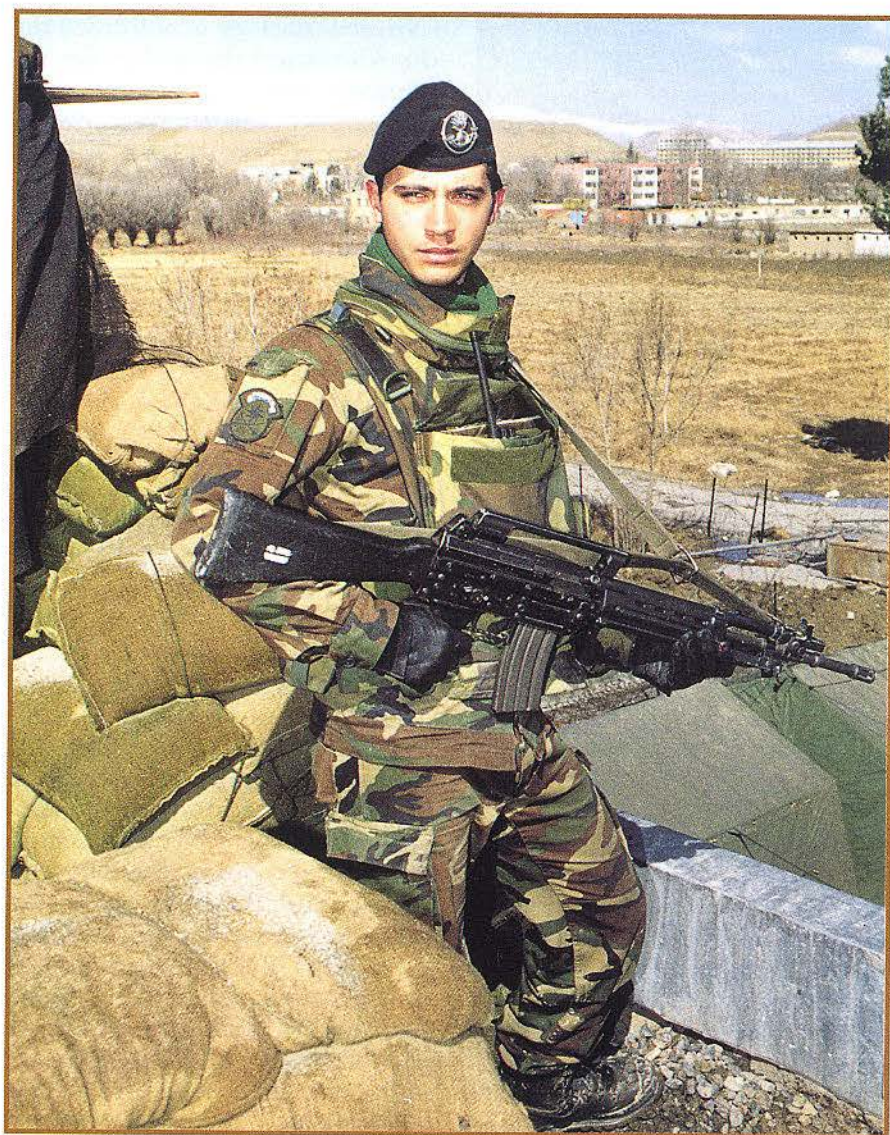
This scenario is far less academic than the first one and not exactly reassuring or less apocalyptic. As the American defense secretary, Donald Rumsfeld said (5) in line with the so called "Bush doctrine", the USA will not base the next war on the type of enemy, the terrain, the technologies available or the results to achieve.

Its new strategy is not based on the identified threat but on its offensive capabilities. Rumsfeld clearly explains that a military instrument is to be established which is capable of countering any threat, even those threats which are still unknown or have not yet come to light.

The areas to be put under control at global level are four as the "rogue" states which are to be eliminated. The strength of the deterrence power lies in the certainty of the military action, coupled with the uncertainty on the first target. Apparently, Rumsfeld still adopts the old eastern concept called "the Marshal's cocktail" which states that success is not contingent on deploying a military instrument as strong as possible, but on employing several instruments and adopting all known strategies against a specific enemy. This kind of strategy requires huge investments and new priorities in acquiring weapon instruments. Priorities have already been defined and funds have been allotted for an unprecedented plan, aimed at upgrading the military instrument.

Notwithstanding all exhortations to think different, to find new strategies and tactics, not forgetting old ones, Rumsfeld's war is surprisingly linear and exceedingly asymmetric. It is also easily predictable as it follows the general principle "one against all" and in particular "one against four" for the near future.

Moreover, this kind of strategy which does not exploit one of the great advantages offered by asymmetry (great results with few resources), is extremely expensive and does not guarantee positive results. To develop credible deterrence levels, targets to defeat are clearly defined (one of the four rogue countries). This way, however, an incredible advantage is granted



Trooper of the "Guide " standing guard.

factor even more important than knowing a potential enemy. But no strategic advantage derives from knowing that the enemy's only goal is fighting in itself. On the contrary, it has negative consequences on those who cannot even take into consideration an aimless war with no end state.

The asymmetry of space, means, technologies, doctrines, policies and of the moral values of the warring parties can be understood and accepted, unlike the asymmetry

of goals which stirs instinctive and irrational fears.

The asymmetry of the existential fear

The West is almost overcome by a paranoiac fear of the future. The reference universe for the West is an external and distant universe.

Western fears come from the future and from external space and take possession of an inner emptiness. The East, on the contrary, lives in the present, today, yesterday and tomorrow. The universe of the East is inside every man and completely fulfils him. Fears from the external space cannot penetrate the inner space and, in any case, they will mix with all the fears of the inner universe which represent a constant concern for any easterner.

In fact, a world which looks ahead in the future, also thinks about space. Its limits are represented by the limits of its means. A world which looks ahead does not fear external space because it is capable of understanding it.

A world which does not look ahead in future time, does not think about distant space. The highest expression of this attention to closeness is introspection, which has no technological or

to the "fifth country"; i.e. that myriad of "fifth countries" which have nothing to lose and are interested in having one of the four rogue countries destroyed by the West. Osama bin Laden could be (or have been) one of these "fifth countries". But, just like Osama, there can be dozens of "fifth countries", under cover in the West and in the East, which are interested in unleashing American vengeance. An all-out pre-emptive war will not be the final warfare model of the 21st century, but it certainly is the initial one. It begins in the moment when the strategy is declared and all necessary resources are allotted.

NEW ASYMMETRIES

Asymmetry of goals

International terrorism highlights a new aspect of the asymmetric war, even though future scenarios do not envisage only terrorist warfare and wars on terrorism. It is a dimension which goes beyond known borders and establishes new, though vague, limits. The usual asymmetry of means and strategies has been coupled with the asymmetry of goals. On one extreme of this asymmetry there are objective goals and well defined ideals and on the other there is the total absence of goals: an aimless warfare. Knowing goals is a strategic

sensorial limits. Those who have the universe inside themselves cannot have the same limits as those who consider the universe as external to themselves. Obviously, the perception of fear is completely different.

If those who look inside themselves, are convinced that the inner universe is unchangeable and ever lasting and that the material world around them (their bodies included) is a sort of dress to change when it is worn out or is considered as an instrument to reach eternal happiness and victory, then it can be said that fear can only be felt by those who look ahead in time and space. The asymmetry of existential fear poses a serious problem as regards the identification of appropriate means to eliminate it.

All men having an inner universe only have a feeling of fear when they are not able to expand their inner universe. They are more vulnerable when they are powerful and narrow-minded, but if they are pure and deeply convinced they do not feel any fear. The difference between those who are pure and those who are convinced is the same as the one between saints and fanatics. They both feel no fear. Deterrence (preventive use of terror) is useless with them, as useless as all references to material advantages.

FUTURE CONFLICTS

Priorities

In the above mentioned scenarios, new wars have objective limits. The first is the priority of reasons to wage war. Beyond the numberless possibilities of wars with no limits and no goals, there are many other more practical reasons which can become priority one and trigger traditional but not adequately prepared conflicts. One of these reasons is water. The whole middle east is at risk, like other parts of the

globe. Another reason in supranational organized crime.

The various crime organizations are increasingly growing and resources allotted to wars with no limits, reduce those to be used in countering crime organizations. If crime organizations prevailed, it would be necessary to wage war against them. In that case, all investments in missiles and unmanned platforms would be almost useless.

There are also political priorities. The political consequences

in solving all problems. Their weakness lies in the volatile nature of the agreement on which they are based.

Aggregation based on the sharing of a same ideology is no longer possible after the end of the "two blocs" period, which saw the opposition of two completely different ideologies. Establishing alliances based on the sharing of values is more a slogan than a reality.

If China, Russia, Uzbekistan declare their willingness to sup-



Kabul: patrol in action in the centre of the town.

of a war are not always limited to its theatre. What can be even less foreseen is the political influence of other more insidious types of asymmetric warfare : *information warfare, cyber warfare, financial warfare and ecological warfare.*

Alliances and Coalitions

Alliances, which are one of the most important instrument to join forces for war and security purposes, are changing their dimensions and becoming a limit more than a strong point. Alliances, based on the sharing of principles, purposes and tasks are now established in a new way. It is not certain, however, that new coalitions can succeed

port the USA in its war on global terrorism, it is not because they share the same values as regards democracy, human rights or free market. An alliance signed in the name of a religion is a sort of historical finding which is not even mentioned in school text books.

Some think that belonging to a common civilization should be the driving force of new alliances, but it is a debatable reason and not always valid. Globalisation has changed the idea of civilization as well as the idea of politics. Both words refer to one root: the

city. The city is a social entity defined by a territorial extension, a governing authority and a law. The idea of civilization touches the concept of territory or authority.

Civilization is opposed to barbaric behaviour, not because it is typical of peoples without traditions, but because it is not static, it is not limited by definite borders, it is not subject to an external law, but to the law of the individual or of the clan. Today, there are not longer rigid and impenetrable borders. They are mobile and the idea of civilization do not apply any longer. Enforcing civilization and the rule of law is hopeless when the kind law to adopt it is to be defined. Today, in the so called civil world, criminals cannot be expelled as the law in force in one nation is not accepted by another.

Even though today's world has been given many definitions as "post-cold war" or "post-modern", another definition should be added, i.e. post-civil

Establishing new alliances based on the sharing of the same technologies, living standards or even interests has become obsolete. Today, the West is more fragmented than ever before. This is particularly true in the military technologies sector. Within NATO, there are countries with cutting edge soft technologies and other countries which are still living in the "iron age". As for the sharing of interests, it is necessary to stress that within the only competition system, the interests of one competitor go to the detriment of another and severely affect living standards. The only force which can cement completely different political, social and military components is fear (as it was in the stone age). But, as it has already been said, the fear that torments the West is different from the one that tortures the East.

A patrol of the "Guide" controlling a sensitive point during a preventive control action.

Deterrence as asymmetric defence

It seems paradoxical but, to win any fears, recourse is made to terror, which becomes a deterrence element when transformed into a defence and dissuasion instrument. Rumsfeld's strategy is a deterrence strategy. However, deterrence can be successful only when it is credible.

If deterrence is in the hand of a coalition, then the whole coalition is to be credible. There cannot be vulnerable or weak elements within a coalition, mainly as regards the total adherence to the goals of the coalition.

Modern coalitions are to be made up by strong and determined elements, capable of gathering a large internal consensus, in the case of democracies, or to exert absolute internal power, in the case of dictatorships.

After a purely military deterrence (as nuclear deterrence), new forms of deterrence are to be found in future conflicts, within those same areas where new weapons or non-weapons have been found: new forms of deterrence which go beyond the purely military area.

This means employing enormous amounts of human, financial and material resources in all activity fields by all components. These resources which are not unlimited, are to be drawn from other sectors. This is a limit to credibility and may also be the first purpose of the enemy. Moreover, it is uncertain that this expensive global deterrence can have any impact on the adversary, given the different nature of the existential fear. It is such a rational and foreseeable effort that in an irrational or chaotic world it has been already foreseen or it has been considered irrelevant.



The asymmetry of the existential fear, therefore, poses a double problem: it makes alliances among culturally different elements unreliable and does not guarantee an effective deterrence. This is a very important aspect for those who only rely on deterrence.

Resources

Another objective limit is the reduced number of resources. Notwithstanding the huge investments already scheduled, the preemptive intervention plan, at global level, will never be properly financed. Adjustments will be necessary. There is also the issue of the reorganization of *intelligence* assets which carry out the double task of preparing all political, diplomatic, economic and military actions and conducting their own institutional missions.



It takes a couple of years to prepare a carrier for combat missions, but it takes at least one generation to re-train an entire intelligence structure. Reaching a high level of co-operation among all *intelligence* organizations can take centuries and can even be a utopian vision.

Luckily, some limits have been overcome. The political and social consensus which has had an impact both on great victories and defeats, seems now to have been definitely acquired. Financial resources, which depend on consensus, are not yet enough to fulfil security requirements, but are sufficient to boost all technological and industrial sectors involved. What is more important, though, is that all limits in human resources can be considered irrelevant. The reason is not to be found in a higher

number of young people who want to join the armed forces but in the exceptional capability multipliers that technology offers to soldiers and logistical support units. Moreover, the great importance given to special forces allows for gathering the only exceptionally valid human resources in few units of excellence.

The "zero casualties" option syndrome seems to have been forgotten. The war on terrorism has reduced the importance of this option which jeopardized all other operational, tactical and technical options.

The post cold-war soldiers, puzzled by the "peace-keeper" rhetoric should not and could not die. When this happened, it seemed it was their or their commanders' fault.

War operations have been conducted employing soldiers who

could not be employed to the utmost of their capabilities and training levels. These soldiers were risking their lives for something they did not understand. They wondered why humanitarian actions, the fight against injustice, and the defence of western values were worth their work as volunteers but not the risk of dying. These soldiers had already found an answer to their questions in the generally hypocritical attitude and were, anyhow, determined to sacrifice themselves.

The soldiers of the XXI century will be free from these hypocritical restrictions.

Obviously, they must not die, as all the others who have given their lives for their countries. But the soldiers of the XXI century can die, in the performance of their duties, like warriors and combatants for Justice; the only value which can guarantee Peace.

Soldiers can be called upon to risk their lives by their countries, the world or the international community. There are again ready to accept that the cause of global international is worth their while.

□

*Lieutenant General,
Commander, KFOR 7,
NATO HQ, Pristina*

NOTES

- (1) Qiao Liang and Wang Xiangsui, "Wars with no limits" edited by Fabio Mini, Libreria Editrice Goriziana, 2002
- (2) R. Luraghi "Le opere di Raimondo Montecuccoli Army General Staff, Historical Records" Office, 1989
- (3) Bernard Lewis "Europa Barbara e infedele", Arnoldo Mondadori Editore, 1989
- (4) Igor Man "Islam from A to Z", Garzanti 2002
- (5) D.H. Rumsfeld "Transforming the Military Foreign Affairs". May/June 2002

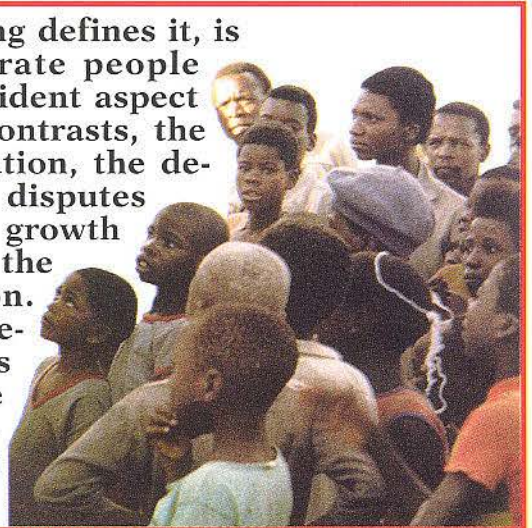
THE MALAISE OF AFRICA

While our look turns to geographically distant regions, the Black Continent makes all its weight felt with its burden of unresolved atavistic contradictions and new opportunities



by Maurizio Coccia *

The great Land of the Sun, as an old Swahili song defines it, is close to us also owing to the flows of desperate people seeking redemption, which are only the most evident aspect of the problem. This is due also to the many contrasts, the innumerable diversities still looking for integration, the desire and fear of a leader-nation, the territorial disputes and poverty, sickness and illiteracy, population growth and migration, the failure of the aid system and the quest for a more suitable economic dimension. Who knows, perhaps the worst evil derives precisely from its immense resources. Apart from its extreme beauty and its strong, almost instinctive appeal, the African continent must still be turned to a better account, first of all by its own people, starting from the pride of being African.



While progress welds the Euro-American association and from the security viewpoint, as it often happens in this post-bipolar period, the attention of the world is centred on the Near- and Middle East, a "stone guest", apparently unmoved, looks at the growing and tossing frenzy that precedes action, apparently without noticing it. Not unlike a bather who mistakes the imposing back of a whale for an islet, or a hunter taking an elephant for a rock.

This is the way Africa presents itself, at first sight and from our European perspective. And it is highly probable that this is how we are seen from the opposite side.

Is it a dialogue among deaf? We shall see.

First, we note that nowhere else there is nothing similar or comparable in the relations among peoples and Nations.

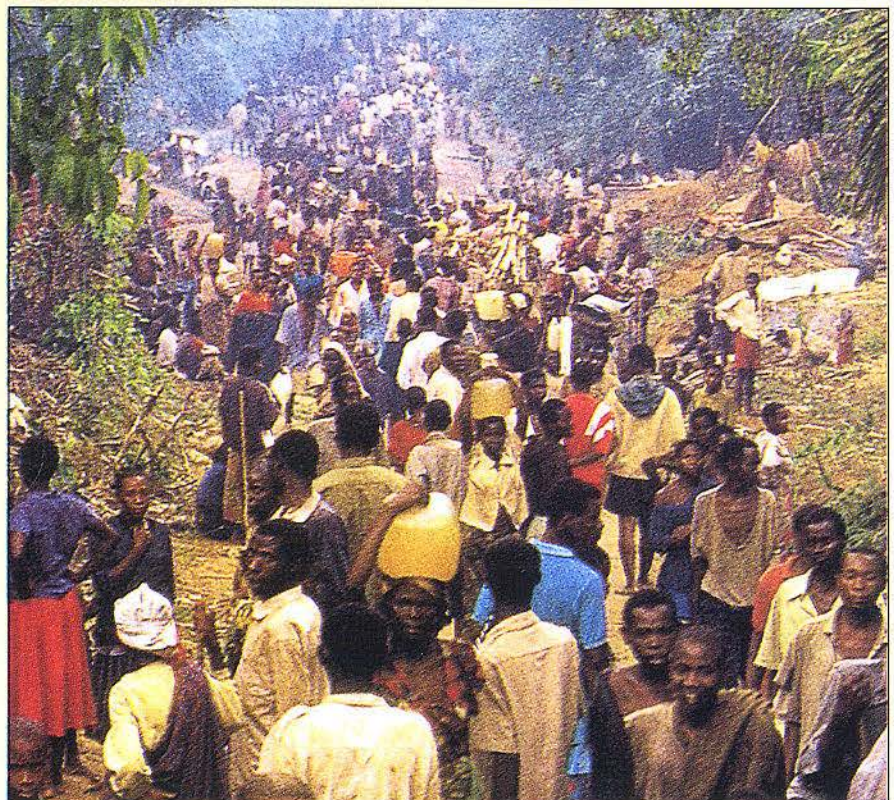
Evidently this exception is so widespread that it is possible to assume that it would be useless to try to understand the situation through an objective analysis.

At the same time, the level of impassibility, indifference and remoteness shown by both sides is rather suspicious. Let us try to go round it by using our feelings as a key to read the enigma.

Our memory recalls the illu-

strations of the Continents as goddesses surrounded by symbols, appreciations and auspices. Africa differed from the classical and severe Europe for its brightness and its physical exuberance, displayed with a generosity which, unusual in those times, was a precise sign of an irrepressible enthusiasm, underlined by the abundance of fruits and the charm of the scenery. A chimera full of attractions.

Who could imagine that the only remainder of that reality, full of hope of cooperation, would be the scorching sun, and the piquant nudity would soon turn into hopeless misery? Who could believe that this setback of the Continent would depend on men more than on climate, on progress rather than on events or on defined and definable faults of its peoples?





Is this an emotional and pessimistic view? The media unfailingly inform us of the decline of Africa's social, political and economic systems. The general reaction has eventually led most people to indifference or, even worse, to accept the situation. In an editorial titled "The decadence of the market empire" (La Repubblica, October 29, 2002) Giorgio Bocca, a well-known journalist, points out that, in the advanced societies, a kind of political realism is progressively asserting itself, according to which it is not necessary to feign compassion on poor Africa in order to protect one's own income.

Nowadays, cynicism muffles enthusiasm and the African chimera has mostly dissolved.

The common feelings have a preference for Africa as a symbol.

A mythical, intense, moving and cheering land, capable of enriching itself with all its magic and of involving everyone deeply. There is nothing similar, and no antidote, to the nostalgia for Africa. It is the garden of Eden,

the Earthly Paradise. Sun, life, a wild and imposing nature.

A naïve and unlucky people, protagonist of indescribable vicissitudes, from the so-called civilization to the slave-trade, colonization, recovery of independence, racial discrimination, the Third World, mass migration, indebtedness, neo-colonialism, racism and the xenophobia of late.

Also these symbols of the human saga have been largely abandoned, without even trying to keep up appearances, because of the eager wish to be abreast of the times. Everything has been forsaken, together with the past, with its load of experiences and errors. Advanced societies live essentially in the present and allow themselves only a minimum projection into the future.

Thus the greatest merits of the African peoples disappear: the endless odyssey, the proud and difficult construction of modern States respectful of their traditions. Only the frailty of the residual components remains visible.

A review of the past, if only of

the most recent one, indicates an inevitable reaction to the crumbling of traditions, certainties and self-respect, emphasizing the vocation to a different social system and a more extended and multiform development than the one concentrated mainly on local resources, especially raw materials and cheap labour. The deep nature of the peoples of Africa emerges, with their haughty and proud identity, their ritual and cultured personality. A nature which has long been subjected to a role not its own: exploited, kept apart from the process of modernization and from the Euro-American development model.

The recent slaughter in Nigeria, triggered by the fundamentalist refusal of the values and meanings of the "Miss World" contest, poses the question of what will eventually be the results of the chronic marginalization of a proud and sensitive society. One can investigate in many directions. For example, Africa as a justification of a social, political and religious behaviour, a hinter-

land of the Middle East conflicts, an alibi for the fanatical fringes which, by defending values neglected elsewhere, ennoble with ethical values their violent actions. Africa and Islam. Africa as a potentiality for terrorism, meant as an armed and organized rebellion against a way of life considered unreachable and unacceptable.

Africa as an exception.

A heartless goddess. The immense land mass does not have its own internal motion. Once the great kingdoms were poles of attraction, mediation and culture, not only at regional level. During the last century the caravan routes penetrated everywhere with a close-meshed spider's web, carrying goods, information and culture, balancing – and in some cases exalting – all forms of isolation.

Today the desert cuts the Continent in two parts: on our side, the Mediterranean areas of Mashrak and Maghreb. On the other, everything else.

As it was at the dawn of those civilizations, the Sahara is a psychological more than a physical obstacle to communications and collective recognition. The Mediterranean is another wall, as regards Europe. America is far away. Africa re-emerges to the attention of the world with its southern tip, South Africa, the rainbow Nation, the symbol of freedom which has overcome all forms of colonialism: classic, creeping, post-modern, and whatever.

For Europe, considering the long African coasts, the keyword has always been "circumnavigation". Suez only shortened the route.

The regional answer has always been the same: general and generalized "contraposition".

Europe, Asia and Africa, together, are the Old Continent, the most ancient and settled social whole. Far from establishing a communication system, they go through this reality –

which is not only geographic but global – like separate partners living in the same home. It is a bitter admission, since it reappraises the centuries-old quest for mutual knowledge and respect.

On the other hand, never as today has the attention been turned to Euro-American interaction, an endeavour that permits no distraction, not even for good neighbourly relations.

The situation is made even more serious by the evident fact that in the region there is no credible leading Nation, followed by convinced supporters. The Continent lacks an internal motor, such as the U.S. in the Americas. Also missing is a group of reference Countries, like France, Germany, Britain and Italy for Europe, or China and Japan for Asia, with Russia straddling the two Continents.

SITUATION

53 Countries, 4 dependencies and 2 autonomous communities,

30.3 million sq km, which make it the second largest Continent. Africa's population is 15% of the planet's: like that of the two Americas put together or twice that of Europe, despite the desert areas.

The regions with a similar, if not homogeneous, character are not many: Mashrak and Maghreb to the North, connected with the Middle East area; the Sahara desert, the Gulf of Guinea, the Great Lakes, the Horn of Africa, the Kalahari desert and South Africa.

The difference between States and historical and geographical regions indicates at first sight the extent of the internal disputes, the inherent difficulties of a solid and lasting process of cooperation, and the global level of insecurity.

There are many dialects, few languages (Arabic, Zulu, Swahili, Hausa, Malagasy), with addition, in certain regions, of French, English and Portuguese as consequence of colonization. The main religions are animism (in the Centre and South) and Shiite



Islam (Mediterranean and sub-Saharan areas, Horn of Africa).

The average pro-capita income is less than one fourth of the world average. The highest revenue, close to the Italian or the Saudi Arabian ones, is that of Libya and Southern Nigeria, thanks to the well-known global value of oil.

Life expectancy is around 52-55 years for men and women respectively.

From the ethnic viewpoint, we see the widest and most diversified melting pot of peoples.

Africa presents oases with an acceptable quality of life, but the general picture is progressively deteriorating. As a Continent, it suffers also from the incalculable damage caused by endemic conflicts suddenly exploding with particular vehemence. On the background looms the unquenchable and inexorable violence caused by the dispute between Israel and the Palestinians. The bloodiest, longest and most hostile conflict ever recorded in the history of mankind, which feeds on every plausible pretext in order to produce new violence, exalting all over the world the disruptive role of ethnical and religious diversity

The smokes from that fire infect the air and unleash passions at every latitude, inflaming the extremists and thwarting any attempt at a pacification based on lasting foundations. After decades of compromises, we still witness continuous negotiations and political pressures at all levels.

Meanwhile, Africa uses up on its Mediterranean border the share of attention paid by the rest of the world, and any other regional reality remains in the shade.

The picture is made even more critical by the fact that, as we said, people seem to have got dreadfully used to the situation.

It is not by chance that the nature, origin and substance of the problems are always descri-

bed with the same well-known words, which do not require particular explanations.

They are: political and economic dependence, particularly on Europe and the United States; international interventionism, its forms and goals; international aid and its destinations; non-interventions; local political leaderships and limitations posed by neo-colonialism, widespread authoritarianism and anarchy; stubborn defence of the status quo and ultra-conservatism; oil problems; territorial disputes; racial clashes and xenophobia; wars and violence; role of the Armed Forces; terrorism, crime and drug trafficking; injustice, corruption, inertia; state centralization and deurbanization; irresponsible population growth; poverty, malnutrition, illiteracy, unemployment, migration; child mortality, epidemics and AIDS; urbanization/ghettoization (according to a UN estimate, by 2005, in the southern hemisphere one man out of two will live in a city) and its contrary, i.e. the persistence of nomadism in increasingly limited spaces; shortage of transportation; internal discriminations; women's condition; droughts, aridity, advance of the desert areas and the problem of water distribution.

In these conditions, the management of public affairs is not a simple matter. In Africa, as in the Near East, the internal balance depends on the religious parties, the military, the bourgeoisie and the government system, i.e. the Leader. Any modernist concession leads to new vulnerabilities and, even more, to largely foreseeable reactions. For instance, giving a party, founded on democratic and participative values, the opportunity of leading an alternative government is an enlightened act but has the demerit of leaving the religious party alone in the opposition, thus radicalizing it. Sooner or later this will lead the military to clash directly with the opposi-

tion, using questionable methods and strategies, with the consequence of depriving the government of power, or even of delegitimizing it, seriously endangering the internal and international balances.

The combination of this instability with the interferences and pressures of numerous (too



many) external actors results in ungovernable situations that leave no room for innovations. Compromise, always frantically pursued by the ruling castes, curtails the space for any substantial change.

The situation is serious, and there are many indications that even worse times are approaching.

In Burkina-Faso the population doubles every 25 years. The internal communications are still

hampered by the lack of education and the use of 60 dialects. Agriculture and cattle-breeding, the local main productive activities, suffer from the progressive impoverishment of the soil.

The desert moves in, covering oases and cultivated areas of the adjacent Countries. Not all have had the far-sightedness, the con-

Egypt, Nigeria and Algeria.

The cocoa and cotton plantations of Mali and the Ivory Coast employ 12-year-old children (more than 15,000, according to UNICEF) in order to reduce the manpower and social costs and balance the accounts according to the strict rules of profit, on which the economic globaliza-

owing to the progressive introduction of the *sharia*, the Islamic law.

In South Africa there is no shortage of problems, but there is also the will of doing things and move rapidly away from a dreadful past. This is enough to give stability and respite to the Country. Normality and common sense achieve visible results, even



stancy and the economic possibility of erecting artificial barriers.

In Libya 92% of the territory is desert. This is the reason for Gaddafi's last great project. After the flop of a Pan-Arabian League, now is the turn of a confederation of independent African States, with a common foreign policy and economy. A facsimile of the U.S., the great enemy. The ambitious plan is supported in principle by some important Countries, such as South Africa,

tion is based. In Africa as everywhere else.

In Tanzania, the main problem of the moment is the split between the citizens – who refuse to go to the polls – and the Institutions. This reaction has been unleashed by the general situation, based on ghettoization, injustice and corruption.

In Nigeria, the war for oil has turned from ethnic (we all remember Biafra) to religious, between Moslems and Christians,

if the Country, to some extent, is still an hostage to multinational corporations, just as in the past.

Since August 1998, the large and very rich Congo has been at the centre of an endless war that involves the whole of central Africa. On one side the Banyamulenge rebels of the East, supported by President Kamila's friends: Rwanda, Burundi and Uganda. On the other, Zimbabwe, Angola and Namibia, advocates of the status quo.

In the Horn of Africa, two antithetical States persist in never-ending confrontations and clashes, in order to give a meaning to their identity. Ethiopia, a sovereign Nation of European, or rather Hapsburg, mould and Somalia, inhabited by nomads, which pursues an aggregative politico-social project aimed at uniting its people. This strategy produces recurrent violent actions, in Ogaden, French Somaliland and in the strip of Kenya inhabited by a Somalian majority.

The Tuareg of Niger sell handicraft via the internet, thanks to a Canadian foundation which put a virtual store at their disposal. Unfortunately, only the 0.02% of the goods available on the net are produced in the Continent, with the exception of South Africa.

Anyhow, the net is disrupting the control of information established by every African State. At the present time, there are about 120 newspapers on line, but unfortunately the level of the information and the goals it pursues are not equally encouraging.

ACTIONS AND REACTIONS

In the relations among African Nations, the main problem has always been that of connecting too many identities: African, Arabian, Mediterranean, Saharan, tribal.

Africa endures internal ambitions and presumptions of expansionism that are not taken seriously, being founded on national and nationalistic outlooks. One day is Nasser's Egypt which asks for continental recognition; followed by Saddam Hussein's Iraq, then Nigeria, and so on.

Albeit with these limitations, a spontaneous process of recognition and mutual respect still survives, even if it does not make it to the headlines as much as wars and terrorist attacks, and is all too often obscured and impeded

by the continuous proposals, decisions and demands of the western world.

Instead of a stable regional association we see more or less durable aggregations, which can be sincerely felt or just convenient and short-lived. There is the indubitable historical, religious and cultural bond among the Arab Countries, in Africa as in the Near East. There is Israel, with its solid ties with the United States, Europe and the rest of the world, its security cooperation with Turkey and Jordan. Egypt is naturally projected towards Europe even if, for regional security reasons, is associated with Syria and Saudi Arabia. Iran is an Islamic reference. Libya pursues its Pan-African project. South Africa has a socio-economic bridge with the US, and this has obviously a high political value. France, Britain, Belgium, Holland, Germany, the U.S., Russia, China and Japan loom behind them, just as in the past. Furthermore, one should not forget the role of some external Countries, such as Pakistan and Cuba, that of the Nations benefiting from the energy resources and the influence of the multinational companies that manage them.

Probably the persistence of so many umbilical cords is the cause of the survival, both on the north and on the south, of a kind of nationalism, incapable of understanding the advantages of a free-circulation system, similar to the European one. There is still a preference for bilateral, rather than multinational and communitarian, relations. This should be taken into due account when promoting globalization.

In Africa, internal and external influences have merged in an apparently inextricable tangle. To say that solidarity is absent would be unfair, but undoubtedly it has not reached its objectives; to the point that it seems necessary to reexamine the modalities of its distribution.

Albeit with an open preference for the Mediterranean area, the US and Europe have been generous with aid and advice, playing upon the economic factors.

For many years, it has been a common and firm belief that economic growth would pull any other creed towards the Western values.

Today we can say without hesitation that everywhere, and particularly in this Continent, the economic component of the aid to development has failed.

There are many reasons for this. To start with, we can observe that the aid flow has never reached the people; on the contrary, it has been feeding the conservative oligarchies capable of opening to what is new without involving the underdeveloped masses, which practically receive only the increase of the cost of every product, starting with the essentials. Hence the rush to emigration and illegal work. For the dismissed workers, the rush is to recover the land leased to sharecroppers. Nepotism and patronage are on the increase, reviving tribal, clan and religious relations.

Religious fundamentalism draws its strength from this social disintegration, where everyone tries to remedy matters as he can.

The most enlightened governments, understanding the importance of widening the decision-making basis, associated to power new forces, capable of containing the people's discontent. But, after all, these are only tactical concessions, not radical changes, considering that power is still in the hands of an authoritarian minority, which acts according to the Western ideas and values only to safeguard their interests and not to reduce the national unbalances.

The development gap with the European neighbours has many aggravations.

One should not underestimate the in-principle refusal of the



Western model of development, which depends on factors of identity and independence and is at the origin of the passivity and the lack of the strong will that would be necessary in order to reach a competitive level. In short, there is no conviction that this is the right way, since it is too different from the one followed in the past, marked out by history and culture.

Furthermore, how could Africa ever compete, even if it were willing to do so, with a modern industrial agriculture, tailor-made to fit the possibilities, the profit goals and the markets of the large politico-economic Western aggregations?

But other important reasons can be found for the present malaise.

For example, the long deterior-

ation accumulated in time has never undergone a reversal of course, so that the damages have finally become more and more widespread.

Then there is the wicked mechanism of indebtedness. Nobody loves his creditors especially if, as is the case with the International Monetary Fund and the World Bank, the relation is strictly one-way, i.e. in line with the Western perspective, under the banner of the open market without reservations. As a result, the institutional incompetence of the African States and the frailty and poverty of the local economies are laid bare, while the local archaic economy based on barter, rural agriculture and family/tribe-level stock-farming is destroyed.

The attractive force of profit

crushes all previous efforts aimed at keeping the unity originally fostered by the opposition to a common enemy. The growing flow of information leads to comparisons, raises resentment and rancour, which are matrices of violence, revolution and terror, as happened in czarist Russia.

The preconceived hostility evolves but does not change direction. Only the West talks about solidarity, but it is not certain that Africa understands, accepts and absorbs it as a basis for a real approach.

The social mesh that is being destroyed in Africa nowadays is that which had succeeded, with its incisive creativity, in reacting to the damages of colonialism and the fragmentation of the Continent made with a drawing ruler, heedless of traditions and



history, to the relations with the U.S. and Russia in the bipolar period, to the new relations with the religious representatives of all faiths, to the international cooperation still managed by the European Countries and the multinational companies. The modernist connective tissue, still aware and heedful of Africa's history, is being destroyed: it is the "Proud to be African" generation, which has the merit of having wanted to check and manage most problems "in loco", avoiding the phenomenon of emigration, which is actually growing beyond any foreseeable limit.

In its place, by applying our model of development without adapting it to the different realities, we are nurturing a generation of crafty and skilled operators who only manage profit-oriented and utilitarian projects and do not hesitate a moment to get rid of any hindrance in order to remain competitive. They are indifferent to the general, regional or even local balances and also to the parallel rise of rebels injured to all kinds of suffering, against whom there is no antidote. Global terrorists, comparable to the romantic revolutionary workers of the last century as an atom bomb can be compared to the ball- and gun-powder pistol.

Furthermore, we should not disregard the fact that the African habitat is extremely

favourable to the development of terror organizations, whose aims could be simply criminal or ennobled by a political cause. In this limited area there are many different cultures, behaviours, objectives, forms of government and legal systems which permit to pierce the security measures and to keep easy connections and synergies also at long distances.

The road of multinational cooperation and that of a convergence of behaviours, capable of setting up a credible control grid as an indispensable prerequisite for a response to terrorism, have been marked out, but their implementation in Africa will meet with great difficulties.

The region is in terrible pain, and the most serious situation is the official/institutional one. Even if we consider only the last decades, we see that too many blows have been delivered to the reference values of each Country: independence and liberty, history and customs, value and merit, pride and success.

The first worldwide globalization took place with the discovery of America, when the West found out that the Earth was a sphere and extended its conquests. For Africa, the result was the slave trade.

The second occasion was the Berlin Conference which, in 1887, sanctioned the division and total colonization of Africa.

The third period started with decolonization and the era of development, with the making of mimic and nationalist states, the erosion of a millenary culture and the influx of foreign entrepreneurs who accelerated the impoverishment of the local societies by changing their priorities and causing immorality and pollution.

Now, with the advance of a generalized free exchange and neo-liberalism, we are at the fourth globalization. Obviously the poor Countries have everything to lose from the unrestrained opening of their markets in a picture of debts and therefore of dependence. The reduction of costs can be realized only to the detriment of man ad nature. The local policies are overwhelmed by the demands of the market, which directly colonizes the State and its residual potentialities.

In view of this, the prospect of a development guided by wicked decisions looms as a disastrous possibility. We refer to what was defined by Jean Francois Bayard as the "Somali way of development", based on drug trafficking, State crime, storage of toxic waste, and so on.

For those who do not accept the present reality there are only a few open roads. Resistance is severely penalized by the market laws, which affect the possibility of physical and psychological survival. Therefore there is only the way of clandestine dissent, with the foreseeable negative repercussions on security. The long series of failures occurred almost everywhere must be read in this perspective: bankruptcy of the States which, all together, do not reach 2% of the world's GDP; political failures, emphasized by coups, civil wars, corruption, genocides; emigration, which magnifies its disrupting effects on individuals, families, small communities.

The reaction to this general col-

lapse is a great deal of hatred, which naturally converges in the wide field of those who oppose the democratic development.

Luckily, the ordeal of institutional and official Africa encourages also the will to live and the natural strength of populations and persons. In this dimension, the natural role of the poor is striking: they are an absolute majority who, in savannas and forests, in shantytowns and immense suburbs, must invent a method of survival, a life at the margins of the official system, rediscovering, in a wider dimension, the dynamics of the family, accepting any kind of makeshift. Thus a new type of life takes shape, a life which for many is more attractive and more suited to the real needs of body and soul than that of the few well-to-do. Exchange, gift, loan. Feasts, dances, dreams, and games. The lost values are recovered. The "good", meant as such, is not money (which is in hiding) and not even the goods bartered or received as presents or loans, but the bonds which permit the flow of solidarity.

A real and vital society is taking root within the official society in a state of serious crisis. This process should not be confused with a simple reaction for survival, but rather understood as a progressive rediscovery and reappraisal of inalienable values. Its extent is unknown to most people, and perhaps is monitored only by some humanitarian NGOs. As a matter of fact, new "native" societies are rising, without the glitter, restraints and discomforts of the consumer's societies; without the new degenerate and wearing pseudo-values, originated by a progress undermined by the individual's success; without the obligation to run faster and faster

and to exaggerate every attitude in order to keep one's balance.

This phenomenon can be clearly seen on the outskirts of Dakar, where it involves hundred



of thousands of persons, but it is mostly present where there are large concentrations of poor and outcast people and is rapidly growing as a philosophy of life also in more emancipated realities.

In Africa, inattention and globalisation have favoured the triumph of independence, which is uncontrollable because it is

genetic and historical. It flourished in the middle of a severe and, at the same time, rich and generous nature and, until two centuries ago, was well established through the small social organizations of tribe and family. Later it became exaggerated by pride and dignity, as a reaction to colonialism and alienation.

Independence is not a social catalyst founded on the awareness of other people's rights, on tolerance and patience. Here it is an extreme refuge, a choice which, if questioned, unleashes a paroxysmal and violent reaction or its opposite, a total, aimless and endless resignation.

Lately we noticed a sensible change. Vast areas of positive independence are taking root within organizations that, being in a state of crisis, are unable to rise and join the progress of the West. Their power of attraction, everywhere in the world, should not be undervalued.

WHAT TO DO ?

To give a strong a reliable hand to Africa and its people it would be necessary, first of all, to speak their language. A language whose key words are not interest, opportunity, compromise or market but, as we have seen, identity, dignity, culture, nature, liberty, independence.

Even today, a personal commitment, guided by a genuine wish to know, could lead to correct some certainties dealt out with absolute carelessness by the mass media and believed by everyone with the same uncaring superficiality.

Failing simple and resolute recipes, even the apparently utopian solution of bringing together the poor and the rich in



one thinks that in Countries whose economies, up to a few year ago, coincided with the proceeds from natural resources or external aid, now people are beginning to discuss denationalization, liberalization and economic integration with Europe. Clearly, confidence and capabilities are growing, even if there is the awareness of the fact that market contacts should be postponed until better times.

The coexistence of opposite extremisms has created a trend, more or less visible and practicable from State to State, towards a kind of democratized authoritarianism in original and prudent forms, so much so that some analysts describe it as a homeopathic evolution based on the time factor, considered in its widest dimension, which tends to infinity.

Every Country follows this trend, adopting the model it can afford and taking into account its history as well as the internal and international situation. The greatest care is taken over the well-balanced involvement of the main actors of public life: religious party, the military, middle-class and government, taking care that the latter does not lose too much of its power, since it is not known into whose hands it could fall.

Where possible, the tendency is to widen the people's consent through a delicate and extensive compromise, in particular with the parallel religious power, whose social spur can greatly influence politics and economy. In this subtle game success depends mainly on the Leader's skill.

The time-factor is still to be feared, because the slow African approach does not match the speed of the changes affecting most of our planet.

In the general outlook there are also two great opportunities, as unfailingly happens when things don't go well.

the wake of the Western values should be explored. If anything else, in order to avoid an extreme conceptual divergence such as the one which is now gaining ground, driven, on the one hand, by the indifference of affluence and, on the other, by an irrepressible vitality.

There is no doubt that are the rich that should slow down and not the poor that should run faster. This is a problematic assumption, since it is difficult to think that the former could reduce their frenzied economic and trading rush forward without being swept away. Up to now, no one has shown the courage to experiment such a change in development. Thus the rush continues, sweeping away together those who are against and those who support it. This has reached the point that a choice of this type has become unavoidable.

In this land, where there is still time to stop and think, there is a growing conviction that it is possible to improve the coexistence of the different classes, the enemies of yesteryear. There is also the new idea that regional coope-

ration could be at least as fruitful as the bilateral relationship with the U.S. and the European Union.

The idea has a first positive implication, in that the willingness to unite tends to reduce the number of critical situations. Obviously, for those who hold power and wealth it is a question of profit rather than an ethic awakening. It is a matter of maintaining their status in exchange for more flexibility and helpfulness towards other people. In any case, the process of recognition and synergy gains benefit, while another advantage derives from the fall of ideologies, with the consequent more open and positive dynamics.

In a general context where democracy is objectively impossible, where the price of individual freedom could be a fundamentalist revolution, and where economic development implies a political stability obtained with authoritarian methods, it has been impossible to build anything better than some form of convergence towards the Western model.

The results are remarkable, if

The first opportunity is that of adapting the Western-style development to the new social forces risen from indigence and repulsion, making way for a more moderate, prudent, informed, extended and shareable way of development.

The second opportunity consists in making up for the external cultural and social disengagement by encouraging local initiatives, enabling the Africans to rediscover their strength by themselves, reacting to the deep-rooted temptation of depending on foreign help, selling their souls and limiting themselves to regret it thereafter.

It should never be forgotten that the future of Africa belongs to the African people. To think of building a region structurally compliant with the wishes of the Western Countries, or of putting the wounded giant on his feet only with the good will of others, would be presumptuous and suspicious.

If anything, it is a matter of re-establishing the best possible conditions for development, untying the many knots of captivity, before they are broken by violent and uncontrolled reactions unable to distinguish between good and evil, between help and exploitation.

Here also there are some positive signs. For instance, the periodic cancellation of the African nations' public debt, which is more significant as a symptom of world awareness than for its practical results. At the same time, in the region there is a larger recourse to dialogue, in the attempt to convince others, avoiding manoeuvres of power or the immediate adoption of coercive measures as was done in the past; this shows a new ability to use the instruments of democracy which, albeit not perfect, is commendable and worthy of success.

But an occasional and sporadic surfacing of good will is not

sufficient to mend the rent inside the region and with the rest of the world.

An urgent intervention is needed, in order to reverse the trend. A plausibly open intervention, because the redress of so many evils can only be global and cannot set aside the connection of the African Countries with their neighbours, with particular reference to Europe.

The way is already marked out. It would be sufficient to implement the concrete contents of the Barcelona Conference which, with its threefold economic, political and security goals remains the best plan ever devised by Europe for Africa and the Near East.

With an important conceptual change, envisaging the direct involvement of every suffering Country, be it good or bad.

The present limitations originate precisely from the fact that only few Mediterranean Countries participate in the project, since they were the only ones considered eligible from the viewpoint of Western progress and security. Another reason is the simultaneous management of two incompatible strategies: defensive, centred on regional bastions, and offensive, based on political economy and global opening.

A project founded on the exchange of really desired gifts, such as the distribution of wealth in exchange for the distribution of security, would be extremely attractive everywhere, despite the many conflicts in progress, particularly the one between Palestinians and Israelis. Indeed, the project would overcome and isolate them, showing what they really are, i.e. islands of very bad social, political and economic management.

Playing its part, Europe commits itself both politically and diplomatically but, often contradicted by the initiatives of

its members, continues to lack capabilities and conviction, showing its weakness and its economic paucity. So much the better: at least, in this umpteenth attempt at resurrecting Africa, there will be no pretext for giving in due to the presence of threatening external strong powers, as it occurred in the past.

CONCLUSION

A clear look at the "Black Continent" as a whole, with its identity, real and imaginary, emotional and pragmatic, dying and full of life, shows a swarm of unresolved problems, malaise and remorse, if one just wants to note the vainness of the goals pursued and the efforts made.

The security outlook reminds us that to live according to feasible and shareable rules, on the same wave-length as the entire human society and not only as its strongest part, to be at the centre of a commitment for progress, and to do our best, conscious of being on the right side, is a necessary prerequisite for any type of guarantee for peace, prosperity and development under the banner of continuity.

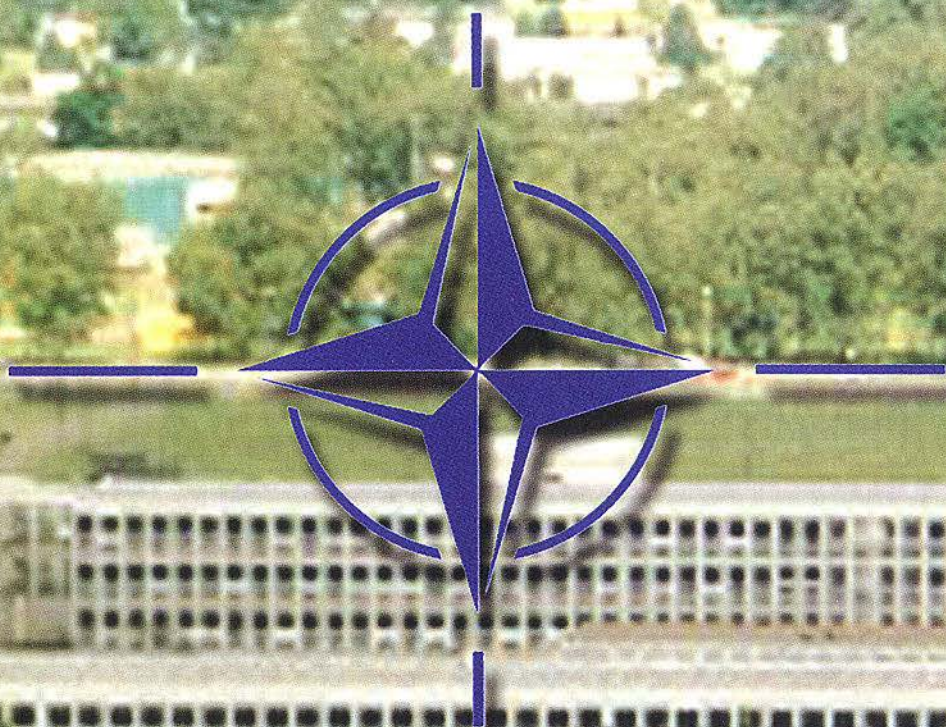
This is so necessary that it deserves our full attention for whatever time is needed, diverting it from the thousands of engagements connected with the protection of our immediate advantage.

Africa evolves as a symbol, falling into line with the new times.

The motionless giant, with his heavy silence, reminds us that in an objectively planetary frame of attention, everyone can contribute to the search of absolute benefits for all, ceasing to be satisfied with those obtained to the detriment of others.

□

**Major General (ret.)*



THE WISE ADAPTABILITY OF THE ATLANTIC ALLIANCE

NATO emerged from the epochal changes of the last century completely renewed and open to other countries, continuing to be an irreplaceable reference for peace and security.

After more than fifty years the Atlantic Alliance is the free Nations' best common asset, capable of ensuring peace and prosperity to the world, averting the spectre of wars and persecutions. The fall of the Berlin Wall and the attack to the Twin Towers caused a remarkable change in the political and strategic concept, but the ideals remain the same and this confirms the rightness of NATO' basic principles. Intense efforts are being made in order to establish the new 21,000 men-strong flexible Rapid Reaction Force which will be ready by October 2006. There will be no interferences with the European concept of security: NATO will act at operational level, while the EU will operate within the Petersberg agreements.

by Giuseppe Cucchi *



The American Secretary of Defence, Donald Rumsfeld, has recently said several times that "the mission determines the coalition and not vice-versa". According to many commentators and as was the case with Afghanistan, this statement explains why the U.S. only marginally did avail itself of the Atlantic Alliance's help, even though the Allies were unconditionally and commendably willing to participate. There is some truth in this consideration in the sense that, among the various options available, some of them could certainly have given the U.S. the possibility of acting more effectively and readily than a recourse to NATO would permit. Actually, the experts add that the Alliance's operational capability would have been heavily conditioned by the pursuit of the partners' consensus for every decision. By the way, this is probably the best safeguard of the Alliance. In fact, on the one hand it prevents the predominance of the internal hierarchies and bureaucracies over the bodies in which the Nations are directly represented, thus safeguarding NATO's inter-governmental character; on the other, it permits to keep constantly under control the activities of the Commanders on the field, blocking those decisions which, albeit right and correct in a strictly military sense, could be strategically and politically disastrous if examined from a wider viewpoint. Actually, the interventions of the North Atlantic Council (NAC) proved to be providential in at least two occasions. The first was when it became necessary to moderate a strategic policy that the military allies wanted to direct to the almost complete destruction of Yugoslavia's industrial infrastructure. The second case was when the NAC decided that NATO should not



A unit of the French Foreign Legion.

enter into competition with Russia in a senseless and dangerous rush to Pristina.

The fact that in every war – not only in this particular fight against terrorism – the situation determines the coalition and not vice-versa is an indisputable truth from every point of view: political, strategic, and military. The U.S. Secretary of Defence's statement does not add anything new for the comprehension of the present situation. If anything, it confirms, with the authority of a political and technical intervention at the highest level, the fact that NATO is right in the middle of a transition period, the second in its history, where its structure and assets, while perfect for the previous phase, must now adapt to the new needs, which have suddenly appeared and asserted themselves with quite unexpected strength, virulence and rapidity.

If we look back and review the history of the Alliance with a critical eye, we notice that it was initially conceived as the coalition most suitable for facing a situation of bipolar confrontation. The model was so successful that even the enemy could do nothing else

but adopt it, albeit in a slightly different form, framing it within a political context which was going to increasingly affect its practical effectiveness. Thus, for forty years, from '49 to '89, NATO took care of the defence of its member-States' territories and air/sea spaces, proving to be the "most successful Alliance in history", and a decisive instrument – albeit admittedly not the only one – for the victory of the West in the Cold War. The collapse of the Berlin Wall and the deriving upheavals accentuated the fact that, from that moment on, the old NATO – with its nuclear doctrines, its plans for huge tank battles on the plains of Central Europe and large armies based on conscription – was not the right instrument for facing a new situation, where the most urgent need was to control the instability of the arc of crisis closest to Western Europe, i.e. the area that from the Baltic goes to Central Europe and reaches the Balkans. In other words, the Alliance was not exactly the coalition required by the situation and was well

aware of it from the very first moment, to the point that, almost immediately, it took all the measures necessary for making the change which was seen as an indispensable condition for its survival. This was done in the years from 1989 and 1995. as a matter of fact, NATO in this period updated its vision of the world and the future, and made this public in 1990, with the final communiqué of the London Summit. It was the dream of a West with a heart and two large wings. The heart in Europe, one wing to the West, in Anglo-Saxon North America and one in the Soviet Union, that was going to melt into fifteen different States. In 1992, in Rome, a new strategic concept was approved. It was certainly imperfect and temporary, but it provided a basis for the much more elaborate plan adopted in Washington in 1999, on the occasion of NATO's 50th Anniversary. The modalities for membership were also changed, and the North-Atlantic Cooperation Council was created, anticipating that "Partnership for Peace" destined to evolve in the Euro Atlantic Partnership Council" (EAPC). New faces appeared at the Brussels's NATO HQ, sometimes persons with Mongolian features, people who spoke faltering English and maybe, now and then, at the canonical hours, spread a small mat in the corridors and oriented it towards Mecca to say their prayers. New realities gained ground: the Combined Joint Task Forces (CJTF) and the modular, multinational, joint and projectable Headquarters. We got used to the idea that NATO could no longer remain alone in the ivory tower of its splendid and isolated efficiency, but was meant to cooperate closely with other international organizations like the UN, OSCE, the EU and WEU. At

times it should have been even subordinate to them, if anything for legitimization reasons. Meanwhile and in the same way, the member States modified the structure of their forces deciding in most cases to end conscription, varying in favour of the Navy and the Air Force the traditional two-one-one proportion within the Armed Forces and trying to make projectable a larger part of the instrument. It was a long and at times painful process, which continuously questioned not only the previous situation but also the partial results already achieved. Besides everything else, it upset NATO's internal and long-consolidated balances of power – and the-

refore of privilege! – by shifting the attention of the Alliance to the south-east.

No wonder, therefore, if the change took no less than six years, making the Alliance again perfect for the situation only in 1995. In many ways the delay was not harmful, at least not to NATO. Its temporary absence from the military scene gave a free hand to the other security organizations which all tried, one after the other, to deal with the Balkan swamp. The results were so negative that they gave rise to an almost messianic expectation for the return on the scene of the old

German soldiers engaged in the Balkans.





Danish soldiers controlling a tracked vehicle before a mission.

Alliance. In the first half of the '90s, acknowledging its inability to reach an optimal level of military capability, NATO enhanced its political functions. Furthermore, it joined the E.U., considering that it was indispensable to proceed together to the rapid assimilation of the instable European area where the Soviet Union had prevented the explosion of tensions, while now Russia was not in a position to exert even a minimal control.

At any rate, in 1995 the transformation was almost completed and, from then on and for the rest of the decade, the Alliance was again the main tool of the West for the solution of possible crises. Nevertheless, this did not stop or slow down the transformation process. In 1997, in Madrid, there was the first enlargement and in Washington, two years later, the "New Strategic Concept" was approved. In this document NATO was almost prophetic, listing, in article 24, terrorism

as one of the emerging risks but it was unable to go all the way to the logical extreme consequences. Therefore, on September 11, 2001 NATO was a perfect coalition only for the two tasks that the member Nations had attributed to it until that moment, i.e. the defence of national territories and the management of crises that could endanger important Euro-Atlantic interests. On the contrary, it was not absolutely unprepared to face a terrorist threat of the kind triggered off by Al Quaida. That does not mean that NATO could do nothing or that, lacking more suitable instruments, it could not be effectively employed in a reaction. In fact, if the attack had not been directed against the United States but launched towards any European Country, the victim would have had no other choice but turn to NATO. Washington, on the contrary, could choose between an action prepared and conducted using only its own assets, a large coa-

lition based on many bilateral accords or, finally, a multilateral action planned and conducted by NATO. Probably the NATO option would have been the best from the political and public opinion's points of view, but, militarily, was certainly the least effective. Thus the preference given by the U.S. to the second option should not be considered as a pure and simple expression of a policy that suddenly becomes imperialistic while the "reluctant gendarme" of the world becomes a cowboy who takes the law into his own hands. There is surely also something of this kind in the American decision, but the main reason for it was that it was the best possible choice. And this would soon be proved on the field. It is worth noting, instead, the way the U.S. let NATO remain at the heart of the action, with a number of requests that permitted the Alliance to participate without being compelled to overexpose its limits. NATO could therefore offer its contribution to operation "Enduring Freedom", a valid support even if almost exclusively limited to air- and sea-actions. Eight NATO AWACS aircraft manned by multinational crews flew for a long time in the skies of the United States, NATO naval units patrolled the Indian Ocean and the Standing Naval Forces of the Mediterranean and the Atlantic took turns in the troubled waters of the Near and Middle East.

In the meantime NATO, well aware of the difficulties, tackled the problem of returning to be, as soon as possible, the coalition most suited for the specific situation. This was far from easy. Everybody agreed on the fact that the new and most

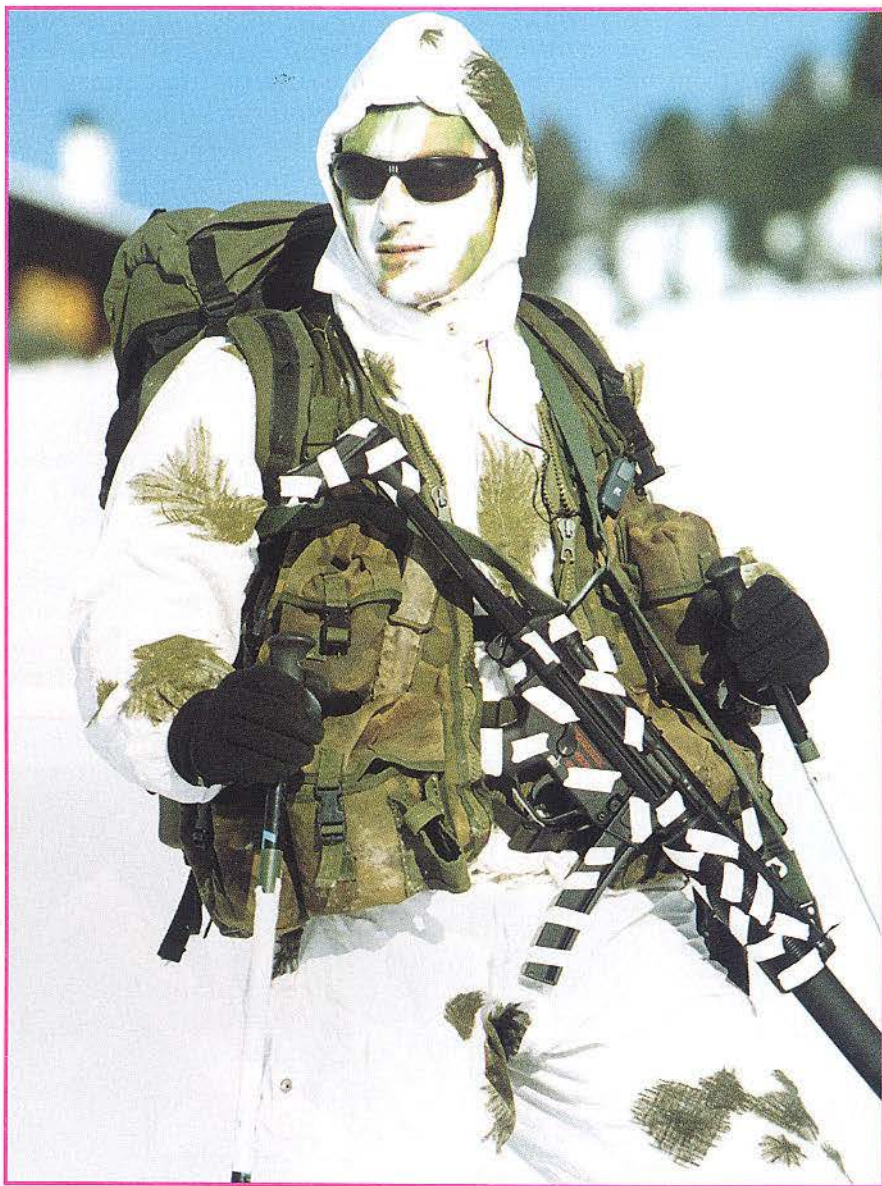
important task was the fight against terror, especially the one provided with weapons of mass destruction. The real problems appeared when it came to agree on a common definition of terrorism. This turned out to be almost impossible in a world where, according to the political outlook, the same person could be labelled as a ruthless terrorist or a brave fighter in a liberation war. Also here in Italy we have been faced with this dilemma and this schizophrenia during the Ocalan case. At the end, seeing that the member States were unable to agree on a precise definition, NATO was satisfied with the common definition of "terrorist acts", as had actually already been done by the E.U. The Alliance, spurred by the most concerned Countries, also tried to make a list of the organizations active in the international context. This attempt succeeded only in part and came to a standstill against the Palestinian and Kurdish stumbling blocks. In the first case, the U.S., Canada, the U.K. and Turkey were faced with a rather compact European group; in the second, the positions were much softer. At the two extremes there were Turkey and Belgium: the latter has been hosting for several years, in Brussels, the so-called "Kurdish Parliament in exile". Anyway, the Alliance did not discuss only about tasks and definitions but, more than that, it tried to acquire a new politico-strategic vision, in the light of which its structures could be revised.

What was clear from the beginning on the political plane, was that the new situation, albeit serious, did not justify in any way the abandonment of what was already under way. The management of crises and the consequent presence of NATO in the Balkans were to continue, even if with a lower

priority than in the past. A medium-term hope was that of promoting and accelerating as much as possible the European Union's assumption of responsibility in the security and defence sector. The possible deployment in the Balkans of a Corps under the European Union's flag (the so-called "Helsinki headline goal") and of a European police force would allow the Alliance to progressively reduce its presence down to purely symbolic levels. An idea that was also not abandoned was that of improving relations with Moscow, in order to reach a point where the

A ranger during an operation in a snowy environment.

ongoing process of Russia's conformation to the West could be considered irreversible, even if, up to that moment, the process had moved rather slowly and without any wing-stroke on the protagonists' part. Besides everything else, good relations with Russia were indispensable in view of the Prague Summit, where fundamental decisions regarding the second enlargement of the Alliance would be adopted. In order to be valid from the strategic viewpoint,



this operation had to take on the dimension of what the Americans, from the very beginning, had defined a "big bang", i.e. the admission of as many as seven new Nations. This measure, together with the almost simultaneous enlargement of the E.U., would almost conclude the process of recovery of the grey East European area.

An agreement with Russia, especially if facilitated by the existence of problems with international terrorism, which in many respects appeared to be common to both sides, at this point was almost unavoidable and, as a matter of fact, it was rapidly concluded at Pratica di Mare, with full and mutual satisfaction. Later, in the first

twenty-member joint meetings envisaged by the Treaty, one could easily see that times had really changed.

It was immediately clear, in fact, that the remaining differences were coming more from NATO than from Russia. The only real difficulty was therefore that of convincing the Russian delegates to make their speeches shorter

The alignment of Russia permitted to consider the risk of a large conflict completely waned and enabled the Alliance to totally revise its Command- and forces-structure. As a consequence, NATO began an internal debate – which had its logical conclusion in Prague – on the best way to adapt to the situa-

tion by adopting streamlined structures and relying on flexible, projectable and immediately-ready Headquarters/Units. For a while the picture looked rather complex, also because numerous, typically national requirements were added to the Alliance's. So, while the U.S. was pressing for the implementation of changes considered indispensable and undeferrable, also because most of them concerned American Commanders wearing a "double hat" (U.S. and NATO), many European Nations were fighting a delaying battle, often motivated by the wish to avoid losing the Allied Headquarters deployed on their territory. In many other instances, instead, as in the case of the "Centres of Air Operations Control" (CAOC), the resistance was due to undeniably sound strategic and operational considerations. After the Prague Summit, the final result of the debate is well known. At the highest level, the strategic Command of the Atlantic ceased being operational and took on only functional responsibilities. This was the official sanction of the Alliance's decreased interest for the North Atlantic area which throughout the whole bipolar era had been considered a potential theatre of a decisive air-naval battle aimed at safeguarding the inflow of the American allies to the European battlefields. At the same time, as a consequence of the same provision, the Central American Commander (COMCENT) lost his double hat and could devote himself only to the defence of the U.S. territory, a task that Washington wanted to be exclusive after the events of September 11.



British and American servicemen during a NATO activity.



A Spanish patrol on training.

Finally, the Russian territory, which for more than fifty years had been a responsibility of SACLANT/COMCENT, passed under the management of SACEUR. As a whole, there was a complete normalization of the situation: the idea of a possible large-scale conflict was completely abandoned and Russia was included in its natural geopolitical context. At the two lower levels, the reform approved in Prague heavily affected the number and characteristics of the Headquarters. Thus, the old "Combined Joint Task Forces" project was given a definite form, by envisaging two Forces: one "land based" and one "sea based". Therefore the number of fixed Commands was drastically cut (with particular reference to those considered a remnant of the Cold War). A very burdensome remnant in terms of men and resources.

Finally, the role of the "High Readiness Headquarters" (HRHQ) was emphasized. These Corps-level Major Units had been placed at the Alliance's disposal by the member Nations in the preceding years and in many cases were still going through the evaluation phase. The Prague reform involved also the forces and the

provisioning programmes. As a matter of fact, the U.S., exerting very strong pressures, succeeded in selling the idea of a "NATO Response Force", a formation of about 21,000 men, which should have an initial operational capability as soon as possible and be fully operational by October 2006. The hesitations, mostly European,



Members of a US ordnance-disposal team making preparations for blasting mortar bombs confiscated in Kosovo.



French soldiers training with a 120 mm field mortar.

were caused by the idea that the force could be somehow competitive with the European Union's Helsinki objective. These doubts were later overcome thanks to the consideration that the two forces would operate on two completely different planes: the NATO force at the highest operational level and the European force in the more restricted precinct of Petersberg-type missions. As regards materials, the Alliance abandoned with no regrets the so-called "Defence Capability Initiative (DCI) which had been launched at the Washington Summit but turned out to be a failure, in that it diluted in too many sectors of intervention the limited additional efforts that

the Partners were able to make. In its place, NATO launched, and duly approved, the "Prague Capabilities Commitment" (PCC) – oh, the Anglo-Saxon genius for abbreviations and acronyms! – which concentrated the common capabilities of effort on the eight groups of materials whose provisioning was considered an absolute priority in the light of the new situation. Within this framework, a new impulse was given to five pilot initiatives aimed at reinforcing the Alliance's capabilities in the specific sectors of nuclear, biological and chemical defence.

In substance, when NATO leaves Prague, the main lines of its second transformation are

already laid out. Among the tasks envisaged, the defence of the national territories remains, but more as historical remainder and transatlantic cement than as real necessity. Crisis management continues, but with the hope that the E.U. will soon be able to take over, at least in the Balkans. Control of the proliferation of weapons of mass destruction and fight against terrorism become the real *raison d'être* of the Alliance. Does this mean that NATO is once more the right coalition for the situation? Certainly not. The transforma-



tion process has just started and will require years, difficult years, in order to come to a successful conclusion. A possible arrival date could be the one fixed for the full operational capability of the NATO response force, i.e. the autumn of 2006. It is worth noting that in that case the second transformation would require the same time as the first, which went from the fall of the Berlin Wall, in November 1989, to the NATO air offensive against Serbia, in the summer of 1995.

The years of the first transformation were politically very important for the Alliance, in view of the time when its restored capabilities would take it back to the centre of the

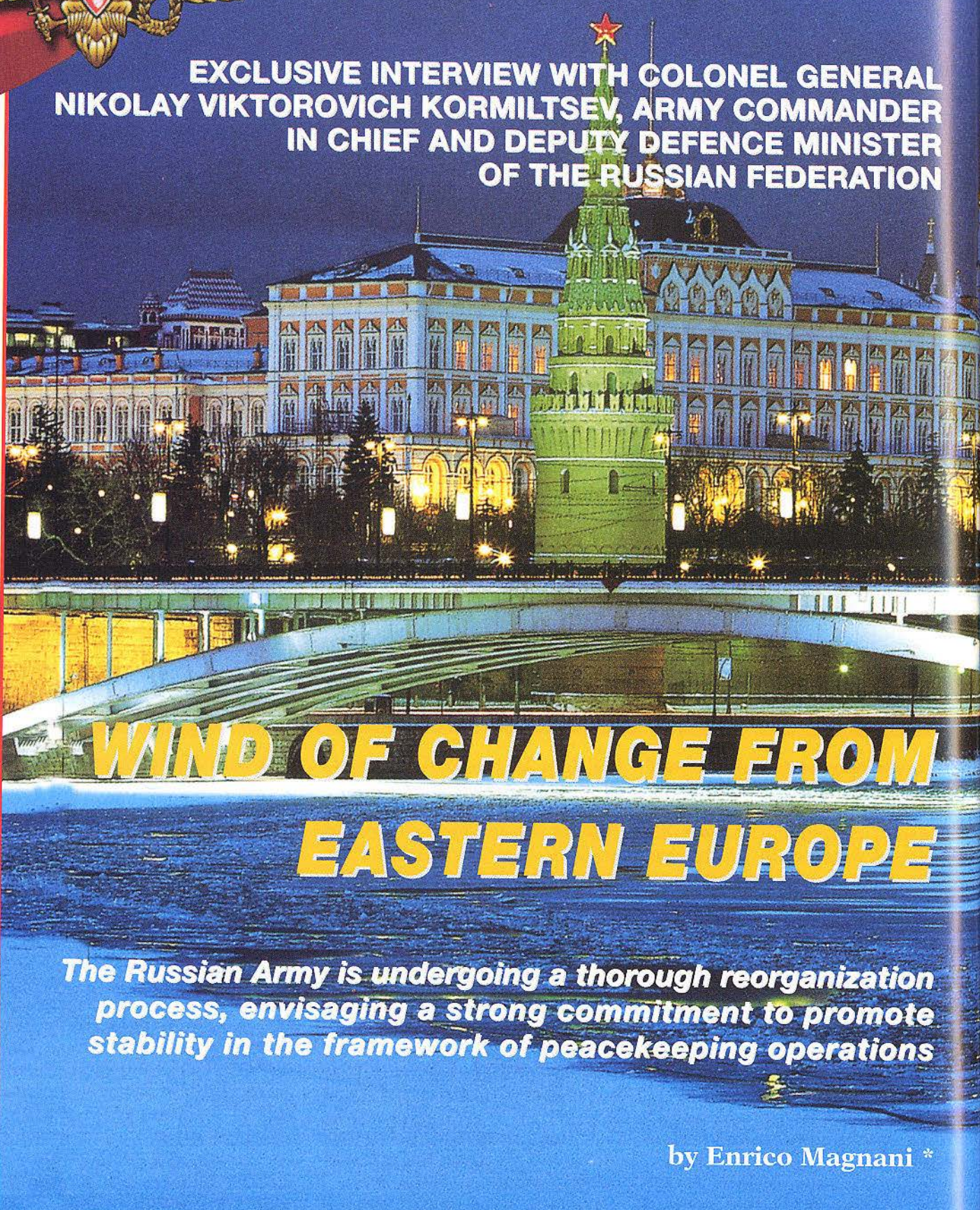
military factor. Will things go the same way this time? Probably yes, and therefore now is the moment to turn to politics, in order to receive the necessary minimal guarantees that are considered indispensable. The first guarantee entails honouring the commitments made in Prague, which are actually a selected minimum as compared to the necessities. The second regards the exact definition of the agreements between NATO and the Europe of security and defence. The existence of two structures working in the same sector can make us more flexible and therefore enrich us, but only if they are complementary. If they compete, for political or

Personnel of the Peace Forces in Kosovo ready to move to their areas of responsibility.

economic reasons, we risk becoming considerably weaker. Finally, in a time of traumatic and very rapid changes such as this, the politicians must have what the Americans call a "wild imagination". An imagination that, after all, existed and was fruitful during the first transformation of the Alliance. God bless the unknown genius who first had the idea of the Alliance for peace!

□

**Major General,
former Military Representative
to the NATO-EU Committees*



**EXCLUSIVE INTERVIEW WITH COLONEL GENERAL
NIKOLAY VIKTOROVICH KORMILTSEV, ARMY COMMANDER
IN CHIEF AND DEPUTY DEFENCE MINISTER
OF THE RUSSIAN FEDERATION**

WIND OF CHANGE FROM EASTERN EUROPE

The Russian Army is undergoing a thorough reorganization process, envisaging a strong commitment to promote stability in the framework of peacekeeping operations

by Enrico Magnani *

General, how is the Army reorganization getting on? Is there a connection with the restructuring of the other forces in your country?

The Army reorganization is getting on well. The aim is that of setting up a military instrument adequate to carry out the assigned tasks, as well as building a force equipped with a large number of mobile and combat-ready forces, effectively organized and manned.

I think that we will shortly meet this target. To date, major changes have been carried out in the structure and personnel sectors.

In the year 2001 only, over 1,000 new organizational provisions were adopted, i.e. an Army Supreme Command was set up; the Privolzhskiy and Ural Military Districts were unified; a more streamlined structure was created, relying on a reduced number of Army large units and elements. Notwithstanding this overall troop reduction, there was an increase in the number of large units and formations which were



The key elements of the new Russian Army are herewith explained for the first time: reforms, connections with the Red Army, military policy guidelines, functions of land forces in the third millennium, fight against terrorism, nuclear strategy, relations with former Soviet Republics, engagement in peace-keeping missions, Caucasus strategic position, future role of large armoured and mechanized units, present employment of Special Forces, recruitment of professional personnel, importance of the female component and Russian military values. These and other subjects are analyzed in detail by the Land Forces Commander of an old and prestigious country.



combat-ready without applying wartime procedures.

Given the results obtained so far, we hope that most of the planned structural changes will be implemented in one or two years.

In this connection, I would like to recall that *enhancing troops' capabilities and combat readiness* is among the Army's most important objectives. Therefore, priority one should be given to attain *personnel's better qualitative and quantitative standards*.

A radical and most appropriate solution is to man units with NCOs and troops recruited on a voluntary basis.

This will be a long, complex and costly process, but there is no other choice. Preliminary steps have already been taken in the legislative, experimentation and social sectors, by increasing the prestige of the military and enhancing their living conditions at material, cultural and social levels.

Equipment, technology and armaments are other important elements to improve the Army's combat power. To this end, besides updating, repairing and replenishing its existing fleet, the Army

is developing models to completely renew its arsenal. Automated Command and Communication systems, mainly at tactical group level, are most required, together with reconnaissance equipment, precision weaponry, attack helicopters, and anti-tank missile systems.

Personnel training, both at individual and unit level, is given great importance in order to boost the Army's combat power.

In fact, it is very important to improve the professional level of Officers and NCOs performing basic command functions, as well as enhance their educational capabilities.

To maximise the use of resources allocated to the training of troops, a constant effort is being made to fully exploit the technical equipment used during exercises. New combat techniques are developed, which take into account the lessons drawn from the fight against international terrorism in a wide range of geographical environments and weather conditions. Joint operations are also carried out with other armed forces or with special military units belonging to the Ministries of Defence, Interior



and Security. Particular emphasis has been placed on mobilizing the reserve component, establishing an infrastructure to meet all Army requirements, developing highly qualified officers and lower rank specialists and enhancing logistic units.

In future wars and especially in the fight against international terrorism, joint actions will be increasingly required, with the participation of the Ministries of Defence, Interior and Security. In fact, a wide range of highly demanding tasks are to be carried out jointly. The Army's interaction

Left.
"Ka" 50 fire support helicopter.

Right.
View of the city of St. Petersburg, also known as "the Venice of the North".

Below.
"Tunguska" a/a self-propelled gun.

with the Air Force is particularly important, as that with the Navy in coastal areas.

Therefore it stands to reason that the issues relating to the



Army reorganization should be connected to those of the other Armed Forces.

First of all, the command structure will be reformed. Military Districts (1) have been given the status of operational-strategic commands to exercise their authority over large units and other elements deployed in their area of responsibility. We will make an effort to connect all automated command and communication systems to the several levels of the chain of command.

The structural changes carried out in the other Services (the

establishment of new Air Force groups, air defense systems, airborne forces, naval forces) have been tailored to the operational requirements of Army's large units, so as to ensure them an adequate support. Other reform measures have been taken to unify military means and equipment, as well as enhance both the infrastructure and technical and logistical systems. Joint measures have been carefully planned and implemented for the preparation of units.

This way, we will be able to execute our plans and promptly

employ our forces, when an emergency response is required.

Speaking of the Russian Army, we cannot but recall the Red Army. Is today's Army still connected to the past and when did it first break with it?

In my opinion, there was not a real break with the past. Today's Army was not born from scratch, but is the offspring of the Soviet Army which, in turn, inherited the traditions of the Red Army in 1946. Today, it enrolls the children and grandchildren of those who fought during the 1941-45 Great Patriotic War to defend our country's honour and independence and free peoples from fascism.

We still remember the courage, heroism and sacrifice of those soldiers, who have become role models for the youth who are presently serving their country.

The strength of the Red Army was based on its high moral values and glorious traditions. Those tenets were strictly linked to the pre-revolutionary experience, spanning from the great march of Svyatoslav, the Prince of Kyiv, to the successful battles of Aleksandr Nevskij, to the fight against the Mongolian-Tartar

invasion, to Suvorov's work "The science of winning", to the patriotic war in 1812 and to other glorious pages in the history of our country.

The Russian Army has profited from the achievements of the Red Army and still keeps its war flags, as a symbol of honor, gallantry and glory, and oldest traditions. To give an example of Russian soldiers' heroism and courage, we may recall their fight against internal and international terrorism in the Northern Caucasus and the peacekeeping missions carried out in the Commonwealth of Independent States (CIS) and other countries. Concepts such as patriotism, honour, gallantry, courage, bravery, sacrifice, solidarity, relief in combat, capability of enduring dire hardship, treating defeated enemies humanely are deeply ingrained in today's Army.

The Red Army fought long and bloody battles against the Nazi Army, a strong enemy at that time, and showed the clear superiority of its armaments, technical means, organization and military craftsmanship. The experience gained by the Red Army in combat was so unique and wide-ranging that it can be useful even today, to carry out the present reorganization, as well as military training and tasks. Its guidelines are not followed verbatim, but adapted to the present situation, characterized by modern warfighting equipment, new political and military scenarios and new developments in military concepts and actions.

The Army has substantially changed from the times of the Red Army. During the period of the Great Patriotic War Russian soldiers covered the distance between Moscow and Berlin on foot. Today the Army is equipped with modern and sophisticated weapons, considered as the best in the world. The warmaking, mobilization and maneuver capabilities have been greatly developed, as well as personnel's exper-

tise, cultural background, professional skills, moral and psychological qualities.

Another key element characterizing today's Army is the prohibition for the military to join political parties and politically oriented associations. The Armed Forces are called upon to avert external attacks and defend the integrity and inviolability of the Federation's territory, thus acting in the interest of the whole country and not of single social groups only.

In August 1998 the Government issued a framework document stating the guidelines of the Federation's military policy up to 2005. In line with that directive, what is the Army's role?

The guidelines of the Federation's military policy are illustrated by the Concept of National Security and Military Doctrine ratified by the President of the Federation in 2000. Based on those documents, the Armed Forces are key to the military security of our nation. Most tasks are assigned to the Army, given our geographical position and territorial extension, exceeding 22,500 km.

One can appreciate the Army's role and importance in guaranteeing the military security of our nation through the study of our military history. In fact, the Army has always been the cornerstone of the Russian Armed Forces and was crucial in defeating the Nazi Army during the Great Patriotic War.

Moreover, the Army plays a very important role and is the backbone of our strategic forces. Thanks to its multi-functional and versatile capabilities, it takes the lead in averting possible enemy attacks or defending our territorial integrity and national interests, as well as repelling attackers and identifying and defusing armed conflicts fought along the borders.



An artillery battery carries out a live exercise.

The Army is also responsible for carrying out a wide range of territorial defense tasks, including the enforcement of the martial law, the training, preparation and deployment of strategic reserve forces.

Today, the role played by the Army has gained increased importance, as traditional attacks waged by hostile countries have become less threatening than conflicts of different intensity, mainly linked to international terrorism and other type of extremist actions. A case in point were the counter-terrorism operations carried out in the Northern Caucasus, where Army units were pivotal in combating large armed gangs. During armed conflicts, the Army is called upon to identify and curb regional uprisings, detect and disband outlawed



and terrorists, as well as destroy their headquarters, training grounds, warehouses and communication networks. It is also tasked to guarantee the rule of law in emergency situations and defend the national heritage.

The Army's important role is also highlighted by its implementation of Russia's international engagements and participation in peace-keeping missions.

In fact, since 2001, peace-keeping missions have been solely entrusted to the Army. Personnel are engaged in the difficult task of separating the warring factions and guaranteeing the safety of civilians living in Abkhazia and in the Southern Ossetia region in Georgia, in the Pridnestrovie region in Moldavia (former Yugoslavia) and in other parts of the world, to create the preconditions for a political solution of conflicts.

Therefore, the Army plays a key role in guaranteeing our country's

military security. Although it makes up only 40% of the Armed Forces' overall strength, the professionalism of its personnel, as well the structure, combat readiness and warfighting power of its divisions and units allow for countering all threats to our national interests.

Nuclear weapons had a specific role and function in the Soviet Army, as their use was envisaged in the planning and conduct of both defensive and offensive operations. Has the Army modified its concepts on the use of nuclear weapons?

The Federation considers nuclear weapons as a security guarantee and a deterrent against possible attacks to the nation and its allies.

However, nuclear weapons are not the only means to pose a deterrent threat or repel an attack. In fact, based on the new wording of the Concept of

National Security, as ratified by the Presidential Decree of January 2000, today Russia can employ any means or force in its possession, nuclear weapons included, to repel an armed attack, only when all other measures have turned out to be ineffective to settle a crisis.

Nuclear systems and forces at tactical and tactical-operational levels have always played a major role in the Russian policy of nuclear balance. While in the past the role of tactical and tactical-operational weapons was mainly that of amplifying the power of traditional forces, now their political-military function is integrated into a general system and has become more similar to that of strategic nuclear weapons.

Today, the resort to the use of tactical nuclear weapons is a responsibility of our country's higher political authority, in a contingency. Only at a later stage, nuclear attacks are planned and carried out.

However, new measures have been taken in this sector to enhance security levels and rule out a possible unintended use of those weapons.

As regards the Russian security policy, the stability of the former Soviet Republics is very important. What are the connections between the Russian Army and those of the Republics? Will these historical ties be further strengthened?

The Armed Forces of the former Soviet Republics, today belonging to the Commonwealth of

independent States (CIS), were born from the territorial break-up of the Soviet Army, which was once a powerful and unified military instrument.

Consequently, as these states exert their authority over the same territory and share military means and armaments, military security programs, force structures, as well as troop training and deployment systems, it would be impossible for them not to keep strong cooperation ties in the military sector.

Collaboration among CIS nations has been a gradual pro-

cess which now is mainly linked to the protection of their mutual interests.

Military cooperation is multifaceted, i.e. there is unrestricted cooperation mainly in the sectors of peacekeeping and border and air space defense.

Nations are also cooperating within the framework of the *Treaty on Collective Security*. The Treaty is aimed at enhancing regional security, based on bilateral agreements dealing with issues of particular importance, as regards military infrastructure and security guarantees. A particularly important achievement

has been obtained in the sector of military security cooperation, *when a single air defense system has been established for all CIS nations*. This system allows nations to defend their airspace boundaries, jointly control the use of their airspace, have a centralized airspace information system and a unified command of air defense forces and means, in case of an attack.

There is wide cooperation at technical-military level, which also encompasses coordinated industrial plans and programs, mutual maintenance and supply

of weapons and military equipment, development of scientific research and development, coordinated procurement of material and technical resources and joint modernization of military assets. This cooperation has boosted the mass production of military equipment, lowered production costs and eased the access to CIS nations' markets.

Another important aspect of cooperation is the further development of peacekeeping activities aimed at defusing armed conflicts broken out within CIS nations. This is a basic precondition





Above.
*"BTR-80" transport and attack
 armoured vehicle in service with
 motorized infantry units.*

Left.
"Mi-28A N" attack helicopter.

tion to guarantee regional security and stability. Thus, the joint intervention of CIS peacekeeping forces succeeded in stopping the civil war in Tajikistan and laying the foundation for a political solution to the strife between Abkhazia and Georgia. Peacekeeping operations have taught us how important it is to equip the Armed Forces of CIS nations with units specialized in these types of missions.

A further development of our cooperation effort in the peacekeeping sector will allow us to set up and train joint units with special tasks.

The fight against international terrorism has recently become one of the main causes for concern.

To fight terrorist organizations, there is the need for a mutual exchange of information

about their composition, numbers, location and types of actions. Moreover, a cooperation effort is required to set up, train and equip counter-terrorism units with the most advanced weapon systems, munitions and military means to jointly carry out special operations in the future. The Russian Army actively supports the Armed Forces of other CIS nations in organizing and modernizing their national forces, developing their military leadership, implementing joint measures to train units to carry out operational and military tasks, coordinating the territorial allocation of military assets and establishing common guidelines to set up an replenish stocks of means and materials.

I think that our relations in the military sector are based on a sound foundation which can be further enlarged in the future. This is mainly possible because integration in the military sector does not endanger the sovereignty of CIS nations, but allows them to cut costs and establish new political and economic ties.

Thanks to military cooperation, nations are better geared to effec-

tively counter all types of challenges, risks and threats, while European and Asiatic regions are further stabilized.

The Caucasus region has resumed its strategic role of crossroads between Europe, South-West Asia and the Middle East. Could you explain the Army's role within the activities carried out by the CIS to stabilize the Caucasus region?

The geopolitical features of the Caucasus have a particular bearing on the present socio-political situation of the region and its development trends. In fact, the Caucasus has always been a geographical linchpin between Asia and Europe. Some countries considered the collapse of the Soviet Union and the emergence of new sovereign states in the Trans-Caucasus as a historical opportunity to extend their power over that region and weaken the Russian grip on the area.

There are other important factors which affect the situation in the region, such as historical disputes of economic, social, religious and inter-ethnic nature and territorial claims among the various populations residing in that area. The rash initiatives taken by some politicians exacerbate these rivalries at times and create flash points of instability which may blow up at any time.

These initiatives, stemming from Russia's weakened grip on the Trans-Caucasus region after the collapse of the Soviet Union, have brought about several armed conflicts which have disrupted the stability of the area. The conflict between Armenia and Azerbaijan over Nagorno Karabakh, which has lasted for ten years, is one of them. Other disputes are fuelled by nationalist tendencies in the Georgian regions of Abkhazia and Southern Ossetia.



Russian personnel serving in the peace-keeping mission in Tajikistan.

CIS nations' and Russia's political authorities made every effort to curb the conflicts in those regions and bring the warring parties to the negotiating table.

The Russian Army played a pivotal role in quelling the controversies in Georgia and restoring peace and stability. In fact, the Army is mandated by the CIS to prevent conflicts from escalating and guarantee the safety of the civilian population.

But the complete stabilization of the region solely depends on warring parties' willingness and resolve.

The situation in the Northern Caucasus is different. Here the theory that the Chechen people are fighting for their national independence has proved to be groundless. In fact, if that was the case, from 1996 to 1999 a local leadership could have been established, with the political support of Russia, and international-

ly recognized. But nothing of the sort happened. The Chechen territory has become the stronghold of international terrorism, from which to attack Russia, and, a fertile breeding ground for Wahabist theories. Wahabism is a very active, aggressive and radical movement within Islamic fundamentalism. Mercenaries, religious zealots, as well as flows of weapons and drugs have poured into that region from all over the world. Slave trafficking is widespread in the area. Hundreds of people have disappeared without trace or have been cruelly tortured.

This situation was compounded by the onslaught of armed terrorists in nearby Daghestan and bomb attacks against civilian buildings in Moscow, Volgograd and Buynaksk., where innocent people were ruthlessly killed.

No country in the world could have left these actions unpunished.

It should be noted that terrorist gangs, well organized and equipped with last generation weapons, carry out professional, cruel and

unpredictable actions. As things stand, it would have been impossible for law enforcement forces alone to have the upper hand on terrorists.

Therefore, the Army initially gave fundamental support to these operations. In fact, thanks to its structure and capabilities, the Army is a multi-functional and versatile force, capable of carrying out all combat tasks anywhere, against any enemy and under any condition. Besides disbanding armed gangs, the Army was tasked with monitoring and defending key positions, setting up road blocks and checkpoints, protecting and escorting convoys, as well as guaranteeing the rule of law and enforcing other provisions.

When those gangs were finally defeated, many tasks were handed over to the Police, law enforcement and federal security forces. As a consequence, the number of large units was considerably downsized, together with those elements directly involved in operations.

At present, powerful criminal



Russian tank unit in action.

organizations are no longer present in Chechnya, but there are only small groups made up of 5-10 members and few cells with up to 50 people. They mine roadways, carry out armed robberies at night and go back home at dawn just like innocent citizens.

Therefore, law representatives, special authorities tasked with finding and apprehending criminals, together with Armed Forces' special units, are to be particularly efficient. The Army has deployed one large unit in the area and a number of special elements.

It is worthwhile recalling that as militia forces' bases and hideouts were destroyed and the flows of weapons and munitions from abroad were disrupted, terrorists' material supplies and actions were greatly reduced and all attempts to unify their forces under a single command failed.

Concurrently, the authorities of nearby Georgia have identified terrorists' bases and staging areas on their territory, precisely in the Pankissi gorge, and are determined to destroy them.

As a consequence, the Chechen people are increasingly convinced that things would be better if terrorist actions stopped. They are tired of war. In the next few years there will be a huge effort to restore normal conditions, by apprehending criminals still at large, restoring the rule of law and reviving the economy and social institutions.

The objectives set by the CFE (Conventional forces in Europe) Treaty have been met. Has the Army encountered any problems in destroying so many tanks, infantry combat vehicles, artillery pieces and helicopters, as envisaged by that Treaty?

It is important to keep in mind that the CFE Treaty was signed in 1990 and before that date there had been a long preparation and

coordination work, which lasted many years. That Treaty radically changed the deployment of forces in Europe. Neither the Organization of the Warsaw Pact nor the Soviet Union exist any longer, while the CFE nations shifted from 22 to 30 and grouped with the former Soviet Republics. Many Eastern European countries have already become NATO members, or have applied for membership in that military organization which continues to expand eastward.

As regards the CFE Treaty, establishing the Army's disarmament levels, I can assure you that we did not encounter any problems. This was due to the fact that when the Treaty was signed, the Russian Federation's Military Doctrine had already charted a defensive course, envisaging a drawdown of conventional forces. The risks of large armed conflicts involving the Federation had also receded.

Actually, we encountered some difficulties in meeting the terms of the CFE Treaty regarding residual flank limits, which did not



take into account the new politico-military situation.

When a crisis broke out in the Northern Caucasus, the Federation did not have sufficient stocks of armaments and combat systems in place to rapidly and effectively neutralize the armed conflict.

The transfer of large units and military elements deployed in other parts of the Russian territory to that region was very costly and partially contravened the terms of the Treaty.

Now things have returned to normality and surplus military assets and armaments have been withdrawn. However, we cannot rule out the possibility that a situation reoccurs or that a new crisis breaks out in another area.

Moreover, a maintenance centre specialized in armoured vehicles has been deployed to the region.

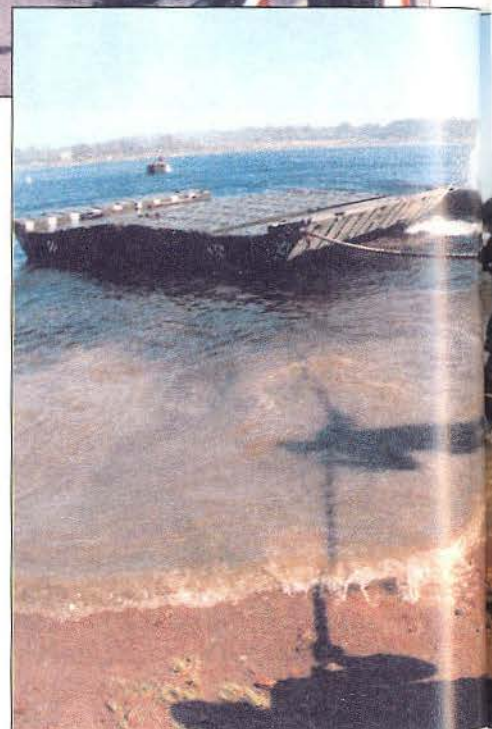
The tanks and armoured combat vehicles which are serviced in that workshop, as well as those in a good state of repair, even if organically assigned to other units, are counted in the armament aggregate levels of that

region. This creates some difficulties in the rigorous implementation of the terms of the CFE Treaty.

An "Adapted" CFE Treaty is under study, which will hopefully reconsider present situation and solve present problems. Based on that agreement, conventional armament levels in Europe should be further reduced. Russia will not have any problems in implementing the "Adapted" Treaty, as the established armament and combat vehicle level has almost been reached.

According to some military experts, high-intensity operations are extremely unlikely at present. Therefore, what role will large heavy units play in the future?

I think it is too early to say that the role and functions of large heavy units will be less and less important in future armed conflicts. The supporters of this theory maintain that modern anti-tank weapons will easily outdo traditional tanks in com-



bat. A weapon capable of piercing an armour plate over 1 meter thick already exists. Large numbers of light and portable a/t weapons have recently been fielded, which cannot be easily detected and destroyed. Therefore, some experts think that both tanks and other armoured vehicles are no more invincible and that their wide employment in the battlefield will be ineffective, mainly in

Left.
"Alexius II", Chief of the Orthodox Church, attends a ceremony.

Below.
Troops of the pontoon engineers corps.

closed areas.

In my opinion, these views are unsubstantiated. The production of tanks at worldwide level proves that it is not yet clear whether the "shield" or the sword" will have the last word. New types of tanks have already been designed and defense systems are being refined with add-on ballistic protection and new materials.

Active defense systems are also

large armoured and mechanized units have also been enlarged, as these forces can rely on increased coverage by other troops or means. In particular, the basic concepts for the use of combat vehicles in the tank support role are being developed. They feature an add-on armour and can support tanks or destroy enemy anti-tank vehicles.

Another theory seems rather far-fetched, according to which large "heavy" units are unfit to operate in closed and inaccessible areas, where conflicts of different nature are most likely to take place at present. It solely depends on whether they are used in a flexible way or not. In fact, tanks, infantry armoured vehicles

cess.

Another reason why those who think that large units, both mechanized and armoured, have become of little use is that, at present, the main threat to civilized nations comes from international terrorism and fundamentalism. To fight these groups, special units are required. This is partially true, but it would be rash to reorganize the Army based on that judgement.

Today, there are many nations, especially in Central and Eastern Asia, where regular forces are mainly based on Groups including large armoured and mechanized units. No one can rule out the possibility of an armed conflict requiring their support. Special Units will be of little use, in the case of a war against those countries. In that case, the enemy will only be overcome by large-scale operations carried out with the support of heavy units.

Moreover, armoured/mechanized units and elements may be successfully employed to fight terrorist organizations as well, especially if the latter are not equipped with effective a/t systems. A case in point are the fairly good results obtained by Israel by using tanks to fight Palestinian terrorists also in an urban environment.

I think that those who are convinced that the Air Force can be successful even going it alone, are not completely right. Though the importance of this force is indisputable, we have learned from previous experience that it can be effectively employed against an enemy with a limited or no air defense system.

As a rule, combat operations do not end by achieving "fire superiority", even if its effect will contribute to utterly destroying the enemy, seizing key areas and freeing occupied territories.

It will be practically impossible to obtain such results without employing large armoured/mechanized units and carrying out



employed, which can destroy missiles and a/t ammunition along their midcourse phases and an enhanced dynamic defense system will be shortly operational. Moreover, night vision sighting equipment, as well as communication, reconnaissance and firing systems are being updated, while maneuver and advance capabilities are being enhanced.

The employment options of

and personnel carriers are multi-role equipment and can be used in the fire and support role to combat in built-up areas, break through reinforced areas and carry out mountain operations. In case of a breakthrough in a main line of defense on open ground, large heavy units may be used to counterattack, while in case of deployment to an operational theatre, they are key to suc-



Haapsalu Episcopal Cathedral.

high intensity combined arms operations.

Therefore, in my opinion, large armoured and mechanized units are unlikely to play a secondary role in the future. Moreover, there is no reason to believe that large-scale combined arms operations will be streamlined in the future. However, much will depend on those who will choose the best way to employ large units in the field, train personnel and exploit armoured vehicles' technical and combat capabilities.

The Red Army has mainly employed a wide range of mortars, howitzers, cannons, multiple rocket launchers and self-propelled means. How will the Artillery be organized in the future?

The Artillery, which has been further integrated with missile forces, has always played a decisive role in the history of Russian Armed Forces, given its firing

accuracy, effective preparation and rate of fire, in all geographical, weather and visibility conditions.

The vehicles used by missile and artillery forces can carry out quick movements and manoeuvres on the battlefield and adequately protect personnel.

The experience gained in regional wars and armed conflicts fought over this last decade proved that missile, artillery and air forces delivered about 80/90 % of the aggregate firepower. In close combat operations, artillery fire reached 50-80%. This testifies to the fact that the role and functions of missile and artillery troops in achieving "fire superiority" will remain unchanged in the near future, especially following the adoption of high accuracy munitions. Moreover, enhanced air defense capabilities will inevitably lead to a limited use of air forces to provide direct fire support to units and elements operating in the field.

As regards the future of missile and artillery units, a possible solution seems that of setting up, within large units, reconnaissance

and firing elements, including air and space vehicles, missile systems at operational and tactical levels, as well as rocket launchers, self-propelled artillery and EW systems, grouped under a same command.

Reconnaissance systems will play a key role, as they will allow for collecting accurate and reliable





Left.

St. Petersburg, Pushkin Royal Palace.

Below.

"T-90S" battle tank.

ble real-time data on the selected targets, even in very distant places and areas undetectable from surface points. Connections are provided by automated systems linking units to Army Corps.

Computer-based and command systems will be as important as reconnaissance and fire equipment, in obtaining both fire and

radio-electronic superiority in almost real time, even over highly maneuverable enemy troops.

Therefore, the main developments in the field of automated systems will be applied to unified multi-role command vehicles, which will be fielded to tactical and operational command

systems, tactical missile units and elements, as well as to combat and combat support troops.

The new qualitative standards of missile and artillery troops will allow for designing and developing weapon systems with enhanced firing ranges and kill capabilities. These systems, together with new generation weapons equipped with automated sighting and targeting devices,

will boost the effectiveness of combat units and increase the number of their tasks.

In sum, I would like to restate that missile and artillery assets are now, as in the past, the weapons of choice in any war and will play a leading role in future armed conflicts.

Therefore, the Army's future capabilities and combat power will mainly depend on the changes made in this sector.

The Red Army's organizational structure comprised many special units. What is the role and nature of "Spetsnaz" in today's Army?

Special units and elements were set up at the beginning of the post-war period. When the Armed Forces of the most powerful nations in the world resorted to a massive use of missiles and nuclear weapons to fight their enemies, our military authorities decided to create new forces and reconnaissance means, to effectively identify enemy weapons and delivery systems, as well as collect information on possible enemy targets.

As early as the Great Patriotic War, the Red Army paid special attention to the training of personnel specialized in reconnais-





sance-sabotage tasks. Our combat experience proved that those units, if adequately prepared and equipped, had both reconnaissance and kill capabilities, and could destroy nuclear weapons, command sites and other important enemy targets.

Therefore, large units and elements with special tasks, together with their staff bodies, were set up within Military Districts to carry out the above mentioned missions.

The lessons learned from today's regional wars and armed conflicts taught us that special units can effectively carry out combat operations, when a rapid reaction is required, either before the intervention of combined arms teams or after the onset of a conflict.

Moreover, they collect information which cannot be obtained by other reconnaissance means and destroy or neutralize important enemy targets. Their actions include intercepting command activities, disrupting logistic systems, cutting communication

lines and blocking the flow of reserves and supplies.

Special units are capable of infiltrating enemy territory to approach the targets they are reconnoitering. This way, it is possible to identify their exact position and collect reliable information, before data are released from other information sources. As things stand, large units and elements with special tasks may also carry out other important missions, such as research of rescue operations, in the case of aircraft or helicopter disasters or incidents, or participate in peacekeeping missions and counter-terrorism actions.

Thanks to their specialized training, these units proved to be particularly effective in fighting armed gangs in the Northern Caucasus. They mainly carried out the following tasks: identification of the hideouts, bases, camps and training centers of these gangs; destruction of weapon, ammunition and equipment storage sites; chase and capture or neutralization of small groups

of combatants or terrorists and their supporters.

As a consequence, large units and elements with special tasks are becoming more and more important. The Russian Armed Forces' "Spetsnaz" has a long track record of combat experiences and are key to guarantee the military security of our nation.

Army personnel is mainly made up of young conscripts serving for 12 to 24 months, depending on their level of instruction. What is the current development stage of the Army's professionalization process, to be finalized by 2005?

As I have already said, the Army's shift to an all volunteer system is considered by our political leadership as fundamental to increase our strength and combat power. The Ministry of Defense, together with the appropriate federal agencies belonging to the executive power, after analyzing all the issues relating to

Left.
"BMP-3" Infantry transport and attack vehicle.

Right.
Tanks crossing a waterway.

the system of manning the military organization, has submitted proposals to speed up the transition to a voluntary army. These are the basic issues dealt with by the Government's proposal presented to the President of the Russian Federation in September 2001. The President has endorsed that document and tasked governmental authorities with developing and testing the relative federal program by 2004.

The shift from conscription to a system in which personnel is enrolled on a contractual basis is not a simple change in status. On the contrary, it includes a series of provisions envisaging organic and structural changes in units, as well as in the civil and military infrastructure and level of technical equipment. The allocation of large funds and material resources is therefore necessary. To man only one division with contracted personnel, 2/2,5 billion rubles will be required and yearly maintenance costs will be much higher than those necessary to support an all conscript division.

Therefore, the provisions for establishing this new enrolment system envisage *three phases: a preparatory phase to be completed by the end of 2004; an implementation phase from 2005 to 2010 and a follow-up phase*, whose time-line will be established based on the outcome of the operational phase and the work completed.

To implement these objectives, ad-hoc working groups have been established at the Interagency Commission for military security of the Russian Federation's Security Council, as well as at the appropriate governmental federal agencies. Their work has

been organized following the directives of the Federation's President and Government.

As early as July 2002, the proposal to man military positions with contracted personnel was submitted to the Federation's Government, while the following federal program will be finalized in October 2003.

Until July 2003, the new concepts will be tested at the level of large units and elements, where it will be possible to ensure the necessary conditions and infrastructure, the required equipment level, the good state of armaments and military means and the performance of routine technical and combat training tasks. Non military operations will be carried out by civilian personnel or by a special contingent performing an alternative service.

Moreover, by the end of 2004, new changes will be made to the Federation's laws and steps will be taken to give further luster to the military status.

In the implementation phase, in line with the requirements satisfied, the number of military units and elements manned with contracted personnel will be gradually increased. This will mainly involve high-readiness units, which are an important foundation for the military security of our nation.

It is anticipated that the length of conscription will be shortened only when 50% of the positions covered by soldiers and NCOs are assigned to contracted personnel.

If the provisions envisaged by the federal program are rapidly and totally funded, by 2010 it will





"Mi-8" helicopter hovering over a Russian compound.

be possible to man most soldier and NCO rolls with personnel contracted on a voluntary basis.

In my opinion, this new system to man the Russian Armed Forces is both effective and tailored to the future development of our economy.

When have women first entered the Russian Armed Forces? What positions do they cover?

Though soldiering was considered as a typical male activity in the past, women too served their country with devotion. Their names have long been written in the list of our national heroes. Many of them have taken part in several battles, such as Princess Olga of Kyiv, who was at the head of one unit which gained several victories, Feodora Puzhbolskaya and Daria Rostovskaya, who bravely fought against the Tartar

hordes in the Kulikov area. Also in other historical periods, Russian women enrolled to fight and defend their nation, when necessary. The first Russian female Officer was Nadezhda Andreevna Durova, who took part in the 1812 Patriotic War with the rank of Cavalry Captain and became Knight of the Cross of St. George.

The first female units date back to World War One. On June 29, 1917, the Military Council of the Supreme Command decided to organize volunteer women into two Infantry battalions and four signal units.

Women have always occupied key positions in the Soviet Army and, before that, in the Red Army. Thus, during the Great Patriotic War in 1941-45, more than 800,000 women were enrolled. They made up 41% of medical personnel, 43% of medical assistants and 100% of nurses. More than 220,000 girls were snipers, belonged to signal units or other specialties. As regards the heroic deeds performed during

the war, 87 women obtained our highest national award, i.e. the title of Heroes of the Soviet Union, and more than 150,000 of them received many awards and medals.

Today, about 10,000 serve in the army as Officers and Praporshchiki (2). Two women are Colonel, about 300 are Lt. Colonels and Majors, about 1,300 are junior Officers and Praporshchiki. Other 13,000 women serve as Soldiers and NCOs and make up about 35% of the contracted personnel.

This ratio is higher than that of the other Armed Forces. Women cover 52 different positions. They are mainly represented in the medical, logistical and communication sectors and are particularly suited to service and repair some types of military equipment.

They are specialized personnel who mainly carry out logistic tasks within combat units and elements. Undoubtedly, female hands know better how to prepare a tasty meal and deliver medi-

cal aid. Sometimes, however, those who belong to the so-called "weaker sex" make up the whole crew of an air-defense or anti-missile system.

In the last few years, in line with large cuts in personnel numbers, the streamlining of the organizational structure and the shift to a professional Army, the number of women in the Armed Forces has been reduced as well.

What principles inspire the training and development of Russian soldiers?

To answer this question properly, we should take into account our historical background. The principles inspiring the training of all Russian soldiers are those established at the turn of the XVIII century by Emperor Peter the Great in organizing a regular army, as further ratified by the 1716 Military Decree. Those principles were subsequently developed by Alexandr Vasilevich Suvorov, a famous Russian strategist, and included in his renowned work "The science of winning".

In the education sector, the main concepts to be explained to trainees are the superiority of spiritual values over material ones, the support of national pride and patriotism, as well as the allegiance to the homeland and its military traditions. Moreover, both soldiers and officers should be convinced that dying in battle, they will sacrifice their lives for an ideal, i.e. the glory of their nation (a sacred gesture "We are Russians, God is on our side").

In the instruction sector, not only troops receive formal training, but must also understand what they are doing, i.e. the rationale behind each maneuver. They also learn how to take initiatives at bottom level and possibly push them to the top; how to be prudent in combat and at the same time show resolve in

operations (judgement at first sight, promptness, stamina) and how to exploit success to the very end (if a wood is not razed to the ground, it will grow again). They should learn to prefer quality over quantity (victory is for a happy few) and to obtain victory "with little bloodshed".

Peter the Great and A.V.Suvorov established a *particular system for educating and training troops, based on their deep knowledge of military operations and Russian soldiers' psychology.*

Those two renowned Russian strategists showed great insight into the national peculiarities of Russian soldiers: their capability of scarifying themselves to the utmost, performing incredible acts of courage and heroism and combating for their beloved Commander.

The values underpinning that system, incredibly similar to Russian people's moral principles and culture, were immediately understood and absorbed by Russian soldiers. They were extremely advanced concepts at that time, which had been faithfully handed down in history.

The Red Army drew the best teaching from the pre-revolutionary Army, as regards soldiers' training and education. As a consequence, eternal and deeply felt values were preserved, but at the same time new and advanced concepts were introduced into the training of troops, high standards were reached in the teaching of warfighting capabilities and personnel spirits were kept high. This way, the Red Army could defeat the Nazi troops, which had conquered almost all Europe and were considered as invincible.

The values inspiring Peter the Great's and A.V.Suvorov's concepts about the training of Russian soldiers are still valid. In fact, they reflect modern training and educational principles, as regards Army personnel.

There was a basic concept among them, i.e. *the principle of*

unified training, both for military and civilian personnel. Therefore, training and education take on a particular social and patriotic perspective, in line with national laws, present political trends and military doctrine requirements. The principle is based on the fact that military and professional training are always linked to their moral and psychological foundation: a firm belief in the importance and legitimacy of all actions taken to defend national interests. As a consequence, the Army was imbued with deeply felt military feelings, which had been thoroughly analysed by A.V.Suvorov.

Those trends are linked to *the principle that it is necessary to teach troops very practical skills, useful to defend the country and its interests.* Based on that principle, troops' organization and training are tailored to the requirements of modern wars, privileging real world experiences. This is in line with Suvorov's assumptions, according to which soldiers should never be caught unprepared in the battlefield, having faced similar situations in peace time. That principle proved to be true by the experience drawn from counter-terrorism operations carried out in the Northern Caucasus, where trained units obtained very good results with a very low number of casualties.

Admittedly, training is more effective when troops deeply believe in the importance and practical relevance of soldiering and in what they are doing. Therefore, another important principle is that of *fostering trainees' awareness, initiative and self-reliance.* Troops are to be encouraged to take the initiative and act, both during training and in the field. The lessons learned teach us that self-reliance, the wise implementation of new tactical methods, the assumption of calculated risk should not only be encouraged, but also considered

as a duty by all soldiers.

In Peter the Great's times, that principle became one of the most important milestones of the national school for the training and education of troops. Its implementation is witnessed by Suvorov's famous guidelines, i.e. "soldiers should understand the rationale behind their maneuvers" and have the following capabilities "judgement at first sight, promptness, stamina".

The principle of unified training and education, both at individual and unit level aims at enhancing the effectiveness of the training and education process. This way, it is possible to foster both warfighters' individual capabilities and units' operations. Military personnel can thus share the responsibility of carrying out operational tasks, learn how to deliver buddy aid and sacrifice their lives to attain a common goal. This method allows for teaching principles Russian soldiers have always believed in and at the same time taking into account soldiers' physical and psychological capabilities in the assignment of tasks.

The following principles are equally important: *systematic, consequential, complete, practical and accessible training; constant updating of knowledge, experiences and capabilities.*

Following these *deeply rooted principles in personnel training and education*, we will be capable of strengthening units' moral, spiritual and military resolve, as well as their readiness in facing any threat to the security of their nations.

Since 1992, the Russian Army has taken part in peacekeeping operations in former Yugoslavia, initially under UNOFOR, then IFORJSOFR (1995) and KFOR (1999 onward). What lessons have been learned?

Peacekeeping operations car-



ried out by multinational forces in the Balkans are a unique experience, as regards their scope, extension, preparation and conduct.

Both the Federation's and CIS nations's legislative and executive bodies have gained unparalleled experience in preparing and executing those operations. In fact, they have developed systems and ways to prevent conflicts of that type, refined laws and regulations on peacekeeping and set up ad hoc structures, within governmental organizations, supervising peacekeeping operations.

Moreover, based on the Yugoslav experience, the general principles governing the management of armed conflicts and their inherent problems have been maximised to develop a more effective national security strategy at national, regional and global level.

The Russian peacekeeping contingent in Kosovo is presently made up of one brigade with about 2,000 men; 600 more troo-



ps are deployed in Bosnia and Herzegovina. Our peacekeepers are mainly tasked with guaranteeing the security of local populations and creating the conditions necessary to launch negotiations, as well as implementing other measures to seek the peaceful resolution of disputes, enforce the rule of law and guarantee the

Left.
"Smerch" multiple rocket launcher.

Right.
"BTR-90" transport and attack armoured vehicle.

Below.
"Msta-S" 152mm artillery self-propelled vehicle.

smooth functioning of social and state organizations.

Army units earmarked to take part in peacekeeping operations in the Balkans have been already trained for that task and have already gained some experience on the CIS territory. Therefore, I am convinced that they will



distinguish themselves in performing the assigned tasks in their respective areas of responsibility.

Very useful lessons were drawn from the joint operations carried out with the units of other countries taking part in KFOR. In fact, joint patrol and reconnaissance-search operations, as well as activities to guarantee the safety of

local populations were carried out. In each area of responsibility joint operations are also performed with the support of civil international organizations and activities are set in place to monitor the moves of warring parties' units.

There is a mutual exchange of information and guarantees are

multilaterally granted, as regards the conduct of peacekeeping operations.

Russian peacekeepers are more experienced in the organization sector and in carrying out reconnaissance operations aimed at timely identifying and preventing possible incidents in their area of responsibility. To this end, they establish contact with the local population to gather the information required. They subsequently exploit it for peacekeeping purposes, for organizing and executing psychological operations or for supporting the activities of those international organizations which have been officially authorized to operate in the conflict area.

The lessons learned in the peacekeeping operations in the Balkans have been fully exploited to organize and prepare units earmarked for other similar operations. More attention has been paid to the study of the history, customs and traditions of the people living in the conflict area. The possibility has been envisaged to sign an agreement between the warring parties, based on the mandate and the UN Charter. The study of languages has been maximised and practical manuals and booklets have been distributed to personnel. Local anthropic and geographic cha-



racteristics have been taken into due account and new types of actions have been devised by peacekeepers to prevent the fighting parties from massing their troops, to disrupt enemy deployments and defuse conflicts in their areas of responsibility.

In my opinion, the lessons learned by units during international peacekeeping missions in former Yugoslavia will allow them to improve their readiness levels in executing similar tasks both in the CIS area and in other regions worldwide, if necessary.

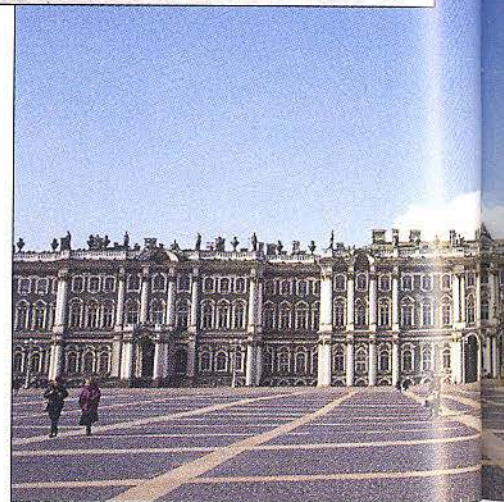
Since 1992, Russian troops have served in peacekeeping contingents on the CIS territory, in particular in the Trans-Caucasus and Moldavia. What is the difference with the peacekeeping operations carried out under the UN umbrellas?

The collapse of the Soviet Union in 1991 destabilized several regions and triggered a series of armed conflicts. As a consequence, right from the first months of the CIS establishment, great strides were made to set

up a body of rules on peacekeeping. Basic documents were developed and endorsed to regulate the preparation and conduct of peacekeeping operations on the CIS territory. These documents reflect the provisions of the UN Charter, the guidelines and rules established by international laws, in line with the decisions of the UN Security Council and OSCE documents.

Thanks to the actions carried out by CIS joint peacekeeping forces, the civil war in Tajikistan has been prevented and the armed conflicts in the Trans-Caucasus and in the Pridnestrovie region in Moldavia have found a political solution.

Today, peacekeeping contingents have been withdrawn from Tajikistan, but the 201st motorized Division, which is still in place, will be given the status of Russian military HQ. Our soldiers are still carrying out peacekeeping tasks in Georgia and Moldavia. In the conflict area between Georgia and Abkhazia there are few peacekeepers and their strength, which is little more than a battalion, is not



enough to solve the problems of that area. A small group with the same number of forces is deployed in Southern Ossetia. A small unit is still in the Pridnestrovie region in Moldavia.

The main differences between the peacekeeping operations carried out under the CIS and UN umbrellas are in force levels and decision-making processes, as well as in the operational subordination and command of peacekeeping contingents.

As regards the UN, the decision to prepare and execute peacekeeping missions is taken by the

Left.
"T-80U" battle tank.

Below.
St. Petersburg, Winter Palace.

Security Council, a body where each decision can be vetoed by any of its permanent members. The Secretary General, with the consent of the Security Council, appoints the Chief of the Mission and the Commander of the military contingent or the Chief Military Observer. The Chief of

CIS Ministers of Foreign Affairs to the Council of the Heads of States, which has to ratify it. The OPCOM of the joint peacekeeping forces is exercised by the Council of Defense Ministers of through the General Staff coordinating the military cooperation within CIS, which supervises CIS-wide military cooperation. In between meetings of the Council of Defense Ministers, the OPCOM of the joint peacekeeping forces is assigned to the Deputy Chief of the Council of Defense Ministers, Chief of Staff responsible for coordinating military cooperation within CIS.

As regards hosting and operating procedures of peacekeeping units, they do not differ from the operations performed under the auspices of the UN.

In the former USSR, the armaments industry was strictly linked to the Armed Forces. As many companies have been privatized, what are today's relations between the Army and the armaments industry? Is there an effective connection between production plans and customer requirements?

Since the early 90's, the Federation has adopted a free market regime and the relations between the armaments industry and the Army have changed accordingly. This shift took place in the mid-nineties. Based on these new relations, the following principle has been established: *the design, production and delivery of armaments and military means to equip the Armed Forces are mainly carried out within the Defense procurement plans.*

□

* Journalist

Notes:

- (1) At Operational Theatre and joint Command levels
- (2) A category between Officers and NCOs



Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev was born on March 14, 1946 in Omsk. He attended the Omsk Combined-Arms Command School and the M. V. Frunze and General Staff Academies. He covered all command positions within the Army organization as commander of mechanized regiment, mechanized division and Army Corps in several Military Districts. In August 1996 he was appointed Commander of the Zabaykalskiy Military District, then of the Siberian District.

On March 28, 2001, he was appointed Commander in Chief of Ground Forces by Decree of the President of the Russian Federation and in May 2001, Commander in Chief of Ground Forces and Deputy Defence Minister of the Russian Federation.

He was awarded several decorations, medals and the traditional personal combat weapon.

He is married and has two children



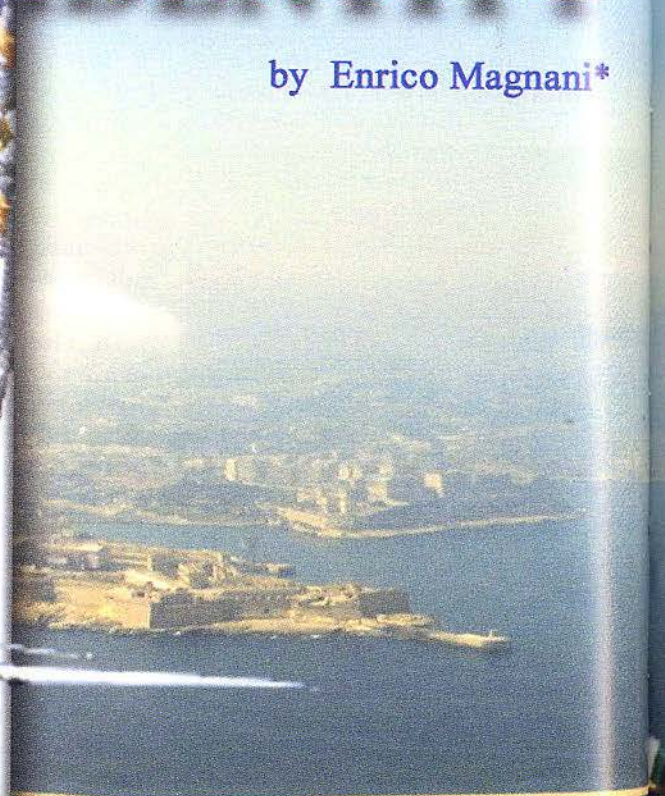
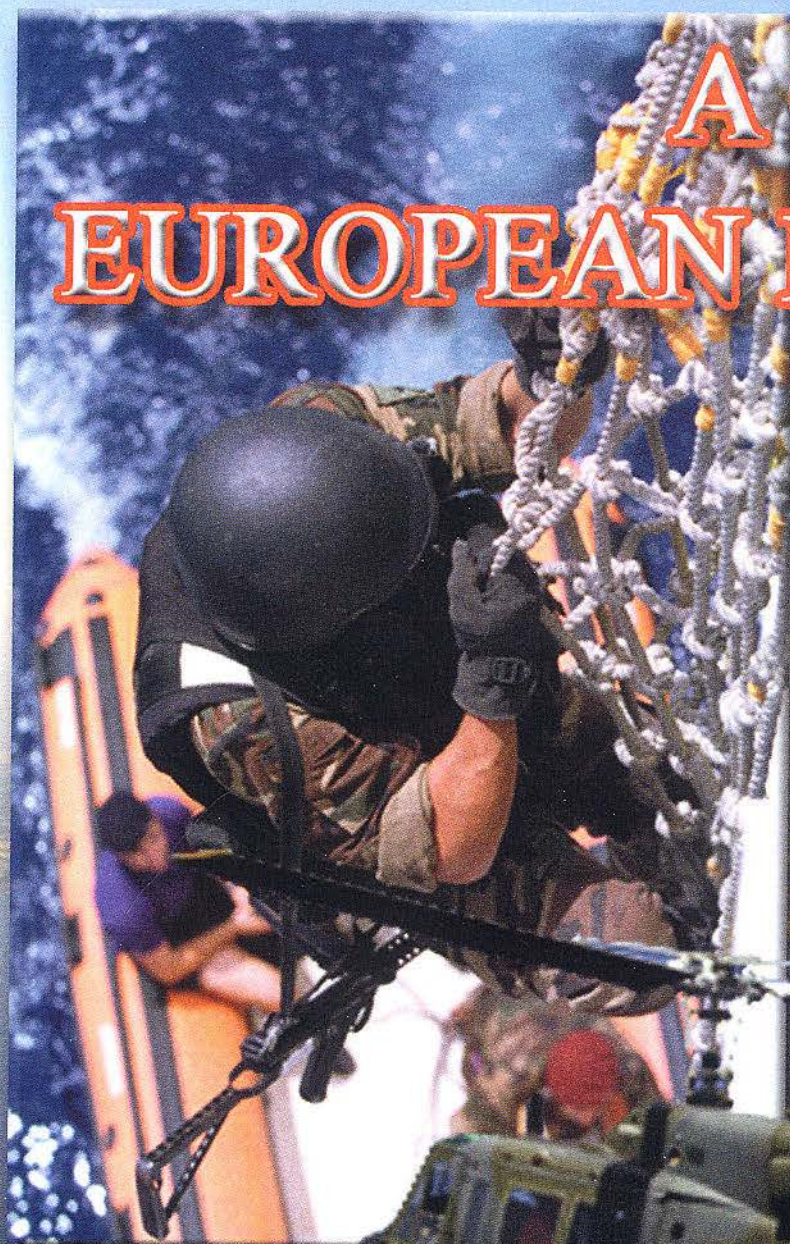
the Mission is subordinated to the Secretary General who, in turn, is under the authority of the Security Council.

Peacekeeping operations on the CIS territory are carried out based on the decisions of the Council of the CIS Heads of State of the (an operation of this kind is underway in Abkhazia), and also based on bilateral, trilateral and multilateral agreements (two operations of this kind are underway in Southern Ossetia and Moldavia).

The mandate of each operation is submitted by the Council of

TOWARDS A COMMON EUROPEAN IDENTITY

by Enrico Magnani*



Co-operation between the Republic of Italy and the State of Malta is increasing and also the military have been working together for a long time with great enthusiasm

An aerial photograph of a coastal town in Malta, likely Valletta, showing dense urban development on a hillside overlooking a harbor. A ship is visible in the water in the foreground.

The isles of Malta, Gozo, Comino and Filfla are part of the Maltese Archipelago and make up the State of Malta which is like a pearl in the middle of the Mediterranean sea. Malta is neutral and autonomous, is a UN and OSCE member country while is willing to integrate with the European Union.

In 1980 Malta signed an agreement with Italy to preserve its sovereignty and its century-old military tradition.

The Armed Forces of Malta are given a number of different tasks, including safeguarding the nation, security at airports, protection of sensitive areas, combatting drug traffickers, illegal immigration, illegal fishery, sea rescue and Peace Keeping operations but also support civilians in natural disasters and co-operate with police forces.

Interview with Brigadier Rupert C. Montanaro, Commander of the Armed Forces of Malta

Sir, our readers would certainly like to know some interesting and unique details from you about Malta and its Armed Forces.

Well, the State of Malta is made up of a group of isles: Malta, Gozo, Comino and Filfla. I think you all know them very well because they are famous to tourists in the Mediterranean. One million tourists visit them each year, which is a big number when you consider the resident

population is less than 400,000. Malta is positioned strategically in the middle of the Mediterranean sea, south of Sicily, and has been playing an important role in the Euro-Mediterranean History and Culture.

Malta became independent from the United Kingdom in 1964 and a Republic in 1974. The State of Malta has an international airport and two very important ports: one free port and one well equipped port for maintaining and

repairing ships. Malta national structures include state of the art technology and telecommunications. There are no natural resources but the people in Malta is the real added value.

What do you think about foreign and security policy

Malta is a neutral and non-aligned country. We have good and friendly relationships with all states.

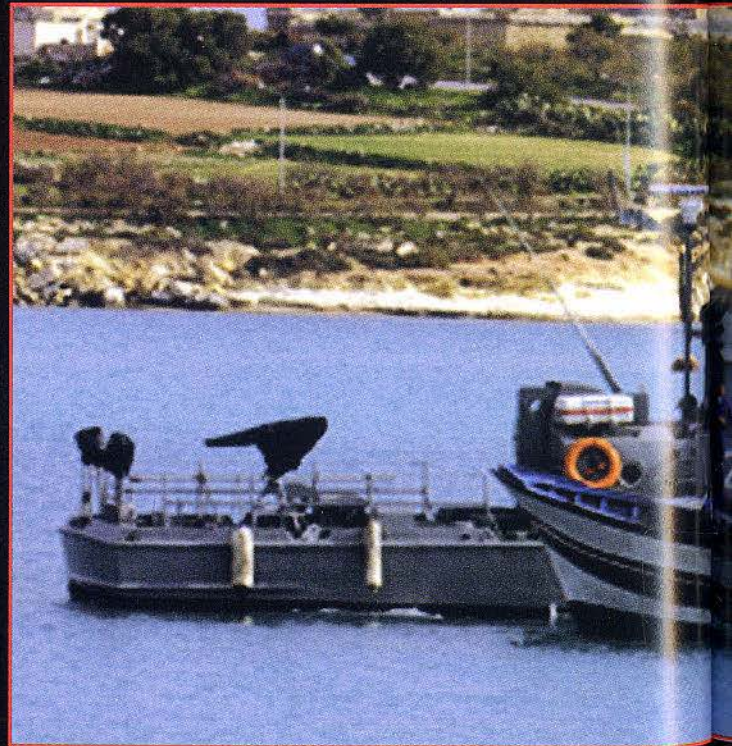


Italian bersaglieri and Maltese troops during an exercise.

Nonetheless Malta is a member country of the United Nations and of the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe (OSCE). Now we are negotiating for becoming a member of the European Union. The part Malta is having in international politics is then influenced by the need to enter the European Union on the basis of its geostrategic position while preserving its geopolitical principles: Malta is a neutral European island in the middle of the Mediterranean Sea, near Europe, Africa and Asia.

Malta Defence Policy is based on a global vision of the security concept, which goes well beyond the military and comprises the whole economy, environment and society. International Law is very important and we support peaceful solutions to conflicts. We are always informed to the principles of the UN Charter and to our commitments to OSCE. In order to safeguard its national sovereignty Malta signed an agreement with Italy in 1980.

Could you please tell us a short history of the Maltese Armed Forces?



Above.
A patrol boat checking fishers.

Right.
Rescue of illegal immigrants.

Malta has a long lasting military tradition. The first Maltese military units were born hundreds of years ago but our Government took the important decision to have an organized military force only 32 years ago. In 1970 the Parliament approved a law that allowed the Head of State to build up and budget the Maltese Armed Forces (MAF).

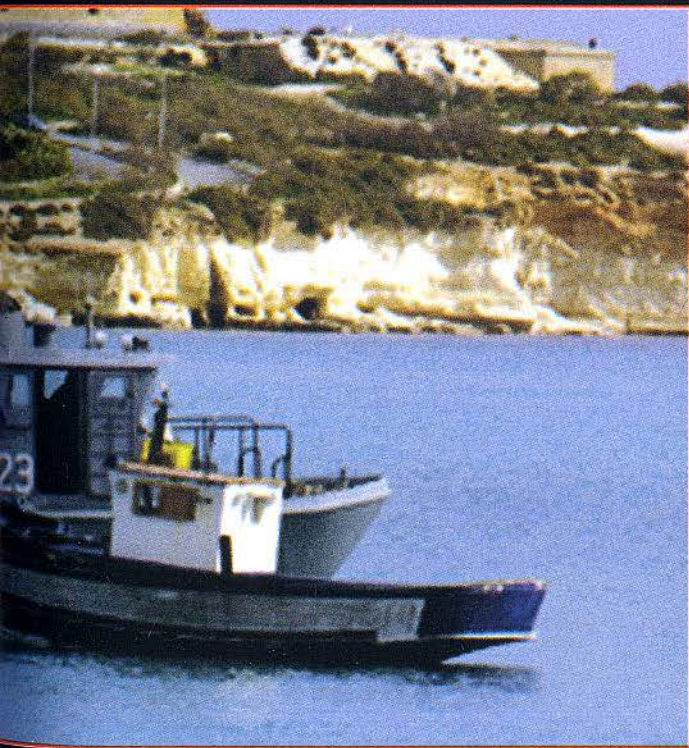
The Malta Land Force (MLF) was first born in 1970. Then came the Navy in 1971 and the Air Force in 1972. The MLF finally turned into the Armed Forces of Malta in 1973.

And how are they organized?

The Armed Forces of Malta include Regular, Emergency and Reserve Forces. The Regular Force is made up of 1,800 military and 190 civilians; in the future there will be 2,047 military and 100 civilians. The Reserve Force was born in 1988 and is made up of 220 military and volunteers as a whole.

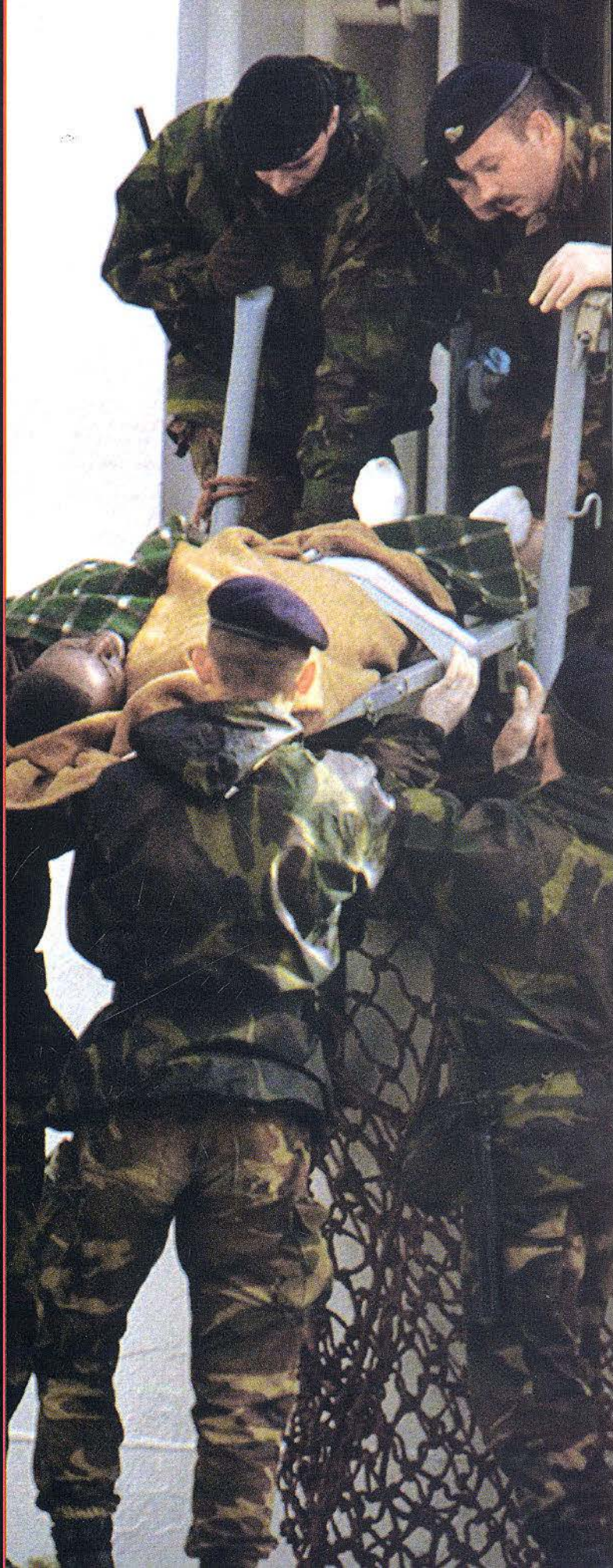
The Armed Forces of Malta rely on 1 Headquarters and 3 Regiments:

- 1 Infantry Regiment including 3 combat



companies, 1 Command and Service company and 1 Support Company

- 1 Support Regiment including Air, and Navy Units and 1 Headquarters Company.
- 1 Logistical Regiment including 1 Ammunition and Explosives Company, 1 Engi-





Left.

In the Armed Forces of Malta women are committed to all kind of specializations ranging from combat to logistics.

Bottom and Left.
Navy and Airforce units on duty.

neers Company, 1 Company for electricity and mechanics, the military band and 1 Administration Company

What tasks are given the Armed Forces today?

In general they grant national integrity and security both in peace time and during crisis, take part in peace keeping, humanitarian, rescue and out-of-area operations. Moreover the Armed Forces must support government departments and governmental organizations. In particular we can say that:

- the main tasks are: to safeguard the national territory, the security at airports, to protect sensitive areas, to combat traffic in drugs, to prevent illegal immigration and illegal fishery, to grant sea rescue and to take part in Peace Keeping operations
- while the secondary tasks are: to support civilians in natural disasters, to support the civil defense, to support police forces in combatting drug traffic, and protocol during official ceremonies.

As you told us the Armed Forces of Malta are given important tasks. But why are they so successful?

Just one word: flexibility. They are small and they must be flexible to fulfil their tasks. As



far as organization is concerned the Armed Forces of Malta are not composed of three independent services, on the contrary they belong to only one commander which allows fast and successful decision-making. Moreover it should be noted that flexibility is also in our soldiers' minds, at all levels,

during every day activities.

The State of Malta has a strategic position in the middle of the Mediterranean Sea and it seems that sea and air defense is of particular importance...

Of Course! There are a number of tasks related to sea and air surveillance. We are committed to illegal immigration, to protecting the fishery zone, smugglers, drug traffic and rescue operations in the middle of the Mediterranean Sea. But let's talk about numbers: 200 kilometers off coasts, 3,800 square kilometers of territorial waters, 11,100 square kilometers of fishery zone, and a 205,782 square kilometers rescue operation area.



Is Malta going to participate in the European Rapid Reaction Force? And what part will it have?

The European Union is preparing a military tool to prevent conflicts and manage crisis





under the so called "Petersberg Missions". Malta is willing to integrate with the European Union and was invited to take part in the European Rapid Reaction Force. Malta will give its little but significant contribution to the European capability for managing crisis and preventing conflicts. Malta will give one infantry platoon and 5 national representatives will be committed to the Force Headquarters for one year, ready within 30-60 days as of January 1, 2003. From the operational point of view an agreement was signed to deploy the Armed Forces of Malta within the Italian units. We would like to support UN and OSCE Petersberg Missions humanitarian operations. And this is significant when you consider the Maltese limited military resources. Moreover, we are ready to take part in Peace keeping missions even if we are making inspections as provided by the Dayton Agreement and by engagements we made with OSCE.

Since the very beginning the Armed Forces of Malta have been based on volunteers and professionals. Are there any lessons learned in this respect?

Yes, we always recruited from volunteers. And when you consider the past, the present and the future national and regional security you understand that Malta is not to face any specific and direct threats from the military



Left. Patrol Boat for maritime control.

Right.
Peace keeping training by Italian and Maltese units.

Below.
Alhouette Reconnaissance Helicopter.



point of view. So conscription – and the burden of the related costs – is not required.

On the other hand volunteers allowed us to work on a solid base. Volunteers are motivated, happy of their careers and appreciated by

public opinion. Volunteers are much more efficient and experienced compared with conscripts. I am also happy to say that the military career is appreciated in Malta; just think that last year 800 applied for 100 vacancies.

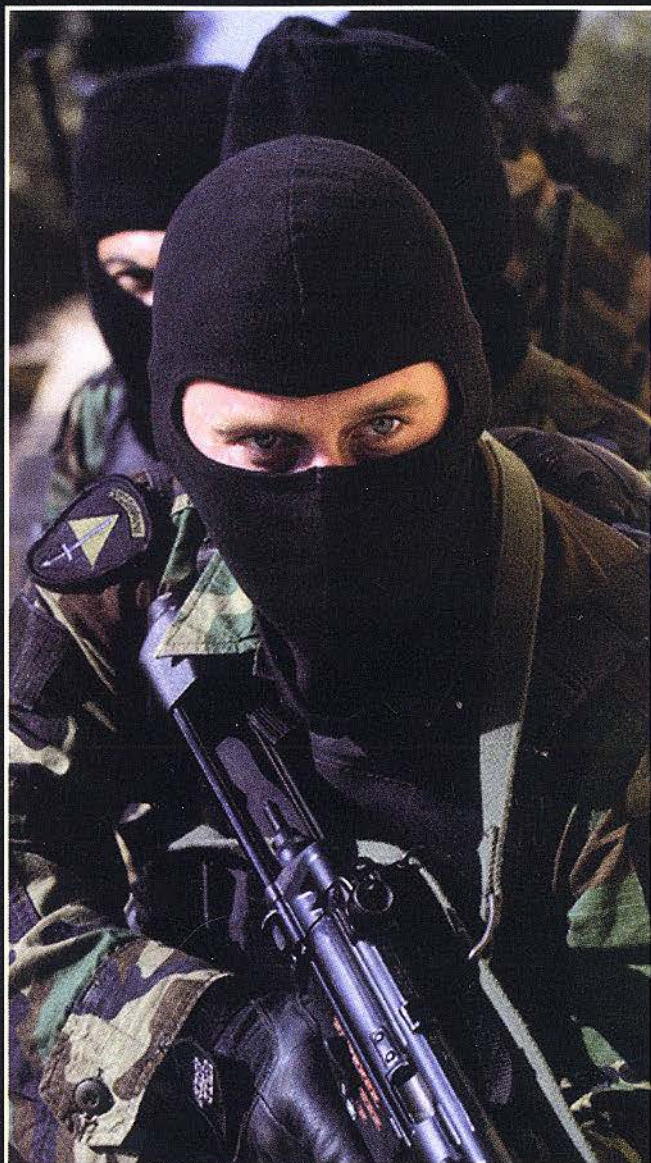
The Armed Forces of Malta include women. What role do they play in your organization?

Women have been enrolling since 1990. There are 35 of them in the military and 1 is an officer. At the moment women are only 2% of the total but they will increase in the future. The Armed Forces are proud of giving equal opportunities to male and female volunteers. During the last 12 years women integrated perfectly with the Armed Forces where they work in all areas ranging from (operational) pilots to (logistical) secretaries

What relationships are there between the Armed Forces of Malta and the Italian Armed Forces?

There are excellent diplomatic relationships between Malta and Italy. And this has an





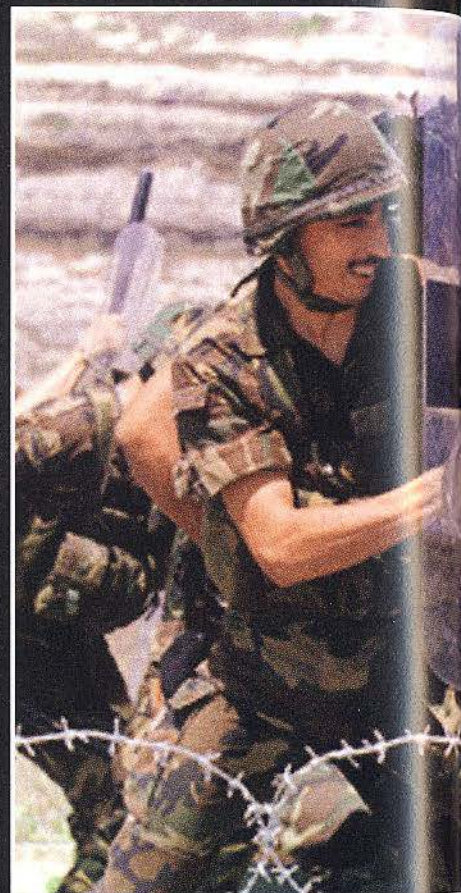
important training.

Are there any planned joint training operations between Italy and Malta?

Certainly. Italy and Malta are involved in

Left.
Anti-terrorist units during training.

Right.
Italian and Maltese soldiers training for riot control



Above Right.
Sniper training.

impact on the Armed Forces as well. Bilateral co-operation is on the run and a Technical and Military Assistance Mission (MIATM) has been taking place since 1973.

MIATM is for military training and rescue capabilities in the central Mediterranean area, but also for technical advice and logistic support.

Thanks to this co-operation two AB 212 helicopters from the Italian Armed Forces are always available in Malta for rescue operations and are an active part of the National Rescue Organization. Many people were rescued with these helicopters by mixed Maltese and Italian crews.

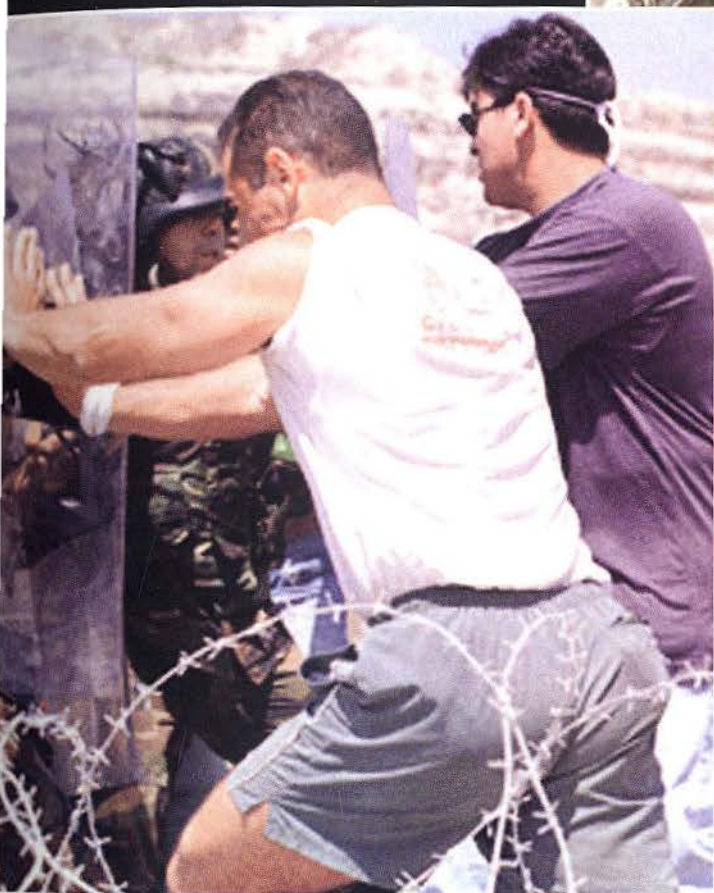
MIATM is also supporting military training: in fact many Maltese Officers and Non Commissioned Officers attend courses at units and military schools in Italy. Moreover Italian instructors work in Malta for on-site

two bilateral exercises yearly. The first one is called "Canale" and is focused on Rescue and Maritime Law Enforcement. The other one is called "Terraferma" and is for Peace Support Operations. Considering the future participation of the Armed Forces of Malta in the European Rapid Reaction Force – with Italian units – some Maltese infantry platoons are undergoing their training in Italy. The joint training is of basic importance to interoperability.

What about the future of the Armed Forces of Malta?

In my opinion there will be great satisfaction in the future. For 32 years we have been working seriously, with great commitment and enthusiasm. The nation requires a good,

light, efficient, trained and flexible professional military for national security and national interests. The military must be capable of adjusting to the changing national and international scenarios. That is why the Armed



Forces of Malta are investing - supported by friend countries - in massive training abroad. Many Officers and other ranks are attending the best military academies in Italy, Germany, the United Kingdom and the United States of America. The lessons learned include the very best of the international military culture and will be the basis for developing new doctrines and procedures in the future.

□

(*) Journalist



Brigadier Rupert C. Montanaro was appointed Commander of the Armed Forces of Malta on the 10th of December 1996.

After graduating from the Royal Military Academy, Sandhurst, he was commissioned in the Royal Malta Artillery in 1963. Subsequently he attended courses at the School of Artillery in Larkhill and Manorbier in the United Kingdom in 1963/64. Promoted to Lieutenant in 1965 and Captain in 1969, he served in the British Army of the Rhine (BAQR) in 1964/65 and 1967/68 as well as short tours in Lybia and Cyprus.

He was then commissioned in the Armed Forces of Malta, in the rank of Captain in 1970, when Malta Government established its military force. Promoted to Major in 1976, Lieutenant Colonel in 1988, Colonel in 1992 and Brigadier in 1996. During his career he held appointments of Troop Commander, Assistant Adjutant, Unit Adjutant, Patrol Boat Section Officer (Maritime Squadron), Staff Officer Administration, Commanding Officer, Senior Staff Officer Administration and Logistics. He was appointed Principal Staff Officer in January 1992 and Deputy Commander in February 1994.

Between 1990 and 1996 he held appointment of Registrar of the National Orders. His decorations include the Long & Efficient Service Medal, Commander of Infante Dom Henrique of the Portuguese Republic and Commendatore in the Ordine al Merito of the Italian Republic.

Brigadier Montanaro is married and has two children.

The FINABEL Committee



by Giangiacomo Calligaris



Tasks, structure, organization

Established in October 1953, FINABEL is the first concrete attempt to foster military cooperation among the land forces of the European Countries. Originally, the Committee was called FINBEL, an acronym deriving from the initials of the founding Nations (France-Italy-the Netherlands-Belgium-Luxembourg), and its task was to develop all forms of cooperation in the armaments sector.

In 1956, with the admission of Germany, the name was changed into FINABEL. The United Kingdom joined in 1973, Spain in 1990, Greece and Portugal followed in 1996. This article completes the report published in a previous number of "Rivista Militare" and deals essentially with the meeting held in Rome in March 2001.

The organization and operation of FINABEL are described in a Charter signed by the Chiefs of Staff of the Land Forces of the member Countries.

The document is regularly revised, according to the changes that the Committee intends to make. The last revision goes back to March 2000.

The Organization consists of a Committee of Chiefs of Staff (CEM); a Committee of Main Military Experts (EMP); a Group of Deputy EMPs; a Permanent Secretariat; Working Groups.

The roles of CEM, EMPs, and Deputy EMPs have been thoroughly described in no. 3/2001 of "Rivista Militare" (It. Ed.). With this article, we wish to examine in particular the tasks of the Working Groups.

At present there are nine Working Groups, directly subordinate to the EMP Committee. They are: Force Employment, Logistics, Fire Support and antipersonnel defence, Engineers and chemical/biological defence, Air mobility, Information, Instruction and Training, Command and conduct of operations, General concepts and force development.

The Groups meet twice a year, and each meeting takes place in turn in one of the various member Countries. Their purpose is to examine and discuss subjects of major military interest and to produce studies for a maximum possible cooperation, pursuing the necessary integration among the various Countries.

All FINABEL Nations are represented in each Working Group by their own delegates. Derogations to this principle can be made, exceptionally and from year to year, through specific agreements at EMP level.

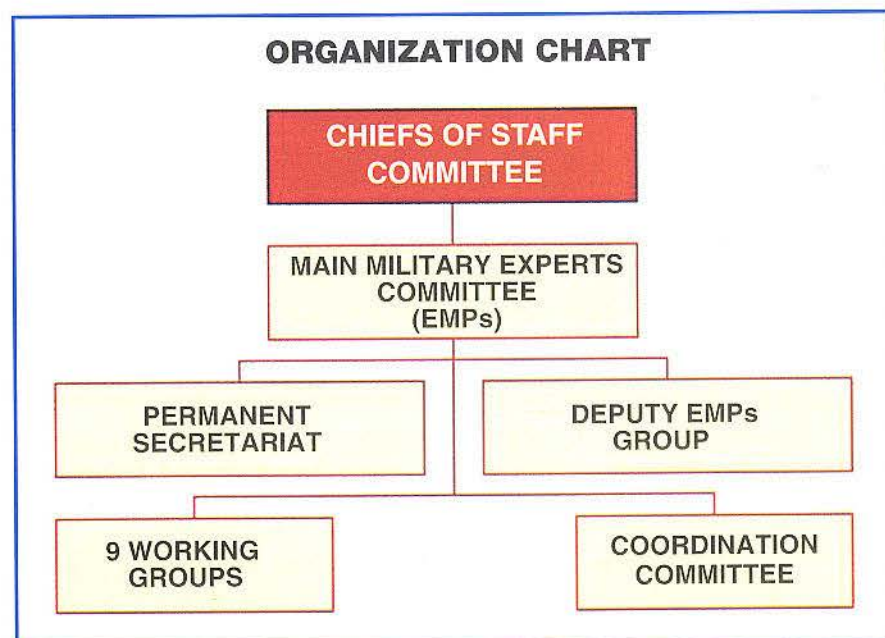
The work done by the various groups take concrete form, after approval by the Staffs of the member Countries and the

MEMBERS OF FINABEL	
FRANCE	
ITALY	
THE NETHERLANDS	
GERMANY	
BELGIUM	
LUXEMBOURG	
THE UNITED KINGDOM	
SPAIN	
GREECE	
PORTUGAL	

Chiefs of Staff Committee, in three different types of documents: reports, conventions and agreements.

"Reports" are used for general and conceptual studies, as well

as for possible common experimentations; "Conventions" apply to general or specific non-doctrinal documents, such as, for example, glossaries, collections of procedures, catalogues, conventional signs, etc.;





"Agreements" are intended for the common definition of the military characteristics of one or more materials.

The abovementioned documents can be rescinded, revised or modified on the explicit request of one or more General Staffs, or as proposed by the Working Groups; otherwise they keep their validity over the years.

The elaboration, approval and official publication of the studies follow a well-defined procedure.

The Working Groups carry out the elaboration and harmonization phase (study).

The national Staffs release the on-principle agreement on the study.

The Chiefs of Staff Committee gives its official approval to the document and, finally, the FINABEL Secretariat promulgates and releases the studies.

It seems appropriate to specify that, according to the spirit of the FINABEL Charter, every possible effort should be made to ensure that the documents be approved with the unanimous consent of the CEM Committee.

THE WORKING METHOD

The activity of the Groups is essentially divided into 4 distinct phases, preceded by a focal moment, in which the object of the study is selected.

The subject must be approved by the EMP Committee, and submitted with a *fiche de besoin d'étude* (a paper on the advisability of the specific study) containing some basic information for starting such as, for example, the study's purpose, justification and description, as well as the limits of the undertaking. The latter are fundamental in order to avoid the unintentional

Above and right.

The military ceremony held in Rome for FINABEL on 15 and 16 March 2001.

enlargement of the study, losing sight of the objective.

It is an all-important document for the development of the study; in fact, it is the only reference that the delegates have for carrying out their specific tasks.

In short, if a *fiche de mission* (definition of the job) is well structured and clearly written, the elaboration work will be simple, concrete and certainly exhaustive.

Phase 1 takes place during the first meeting held for a specific study. In this phase, under the aegis of a pilot Nation (i.e. the Country which will lead the development of the study), the Working Group prepares a que-

stionnaire which must contain a list of the subjects to be discussed in order to achieve a good definition of the matter under study.

This is the first document and it must be analytical, easy to read and able to give exhaustive answers about the arguments under discussion. Already in this phase the delegates start to harmonize the study.

Between the first and the second meeting, in the intersession period, the delegates send to the pilot Nation their answers to the questionnaire, together with a first synthetic report.

Phase 2 starts during the second meeting. The various national positions are discussed and decisions are made on the contents of the study and on the elements which need further investigation. The delegates also proceed to determine the elements which need to be stressed during the pre-project stage.

Between the 2nd and 3rd meeting the delegates continue to develop the study, interacting among themselves and with the representative of the pilot Nation.

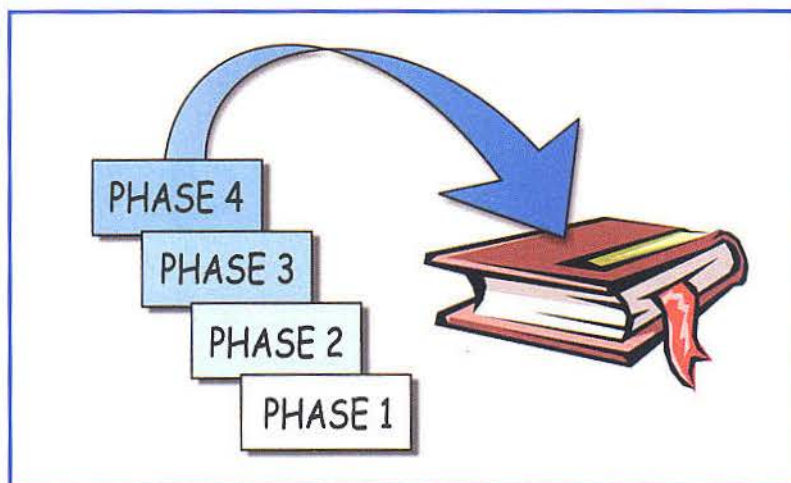
Phase 3: at the 3rd meeting the national positions are discussed again, and all the elements that are to be included in the final project are perfected. Finally, the harmonization of the project is carried out, based on the various national positions.

Between the 3rd and 4th meeting, the pilot Nation prepares the project and sends it to all the delegates for any possible comment and evaluation.



Phase 4 is the most delicate one and takes place during the 4th meeting. The delegates inform the Group about the

In short, the FINABEL working method, if well applied, through a rational use of the available time (four meetings) permits to draft a clear, complete and suitable document.



In FINABEL a decisive role is played by the Chairmen of the Working Groups. As a matter of fact, they are responsible for the activity of their Group and, in particular, for its operation and efficiency.

national position and then prepare the *fiche de presentation* (presentation document) and the *fiche de renseignements bibliographiques* (bibliographic document) for approval by CEM.

The Chairman's behaviour must be *super partes* and strictly neutral: during meetings and debates he should not use his functional authority to influence the position of the individual delegates, but rather

act as a moderator of the dialectic confrontation of the national representatives, so as to manage and organize the Group's work, bringing it to a successful conclusion.

Italy has been assigned the chairmanship of Working Group "MIKE", which deals with a subject that needs a high degree of European cooperation, in particular in the information sector. In fact, the mandate of Group "MIKE" consists in studying the procedures for the joint training of the land forces of the FINABEL Countries, in order to improve the units' interoperability and reduce the working costs through the common use, for instance, of training equipment, systems and installations.

In more general terms, the Group's task can be described as aimed at singling out the actions that can improve the integration of the units, especially within multinational operations.

In particular, in the last two years the Group, as directed by the Chiefs of Staff, has tried to find out concrete forms of cooperation in that specific field and, within this framework, has produced three interconnected studies.

The first study, called "M11R",

which can be considered archetypal, served to ascertain the individual Nations' willingness to put schools and training centres at the other members' disposal.

The study identified some sec-

ning activities for psychological operations (PSO).

The second study was identified as "Complementary M11R". Its purpose was to find out not only the mere intentions of cooperation in the training sector,

but also realistic and concrete solutions for the integration among the FINABEL Nations.

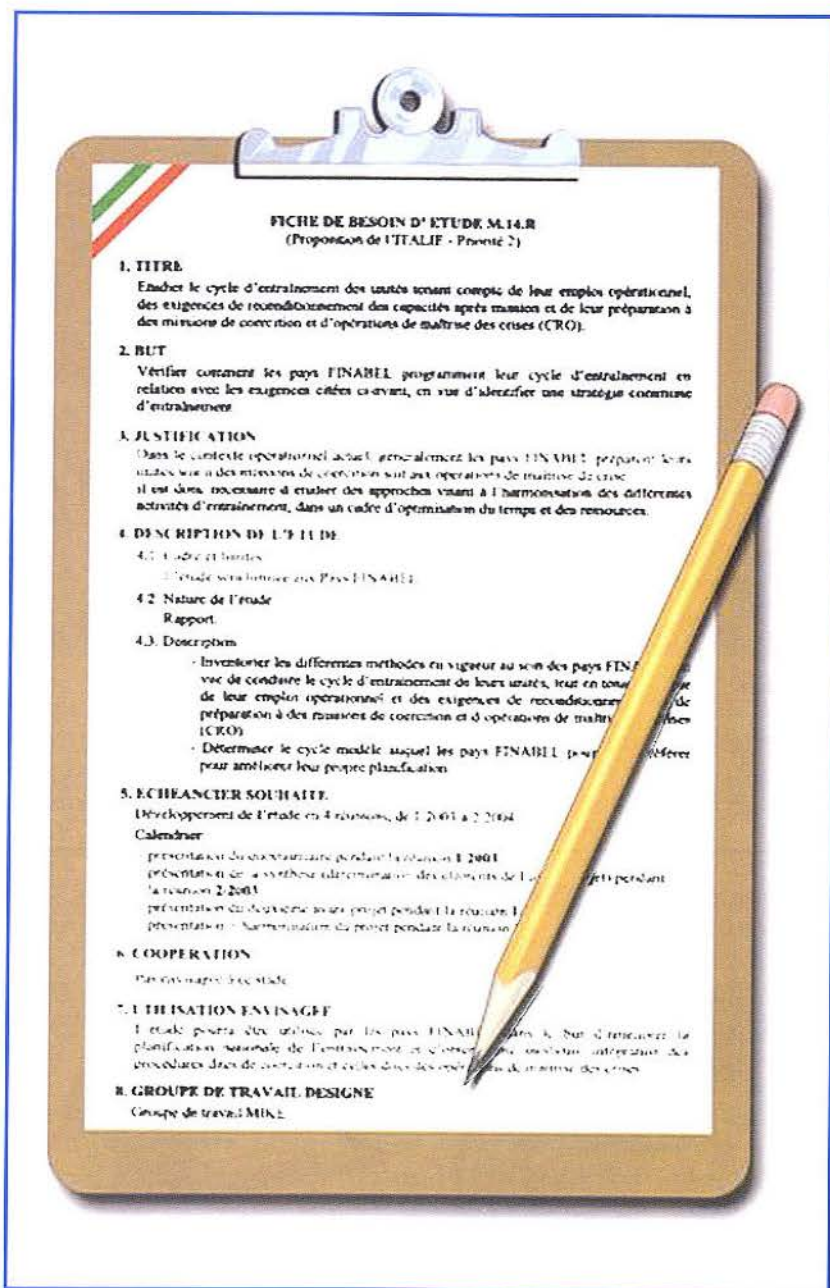
In substance, the document has permitted to go beyond the conceptual aspects in order to arrive at the executive phase. The Nations, in fact, gave their concrete contribution, providing their Schools and Centres for training activities and courses.

The Group has paid particular attention to: training for peace support operations (PSO); combat in inhabited areas; explosive ordnance disposal (EOD); training of Staff personnel.

In this context, Italy is the leading Nation in EOD, where the Engineer School in Rome is considered excellent at international level.

At the same time, the United Kingdom has assumed the leading role in PSO training and France leads the training activities concerning combat in inhabited areas.

The third study, named "Supplementary M11R", is really a thorough examination of



tors of common interest from the training viewpoint and suitable for extensive cooperation.

The attention of the Group was particularly focused on combat training centres and on simulation, as well as on the development of common trai-

the other two. The scrutiny has been very incisive and detailed. The Working Group, in fact, has produced two specific catalogues, one for Courses and one for Training Centres. They are very useful for determining the courses of interest, the available training assets, the place they are to be held, the number of spaces offered and, finally, the cost of each training offer.

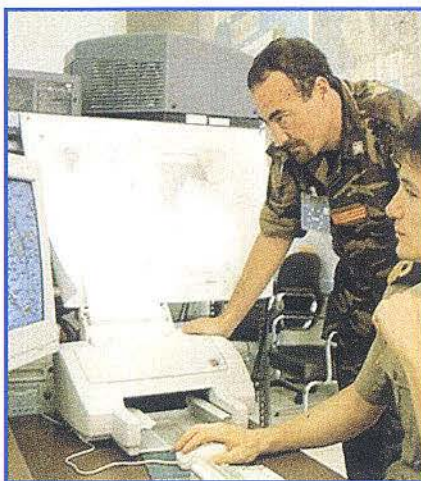
With this action, "MIKE" has provided the Chiefs of Staff with an important document, easy to consult, which enables the national staffs in charge of training to make their own choices in this particular sector, according to their own requirements.

It must be stressed that, through their delegates, all FINABEL Nations have done their utmost to acquire, at the end of their work, a number of efficient and concrete instruments, consistent with the objectives fixed for Group "MIKE" by the Chiefs of Staff.

CONCLUSIONS

In time, the FINABEL studies have heralded more and more conceptual, doctrinal and procedural innovations which, in some cases, have become concrete undertakings.

In particular, the effectiveness of the studies has constantly been pursued, with continuity and good will, by all Working Groups, and their results can be noticed especially in the member Nations' determination to diligently search for forms of cooperation. Today, in the military environment, FINABEL is universally recognised as a high-value European forum because, through the meetings of its Groups, it promotes



Members of the working group.

mutual understanding and establishes a very useful network of contacts between the land Forces of the European Countries.

Nonetheless, it seems appropriate to underline that, outside the Organization, not many know its important resources; therefore the utmost should be done in order to publicize FINABEL and its great poten-

tial. In this sense, the Chiefs of Staff Committee has already made known the reference lines to be followed for a better use and diffusion of the studies. At the same time, the Committee has also expressed the wish to set up more promotional actions aimed at informing also the European civilian organizations about all the activities carried out by the Committee.

The future of this Institution could be even brighter, since there is a possibility that it could become a special advisory body of the EU for military matters. If this comes true, FINABEL could become a valuable reference point for the development of doctrinal concepts and principles aimed at the creation of a European defence, thus playing a very important role for the integration of the old Continent.

□

**Colonel,
Chief, Doctrine, Training
and Regulations Office,
Army General Staff*



Working Group "MIKE".

WOMEN ENRICH THE ARMY

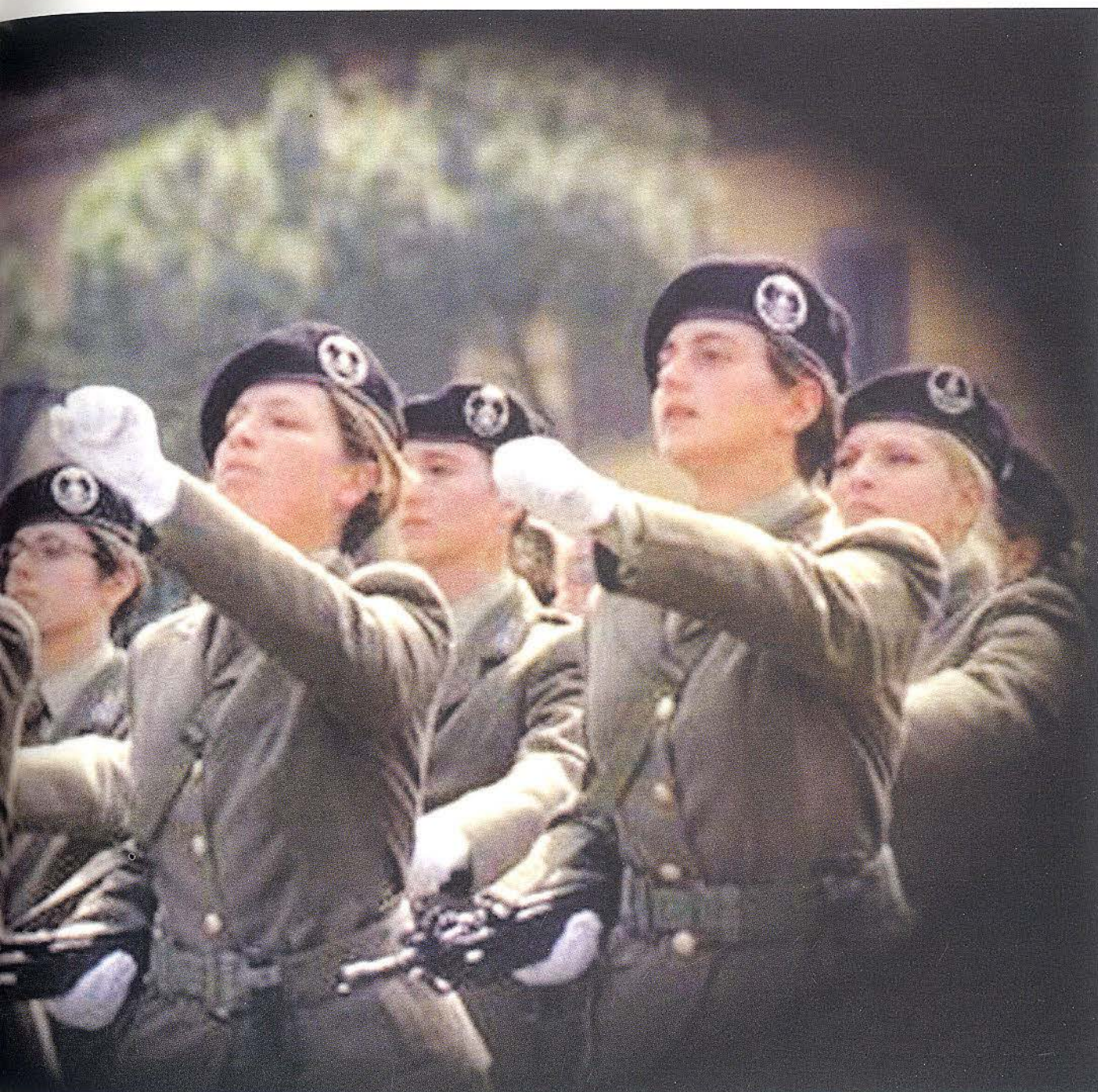
The challenge of equal opportunities

by Isabella Lo Castro *

Two years ago hundreds of women first entered the Army. They did it with good reasons and enthusiasm. Women have been enrolled in all specializations and turned out to be an added value for the Italian Army in Italy and abroad thanks to their education and professionalism. The Italian Army is promoting a fast integration of women into the military without limits. The differences between genders have not been considered for discrimination but as positive factors. This deserves to be a case-study nationally and internationally.



Addressing human being from the psychological point of view is not an easy job. And I realized it is even harder if you are part of the problem. In fact for the purpose of this article I am wearing three hats: I shall be writing as an Army Officer, as a Psychologist and as a Woman, the three different roles I am playing in my life today.



MOTIVATIONS

A 10-year process finally allowed the Italian Army to open to women in September 2000 when they were first called to enroll directly as Officers. As a result today women play their roles in all ranks (see table).

A University Degree – and/or to be a chartered professional - is the basic requirement for women

RANK	QUANTITY	AVERAGE	AGE	AGE
Directly Appointed Officer		30	30	26-36
Cadet Officers		60	22	19-27
Cadet Marescialli (NATO CODE OR8)		12	24	21-29
Short Term Volunteers		647	20	17-22
TOTAL		749		
<i>Update: June 2002</i>				



to take part in the official examination to enter the Army directly as an Officer. Today the women enrolled directly as Officers have a Degree in one of the following: Law, Medicine, Psychology, Sociology, Political Science, Engineering.

Usually these officers are committed to the Army General Staff and to the Army Training Organizations because of their education. In particular they work as medical doctors, recruiters or Public Information Officers; they may be in charge of training and personnel, welfare and infrastructures. The enrolled officers decided to enter the Army on the basis of their professional expectations, to face a

challenge but also because of their long lasting love for the military.

Today women are attending courses at the Military Academy (there are 37 of them in the 182nd and 23 in the 183rd course) together with a number of women colleagues from foreign countries. Four of them had a previous military experience as short term volunteers.

In terms of motivations it seems that these women had a dream to let come through, especially those who are attending the first course at the Academy. During a survey all the women cadet officers told they were fascinated by the military and that they were facing a

personal challenge, which goes well beyond the occupational reasons.

The first course for Allievi Marescialli (OR8 cadets) including women started last November. Candidates were required to have an undergraduate degree but it is worth noting that one cadet had a degree and that half of them were graduate students who passed successfully a good number of exams. 25% of candidates were short term volunteers or had had a previous military experience.

Defining motivations for Allievi Marescialli is not easy because women entered the Army only recently but they say they strongly want a military education and a career in the military.

The majority of the enrolled women are short term volunteers (STV). Three training courses have been set up so far. Women attending said courses underwent a basic training in Ascoli Piceno and they are studying for a specialization today or they are working at the units in Italy and committed to out of area operations.

By law, Short Term Volunteers are required an intermediate school education although 70% have an undergraduate degree and 5% were graduate students when they were enrolled.

Women are given equal opportunities and are usually committed to all specializations envisaged for the rank, depending on the Army requirements. In particular 60% of STV are committed to operational units, 23% are committed to the technical-operational branch and the remaining 17% to logistics and administration.

Motivations for STV come from a passion for the military lifestyle and principles and from the dream women have to wear a uniform. It is worth noting that the women running for



STV live the military experience as a challenge, want to emancipate from their families but also welcome the military as a job opportunity.

WOMEN HAVE BECOME PART OF THE ARMY

After this general introduction we can make the following considerations from the psychological point of view:

- Women are in Army for very short time and during this short experience they have been working in a completely new environment: they have been training to become soldiers while those enrolled directly as

Officers will integrate their education with the military in the future.

- There is a mutual relationship between Women and Armed Forces, they are part of the same process requiring mutual adjustments that will prompt the necessary changes.
- Introducing civilians to the military means the following:
 - to accept the military stile of life,
 - to follow the principles of the military discipline,
 - to become part of the military organization.

Newcomers must learn the meaning of their uniforms and interiorize the principles of the military discipline to integrate themselves with the military. And this is true both for men and women, although the latter experience more typical features. In fact:

- when they adjust to the new environment they look for a new balance or at least for no conflicts and react to new inputs. Individuals may either change their habits or try to modify the environment. Occasionally they manage to change both their habits and the environment
- during the the first period of their career



women - in particular today's pioneers - receive unexpected and unplanned inputs from the environment. In fact, although their dream came through (see Motivations) they do not actually know the military which was only a product of their imagination so far

- women in the military are requested to behave differently from what they used to in the past and are to face the new reality with a new approach. This causes a strong emotional impact during the first phase of their mili-

tary training. From the physical point of view the military life is demanding and life conditions in general are very different from civilians (e.g.: rooms and time to be shared with others, dependence on higher ranks, etc.).

The first months of the military life have a strong emotional impact on women because they live in an unprecedented effort-taking reality changing every while.

Usually persons are expected to adjust to the environment because large organizations hardly adjust to workers. And if

it happens it will take a long time. That is why women in the military must look for a new balance and change their attitudes.

From our experience we learned that the following help women adapt to the new military environment:

- information given, in particular, by higher ranks is necessary to understand the situation
- awareness helps face the new environment. To be aware of the available skills (which is easier for those having a degree) is a sort of tranquillizer
- sharing experiences with equal ranks and knowing they are feeling the same prevents women from isolating themselves and helps them find a new common balance

On the contrary, the following factors prevent women from adapting to the military environment:

- stiff rules, although necessary
- expectations
- request of male-type performances

In general this applies both to both genders and male readers should not wonder if they get into the above mentioned description.

In conclusion newcomers must be given time to adapt themselves to the new military life and find their balance also during the follow-up training. Again, although this applies to both genders women do need more time, at least until the real military life and the image of the military life women have in their minds are the same. This helps newcomers interiorize the military principles and integrate themselves with the Army.



THE POWER OF WOMEN'S FEELINGS

Finally I would like to focus on how men and women face and control their feelings. Relationships among human beings are based on feelings. Men and women have different feelings and react to feelings differently. Then it is obvious that feelings have an impact on relationships during training and operations.

Usually men do not show their feelings and seem to be indifferent to what happens around them. On the contrary women do show their feelings and share them with the others. This is how women usually face their

experiences their behaviour has been misunderstood by the military, in particular during training when, for example, women smile ironically.

Women require a different approach from unit commanders. For example, during training men react to the usual feeling of frustration differently from women: the former become angry and aggressive while women often cry or laugh when they are stressed.

Both behaviours are true depending on the situation. On the one hand sharing feelings with the others helps soldiers learn faster and easier; on the other hand we must say that during operations feelings must be under control.

We cannot say one behaviour is true while the other is false. Both of them are true and each of them may be enhanced depending on the situation.

In conclusion this is the first lesson learned by women in Army: we must become aware of the differences between genders to understand what is best for the Army, for men and women. Natural diversity must be learned and taught. This will allow women really integrate themselves with the military.

□

(*) Second Lieutenant,
DAR Office,
Army General Staff

THE ENIGMA OF THE FOX

by Nicola Pignato *

A deeper analysis of the documents, also of those that have only recently become available, shows the contradictions of a myth which has perhaps been created by his adversaries

“Rommel judges and acts on impression and never lingers to analyse thoroughly the problem that from time to time faces him, so that what he says and asserts today is often denied by what he will think and do tomorrow. A good piece of news makes him euphoric, a bad one depresses him and makes to seem black what he had thought was white. Animated by a more than evident ambition, he is often driven by it and, as he is not supported by the experience of command of Major Units, he goes to extremes of which he does not understand the importance. It is certain that Rommel, whose proven courage and daring nobody denies, always keeps one worried that he will make reckless steps” (General Ettore Bastico, High Commander of the Armed Forces in North Africa).





It is by now time to examine how much of Rommel's legend still stands an objective examination of his method of command, in the light of the documents recently made available and after the innumerable, almost always hagiographic essays that have been published starting from the fifties. The question is controversial: some have judged him more on the basis of propaganda than on his real qualities of commander; others, instead, have based themselves on his alleged resistance against Nazism (but when it was already on the wane) or on his past political inclinations. The opinions of those who have known him

directly, and can therefore speak in full cognition of the facts, differ from those who have written about him by hearsay, among them many journalists who are interested in history, perhaps with an incomplete specific authority.

Despite the time elapsed, his legend has endured, even if there are now documents of that period that seem to disprove a part of what was written in his favour. From an unpublished list that we have found at the Historic Office of the Army, it turns out that the sole German Armed Forces deployed in Northern Africa received, from February 1941 to May 1943, 1645

tanks of various types and 46 Tiger tanks, 4182 pieces of artillery, 47052 trucks, 8717 airplanes, 1,227,000 tons of fuel, and so on. A certainly not negligible amount, if one considers that the German material was mostly of recent construction.

Certainly, the consumption of a campaign fought in an inhospitable environment is high, but to say that the resources available were always insufficient is far from reality. Moreover many other kinds of material were frequently taken from the Italian stock.

THE RISE

Exactly sixty years have elapsed since the rousing days of June 1942. The brief campaign, which has undergone alternate phases but has led to the complete reconquest of Cyrenaica, is concluded with the victory of Tobruk. The author of the victory is Erwin Rommel, the man who, a little later, will be appointed Field Marshal. Until 1940, when, fortified only by his offensive doctrine, he has assumed the command of the 7th Division and led it to unhoped for successes, he has been an almost unknown Officer.

In 1917, he is a lieutenant when he takes part in the XII battle of the Isonzo and, on the Matajur, is awarded the decoration "Pour le Mérite", the highest German recognition. His career proceeds slowly during the difficult after-war times and only in 1933, after a period as instructor of tactics in Dresden, he achieves the rank of Major. Perhaps because of simple fortuitousness he gets into Hitler's good graces and, while remaining in the infantry he goes on to the Potsdam Academy with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel. In 1938, he is at the General Headquarters of the *Fuehrer*. He is by now 47 years old. He does not participate in the Polish campaign but studies its modalities.

Taking the words of the title of a book where he has assembled his experiences, *"Infanterie greift an"* (the infantry attacks), he applies his theories to tanks. He is convinced that what counts is speed: one must not stop in order to shoot, even if this entails a dreadful waste of ammunition. What is important is giving the enemy no respite. For the moment the logistic problems do not exist. At the head of his armoured units he applies these dogmas literally. With the capture and destruction of an entire French army he is made Knight of the Order of the Iron Cross.

It is the beginning of an extraordinary renown, which causes him also envies and ill feelings. When, in 1941, the disaster of Marshal Graziani's Army opens the way to Tripoli to the British Army, remembering that in 1937 he has been a long time in Libya and Egypt, Rommel is entrusted with re-establishing the situation. Needless to say that the decision of accepting the German help was taken long before. Unfortunately, for various reasons, it has been delayed until the moment it appears indispensable. In Tripoli, Marshal Graziani has been replaced by General Gariboldi, a man of a diametrically opposed character, who will soon be deprived of all power by Rommel. In vain, had Hitler recommended his general *"Remember, Rommel, this in North Africa, it is an Italian war. With forces efficient but limited – for him it is a theatre of secondary importance – you will have to prevent the British from making further progresses"*. But Rommel is not convinced that he should stay on the defensive with his arrest units (*Sperrverbände*). The English do not expect it and he attacks them with relatively scarce forces: a light Division and the Italian armoured Division "Ariete". The enemy will have to

be stopped on the threshold of the Sirte and not beyond it, at Buerat. He manages to convince Gariboldi. There is no time to waste because the British are increasing their strength. A wide-range attack is necessary, pressing on towards Derna.

Armoured Division begins to arrive and is immediately launched against the Tobruk stronghold, together with elements of the "Ariete" and "Brescia" Divisions. Here Rommel, for the first time, finds something difficult to chew. Still, despite the

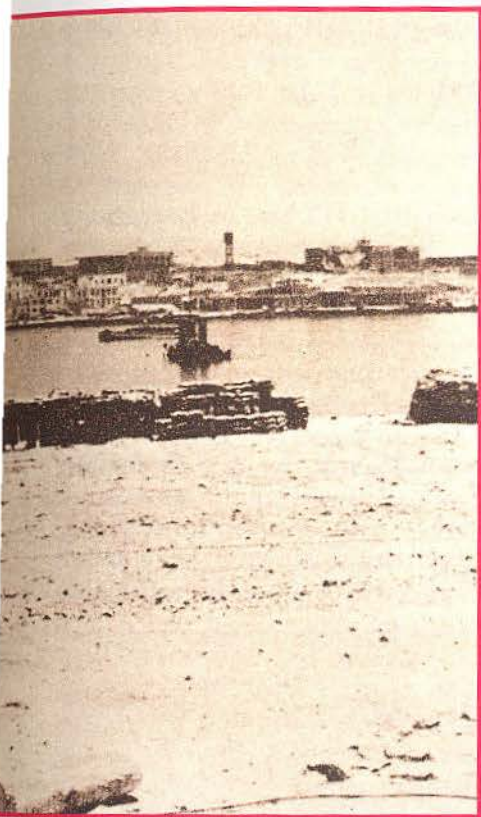


Cyrenaica is re-conquered. But Tobruk remains, albeit besieged. Among the prisoners there is O' Connor, Wavell's General who has defeated Graziani. Rommel has taken him by surprise in his Command tank, together with Gen. Neame, commander of the Australian troops, who had been the cruellest against the Italians, the prisoners in particular, regardless of the Geneva conventions. Rommel seizes the enemy Commander's vehicles which, renamed "Max" and "Moritz" and, even if marked by conspicuous German crosses, keep the original British camouflage paint. They replace the comfortable Command truck-trailer given him by the Italians.

Meanwhile, the German 15th

failure of his attacks and the serious losses, his popularity among the troops continues to grow. He is promised another Major Unit, the 90th Light Division, which soon arrives. Together with the first differences with the Italians. Gariboldi is replaced by Bastico, but relations remain tense. The improvisation of the German General's moves and his fame of invulnerability (even a British attempt to kill him fails and Rommel, chivalrously has a wreath laid on the tomb of his would-be murderer) begin to cause concerns. At the same time, the British launch a counteroffensive. Bastico intervenes and exhorts him to be prudent but, despite the fact that the new Chief of Staff, Gen

Cavallero, is also called to Africa to make him see reason, Rommel takes no notice. He still hopes to surround the enemy but things don't go well. The logistic problems, which he had underestimated, force him to withdraw. Benghazi is lost again



and Rommel must return more or less where he was in the spring. At Bir el Gobi, for the first time, the British armour that can still do it turn their rear to the Italian tanks, but this is not enough and neither is the resistance of our young volunteers, in the same place, some days later. Despite all this, even among our troops the confidence in the "fox" does not run out.

Nevertheless, higher up, some reservations start to show up. His innate qualities are appreciated: he highly considers the human factor; is an enthusiast of physical fitness although he does not spare himself, personally he is very frugal. Rommel has courage, initiative and constancy, but it can be easily seen that, inwardly and sometimes even openly, he has no liking for the Italians,

Left.

The first M13 enters Tobruk. It was the third tank of the first platoon of a company of the XI Tank Battalion, which in April had been transferred from the "Littorio" to the "Trieste" Division.

Below.

Engineers equipped with a mine detector opening a passage through a mine-field.



often shows that he does not trust them and very often treats them with arrogance. A characteristic of his, and certainly not a good point in a regular career officer, is his scarce propensity to obedience, and not only in his relations with the Italian superiors and colleagues. His relations with Kesselring are very bad, and there is bad blood also between him and Guderian, the most famous of the "tank" Generals. The Generals of the Afrika Korps respect him without reserve but certainly do not worship him. At the onset of the first problems they observe that he tends to blame others if things do not go the right way. Ignoring the effectiveness of the British "Ultra" decoding system, for which the Italian and German codes had no secret, he openly accuses the Italians of passing on information to the enemy.

Intolerant of criticism, he does not believe in accurate plans, since he maintains that, when an action begins, all previous arrangements become useless. It was written that Rommel wins, when he does, in conditions of numerical and material inferiority, offset only by his own special energy, speed and dynamism.

THE BATTLE OF GHAZALA

We have left the German Commander on the threshold of the Sirte. With a masterly retreat he has succeeded in saving his divisions but at the cost of considerable losses. As soon as these units begin to receive new men and materials, he prepares his revenge. He takes the initiative again, reoccupies Western Cyrenaica in a very short time and gets reorganized in front of Ghazala. This time his superiors give him precise space and time limits. He must not go further, according to the agreements of April 1941: occupy the Ghazala fortified area without crossing the Egyptian border. The opera-

tions must not go beyond June 20, when the air forces at his temporary disposal will have to be employed for the conquest of Malta.

As a first measure, and causing Bastico's reaction, Rommel advances the two Italian Corps – moving them away from Benghazi and the via Balbia, with great disadvantage for supplies – in order to have them closer to the fortified enemy lines; the manoeuvre forces (the XX Italian Armoured Corps and the *Panzergruppe Afrika*, pompously renamed *Panzerarmee Afrika*) will fall on the enemy from the rear.

The plan should be carried out after the conquest of Malta but unfortunately the Germans (and maybe Hitler himself, afraid after the serious losses suffered during the invasion of Crete) and some Italian personalities insist for the postponement of the operation, with consequences that will be seen later.

Bastico is not convinced: he fears a repetition of the mistakes of the battle of Marmarica or, even worse, a replica of the tragedy of Graziani's Army.

Nevertheless, the green light is given. On May 20, the Italians

advance to the north, engaging the enemy despite their violent reaction and the mobile forces begin the manoeuvre that should lead to the surrounding of the adversary and which should be completed in three days. But the

LIBYA-EGYPT Distances

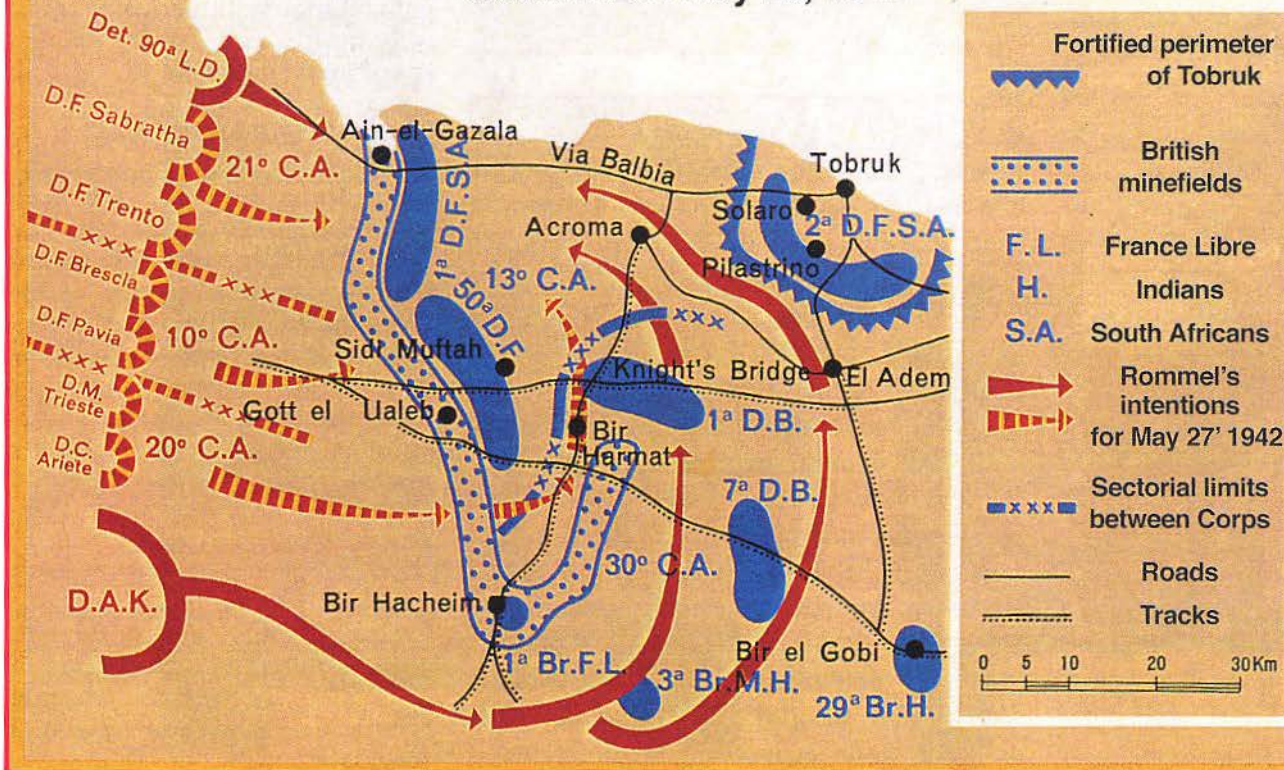
Roads

From Tripoli to the Egyptian border (Balbia coast-road): 1652 km.
Lateral road around Tobruk (S. dell'Asse) – from B.Meheriz (Balbia) to S. Bu Amud (Balbia): 100 km.
From Ghazala to Tobruk: approx. 60 km.
Tobruk–Egyptian border: 137 km
Egyptian border–Marsa Matruh: 238 km

Railroads.

From Marsa Matruh (Fukah) to Alexandria: 312 km. In 1941 the British forces prolonged it to Sidi Barrani and beyond.
Tobruk–El Alamein (completed by the Italians): 500 km (20 h by train).

Battle of Bir Hacheim - Tobruk Situation on May 26, 1942



experience of the preceding autumn has not been taken in by Rommel: the Axis' motorized troops, especially the Italian ones, although in possession of greater fire-power, are not as mobile as the enemy's, which are able to disengage more easily (see map).

Nevertheless and despite the fact that the British defence is strongly organized in a kind of four-sided stronghold protected by a minefield, underestimated by Rommel, the persistence and fighting spirit of the Axis' troops have the better of it. One by one, also thanks to our dive-bombers, the strongholds are compelled to surrender, although our troops cannot prevent the escape of part of the opponent's garrisons. The "Grant" tanks, whose presence in great numbers is a surprise for the German Commander, are less dangerous than expected; furthermore, our 75/18 self-propelled guns and new long-range artillery, present on this front for the first time, give a good account of themselves.

After the conquest of the quadrilateral and the destruction or retreat of the surviving units of the Ghazala line, Rommel orders to attack Tobruk. Also here, as in the conquest of Bir-Hakeim, heavy artillery and "Picchiatelli" (dive-bombers) are decisive, together with the Italo-German sappers who storm, one by one, the very tough posts. The Italian troops distinguish themselves once more and have the great satisfaction of receiving the surrender of the fortress; other units reach the border in order to prevent possible offensive returns.

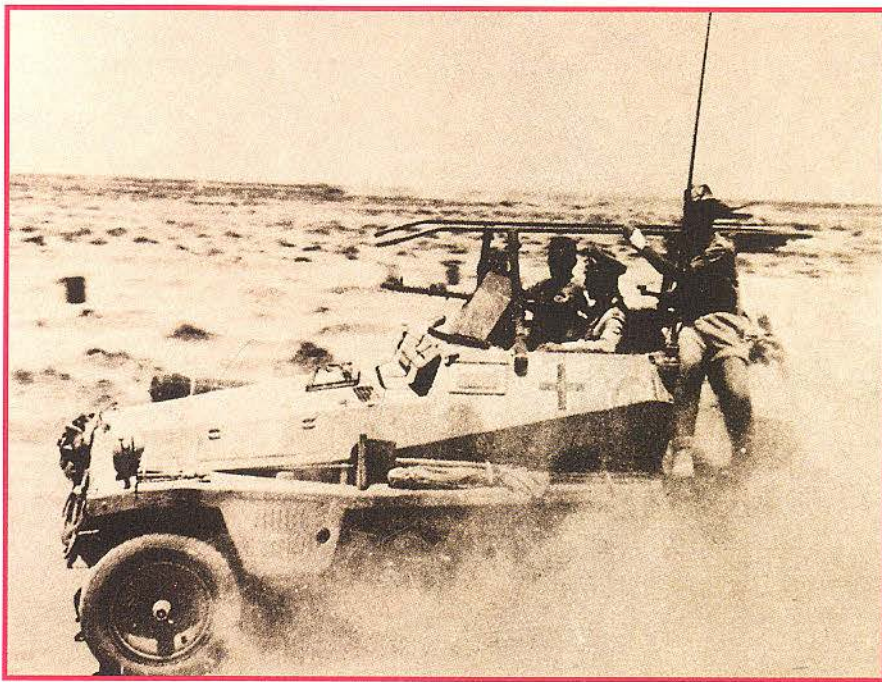
Gen. Bastico must put up with it, albeit reluctantly, but notes that during the three-day logistic crisis a serious failure has been risked.

On April 12, just a little over a month before the beginning of the attack, in a letter to the Chief of the General Staff, he has harshly criticized the allied General,

openly defining him "superficial, easily impressed by appearances, prone to reasoning by preconceptions, negligent and inaccurate in issuing orders, intolerant of his colleagues' advice and immoderately ambitious". In conclusion, Bastico asks that all directives be sent to him through the Italian Supreme Command.

Actually this will happen only very partially, since the Supreme Command leaves every evaluation to the North Africa Armed Forces High Command and chooses not to

Rommel directing the operations by radio from his half-tracked vehicle.



intervene, in order to avoid any possible reason of contrast in such a delicate moment. But after Tobruk's reconquest a big problem must be solved. In the common opinion the enemy is now weakened and it would be appropriate to continue the chase inside the Egyptian territory. There are discussions on what to do, but not a word is said on the condition of our troops, after a battle that has lasted longer than a month, without a break. The large num-

ber of vehicles captured is emphasized, disregarding the fact that they will shortly become useless, due to the difficulties inherent to driving and maintaining materials little known to the Italo-Germans and the progressive depletion of the limited stock of spare parts. Similarly, the food supplies which have been seized are not always healthy for men used to a different diet. There are also perplexities about the stocks of water and fuel.

Nonetheless the German General, to whom – let's not forget it – the full responsibility of the troops has been entrusted, continues to act as he pleases,

without bothering too much about the limitations set to him, which indeed permit him a certain flexibility of behaviour. No one (besides Bastico, as we have seen), considering the results achieved on the field, mentions the risk run by Rommel when he was almost completely out of supplies, and the daring encirclement that could have turned into a disaster. In that predicament Rommel owed a lot to luck and to the capability of his troops. In particular to the Italian troops



Feldmarschall Erwin Rommel, the "Desert Fox".

who, by opening a corridor for the supply of water, food, fuel and ammunition, eventually got him out of trouble.

Rommel made another mistake when he decided not to wait for the arrival of the whole "Littorio"

armoured Division before carrying out his plan, since this was the only fully equipped and well trained Italian Division. He could have kept the "Ariete" in reserve for other objectives, while waiting to reorganize it behind the lines. He did instead dismember the "Littorio" and, as soon as its components arrived, he assigned them to the "Ariete".

THE DECLINE OF THE FOX

As we have seen, with this resounding success Rommel regains the high repute he has earned during his early months in Africa. The English have every interest in emphasizing his extraordinary military qualities in order to justify their failures and to obtain more resources from the United States, particularly worried about the situation in the Mediterranean area. Gen. Marshall actually promises 390 new "Sherman" tanks and a hundred 105 mm self-propelled guns for the re-equipment of the armoured units of the Egypt Army. They will leave for Suez on July 10 and it will only be a question of time.

But the most important is that Rommel has regained his Fuehrer's trust, even if he considers the African theatre of secondary importance. The Italians, on the other hand, are convinced that this victory, without the neutralization of Malta, will prove short-lived. This is confirmed by a letter sent to Hitler by our Supreme Commander, where it is stressed that the conquest of the island and the consequent saving of fuel will enable the Navy to ensure the supplies to Libya and allow the Air Force to concentrate on the support of the units operating in Egypt. The letter also underlines that the operation should take place no later than August or postponed until the following year.

The German answer arrives two days later and does not even take into account the Italian request: Hitler has an absolute trust in the power of the Italo-German armoured Army and regards the British 8th Army as completely destroyed. But – as we now today – the situation is seen very differently by the enemy: Gen. Neil M. Ritchie, shortly before being relieved from his command, is actually confident of stopping the

Germans at Marsa Matruh, and Gen. Auchinleck, his Commander in Chief, approves. Nevertheless, the events prove him wrong, since Rommel gives him no respite (1) and only the scarce coordination of the Italo-Germans, due to the slower pace of the Italian formations and the wearing out of the units, saves the enemy from total destruction. Matruh and Fukah will be Rommel's last successes: The crisis of the adversary will end at El Alamein. The decision of choosing this extreme position of resistance turns out to be crucial, since the area can only be outflanked at an extremely wide range. The position had already been singled out in 1941 and the works of fortification according to the box system are resumed immediately. The German plan to overtake it and then proceed towards Alexandria (the front is to be held by the Italians, the outflanking entrusted to the Germans) is intercepted by Ultra (2), as well as all the previous moves of the German Commander. The fatigue of the troops and the inferior quality of the equipment contribute to the failure of the operation. The run stops, the British troops counterattack violently and only by a miracle the moment of truth is postponed by three months.

Even without hindsight, the fundamental mistake of the whole campaign is clear: when in pursuit, the Commander must have at its disposal a mobile reserve which, at the appropriate moment, enables him to overtake the units engaged, in order to throw fresh troops into the fight and continue to advance. Rommel is now aware of this and asks for two motorized Divisions but he does not get them.

Nonetheless, we can note that from this moment there is a real metamorphosis in the German Commander's behaviour. Up to now he has been considered a master of manoeuvres and improvisation on the field, in short a "highly talented attacker" who wins a – if and when he does – in conditions of numerical and material inferiority, offset by his very special energy, speed and dynamism; but now he seems resigned, not a dominator of events anymore.

There is no hope of receiving large reinforcements and the supply situation is well known: with great difficulty it is possible to send men and materials for the reconstitution of the existing units on the new line. The low spirits, probably due to the uninterrupted prolongation of tension and combats, which lead some units to throw down their arms without fighting, are now spreading to the top. Rommel himself falls victim to this: he mentions his "deep discouragement",

reacts only with words and, although convinced that the enemy have resumed the initiative and time works against him, he is well aware of the fact that remaining on the defensive is as dangerous as attempting a breakthrough. Furthermore, from August 15 he is faced by a new adversary: Bernard Montgomery is the new Commander of the 8th Army. He is not a tank expert but a methodical planner. He trusts his men, is well aware of the superiority of his forces and a priori excludes any possibility of retreat. Albeit with a different spirit as compared to that of three months before, the new Feldmarschall gets ready to repeat a Ghazala-type operation: make a breakthrough on the south and surround the enemy behind the lines. The offensive, launched at the end of August, is ill-prepared, weak and insecure. On the contrary, the enemy is well informed of Rommel's plans and appears to be well organized, strong and



Italian 75/18 self-propelled guns shortly before the battle.

determined. The German Commander, despite having suffered only insignificant losses, stops the attack on the pretext of a logistic crisis and, strangely, does not seem to be troubled by the setback. He has already decided to go to Berlin and Rome for consultations, but there he receives only some vague promises (3). He is on the eve of the physical and psychological breakdown that will keep him away from the front just at the decisive moment.

There are still some conclusive remarks that we can make on the basis of the outcome of recent researches which belie some of the positive evaluations that in post-war years counted Rommel among the greatest "condottieri" of all times.

For years, the German General has been the object of an immense extolling literature, which generally considers the African situation from a viewpoint often coinciding with that of his former adversaries. In particular, we remember the hagiographic essay by Gen. Desmond Young – with a foreword by Auchinleck – who lived through the battle of Ghazala, where he was taken prisoner. He is the first to receive from the Marshal's wife, and to include them in his work as an appendix, the famous "Rommel's papers", which will also appear in other publications. Nevertheless, in Italy the British exaggerations are not totally shared: already in 1973, albeit in a popular work (a little more than a short biography), we notice a remarkable reconsideration of the strategic qualities ascribed to the German Commander. Equally superficial is the essay by another journalist published by the same House.

More recently, all aspects of the spring-summer campaign of 1942 have been thoroughly examined together, of course, with Rommel's conduct of the operations. He should have foreseen, even if his information service

was rather wanting, that while the Italo-German Army was very unlikely to receive substantial reinforcements, the other side was going to get new units with very modern equipment. Furthermore, many rightly observed that the in-depth array of some artillery units, the also in-depth strengthening of the security zone – in order to wear out

favour of the Germans, overlooked until now, is that the first "Sherman" tanks armed with 75/37 guns were inferior to the thirty mod.4 German tanks armed with prolonged guns, besides being completely vulnerable to the sixty A/T 76 mm German self-propelled guns. It must be added that, since training is extremely important in war and



A hero of the new Italian armoured artillery: Lieutenant Aldo Maria Scalise, who was awarded the Gold Medal for Military Valour shortly before falling near Bir Hacheim.

the attacker before the final clash – and the deployment of the armoured reserve units more to the back – so that they would be allowed more manoeuvring space – would have favoured the defensive action. Another factor in

the new US-built tanks were delivered shortly before the attack, it is not certain that all crews were capable of fully exploiting the capabilities of the new weapons.

More serious and tragic is the lack of air superiority. The American aircraft, from heavy four-engine bombers to fighters, reverse the situation. Rommel's absence at the decisive moment does the rest.

As regards Erwin Rommel's merits and shortcomings, we

wish to mention a recent British essay which tries to scrutinize the actual capabilities shown by him in almost two years of African campaign. We certainly agree that the most discussed decisions were not taken by him alone but were endorsed by his superiors. Probably his bellicose ardour urged him to plan and organize the manoeuvre, to the point of making him superficial; planning was not his forte (admittedly, some of his sensational successes in the desert seem achieved with "very little or non-existent margins of logistic security"); many of his ambitious initiatives are taken at a moment when they appear suitable or necessary. When it comes to considering him as the only chivalrous fighter (unlike Kesselring and many Generals on other fronts, often accused of atrocities against civilians, in harsh retaliation for snipers' attacks) we do not know how he would have behaved in similar circumstances.

It was observed that Rommel learned by experience but, at the same time, we see a sharp decline (and not only physical) when, after advancing for hundreds of kilometres without too many problems, he is faced by an organized resistance and seems to lose the "sixth sense" which had assisted him on so many occasions. In Tunisia – in March 1943, before handing over his command to Gen. von Arnim – we see him starting a strong offensive against the Americans at the Kasserine Pass, only to suspend it for no apparent reason. Later, he cuts another negative figure at Medelin. By now, also the Italians have lost their confidence in him, especially after Tripoli was abandoned without fighting.

The study also hints at the fact that he was against sacrificing other irreplaceable forces, including a good portion of the available air transport, just to continue a useless resistance for a few months. Anyway he did nothing

to prevent it. One could add that with the surrender of the German Army without even attempting an evacuation (as the British forces had done in Dunkerque and Crete) the best veterans were lost while, had they been repatriated, they could have been valid instructors for the new recruits.

From the political viewpoint, and for what directly concerns the Italian situation, the non-exploitation of the time gained in Tunisia, in view of a possible political solution of the conflict, would have very serious consequences. Pietro Maravigna, in his immediate post-war essay, pointed this out: "*A resistance in Tunisia could have been understandable only if we had been prepared to carry out an effective action against the air and naval power in Sicily*".

The last volume published this year on the Afrika Korps (and therefore on Rommel) does not indulge in tactical and strategic considerations: it is mainly a photographic history of the German engagement in North Africa. It is interesting for some unpublished pictures of the campaign but does not add anything really important.

In general, Rommel's responsibilities are those already pointed out: he attempted a difficult exploitation of the success achieved, being fully aware that he lacked the means to reach Suez and confiding only in the demoralization of the enemy; he insisted that the High Command cancel the landing in Malta, compromising once and for all the safety of the convoys and the survival of his Army, with the sole purpose of keeping the air support for the land operations. Finally, even knowing the scarce capacity of the ports in Cyrenaica and western Egypt, he extended his supply lines excessively (about 2000 km), thus thwarting any possibility of regular provisioning for the entire theatre.

As a consequence, the short-lived success of Tobruk will be the premise of a disaster already heralded by the failed breakthrough of the improvised Alamein line, attempted with utterly exhausted forces. To all this we must add the suspension of the offensive at Alam Halfa, started at the end of the following August, and the questionable deployment adopted in view of the battle of El Alamein that will take place two months later. It is a sequence of errors without justification: one cannot and should not count exclusively on boldness and luck when the prestige of an Army, and of a whole Nation, is at stake.

Nor can the numerous heroic deeds performed by our soldiers transform a bitter defeat into an epic to be celebrated.

□

**Military analyst
and historian*

NOTES

(1) Gen. Auchinleck was also concerned about Rommel's charisma, which influenced even his own men. He admits having issued a circular to his Commanders and Chiefs of Staff on "the danger that our friend Rommel becomes a kind of wizard or bogeyman for our troops, who talk too much about him [...] I ask you to eradicate, in every possible way, the idea that Rommel is anything more than a normal German General".

(2) Thanks to this decoding system, already in 1940-41 the Italo-German plans were known by the enemy, together with the routes and departures of the supply convoys, which were generally attacked and often sunk.

(3) In Germany, Rommel is shown the "Tiger" tank and the "Nebelwerfer" multibarrel rocket-launcher, both to be shortly dispatched to Africa. He is also told that, owing to their limited weight (500 kg), the latter can be transported by air, but perhaps Rommel is not informed that every 15cm rocket weighs 35 kg and must be transported too. A veiled hint is also made about a nuclear weapon being prepared.

THE LEGIONARY MEDICAL SERVICE

*A recent research helps us to
reconstruct the global medical
organization which supported the
conquest of the great Empire of
the Caesars.*



by Gerardo Restaino *

The brave Roman soldiers knew that, in case of need, in peace and war, the Legion would provide them with the best cures available at the time, since it had at its disposal the best doctors of the known world. Also animals could benefit from the most modern scientific knowledge and were thoroughly treated. For the ancient Romans, preventive medicine was very important, to the point that it became a life discipline. Doctors and medics, veterinarians and pharmacists were members of a first class organization which, with its very high efficiency, guaranteed and supported the conquest and preservation of an immense territory. Roman medicines, cures and treating methods still retain a surprising validity. In many cases, they should indeed be rediscovered.

The Romans make sure their Legionaries get the best possible medical assistance. They are already aware of the fact that man is the fulcrum of every Army: it is man, the soldier with his professionalism, that makes the difference between an Army and a simple armed band. Therefore a wounded soldier must receive the appropriate medical care, since his training and education are an investment in terms of time and resources which must be protected to the utmost, also because (leaving aside the moral considerations) it is cheaper to cure an injured soldier than train another one.

Making the most of the experience gained in the various military campaigns, the Romans move from the rudimentary medical assistance of the early Republican years to the complex service realized during the Empire.

Left.

A military doctor relieving the wounded on the battlefield (bas-relief from Trajan's Column).

Right.

Picking up the wounded (Trajan's column).



Often the cognitions acquired in the military medical service are applied to civilian life by the military doctors themselves who, during their time with the Legions, have gained practical knowledge and experience.

Military campaigns, then as now, are also the occasion for new discoveries and cognitions in the medical field: for example, during the campaign of 16 A.D.,

A Roman gladius of the early Empire (reconstruction).

the Roman doctors of Germanicus' Legions learn from their Frisian enemies how to use a medicinal plant called *rumex obtusifolius* for the preparation of the so-called "barbarian poultice".

The ancient military treatises give very little space to medicine since, at that time, those who did not deal with the traditional activities typical of a fighting force were considered insignificant. Nevertheless, military medicine is very important and this is proved by the fact that the first doctor cited in Roman history is a military man: Marius Perusinus, a friend of Atilius Regulus', mentioned by Silius





Italicus (25-101 A.D.) in his work "Punicas", on the battle of Lake Trasimeno (217 B.C.).

THE MEDICAL SERVICE IN THE REPUBLICAN PERIOD

During the Republic there is not an organized medical service within the Roman Army: the historical sources barely refer to the wounded or the ill. Possibly this is due to the influence of the Hellenic Army, where there is not a specific service. Still, the fact that there is not an organized military medical service does not mean that there are no doctors: high ranking Officers, Consuls and Praetors have their personal civilian doctors who follow them on the battlefield. The tools used by the doctors in the campaigns are the same employed in civilian life: surgical instruments and drugs widely used in Roman medicine. The social status of the doctor working for a Consul or Praetor is rather low: they are generally slaves or freed men and belong to the General's *familia*. As a rule they are not Roman citizens and starting from the 2nd Century B.C., many are Greeks, captured during the campaigns in Macedonia and Greece. It is Caesar – a shrewd politician, an excellent leader, and one who knows the value of things, who grants the Roman citizenship to the doctors practicing in Rome and to those who follow the Commanders of his Legions.

Above.

Roman surgical instruments. (Museum of Roman Art, Merida, Spain).

Below.

Details of a Roman building: inlet of the aqueduct and water canalization (Merida, Spain).



As we said, in the Republican period soldiers cannot count on a prompt medical assistance in case of illness or injury. In battles, in case of victory, the losses are usually limited, but in case of defeat the number of casual-

ties is enormous and often reaches considerable numbers, mainly because tactics do not yet envisage the compact employment of the Legions, but they are still employed in maniples. After a bloody battle, hundreds of wounded men remain on the field, waiting for a help which is late in coming and many a time comes too late. Frequently, after a defeat, the Roman wounded are killed by the enemy out of a mixture of cruelty and compassion, as was the case of the battle of Cannae (216 B.C.). There is no reason to doubt that the Romans acted in the same way when victory was on their side.

During, or after, a battle, the uninjured men collect their wounded comrades. Those who are less seriously injured cure themselves. The others stay in their own tents and are attended to by the unhurt comrades in arms, who use the content of the "individual kit" carried by every legionary. It contains bandages, haemostatic and cicatrizing herbs, and probably drugs



Oriental archers of a Roman auxiliary unit. (Trajan's Column).

against pain. It is rather common for the Commanders to lend their doctors and surgeons to the medics, in order to have them cooperate in the care of the wounded.

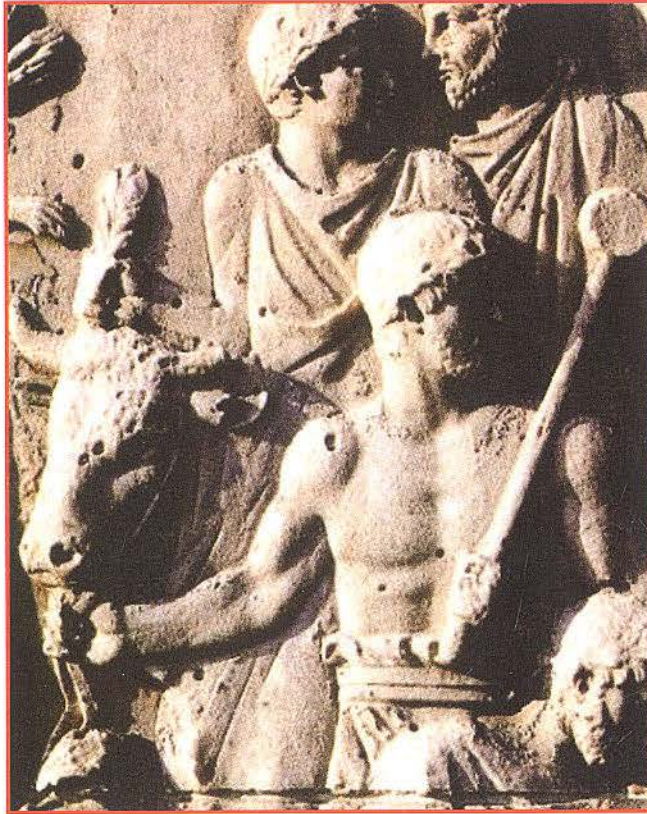
The soldiers suffering from very serious injuries are moved behind the lines. When battles are still fought near Rome, the wounded are carried inside the City, and successively inside the allied towns that Rome is acquiring. The wounded soldiers are received in private houses and looked after by the host families until they are healed. If the recovered legionaries cannot be reemployed by their units because they were destroyed or no more operational, they form a *vexillatio* (detail) and reach a location decided by the Legion.

THE MEDICAL SERVICE DURING THE EMPIRE

During the 1st Century B.C. the written sources begin to mention military doctors. This prefigures the military medical organization of the Imperial period. Caesar, in his campaigns, shows concern for the cure of his ill and wounded soldiers: and since that period we note a progressive specialization of the military doctors and a series of medical categories is established, each with well-defined functions. During the Empire, almost all doctors continue to be of Hellenic origin, despite the progress made by the Roman medicine.

After the social upheavals caused by the long civil wars of the 1st Century B.C., the medical service takes a long step forward. Octavian, after coming to power in 31 B.C. with the battle of Actium against Mark Antony ,

makes radical changes in society, in the institutions and in the Army. Between 30 and 13 B.C. he curtails the huge Army inherited from the civil wars, in accordance with the needs and the budget of the State. Octavian (Augustus from 27 B.C.) creates a permanent Army with an efficient medical service. The Emperor, as supreme Commander, just as the Generals of the Republic, is compelled to guarantee the medical



The keeper of a Legion's livestock (Trajan's Column).

assistance through the inclusion of the doctors in the Cadres of the Legion, making them directly subordinate to the Commanders. The development of the medical service is gradual, going from the presence of one or more physicians to composite teams of medical assistance.

Apparently, only the Roman wounded deserved the attention of the medical service,

since historians do not mention the injured enemies. Probably, apart from exceptional cases, the Roman Legionaries follow Hannibal's policy: "finish the enemies to avoid curing them...and meanwhile shorten their sufferings".

The death rate in a Roman Legion during a campaign is high, owing to the combination of the effects of wounds, diseases, physical debilitation, very bad hygienic conditions and, in some occasions, lack of supplies. What happens to a wounded Roman Legionary during the Empire is not different, at least as regards first aid, from what happens in the Republican period. After the first rudimental treatment of the wounds on the battlefield, which often the Legionary does by himself, using his individual kit and following the first-aid instructions, the wounded man is moved to a temporary encampment, then sent to a friendly town and housed in a private home, or to the permanent camp of the Legion where, if his physical conditions permits it, sits in his

tent, looked after by his comrades and periodically examined by one of the Legion's doctors. Those who need an intensive treatment are taken to the *vale-tudinarium*, (hospital) which is an integral part of the Legion's camp. There, the wounded are assisted by members of the medical service and, once out of danger, can use the facilities of the hospital (porticoes, gardens, inner yards) for the first period of the convalescence. If the doctors deem it convenient for a faster rehabilitation, in order to speed the recovery he may be



A cuirass with gladius and decorations. (Bas-relief on a funerary stone. Rome, Via Laurentina, Imperial period, I Legio "Italica").

sent to a spa: Sulis (today's Bath, England) for the Legions garrisoned in Britannia; Aquae Granni, Aquae and Aquae Mattiacorum (today's Aachen, Baden Baden and Wiesbaden, Germany) for the Legions of the Rhine and Danube, Aquae Iasae (today's Verazdinske Toplice, Hungary) for the Pannonian Legions. The convalescents of the Legions stationed in Egypt are sent to the Mediterranean coast. Once restored to health, the Legionaries return to their garrisons and start training, in order to recover their full physical efficiency and be reemployed in active duty, as was customary already in Caesar's times. As we

mentioned before, starting from the reorganization of the Army carried out by Augustus, the Legion's medical service is regularized and organized by establishing an effective system of rehabilitation and assistance of the wounded and ill (even considering the limitations of those times).

ORGANIZATION OF THE MILITARY MEDICAL SERVICE DURING THE EMPIRE

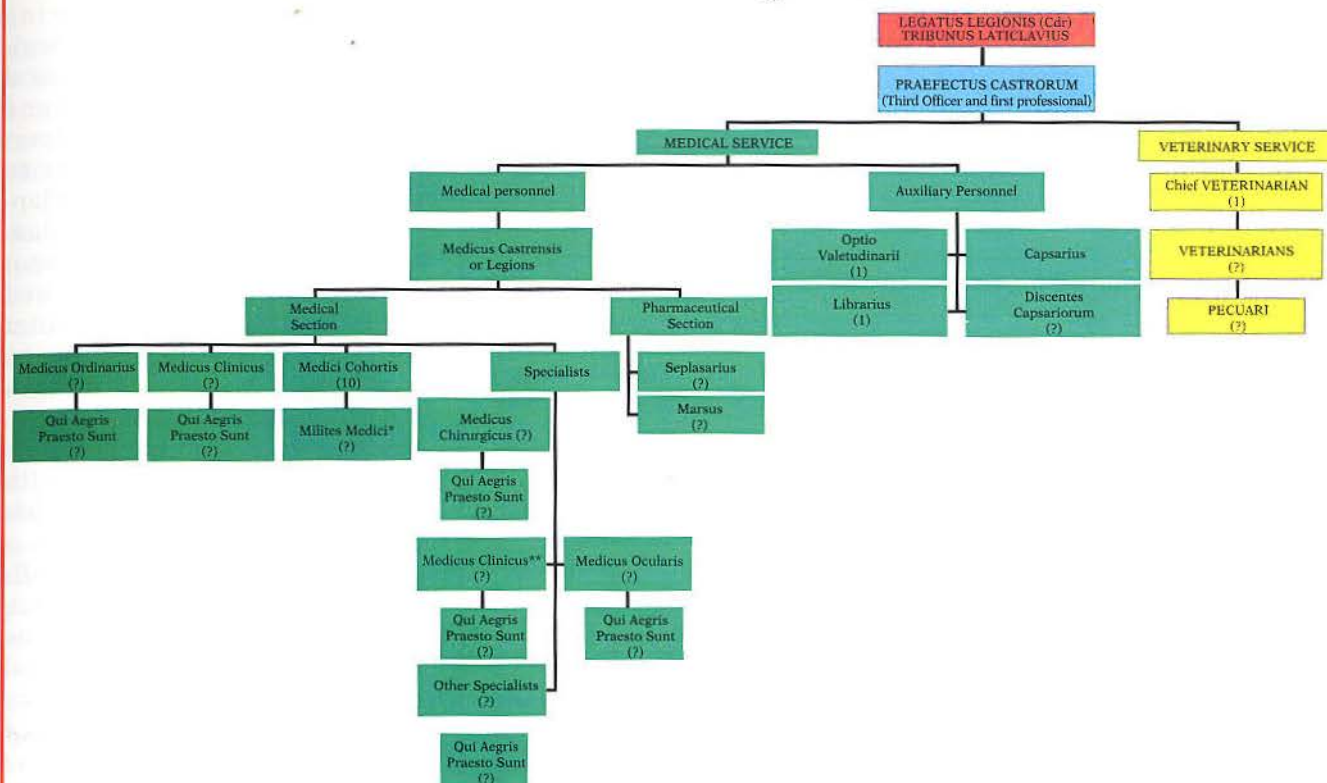
The medical service of a Roman Legion comes under the *Praefectus castrorum*, who is the third Officer, in order of importance, within the Legion's chain

of command, after the *Legatus Legionis* and the *Tribunus lat clavii*. He is the first professional soldier, since for the two officials who precede him the service in the Army is part of their *cursus honorum*.

The *Praefectus castrorum* is responsible for logistics and medical organization and when the Legion is at its permanent camp he is the highest supervisor and manager of the *valetudinarium* and its resources. He is responsible for the medical and veterinarian services. The latter is as important as the medical service, in that it safeguards the health of the animals, be they employed for work or for combat (cavalry) or used as food. The veterinarians, helped by the *pecuarii* (livestock keepers), attend to the animals, seeing to it that those employed for daily duty as well as those destined for feeding and sacrificing to the gods are kept in their best conditions. Veterinarians and *pecuarii* are under a chief veterinarian who, in his turn, is subordinate to the *Praefectus castrorum*.

Responsible for the Legion's medical service is the *medicus castrensis* (or *castrorum*), a name which initially referred to those who normally lived with the troops but later assumed the meaning of Chief of the Legion's doctors. His function is to coordinate all medical aspects of the unit's life: The personnel under his orders are divided in two sections: medicine and pharmacy. The former employs *medici cohortis*, *medici clinici*, *medici ordinarii* and "specialists". The *medici cohortis* are assigned according to the troops' needs, at the rate of one for every cohort, and are equated to non-commissioned officers. Each

Organization of the Medical Service in a Roman Legion of the Early Empire



Legion is subdivided into 10 cohorts, therefore we can assume that there were 10 *medici*. Under them we see the *milites medici*, or soldier doctors, who are not real doctors but simple Legionaries, who for their aptitude or knowledge show a special skill in assisting the wounded and an elementary experience in basic surgery.

The *medici clinici* are doctors (we don't know their exact number) who serve in the *valetudinarium*, the legionary hospital.

The *medici ordinarii*, whose number is also not known, follow the Legion in its movements and, during the battles, help the sick and the slightly wounded who, as we have seen, remain in their own tents.

Among the "specialists" we can mention the *medicus chirurgicus* (surgeon), the *medicus clinicus*, (specialist in internal medicine), the *medicus ocularis*

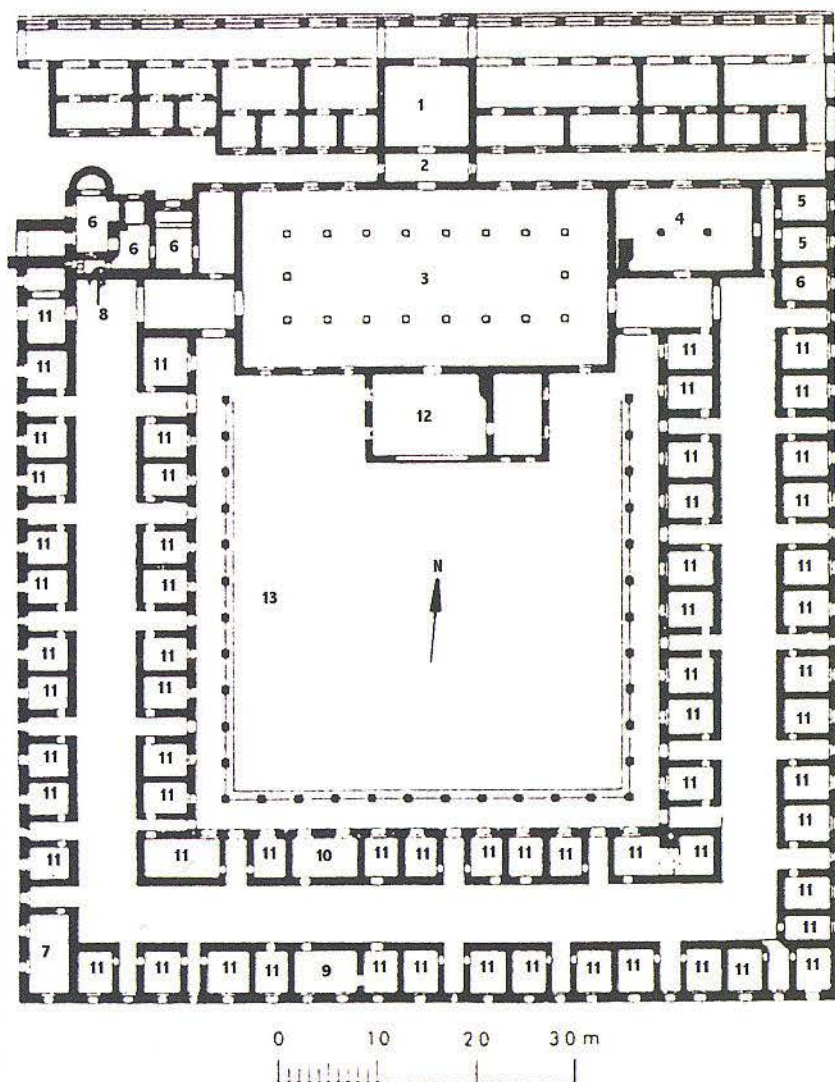
(oculist) and the *medicus auricularis* (ear, nose and throat specialist). All *medici* are helped by assistants called *qui aegris praesto sunt* (those who care for the sick).

The pharmaceutical section elaborates the necessary drugs and medicaments. We know of at least two roles played by the chemists: the *seplasarius*, in charge of the mixtures necessary for producing ointments and salves, and the *marsus*, whose mission is to look for antidotes to counteract the bites of snakes and the sting of scorpions and poisonous insects.

The *Praefectus castrorum* is also in charge of a number of persons who carry out the auxiliary work necessary to relieve the medical personnel of non-specific sanitary tasks. First among these is the *optio valetudinarii*, who deals with the administration of the *valetudinarium*.

Another auxiliary figure is the *capsarius*, who is tasked with the storage and distribution of bandages, gauze and other medical material. The *discentes capsariorum* are in charge of bed clothes. The archivist and clerk (to use known terms) who deals with the "office files" is called *librarius*.

The condition of the medical personnel depends on whether they are real doctors or just medical assistants. As regards the duration of their service, while the medical assistant is bound to the norms and the customary pay of the legionary of the Imperial period (20-year service, with prohibition to get married during that time), doctors carry out an undetermined period of service, sometimes very short and sometimes for their entire life, thus making military medicine their profession. Another difference is their



Plan of the Roman military hospital at Castra Vetera.

1-entrance; 2-guard room; 3-examination room; 4-kitchens; 5-storeroom; 6-baths; 7-corpse depository; 8-latrines; 9-residences for doctors on duty; 10-pharmacy; 11-sick-rooms; 12-operating rooms; 13-courtyard.

possibility of getting married during the period of service. The military ranks vary: doctors, because of their specific skills and responsibilities, are Officers with a status similar to that of a centurion. Medical assistants are equated to specialist non-commissioned officers, not a very high rank in the Legions. They wear the normal legionary uniform, with the emblem of their rank and position, and are armed; their pay is higher than

that of the fighting Legionary: as a matter of fact, they belong to the category of the *duplicarii*, i.e. those who draw twice the normal salary.

ACTIVITIES CARRIED OUT AND ANCIENT HOSPITAL STRUCTURES

The activity of military doctors does not regard only the treatment of wounds and diseases: it starts with the enlistment.

Before subscribing to his enlistment, the aspirant Legionary must get through an accurate medical examination, during which the Legion's doctors register his height, weight, physical strength (a real anamnesis) and draw up a "psychological" report on the candidate, in order to determine his capability of adapting to military life (the evaluation includes previous occupation, intelligence, character and aptitude for legionary life). After the examination, the candidate, if passed fit, attends a four-month basic training cycle, during which the Legion's doctors follow his evolution with periodic physical and psychic tests: getting through them is a necessary and sufficient condition for his definitive enlistment. During their 20-year duty, the Legionaries undergo occasional examinations, with a frequency proportionate to the number of years spent on duty. If they don't get through the tests, they may be assigned to less wearing tasks or discharged. The Legion's doctors control the situation of the most seriously ill and, if they are not fit for duty, give them the *causaria missio* (infirmity discharge), together with a reward for their sacrifices and a "testimonial" of the duties performed.

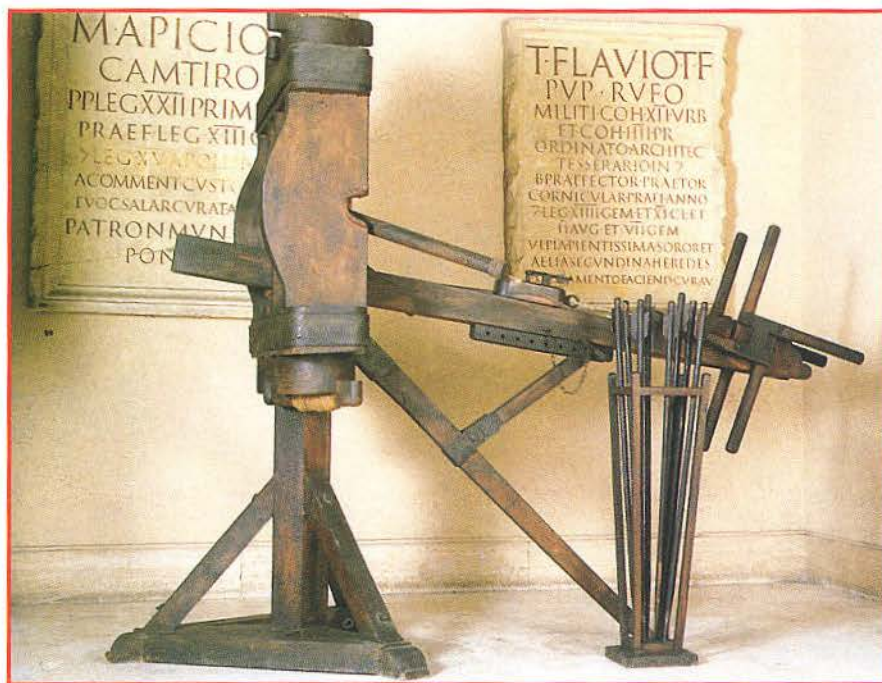
Prevention is another important task of military doctors: teaching the Legionaries that the basis of a good health is an accurate personal hygiene. Obviously the position of the permanent encampments is an important element (their selection must be endorsed by the Legion's doctor) and they are always distant from unhealthy and swampy areas. As we have seen, the doctors control the quality of food, in collaboration with the veterinarians; beverages are also checked. Training, albeit hard and severe, should not be so excessive as to have dangerous effects on the soldiers' body

A stationary ballista (reconstruction).

and on the efficiency of the whole Legion; the shelters employed against extreme winter and/or summer temperatures should be suitable.

The training of the military doctors is satisfactory: it derives from daily experience and generally lacks deep theoretical knowledge, apart from some fundamental notions of anatomy. The "novice" doctor can only learn by imitation and ... on the patient's skin. Many doctors, also in view of continuing their activity in civilian life, enlist in order to experiment "new" therapies or to perform autopsies on the corpses of the enemies.

Prevention concerns first of all the environment in which the soldier lives: the fortified encampment. The stopping (or march) camps, being used for short periods, do not represent serious problems, since the minimum hygienic conditions (passably healthy areas and a good water supply) are easily attainable. The problems crop up in the border camps, which easily become permanent and can turn into receptacles of diseases, due to precarious water-storage conditions and to the great number of open latrines. Therefore, together with the construction of effective fortifications, the Legionaries endeavour to create the best possible hygienic environment: conduits for a sufficient water supply; drainage of rainwater; deep septic tanks connected with the latrines. As regards personal hygiene, *thermae*-style baths are



realized and must be used after the three monthly forced marches. Moreover, when the weather is really foul, suitable sheltered areas for individual training are arranged.

When the Legion is on the march, the medical personnel travels on waggons transporting everything necessary to shelter the wounded and sick in their own tents. The *medici cohortis* carry with them small bronze or ivory trunks containing the surgical tools, vessels and medicines indispensable for emergencies and first aid. When the march is over and the encamp-

ment is set up, the tents of the field hospital, a smaller-scale imitation of the *valetudinarium* of the permanent camp, are also pitched in such a way as to form a square, or rectangle, with a latrine nearby. In the large march-encampments, where up to 5 or 6 Legions could camp together, the *valetudinarium* is installed close to the *praetorium* (the Commander's residence) and watched by two cohorts.

When the frontiers of the Empire become stable, the border camps and their *valetudinaria* turn into permanent installations. Inside the encampments



Instruments found in a surgeon's grave: medicine chest, probe case, small spoon, spatula, tweezers, scalpel and needle. (Museum of Roman Art, Merida, Spain).



A Legionary of the 4th Century A.D. (reconstruction).

installed near the *praetorium* in order to protect the patients in case of siege and generally consist of a square building with a large internal courtyard surrounded by open galleries.

THE CURING TECHNIQUES

Aurelius Cornelius Celsus testifies the high quality of military doctors and their therapies in his work "*De Medicina*" dwelling upon the various techniques. In case of injuries, they stop haemorrhages or treat inflammations with gauze soaked in vinegar, and cauterise wounds with red-hot instruments. To stitch cuts, after cleaning them they use threads made of animals' intestine (or *fibulae*, a kind of clamps). A curative poultice is then applied to the wound. It is called "barbarian" since it was learned from the enemies. The wound is bandaged with cloth strips, tight enough as to avoid gangrene. Another problem is to extract "projectiles" from the wounded men's body. Arrows, for instance, must be pulled out with a scalpel, paying great attention not to cut nerves, veins or arteries. For a legionary doctor it is very common to proceed to amputations in case of gangrene. This causes a high mortality rate, due to the lack of aseptic environments.

The wounded soldier is constantly looked after, his lesions are kept under strict control and he is strengthened with a diet of cereals, legumes, vegetables, lard, cheese, fresh fruit and wine (a luxury for those times) to help his recovery.

The Roman military physicians have a solid, if empiric knowledge of pharmacology, and use medicines that usually derive from basic chemical compounds. Also the salutary pro-

the quality of life of the Legionaries improves, in particular as concerns the injured or sick men; therefore tents make way for buildings of wood, and later of stone, with "special" baths, separate kitchen, direct water supply and their own water tanks, located in good positions for a good ventilation. The structural characteristics of the *valetudinaria* can be appreciated, for example, at the excavations of Inchtuthill, Scotland, where one can see the rectangu-

lar plan with a central corridor flanked by houses, a space between the corridor and the houses, perfectly built latrines, and the whole construction covered by a double-sloping roof. Also the *valetudinarium* at *Castra Vetera*, in Germany, built during Nero's reign and whose design was preserved, is built in stone, with a square structure around a yard.

The hospitals of the permanent encampments, as is the case with the march camps, are

perties of some herbs are utilized. The remains of several medicinal plants have been found in excavations at Novaesium, in Southern Germany: *centaurea minor*, used to clean the wounds and quicken their healing, in eye diseases as well as an antidote against the bite of poisonous snakes; *hyoscyamus albus*, hypnotic and sedative; *plantago major*, used against bleeding and dysentery; *trigonella foenumgraecum*, employed as a laxative in enemas and in some emollient compresses. Soda is used as a corrosive and a caustic. Several vegetables such as peas, lentils and figs are used as tonics; furthermore the latter, applied on infected wounds and abscesses, favour the discharge of pus and coagulated blood. Pliny the Elder describes the anti-scurvy properties of the root called *radix britannica*. Wine is used against diarrhoea. Once the properties of herbs and plants are learned, the doctors, besides looking for them around the encampments and during marches, also try to grow them in plots adjoining the hospitals.

As regards medical tools, at Novaesium have been found some kinds of probes, spatulas, spoons, pliers, curved and straight needles, chisels, clamps for suturing and a crate full of objects, pots for ointments and healing oils. Many instruments have also been found at the excavations made at Pompeii and at Aquincum in Pannonia: forked scalpels, divaricators, dental forceps, hooks, needles, scissors, splints for lower limbs, scales, small mixing shovels and a medical case.



*Lieutenant Colonel,
Headquarters,
Joint Sub Regional Command
South West,
Madrid



NOTES

(1) Titus Livius, in his work "Ab Urbe Condita", reports that, during the Second Samnite War, after the Battle of Sutrium there were more deaths due to lack of medical assistance than on the battlefield.

(2) There are sources asserting that, starting from the I Century B.C., every encampment is equipped with tents assigned to the sick and wounded.

(3) These families are later compensated for the costs sustained.

(4) The first mention is to be found in Cicero's "Tusculanae Disputationes".

(5) This does not prevent the Commanders of the Legions from keeping their own doctors, as was customary in Republican times.

Roman soldiers of the end of the 2nd Century B.C. during the *lustratio censoria* a solemn sacrifice offered at the end of a census. (Detail from Domitius Enobarbus' altar, 115 B.C.).

For example: the future Emperor Tiberius keeps a personal physician during the Dalmatian-Pannonian campaign of the years 6-9 A.D., and Augustus himself sends his personal doctor to his nephew Germanicus in 14 A.D., when this latter commands the Legions on the Rhine.

(6) In the period of Emperor Domitian (81-96 A.D.) the military



The Emperor, surrounded by his Staff, receives a Legionary. (Trajan's Column).

BIBLIOGRAFY

- A. Liberati e F. Silverio: «Vita e costumi dei Romani antichi», ed. Quasar, Roma, 1988.
- J. Le Galle e M. Le Glay: «El Imperio romano», ed. Akai s.a., Madrid, 1995.
- E. Ghul e W. Köner: «Los Romanos: su vida y costumbres», ed. Edinart Libros s.a., Madrid, 2001.
- Julio Rodríguez González: «Historia de las Legiones romanas», ed. Signifer Libros, Madrid, 2001.
- J. M. Roldán: «Hispania y el Ejército romano», C.S.I.C., Salamanca, 1974.
- Peter Connolly: «Las Legiones romanas», ed. Espasa-Calpe, Madrid, 1986.
- F. Martínez Sauria: «La medicina romana», ed. Instituto Sanidad Universidad Carlos III, Madrid, 1997.
- AA.VV.: Rivista «La Aventura de la Historia», ed. Arlanza Ediciones S.A., Madrid, 2002, n. 44.
- J. Cárdenas Arévalo: «La maravillosa historia de la medicina», ed. Trujillo, Perú, 2001.
- P. Font Quer: «Plantas Medicinales, el Dioscórides Renovado», ed. Labor s.a., Madrid, 1973.

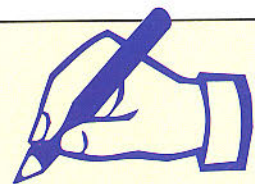
doctors were paid 300 denarii per year, while at the time of Septimius Severus (193-211 A.D.) they received 500 denarii.

After their experience in a Legion's medical service, some doctors write treatises on medicine like, for example, Pedanius Dioscurides, who wrote "*Materia Medica*".

(8) The surgical instruments are commonly made from copper or its alloys, (bronze and brass) and are produced by excellent craftsmen. When the smiths succeed in obtaining steel through iron-working, the surgical instruments are also made out of this alloy. Many of these instruments will be copied in the successive epochs.

An antefix with the emblem of the XX Legion "Valeria Victrix". Found at Holt, but destined to the legionary camp at Deva, Chester.





Il Comando NATO di Solbiate Olona è già una splendida realtà, di Roberto Speciale (p. 2).

La realizzazione di quello che appariva un ambizioso progetto, rappresenta oggi un altro traguardo di rilievo per la nostra Nazione e per tutta l'Alleanza Atlantica. Il merito è da ascrivere all'impegno profuso dalla Forza Armata, alla perseveranza nel perseguire nel tempo l'obiettivo della piena operatività, al silente lavoro dei singoli e, non ultimo, alle eccellenti qualità professionali e ai valori spirituali degli uomini e delle donne, che costituiscono la risorsa più preziosa del nostro Esercito moderno.

Al di là e al di qua dei limiti, di Fabio Mini (p. 14).

I conflitti simmetrici e lineari si stanno trasformando in confronti asimmetrici e non lineari. Anche il termine stesso di guerra sta subendo profonde e radicali evoluzioni concettuali. La minaccia, poi, propende ormai per l'uso di armi subdole, ma non per questo meno terribili. Le devastazioni hanno sempre meno confini morali e di spazio ma risentono ancora, oggi come un tempo, dei grandi fattori rappresentati dall'uomo e dalle risorse materiali. L'Occidente e l'Oriente non sono separati da confini netti, non obbediscono a precisi concetti geografici e nemmeno sono divisi da definite barriere ideologiche e religiose,

bensi sono più vicini di quanto si pensi, perché costituiscono quasi uno stato dell'animo. Tuttavia, l'imponderabile non deve impressionare. Secondo il pensatore religioso persiano Zarathustra (VI a. C.), a volte «bisogna avere un caos dentro di sé, per generare una stella danzante».

Mal d'Africa, di Maurizio Coccia (p. 32).

La grande Terra del Sole, come la definisce una vecchia canzone swahili, è a noi vicina anche per i flussi di disperati in cerca di riscatto, i quali costituiscono solamente l'aspetto più evidente del problema. Lo è anche per i tanti contrasti, per le innumerevoli diversità ancora alla ricerca di un'interazione, per il desiderio e il timore di avere una nazione guida, per le controversie territoriali e la povertà, per le infermità e l'analfabetismo, per la crescita della popolazione e la migrazione, per il fallimento del sistema di aiuti e la ricerca di una dimensione economica più adatta. Chissà, forse il male maggiore è dato proprio dalle sue immense risorse. A parte l'estrema bellezza e il forte richiamo quasi istintivo che suscita, rimane un continente ancora tutto da valorizzare. Ma prima di tutto, da parte degli stessi abitanti. A cominciare dall'orgoglio di sentirsi africani.

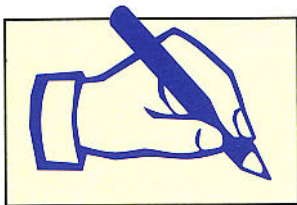
La saggia adattabilità dell'Alleanza Atlantica, di Giuseppe Cucchi (p. 44).

Dopo oltre mezzo secolo, l'Alleanza Atlantica costituisce il miglior patrimonio comune, tra Nazioni libere, in grado di garantire al mondo pace e prosperità, allontanando dai popoli lo spettro di guerre e

persecuzioni. La caduta del muro di Berlino e l'attacco alle Torri Gemelle hanno richiesto un notevole cambiamento del concetto politico e strategico, ma gli ideali sono rimasti inalterati, a conferma della giustezza dei principi che furono alla base della nascita della NATO. Intensi sono gli sforzi per dare corpo alla flessibile, nuova Forza di Reazione Rapida, che inquadrerà 21 000 militari e sarà approntata per l'ottobre 2006. Non ci saranno interferenze con il concetto europeo di sicurezza: la NATO agirà a livello operativo, mentre l'Unione Europea spazierà nell'ambito degli accordi di Petersberg.

La grande svolta che viene da est. Intervista con il Colonnello Generale Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev, a cura di Enrico Magnani (p. 54).

Mai come prima d'ora, presentiamo i punti chiave sui quali si fonda il moderno Esercito russo, visti dall'interno: la riforma delle Forze Terrestri, i legami con l'Armata Rossa, le nuove linee guida della Politica Militare, il ruolo dell'Esercito nel terzo millennio, la lotta al terrorismo, la nuova strategia nucleare, i rapporti con le ex Repubbliche, l'incremento dell'impegno nelle Operazioni di Pace, il nodo strategico del Caucaso, il futuro delle Grandi Unità corazzate e meccanizzate, l'impiego attuale delle Forze Speciali, il reclutamento professionale, l'impiego femminile e i valori morali specifici del soldato russo. A queste e ad altre suggestive domande risponde il Colonnello Generale Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev, Comandante delle Forze di Terra di un antico e prestigioso Paese.



SOMMARIO SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

In viaggio verso la comune identità europea. Intervista al Capo di Stato Maggiore della Difesa maltese, a cura di Enrico Magnani (p. 76).

L'arcipelago maltese, con le sue stupende isole di Malta, Gozo, Comino e Filfla, è come una collana di perle disposta al centro del Mediterraneo. Il Paese persegue una politica militare di neutralità e di non allineamento, fa parte delle Nazioni Unite (ONU) e dell'Organizzazione per la Sicurezza e la Cooperazione in Europa (OSCE), mentre forte è la sua volontà d'integrarsi nell'Unione Europea. Nel 1980, Malta ha firmato un accordo con l'Italia volto a tutelarne la sovranità. La sua tradizione militare è plurisecolare. Le Forze Armate hanno compiti molteplici: garantire l'integrità nazionale, fornire sicurezza negli aeroporti, proteggere i punti sensibili, impedire il traffico di stupefacenti, vigilare sull'immigrazione illegale, prevenire la pesca non autorizzata e atti illegali in mare, assicurare i servizi di ricerca e soccorso, partecipare alle operazioni di sostegno alla pace, concorrere nella protezione civile e collaborare attivamente con la Polizia

Il Comitato FINABEL Compiti, struttura, organizzazione di Giacomo Calligaris (p. 86)

L'organismo, istituito nell'ottobre del 1953, costituisce il primo concreto tentativo per promuovere rapporti di cooperazione militare tra le forze terrestri dei paesi europei. Il Comitato, in origine, assume il nome di FINBEL, acronimo derivante dalle sigle delle Nazioni fondatrici (FR - I - NL - BE - LUX) con il compito di

sviluppare ogni forma di collaborazione nel settore degli armamenti.

Nel 1956, con l'ingresso della Germania, si approdò alla denominazione FINABEL. Nel 1973 aderì il Regno Unito, nel 1990 la Spagna e nel 1996 la Grecia e il Portogallo. L'articolo che segue integra e completa il servizio presentato in un precedente articolo della Rivista, dedicato essenzialmente all'appuntamento di Roma svoltosi a marzo del 2001.

La donna potenzia l'Esercito, di Isabella Lo Castro (p. 92).

Dopo appena due anni sono già centinaia le donne che, con solide motivazioni di fondo e con grande entusiasmo, hanno scelto di arruolarsi nell'Esercito. In questo pur breve spazio temporale, la presenza femminile si è ormai affermata in tutti i settori della nostra Forza Armata, ponendosi all'attenzione per l'elevato apporto culturale e per l'eccellente rendimento professionale, espresso sia in Patria sia in operazioni fuori area. L'Esercito Italiano ha puntato immediatamente sulla rapida integrazione delle donne, senza alcun limite d'impiego e di carriera. Con tale decisione si è puntato da subito a valorizzare le differenze, facendole diventare le vere chiavi di un successo che è già meritevole di analisi e di studio in ambito internazionale.

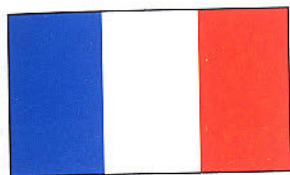
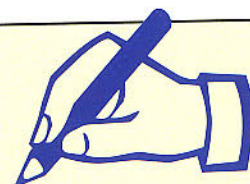
L'enigma della volpe, di Nicola Pignato (p. 98).

«Rommel giudica ed agisce ad impressioni e mai si attarda ad approfondire il problema che volta a volta gli si presenta, per modo che ciò che dice ed

afferma oggi è spesso smentito da ciò che pensa ed opera domani. Una notizia buona lo pone in euforia, una cattiva lo deprime e gli fa apparire nero ciò che aveva giudicato bianco. Animato da un'ambizione più che manifesta, da questa si fa spesso guidare e, poiché non lo sorregge la pratica di comando di Grandi Unità, cade in eccessi di cui credo egli stesso non comprenda la portata. È certo che il Rommel, di cui nessuno nega coraggio ed ardire a tutta prova, lascia sempre desta la preoccupazione di passi avventati.» (Generale Ettore Bastico, Comandante Superiore delle Forze Armate in Africa Settentrionale).

La sanità legionaria, di Gerardo Restaino (p. 108).

I valorosi soldati di Roma sapevano che, in caso di necessità, in pace come in guerra, la Legione avrebbe procurato loro le migliori cure dell'epoca, in quanto disponeva dei medici più capaci di tutto il mondo allora conosciuto. Anche gli animali potevano contare sulle più moderne conoscenze scientifiche del tempo ed erano sottoposti a una capillare assistenza. Particolare importanza costituiva per gli antichi romani la medicina preventiva, assurta addirittura a disciplina di vita. Medici e infermieri, veterinari e farmacisti erano inseriti in un'organizzazione di prim'ordine, la cui efficienza garantì e sostenne la conquista e il mantenimento di un territorio sterminato. Medicamenti, cure e metodi curativi romani conservano ancora oggi una loro sorprendente validità. Per molti versi, addirittura da riscoprire.



Le Commandement OTAN de Solbiate Olona est déjà une magnifique réalité,

par Roberto Speciale (p. 2).

Quelle ambition qu'elle pouvait paraître, la réalisation du projet représente désormais un aboutissement important pour notre pays et pour l'ensemble de l'Alliance Atlantique. Et ce grâce à l'engagement continu de la Force armée, à son infatigable persévérance en vue d'atteindre l'objectif de la pleine capacité opérationnelle, au travail silencieux de chaque individu et enfin, aux excellentes qualités professionnelles et aux valeurs spirituelles des hommes et des femmes qui constituent la ressource la plus précieuse de notre Armée moderne.

Par delà et en deçà des limites,

par Fabio Mini (p. 14).

Les conflits symétriques et linéaires deviennent des guerres asymétriques et non linéaires. Le concept de guerre lui-même subit une évolution profonde et radicale. Quant à la menace, elle consiste désormais dans l'utilisation d'armes sournoises mais non, pour autant, moins terribles. Les dévastations ne connaissent presque plus de limites spatiales ou morales bien qu'elles soient encore strictement liées, aujourd'hui comme hier, à des facteurs déterminants tels que l'homme

et les ressources matérielles.

Entre l'Occident et l'Orient il n'y a ni des frontières nettes obéissant à des concepts géographiques donnés, ni des barrières idéologiques et religieuses. L'Orient et l'Occident sont plus proches qu'on ne l'avait songé car ils constituent presque un état de l'âme. Toutefois, l'impondérable ne doit pas impressionner. D'après le penseur persan Zarathushtra (VI^e s. av. J.-C.), parfois «il faut abriter un chaos en soi, pour générer une étoile dansante».

Les Maux de l'Afrique,

par Maurizio Coccia (p. 32).

La Grande Terre du Soleil. C'est ainsi que la définit une vieille chanson swahili. Une Terre que des flux de désespérés poussés par la soif de délivrance rendent encore plus proche de nous. Mais il ne s'agit là que de l'un des aspects les plus saillants de la question, car les nombreux contrastes, les innombrables diversités à la recherche d'une interaction, le souhait et la crainte d'avoir une Nation modèle, les controverses territoriales et la pauvreté, les maladies et l'analphabétisme, la croissance démographique et les migrations, l'échec du système des aides et la recherche d'une dimension économique plus appropriée sont autant de faces d'un même problème. Et c'est peut-être bien dans son immense richesse que résident ses plus grands maux. Au-delà de son extrême beauté et du grand attrait, presque instinctif, qu'il exerce, ce continent doit encore être valorisé. C'est à ses habitants avant tout que revient cette tâche, en commençant par se sentir fiers d'être africains.

La sage adaptabilité de l'Alliance Atlantique,

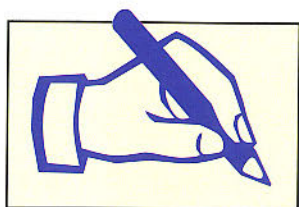
par Giuseppe Cucchi (p. 44).

Après plus d'un demi siècle, l'Alliance Atlantique représente pour les Nations libres le meilleur des patrimoines communs. Un patrimoine susceptible de garantir au monde la paix et la prospérité en éloignant des peuples le spectre de la guerre et des persécutions. La chute du mur de Berlin et l'attaque aux Tours Jumelles sont à l'origine d'un profond changement pour ce qui est du concept politique et stratégique de l'Alliance, mais ont laissé inchangés ses idéaux, en confirmation de la justesse des principes de bases qui conduisirent à la naissance de l'OTAN. C'est dans ce nouveau contexte que se sont multipliés les efforts visant à la création d'une Force de Réaction Rapide; celle-ci encadrera 21 000 militaires dans une structure flexible et sera opérationnelle en octobre 2006. Aucune interférence avec le concept européen de sûreté : l'OTAN agira au niveau opérationnel tandis que l'Union Européenne interviendra dans le cadre des accords de Petersberg.

Un tournant venant de l'Est - Interview du Général Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev,

par Enrico Magnani (p. 54).

Nous présentons, pour la première fois, les points clef sur lesquels repose l'Armée russe moderne: la réforme des Forces de Terre, les liens avec l'Armée rouge, les nouvelles directives de la politique militaire, le rôle de l'Armée au troisième millénaire, la lutte contre le terrorisme, la nouvelle stratégie nucléaire, les rapports avec les anciennes Républiques, l'engagement croissant dans les



SOMMARIO SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

Opérations de Paix, le nœud stratégique du Caucase, le futur des grandes Unités cuirassée et mécanisées, l'emploi actuel des Forces spéciales, le recrutement professionnel, les femmes dans l'armée et les valeurs morales propres au soldat russe. Ce ne sont là que quelques-uns des sujets abordés dans le cadre d'une analyse approfondie réalisée par le Général Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev, Commandant de l'Armée de Terre d'un pays ayant une histoire prestigieuse.

En route vers une identité européenne commune. Interview du Chef d'Etat-Major des Armées de Malte,

par Enrico Magnani (p. 76).

Les îles de Malte, Gozo, Comino et Filfla, qui constituent l'archipel maltais, s'étalent au cœur de la Méditerranée tel un magnifique collier de perles. Malte, qui a adopté une politique militaire de neutralité et de non-alignement, est membre des Nations Unies (ONU) et de l'Organisation pour la Sécurité et la Coopération en Europe (OSCE). Sa volonté d'intégration à l'Union Européenne est très forte et en 1980 un accord a été signé avec l'Italie qui visait à sauvegarder la souveraineté maltaise. Les Forces Armées maltaises, dont la tradition militaire est pluricentenaire, sont appelées aujourd'hui à remplir de multiples tâches : garantir l'intégrité nationale, veiller à la sécurité dans les aéroports, protéger les points les plus sensibles, empêcher le trafic de stupéfiants, contrôler l'immigration illégale, prévenir la pêche non autorisée et tout acte illégal en mer, participer aux opérations de soutien de la paix, concourir à la protection civile et collaborer activement avec la Police.

Le Comité FINABEL.

Tâches, structure et organisation, par Giangiacomo Calligaris (p. 86).

L'article décrit les tâches, la structure l'organisation et les finalités de l'organisme militaire de coopération composé des Chefs d'Etat Major des armées de terre de 10 pays européens.

Une attention toute particulière est accordée à l'activité du groupe «MIKE» chargé de l'étude des problèmes liés à la formation et l'instruction et présidé par l'Italie.

La femme vient renforcer l'Armée,

par Isabella Lo Castro (p. 92).

Au bout de deux ans à peine, des centaines de femmes, mues par des motivations solides et profondes et par un grand enthousiasme, ont choisi de s'engager dans l'Armée. En un espace de temps aussi court, la présence des femmes s'est désormais affermie dans tous les secteurs de l'Armée italienne: il y a lieu de signaler à cet égard, l'apport culturel et l'excellente performance professionnelle dont elles ont fait preuve non seulement en Italie mais aussi dans le cadre d'opérations hors zone. L'Armée italienne a tout de suite misé sur l'intégration des femmes, sans limites d'engagement ou de carrière. Cette décision vise à mettre en valeur les différences pour les transformer en un véritable facteur de succès. Un succès qui fait déjà l'objet d'études au niveau international.

L'énigme du renard,

par Nicola Pignato (p. 98).

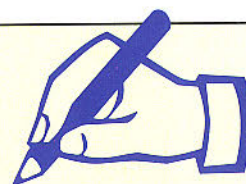
«Rommel juge et agit en fonction de ses impressions et ne s'attarde jamais à approfondir le problème au fur et à mesure qu'il se pose. Voilà pourquoi ce qu'il dit et affirme aujourd'hui est souvent démenti par ce qu'il pense et ce

qu'il fait demain. Une bonne nouvelle le remplit de joie, une mauvaise le déprime au point qu'il voit en noir ce qu'il avait jugé blanc. Il est mû par une ambition manifeste qui devient son guide et puisqu'il ne maîtrise pas la pratique du commandement de grandes Unités, il fait des excès, dont je crois qu'il n'est pas tout à fait conscient de la portée. Il n'empêche que, Rommel, dont personne ne saurait nier ni le courage ni l'hardiesse à toute épreuve, suscite l'inquiétude liée aux démarches inconsidérées».

(Général Ettore Bastico, Commandant Supérieur des Forces armées en Afrique du Nord).

La santé des légionnaires, par Gerardo Restaino (p. 108).

Les courageux soldats de Rome savaient qu'en cas de besoin, aussi bien en temps de guerre qu'en temps de paix, la Légion leur aurait fourni les meilleurs soins de l'époque, puisque les médecins dont elle disposait étaient les plus capables du monde connu jusqu'alors. Les animaux aussi pouvaient compter sur les connaissances scientifiques les plus avancées et bénéficiaient d'une assistance minutieuse. Les anciens Romains attachaient une importance toute particulière à la médecine préventive et allaient jusqu'à en faire une discipline de vie. Les médecins et les infirmiers, les vétérinaires et les pharmaciens faisaient partie d'une organisation de premier ordre dont l'efficacité contribua à la conquête et au contrôle d'un territoire immense. Les médicaments, les soins et les méthodes curatives des Romains ont conservé leur étonnante validité jusqu'à nos jours et à certains égards méritent d'être revalorisés.



Das Kommando NATO von Solbiate Olona ist bereits eine schöne Realität, von Roberto Speciale (S. 2).

Die Realisierung dessen, was ein ehrgeiziges Vorhaben erschien, ist heute ein bemerkenswerter Meilenstein für unser Land und für die gesamte NATO. Das Verdienst ist dem verbreiteten Einsatz der Streitkräfte zuzuschreiben, der Beharrlichkeit, zeitgenau das Ziel voller Operativität im Auge gehabt zu haben, der leisen Arbeit der einzelnen, und, nicht zuletzt, der hervorragenden professionellen Eigenschaften und spirituellen Werte der Männer und Frauen, welches die wertvollste Ressource unseres modernen Heers ist.

Diesseits und Jenseits der Grenzen, von Fabio Mini (S. 14).

Symmetrische und lineare Konflikte sind dabei, sich in asymmetrische und nicht-lineare Konfrontationen zu verwandeln. Der Begriff «Krieg» selbst erlebt tiefe und radikale Verwandlungen seines Konzepts. Die Bedrohung tendiert nun zu subtilen, aber deswegen nicht weniger schrecklichen Waffen. Zerstörungen haben immer weitere moralische und räumliche Grenzen, doch unterstehen weiterhin wie dazumal den großen Faktoren des Menschen und der natürlichen Ressourcen. Orient und Okzident sind nicht von klaren Grenzen getrennt, gehorchen keinen präzisen geographischen Vorstellungen und

sind auch nicht von klar definierten religiösen oder ideologischen Barrieren begrenzt, sondern sie sind im Gegenteil einander näher, als man denkt, da sie fast einen Geisteszustand darstellen. Jedoch darf das Unabwägbar nicht bestürzen.

Dem persischen religiösen Denker Zarathustra (VI. Jh. n. Chr.) nach, «muss man manchmal ein Chaos in seinem Inneren haben, um einen tanzenden Stern hervorbringen zu können».

Sehnsucht nach Afrika, von Maurizio Coccia (S. 32).

Das grosse Sonnenland, wie ein altes Swahili-Lied es nennt, ist uns nahe, auch wegen der Stroeme von Verzweifeln auf der Suche nach Erloesung, welche nur der sichtbare Aspekt des Problems sind. So ist es auch fuer die vielen Kontraste, fuer die unzähligen Unterschiede, immer noch nach einer Integration suchend, fuer den Wunsch und die Befuerchtung eine Fuehrungsnation zu haben, fuer die Grenzstreitigkeiten und die Armut, fuer Krankheiten und Analphabetismus, fuer den Bevoelkerungswachstum und die Auswanderung, fuer das Scheitern der Unterstuetzungen und den Versuch eines passenden wirtschaftlichen Systems. Wer weiss, gerade seine immensen Ressourcen sind vielleicht das schlimmste Uebel. Abgesehen von der extremen Schoenheit und von dem immer wiederkehrenden Reiz, bleibt es ein Kontinent noch ganz zum Erschliessen. Als erstes aber, von den eigenen Bewohner. Beginnend, sich mit Stolz als Afrikaner zu fuehlen.

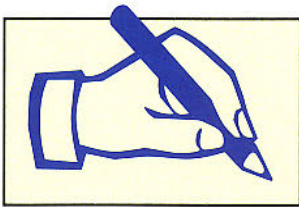
Die weise Anpassungsfähigkeit der NATO, von Giuseppe Cucchi (S. 44).

Nach ueber einem halben Jahrhundert, stellt die NATO die

beste gemeinschaftliche Verbindung unter freien Nationen dar, in der Lage, der Welt Frieden und Wohlstand zu garantieren, den Voelkern das Schreckgespenst von Kriegen und Verfolgungen fernzuhalten. Der Fall der Berliner Mauer und der Angriff auf die Twin Towers haben eine bemerkenswerte Aenderung in dem politischen und strategischen Konzept hervorgerufen, aber die Werte sind unverändert geblieben, die Richtigkeit der Prinzipien als Basis der Gruendung der NATO bestaetigend. Intensiv sind die Anstrengungen, die neuen flexibeln Streitkraefte schnellen Einsatzes zu verwirklichen, die 21 000 Soldaten eingliedern und bis Oktober 2006 ausgeruestet werden. Es wird keine Einmischung mit dem europacischen Sicherheitskonzept geben; die NATO wirkt auf dem operativen Niveau, waehrend die EU im Rahmen der Abmachungen von Petersberg handelt.

Die große Wende aus dem Osten, Interview mit Generaloberst Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev, von Enrico Magnani (S. 54).

Wie nie zuvor stellen wir die Kernpunkte vor, auf denen die neuen russischen Landstreitkräfte aufgebaut sind - und zwar aus der Innenansicht: Armee reform, Guidelines der Militärpolitik, Rolle des Heers im 3. Jahrtausend, Terrorismusbekämpfung, neue Nuklearstrategie, das Verhältnis zu den ehemaligen Sowjetrepubliken, Ausbau des Einsatzes in Friedensoperationen, der strategische Knoten im Kaukasus, die Zukunft der großen Panzereinheiten, den heutigen Einsatz der Armee, die Anwerbung der Berufssoldaten, der Einsatz der Frauen. Auf diese und andere interessante Fragen antwortet Generaloberst Nikolay Viktorovich



SOMMARIO SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

Kormiltsev, Kommandant der Landstreitkräfte eines alten und prestigeträchtigen Landes.

Der Weg zu der gemeinsamen europäischen Identität.

Interview mit dem Oberbefehlshaber der maltesischen Verteidigung, von Enrico Magnani (S. 76).

Der maltesische Archipel, mit seinen Inseln Malta, Gozo, Comino und Filfla, ist wie eine Perlenkette im Zentrum des Mittelmeeres. Das Land betreibt eine Militäropolitik von Neutralität und Bündnisfreiheit, ist Mitglied der Vereinten Nationen und der Organisation für Sicherheit und Zusammenarbeit in Europa, während der Wunsch zur Integration in die EU sehr stark ist. 1980 hat Malta ein Abkommen mit Italien zum Schutz der Souveränität unterschrieben. Seine Militäradition ist jahrhundertalt. Die Streitkräfte haben vielfältige Aufgaben: die nationale Einheit zu garantieren, die Flughäfen abzusichern, empfindliche Ziele zu beschützen, Rauschgifthandel zu unterbinden, illegale Einwanderung zu überwachen, nicht genehmigten Fischfang und illegales Verhalten auf dem Meer vorzubeugen, Rettungsdienst zu gewährleisten, an den Friedensinitiativen teilzunehmen, zum Zivilschutz beizutragen und aktiv mit der Polizei zusammenzuarbeiten.

Der FINABEL-Ausschuss. Aufgaben, Strukturen, Organisation, von Giangiacomo Calligaris (S. 86).

Es werden die Aufgaben, Strukturen, Organisation und Ziele der militärischen Arbeitsgruppe

skizziert, der die Generalstabschefs der Landstreitkräfte von zehn europäischen Nationen angehören.

Besonders hervorgehoben wird die Tätigkeit der Gruppe «MIKE», der die Untersuchung der Probleme der militärischen und fachtechnischen Ausbildung obliegt, deren Vorsitz Italien anvertraut wurde.

Die Frau potenziert die Streitkräfte, von Isabella Lo Castro (S. 92).

Zwei Jahre nach Einführung der Möglichkeit gibt es bereits viele Frauen, die gut motiviert und voller Enthusiasmus sich für eine Militärkarriere entschieden haben. In dieser kurzen Zeit, hat sich die weibliche Präsenz in allen Sektoren der Streitkräfte verfestigt, so dass man darauf achten soll, den starken kulturellen Beitrag dieser Frauen zu würdigen. Er kommt sowohl zuhause als auch in out of area - Einsätzen zur Geltung. Die italienischen Streitkräfte haben schnell auf die rasche Integration der Frauen gesetzt, ohne ein Einsatz- oder Karrierelimit. Mit dieser Entscheidung hat man sofort darauf gesetzt, die Unterschiede zu valorisieren, und aus ihnen die Schlüssel des Erfolgs zu machen. Er verdient bereits eine Untersuchung im internationalen Umfeld.

Das Rätsel des «Wüstenfuchses», von Nicola Pignato (S. 98).

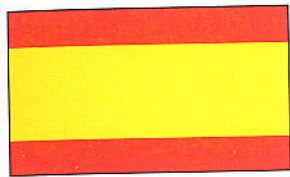
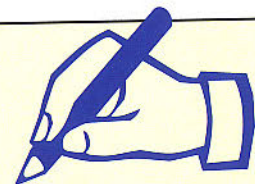
«Rommel entschied und bewertete aus seinen Eindrücken und versäumt nie, das Problem, das sich ihm jeweils darstellt, so vorzustellen, wie er es sagt. Heute ist er oft von dem widerlegt, was er morgen denkt und handelt. Eine gute Nachricht macht ihn

euphorisch, eine schlechte deprimiert ihn und lässt ihn alles schwarz erscheinen, was ihm vorher weiß gewar. Von einem mehr als offensichtlichen Ehrgeiz getrieben, lässt er sich von ihm lenken, doch da er nicht die Kommando Praxis der Großen Einheiten übersieht, fällt er in übertriebene Reaktionen, deren Ausmaß er selbst nicht erkennen kann.

Es ist sicher, dass Rommel, dem keiner Mut und Angriffslust abspricht, einem immer die Furcht vor vorschnellen Schritten lässt». (General Ettore Bastico, Oberkommandeur der italienischen Streitkräfte in Nordafrika),

Der Sanitätsdienst der Legionen, von Gerardo Restaino (S. 108).

Die verdienten Soldaten Roms wussten, dass im Notfall, im Frieden wie im Krieg, die Legion ihnen die besten medizinischen Behandlungen zukommen lassen hatte, da sie über die besten Mediziner in der damals bekannten Welt verfügte. Auch Tiere konnten auf die höchst modernen Wissenschaften der Zeit zählen und waren einer weitverbreiteten Betreuung unterworfen. Grosse Bedeutung hatte für die alten Römer die vorbeugende Medizin, sogar zur Lebensdisziplin erhoben. Ärzte und Krankenpfleger, Tierärzte und Apotheker waren in eine erstklassige Organisation eingegliedert, deren Leistungsfähigkeit die Eroberung und Beibehaltung eines unbegrenzten Gebietes garantierte und unterstützte. Römische Medikamente, Anweisungen und medizinische Behandlungen bewahren noch heute ihre erstaunliche Wirksamkeit. Aus verschiedenen Gründen durchaus wieder zu entdecken



El Mando OTAN de Solbiate Olona es ya una maravillosa realidad,

por Roberto Speciale (pág. 2).

Por más ambiciosa que podía parecer, la realización del proyecto representa hoy día una realidad importante para nuestro país y para la toda la Alianza Atlántica. Y ello gracias al esfuerzo continuo de la Fuerza armada, a su perseverancia a la hora de lograr el objetivo de la plena capacidad operacional, al trabajo silencioso de cada persona así como a las excelentes cualidades profesionales y a los valores espirituales de los hombres y de las mujeres que constituyen el recurso más valioso de nuestro Ejército moderno.

De uno y otro lado de los límites,

por Fabio Mini (pág. 14).

Los conflictos simétricos y lineales se vuelven guerras asimétricas y no lineales. El mismo concepto de guerra está sufriendo profundos y radicales cambios. En cuanto a la amenaza, ésta consiste cada vez más en el uso de armas disimuladas pero no por ello menos terribles.

Las devastaciones ya no tienen límites morales o espaciales, aunque sigan supeditadas, como por el pasado, a factores determinantes tales como el hombre y los recursos materiales. Entre Occidente y Oriente no existen fronteras netas, definidas con arreglo a conceptos geográficos determinados, ni tampoco barreras ideológicas o religiosas. Oriente Y

occidente resultan mucho más cercanos que lo que pensamos ya que constituyen, se podría decir, un estado del alma. Sin embargo, lo imponderable no ha de impresionar. Como decía el pensador religioso persa Zaratustra (Siglo VI a. J.C.) a veces, «hay que tener un caos dentro de sí para generar una estrella danzante».

Los males de Africa,

Maurizio Coccia (pág. 32).

La Gran Tierra del Sol. Así la define una antigua canción swahili. Una Tierra cuya proximidad se vuelve aún más evidente a través de esos flujos de desesperados sedientos de redención. Pero éste es sólo uno de los aspectos más sobresalientes de la cuestión puesto que los distintos conflictos, las innumerables diversidades en busca de una interacción, el deseo y el temor de tener una nación líder, las controversias territoriales y la pobreza, les enfermedades y el analfabetismo, el crecimiento demográfico y las migraciones, el fracaso del sistema de las ayudas y la búsqueda de una dimensión económica más adecuada son otros tantos aspectos del mismo problema. Quizá, el problema mayor radique justamente en sus inmensas riquezas. Más allá de su suma belleza y de la fuerte atracción, casi instintiva, que ejerce, este continente aún no ha sido valorizado, y es a sus habitantes mismos que incumbe esta tarea, empezando por sentirse orgullosos de ser africanos.

La sensatez de la adaptabilidad de la Alianza Atlántica,

Giuseppe Cucchi (pág. 44).

Después de más de medio siglo,

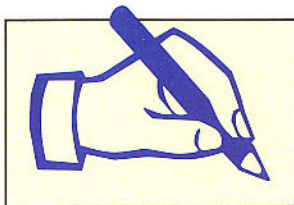
la Alianza Atlántica representa para las Naciones libres el mejor patrimonio común; un patrimonio capaz de garantizarle al mundo paz y prosperidad alejando de los pueblos el horror de la guerra y de las persecuciones. La caída del muro de Berlín y el ataque a las Torres Gemelas han originado un profundo cambio en su concepto político y estratégico, sin alterar mínimamente sus ideales, lo que confirma la sensatez de los principios en que se inspiraron sus fundadores. Intensos esfuerzos se han desplegado para darle cuerpo a una nueva Fuerza de Reacción Rápida que acogerá en una estructura flexible a 21 000 militares y será operativa en octubre de 2006. No habrá ninguna interferencia con el concepto europeo de seguridad puesto que la OTAN obrará a nivel operacional mientras que la Unión Europea actuará en el ámbito de los acuerdos de Petersberg.

Un viraje decisivo que viene del Este.

Entrevista al General Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev,

por Enrico Magnani (pág. 54).

Se presentan por vez primera los puntos clave en los que se fundamenta el Ejército ruso moderno: la reforma de las Fuerzas terrestres, las relaciones con el Ejército rojo, la nuevas directrices de la apolítica militar, el papel del Ejército en el tercer milenio, la lucha contra el terrorismo, la nueva estrategia nuclear, las relaciones con las ex Repúblicas, el empeño creciente en las operaciones de paz, el nudo estratégico del Cáucaso, el futuro de las grandes Unidades acorazadas y mecanizadas, el empleo actual de las Fuerzas



SOMMARIO SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

especiales, el reclutamiento profesional, la mujeres en el Ejército y los valores morales propios del soldado ruso. Son éstos algunos de los numerosos temas que fueron objeto de un análisis profundizado llevado a cabo por el General Nikolay Viktorovich Kormiltsev, Comandante del Ejército de un país prestigioso que cuenta con una historia antigua.

En marcha hacia una identidad europea común, Entrevista al Jefe de Estado Mayor de Defensa de Malta, Enrico Magnani (pág. 76).

El archipiélago maltés, con las hermosas islas de Malta, Gozo, Comino y Filfla, se extiende en el corazón del Mediterráneo como un maravilloso collar de perlas. Malta, que ha adoptado una política militar de neutralidad y no alineación, forma parte de las Naciones Unidas (ONU) y de la Organización para la Seguridad y la Cooperación Europea (OSCE) y siempre ha manifestado una fuerte voluntad de integración en la Unión Europea. En 1980 firmó con Italia un acuerdo encaminado a salvaguardar su soberanía. Las Fuerzas Armadas maltesas, que cuentan con una tradición militar pluricentenaria, han de desempeñar una multiplicidad de tareas: garantizar la integridad nacional, cuidar de la seguridad de los aeropuertos, proteger los puntos más sensibles, impedir el tráfico de estupefacientes, vigilar la inmigración ilegal, prevenir la pesca no autorizada y otros actos ilegales en el mar, atender al servicio de búsqueda y auxilio, participar en las operaciones de mantenimiento de la paz, contribuir a la protección civil y colaborar activamente con la Policía.

El Comité FINABEL.

Tareas, estructura, organización, por Giangiacomo Calligaris (p. 86).

Se describen las tareas, la estructura, la organización y las finalidades del organismo militar de cooperación integrado por los Jefes de Estado Mayor de 10 Naciones europeas. El artículo atribuye particular importancia a la actividad del grupo «MIKE», presidido por Italia y encargado del estudio de los problemas relacionados con la formación y la instrucción.

La mujer fortalece el Ejército, por Isabella Lo Castro (pág. 92).

Al cabo de tan solo dos años, centenas de mujeres, animadas por profundas motivaciones y un gran entusiasmo, decidieron enrolarse en el Ejército. En este breve espacio de tiempo, la presencia de las mujeres fue consolidándose en todos los sectores de las Fuerzas armadas italianas, destacándose por su aportación cultural y su excelente rendimiento profesional tanto en Italia como en operaciones fuera de zona. El Ejército italiano puso muchos esfuerzos en la integración de las mujeres, sin límites de empleo y de carrera. Con semejante decisión se pretende valorizar las diferencias convirtiéndolas en factores de éxito. Un éxito que ya se hizo merecedor de estudios a nivel internacional.

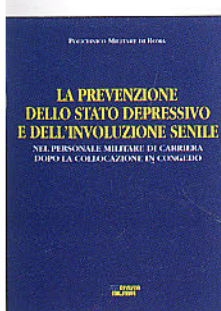
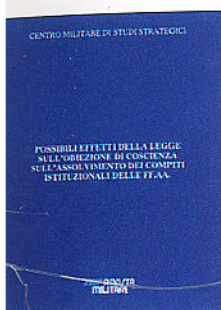
El enigma del zorro, por Nicola Pignato (pág. 98).

«Rommel juzga y actúa con arreglo a sus impresiones y nunca se detiene a profundizar el problema a medida que se plantea. Con que, lo que dice y afirma hoy, lo desmiente lo que piensa y hace mañana. Una buena noticia le vuelve eufórico, una mala le desanima a tal punto que lo ve

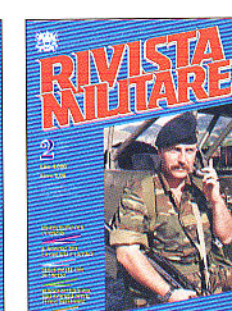
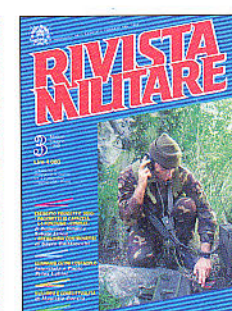
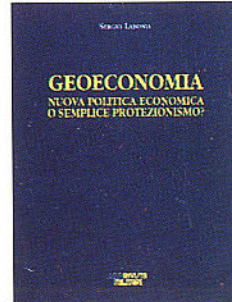
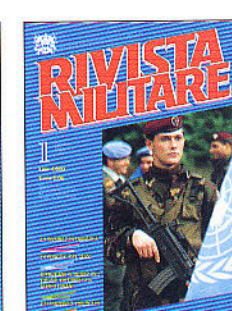
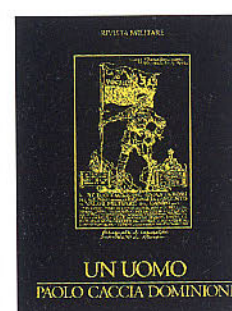
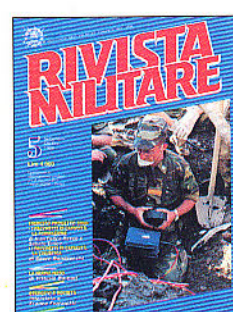
todo negro, incluso lo que había juzgado blanco. Animado por una destacada ambición que se convierte en su propia guía, y por faltarle la maestría en practicar el mando de grandes unidades, a menudo se excede y no sé si se da cuenta del alcance de sus actuaciones. Sin embargo, no cabe duda de que Rommel, del que nadie podría negar el valor y la audacia a toda prueba, no deja de suscitar esa preocupación propia de las actuaciones temerarias». (General Ettore Bastico, Comandante superior de las Fuerzas armadas en Africa del Norte).

La salud del legionario, Gerardo Restaino (pág. 108).

Los valientes soldados de Roma sabían que en caso de necesidad, tanto en tiempo de guerra como en tiempo de paz, la Legión les proporcionaría las mejores curas de la época, puesto que disponía de los médicos más capaces del mundo conocido hasta aquel entonces. También los animales podían contar con los adelantos científicos del momento y beneficiarse de una asistencia sumamente minuciosa. Particular importancia cobraba para los antiguos Romanos la medicina preventiva, hasta tal punto que la consideraban como una disciplina de vida. Médicos y enfermeros, veterinarios y farmacéuticos formaban parte de una organización de primera categoría cuya eficiencia contribuyó a la conquista y control de un territorio inmenso. Los medicamentos, los tratamientos y los métodos curativos romanos han conservado hasta el día de hoy una sorprendente validez, y en ciertos aspectos merecen una revalorización.



THE EDITORIAL STYLE OF RIVISTA MILITARE



RIVISTA MILITARE

JOURNAL OF THE ITALIAN ARMY FOUNDED IN 1856



2

MAY - JUNE
JULY - AUGUST
2003



Euro 2,10



RIVISTA MILITARE

JOURNAL OF THE ITALIAN ARMY FOUNDED IN 1856

THE ARMY IN SUPPORT OF PEACE AND SECURITY

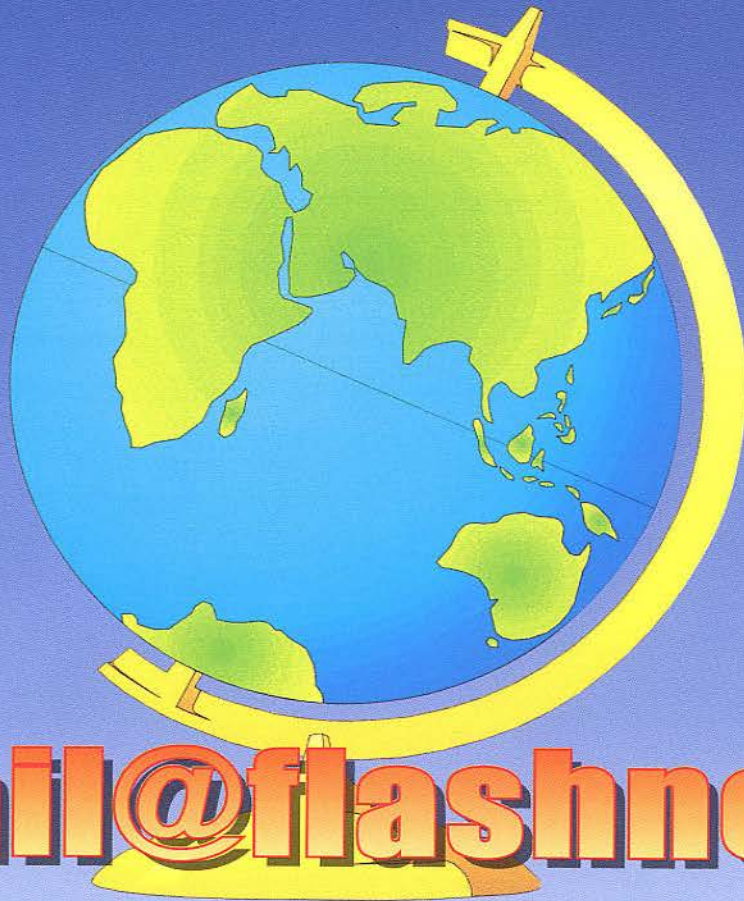
THE CENTRAL ROLE
OF THE LAND INSTRUMENT

THE MEDITERRANEAN,
A MOULDER OF CIVILIZATIONS

SPECIAL REPORT
"ARMY DAY"

THE NEW FRONTIERS
OF THE MEDICAL CORPS

ENGLISH EDITION



riv.mil@flashnet.it

...is the e-mail address of

RIVISTA MILITARE



CONTENTS



Number Two 2003

May - June

July - August

Rivista Militare aims at broadening and updating the technical and vocational training of Officers and NCOs. It is thus a means of propagating the military way of thinking and a forum of study and debate. Through the publication of articles of technical and scientific interest, Rivista Militare also aims at informing the general public on the Army and on military issues.

Thousands of soldiers of the Italian Army, men and women, serve daily in the various humanitarian missions. Their professionalism and inner strength help them to overcome the hardships and sacrifices endured in order to bring peace and security to people who had lost all hope for a civil coexistence.

FOUR-MONTHLY

Supplement to numbers 3 and 4

of Rivista Militare Italian Edition

Editor in Chief:

Giuseppe Maria Giovanni

TRICARICO

Management and Editorial Office

3, Via di S. Marco

00186 Rome

Phone 0039 0647357373

Advertising

Care of the Secretariat

of Rivista Militare

Phone 0039 0647358139

Printer

Stilgrafica - Rome

Photoprocessing

Studio Lodoli Sud - Aprilia (LT)

Subscription and forwarding

By mail

Law 662/96, art. 2, para 20/c

Conditions for 2003:

One number: Euro 2,10

One back number: Euro 4,20

Subscription rates

Italy: Euro 11,40 a year

Abroad: Euro 15,50 a year

Payment must be made on postal

account No. 22521009 - SME

Centro pubblicitaria dell'Esercito

23/A, Via XX Settembre - Rome

Residents abroad may remit

payment through bank cheque or

international postal order

Authorized by the Court of Rome

under No. 944 of the Registry by

Decree 7-6-1949

2003

© Copyright by
Rivista Militare



ASSOCIATED TO USPI
UNIONE STAMPA
PERIODICA ITALIANA

The production of this magazine
has been supervised
by Omero Rampa

2 Address to the Army
(Lt.Gen. Gianfranco Ottogalli)

3 Address to the Army
(Lt.Gen. Giulio Fraticelli)

Politics, Economics and Strategy

4 Two Sides of the Same Coin
(Vittorio Barbati)

16 The Mediterranean, a Moulder of Civilizations
(Louis Godart)

24 The Central Role of the Land Instrument
Between Security Requirements and
New Operational Capabilities
(Salvatore Farina)

Science, Technology and Training

36 The New Frontiers of the Medical Corps
Within the National System
(Michele Donvito)

44 The Permanent Evolution of the Information
Systems
(Sergio Fiorentino)

Sociology

52 Work Starts Again After Service
(Vito Di Ventura)

62 The Art of Deciding
(Antonio Marchetti)

History

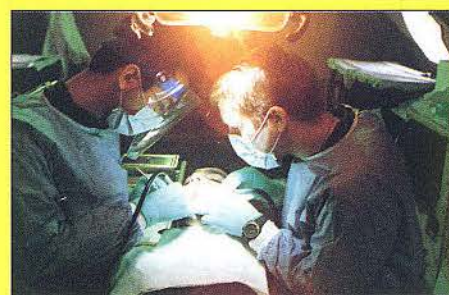
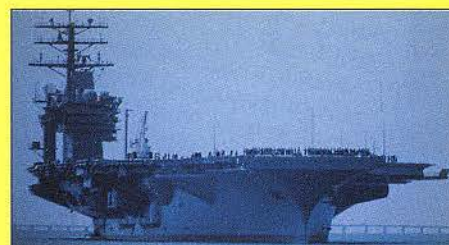
82 From the Underground Lager to the Moon
(Alessandro Ferioli)

92 Two Italians Among the Heroes of Balaklava
(Michele Petrolo)

Special Report

101 Army Day - A Luminous and Beautiful Feast
(Giuseppe Maria Giovanni Tricarico)

119 Sommario - Summary - Sommaire -
Inhalt - Resumen



Instructions for Contributors: Anyone may contribute. To guarantee the highest objectivity of information, Rivista Militare leaves contributors ample freedom, though it does not necessarily share their opinions. The Author is thus solely responsible for the articles which, published unedited and without editorial ties, exclusively reflect his personal ideas. Articles must be original in thought and should not exceed ten typewritten pages. Once the Author receives his fee, he loses all exclusive rights. Rivista Militare may then pass the article on to other publications and EMPA (European Military Press Association) periodicals. Articles should be accompanied by suitable photographs, illustrations, explanatory tables, together with a photograph of the Author, a brief «curriculum vitae» and a ten-line typewritten summary. Rivista Militare reserves the right to change the title of articles and choose the typeface deemed most suitable. Rivista Militare is equipped with a computerized system for phototypesetting and videopaging. In order to make the production of the articles more expeditious, it is desirable that the Authors provide, besides the text on paper, also the diskette with the text files of the article. Any system and type of computer can be used.

ADDRESS TO THE ARMY

Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, Enlisted Men, Carabinieri of the Military Police, Civilian Personnel!

Today I leave the office of Chief of Staff of the Army. I offer my deferential and deep-felt homage to the Army Flag and to the glorious Flags and Standards of our Branches, Corps and Regiments.

I wish to address my dutiful and reverent thought to those who, in the name of duty, in peace and in war, gave their life for the Country and offered us the shining example from which we derive our daily spur.

I also wish to express my heartfelt solidarity to the soldiers who operate outside the national territory, carrying out delicate and risky missions for the safeguard of peace and international security.

I held the position of Army Chief of Staff for over two years and the conclusion of this appointment coincides with the end of my active duty. Looking back, I cannot but be happy about the forty-five years I have spent serving the Country. But, most of all, am grateful for the honour of leading the Army which, albeit in a crucial phase of its renewal, has been capable of setting up very important missions in Afghanistan, in Iraq and in our Country, bringing prestige to Italy through its soldiers, who have shown their humanity, professionalism and valour, in the wake of our glorious traditions.

My experience was exciting and extremely precious. Already on the first day, I perceived that I was at the summit of a lively and vibrant organization, made up of men and women who, despite innumerable difficulties and shortcomings, actively and tirelessly participate in tasks which at times exceed their possibilities, thus showing an extremely high sense of duty and a great attachment to our Institution.

I therefore strongly feel it is my duty, and also a pleasure, to thank all military and civilian personnel for their skilled and professional commitment, which has made our Service grow and become stronger, achieving levels of efficiency that were difficult even to imagine just a few years ago. You are the proud authors of the extraordinary and epochal transformation which has turned our Army into one of the world's most appreciated and admired Western military land instruments.

An instrument which is modern and effective, decisive in its interventions, irreplaceable in any emergency, obedient to the institutional Authorities, impervious to partisan politics, democratic in its structures and composition. In this connection, I thank the Military Representatives for the contribution offered to me for the social elevation of our soldiers, and feel close to all of them in the daily battle for drawing the attention to the needs, and asserting the rights, of the military.

My last "order", therefore, cannot but be an incitement to continue to serve our Country with the same wholesome and positive enthusiasm, since the Army's transformation process is not concluded and the variable nature of the present threats to international security will entail, in the future, a continuous and constant adjustment of structures and organization. These are strong, demanding and stimulating challenges but our Service, thanks to its men and women, has the cultural energies, the motivation and the technical and professional capabilities necessary to win them.

With these feelings I wish the Army and my successor, Lieutenant General Giulio FRATICELLI, the best and well deserved success, for the good of our Institution and of the Country.

Long live the Italian Army!
Long live Italy!

Rome, July 22, 2003



Lieutenant General Gianfranco Ottogalli
ARMY CHIEF OF STAFF
Gianfranco Ottogalli

ADDRESS TO THE ARMY

Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, Enlisted Men, Carabinieri of the Military Police, Civilian Personnel!
In compliance with the will of the Government of the Republic, I assume the position of Army Chief of Staff: I am proud and honoured for the high responsibility entrusted to me.

I pay a devoted homage to the Army Flag and to the Colours of our glorious Units and address a reverential thought to those who fell in the fulfilment of their duty, in war and in peace. Their memory incites us to perpetuate their values with our constant and loyal activity.

My deferential greeting goes to the President of the Republic, Commander in Chief of the Armed Forces and admirable expression of the Nation's unity.

To the Veterans' Associations, witness of the deepest spiritual values of the Service and irreplaceable link between the military and the civilian environment, goes my warmest appreciation for their important activities. I am certain that our collaboration for the rightful support of our personnel, both in active service and discharged, will continue in a more and more profitable manner.

I express my warmest and cordial thoughts to the soldiers, men and women, who are engaged, abroad and at home, in delicate and risky missions aimed at guaranteeing the security of the national community and contributing to international stability. They can be sure that every component of the Army will continue to be strongly committed to give them all the necessary support.

To the Military Representatives goes my special recognition for their important activity. To the cities that host our units, I wish to express my gratitude for their friendly cooperation.

To Lieutenant General Gianfranco OTTOGALLI, my schoolmate at the Military Academy and old friend, who preceded me in this position, your, and my own, heartfelt thanks for the mastery, serenity and moderation shown in carrying out his assignment in a moment characterized by extraordinary intensity and great innovations. We wish him, very sincerely, a happy and serene future, generous with further and well deserved satisfactions.

With its usual professionalism, the Army will continue to honour the numerous and complex international engagements, where it is a protagonist in the delicate task of spreading and asserting the man's main reference values - freedom, democracy, civil and peaceful coexistence - in crisis areas which often tormented by bloody wars and oppressive dictatorships.

I am certain that the pursuit of this objective, as well as the continuation of the reorganization process of our Institution, will find - as it has so far - the active participation, the resolute dedication and the aware responsibility of the military personnel of all categories and ranks, and of the Army civilian personnel.

With these feelings I express to you, Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, Enlisted Men, Carabinieri of the Military Police and Civilian Personnel, and to your Families, who every day give you their indispensable moral support, my sincere wish of good luck and satisfaction. Good work to you all!
Long live the Italian Army!
Long live Italy!

Rome, July 23, 2003



Lieutenant General Giulio Fraticelli
ARMY CHIEF OF STAFF

A handwritten signature in black ink, which appears to read "Giulio Fraticelli". The signature is written in a cursive, flowing style.

TWO SIDES OF THE SAME COIN

STRATEGY AND MAJOR STRATEGY ARE CLOSELY COMPARED IN ORDER TO CONFRONT THE CRISES LOOMING ON THE THIRD MILLENNIUM

Strategy, in its accepted meaning, can be defined as the art (based on intuition) and science (based on professional training) of the conduct of war. Still in the classic sense, major strategy could be defined as the art and science of the political, economic and military conduct of war. But are these definitions still valid?

On the whole, the answer to this question can be affirmative, as long as one does not forget that, actually, strategy and major strategy are two sides of the same coin. But the real point is another: the concept of war has changed.

After WWII, many civil, ethnic, religious and tribal wars, sometimes fought by proxy and often neglected, have bathed in blood several continents of our planet, and continue to do so. On the contrary, the "official" wars among States and coalitions – i.e. wars conducted according to the traditional canons of strategy and grand strategy – have become rare.

Indeed, between the late forties and the late eighties of the last Century, the contrast between two blocs, the "Western" bloc,

Strategy is art and science, since in its organizations and in the conduct of war operations it is based on intuition and professional training.

Major strategy, instead, is the art and science of the political, economic and military conduct of war. This, at least, is the classic definition of the two concepts.

Well, today it seems that those parameters are not as valid as they used to be. But actually these are only appearances, since as the very concept of war has changed, the notion of threat has changed accordingly. Let us see the reasons for it.



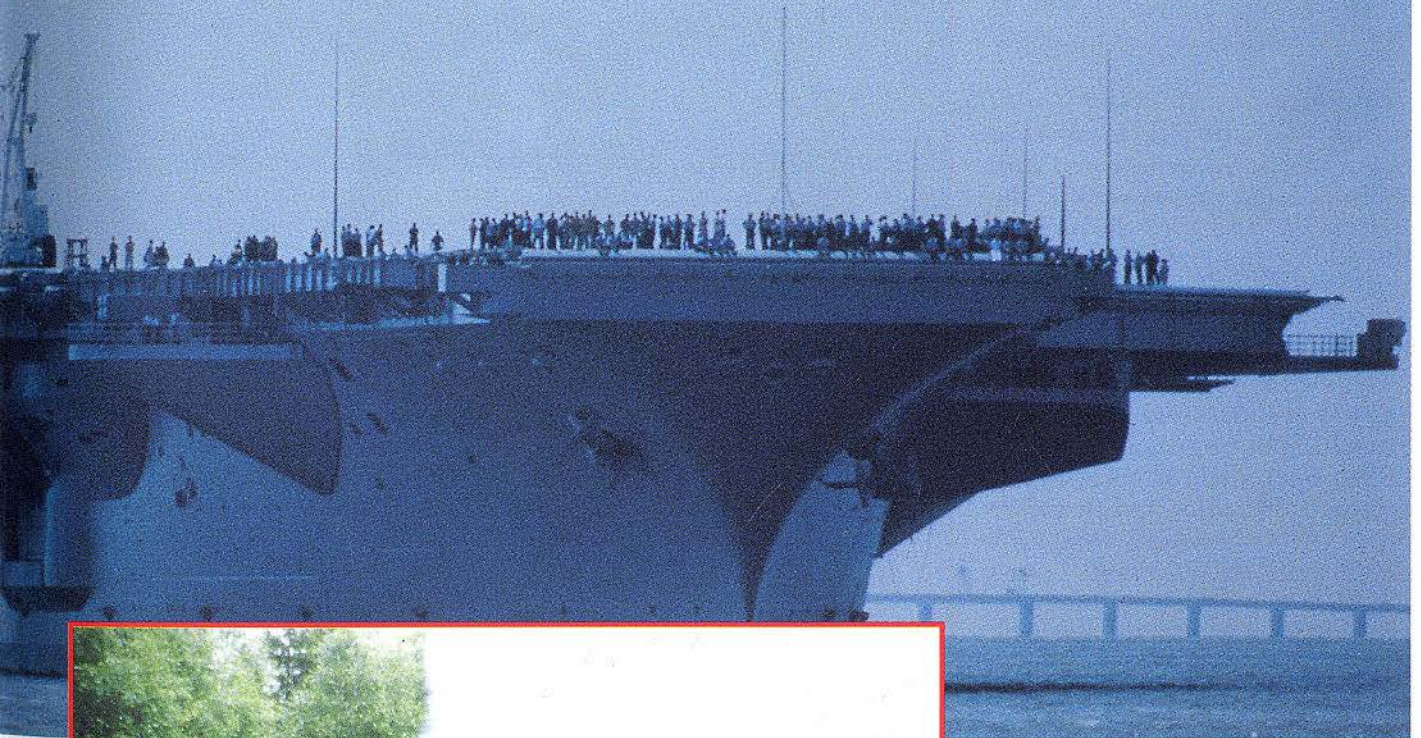
by Vittorio Barbati*

headed by the U.S., and the "Eastern" one, led by the USSR, produced the so-called "cold war", a kind of conflict which did not trigger acts of actual war, but in which weapons, starting from those of mass destruction, were used as means of pressure, intimidation, threat, counter-threat or, in other words, of mutual deterrence.

A NEW SCENARIO

The "cold war" ended several years ago with the dissolution of

THIS ARTICLE WAS
WRITTEN SHORTLY
BEFORE THE OUTBREAK
OF HOSTILITIES IN IRAQ



the USSR and its bloc, but the principle of deterrence is now linked to nuclear weapons, arms of mass destruction and, to a point, also to conventional arsenals. Deterrence continues to dominate, albeit with different contents, the international scene, involving mostly the relations among the States.

Meanwhile, new criteria have been spreading, such as the prevention of conflicts, peace-keeping – or even peace-enforcing – , the safeguard of human rights and the defence of populations threatened by

genocide. These criteria have caused the at least partial modification of the functions, tasks and structure of the military apparatus. Furthermore, the phenomenon of globalization, with its enormous political, social, economic and military implications, has made the international scene even more intricate. This is precisely the picture which, with its few lights and many shadows, served as a background for the terrorist attacks of September 11, 2001 against the United States.

The events of that day have caused, and still cause, a number of chain effects. But, before dealing with this fundamental issue, we should take into account the international and multinational organizations, the Alliances and the Countries directly or indirectly affected by those consequences. And, at this point, a short digression seems to be appropriate.

It is common knowledge that the international relations should be regulated – the conditional mode is necessary! – by the UN Charter and therefore by the United Nations Organization, which was established precisely on the basis of that Charter. The UN Security Council should – conditional again! – guarantee the stable and orderly development of relations among the actors on the world scene, be they big, medium or small. Unfortunately, the function of the Council, consisting of fifteen members – five permanent and ten elected by rotation – is hampered by two negative factors: the so-called right of veto given to the five permanent members and the absence of a military force capable of enforcing the resolutions adopted by the Council. And now we can close this digression and pick up the thread of our discussion.

In particular, there are two international bodies in a



position to work out and implement advanced models of strategy and grand strategy. They are NATO and the European Union (EU), which are made up largely of the same members (and the same candidates for membership). The problems of these two organizations are at least partially different but closely correlated. But let's proceed methodically. Accepting the limits of this proceeding, it is necessary to schematize our reasoning. Starting from NATO.

A POWERFUL ALLIANCE

NATO is a military alliance which is assuming increasingly politico-military characteristics. It is now in an expansion phase and, with the Rome Declaration of May 28, 2002, has reached a cooperation agreement with Russia.

The enlargement of the Alliance and its cooperation with the Russian Federation are two interconnected processes with interesting prospects, but they also entail a number of serious

Opposite.
An ATACMS emplacement.

Right.
*An F-35 Joint Strike Fighter
and its X-35A demonstrator.*

problems. The major member of NATO is a non-European Country, i.e. the U.S. giant, which by itself is more powerful than all the other members put together. Furthermore, it is the only one equipped, albeit not as much as needed, with the instruments necessary for implementing a planetary strategy, both conventional and nuclear. After the collapse of the USSR, the United States has in fact assumed the role of sole world-power: a political, economic, military and technological superpower, since in many sectors it has acquired a practically unreachable advantage over all the other Countries, be they allied, friends, neutral or enemies.

However, in spite of this and for reasons that we shall consider later on, the U.S. does not want, at least in some cases, act by itself. This factor affects its strategy and its higher strategy. On the other hand, the same factor affects also NATO and the European Union. Let's now examine briefly the last part of this concept.

THE ROLE OF EUROPE

As we mentioned – and is, after all, well known – also the EU is going through a phase of expansion, but is also in a difficult moment of transition. The EU is certainly an economic reality, but is having difficulties in achieving a real political and military dimension. As a consequence, for the moment, it seems unable to set up either a strategy or a higher strategy on a wide range. In addition, many of its members, starting from the most important ones, are also

NATO members. This introduces further complications in an already very intricate situation. To begin with, the non-NATO members of the EU could disagree with the most far-reaching strategic decisions. There are also remarkable gaps in the standardization of materials and logistics, as is the case also within NATO. This produces a dependence, especially in air-strategic transport, on the U.S. logistic system and also, albeit to a lesser degree, on the Russian one.

At technical level, the EU military (particularly EU-NATO) are certainly capable of devising a far-reaching strategic doctrine, but this is linked – and could not be otherwise – to the decisions of higher strategy which fall within the responsibility of the politicians. To decide whether the future EU forces will have to be employed in wide- or limited-range actions, in operations of one type or another, are tasks that do not belong to the military, whose job is, once a decision is taken, to study the technical implications of the decisions (force organization, armaments and equipment, standardization). This is one of the critical points

of the problem, since the EU does not have a real central political power. (It is highly desirable that the Convention, which is at work at the present time, succeeds in defining its main lines as soon as possible; otherwise, things would become even more complicated, considering the envisaged enlargement of the Union). Furthermore, in a mutual cause-effect relation, the EU strategic problem intertwines with NATO's, since both, as we said, are in an enlargement phase and must define, or redefine, their respective roles in the international arena, in order to effectively coordinate their plans on strategy and major strategy, at the same time linking them with the U.S.' decisions (and possibly Russia's).

It is at least questionable whether other international organizations have the technical capabilities necessary for adopting ambitious decisions of strategy and major strategy, even if some of them – as is the case with the Arab League – established a Common Defence Council and a Permanent Military Committee. However, some organizations – and here



we can mention the Arab League again – and some Countries are in a position, for geostrategic or economic reasons (in particular, because they can control delicate sea/air routes or territories in especially important positions) to influence, in a more or less incisive manner, the politico-strategic conduct of the most important Countries and coalitions.

LONGING FOR UNION

However, in certain cases, some informal international organizations, not born out of any treaty – e. g., in the past, the Contact Group in the Balkans



and at present the G8 (Group of the most industrialized Countries, which at the June 2002 Summit welcomed Russia as a full-fledged member) – appear to be capable of adopting important decisions of higher strategy, such as the one taken by the G8, of financing with ten billion dollars, over a period of ten years, the destruction of the NBC weapons of the former Soviet arsenal, also in order to prevent some of these weapons from falling into the hands of terrorist organizations.

The creation of informal organizations (if we can call them so) is motivated in many cases by the need to avoid the involved procedures – essentially imposed by political and legal requirements – which often slacken and complicate, besides the activity of the States, also that of the international organizations, which are the outcome of complex and binding agreements. Thus, in case of need, the formalization of particularly important agreements takes place when the

accords have been informally concluded.

The mechanism is spreading. Its most recent application was the so-called “Madrid Quartet”, composed of the representatives of the UN (Secretary General), the EU (Official responsible for Foreign Policy and Security), the Russian Federation (Foreign Minister) and the U.S. (Secretary of State). As is known, the “Quartet” was born in order to solve the very intricate and dangerous Israeli-Palestinian crisis. It is also worth noting that it is composed of two organizations (UN and EU) and two great Federal Nations (the U.S. and Russia).

Obviously it is not possible to have here a thorough discussion on the informal organizations operating in the international arena. Here we can only observe that their action can produce remarkable effects, not only political and economic (major strategy) but also merely strategic, and this is the reason for mentioning them.

EASTERLY WINDS

Later on we shall dwell on

Opposite, above.

An HMMWV with "Hellfire" missile launcher.

Opposite, below.

CH-53 and "WIESEL 1" with TOW missile-launcher.

Right.

"Peacekeeper" ICBM system.

the political, economic and strategic importance of the Middle East – an area the Europeans should call, more correctly, Near East – and, in that framework, on the implications of the Israeli-Palestinian crisis. For the moment, let's turn our attention to the United States which, as we said, is playing the role of single planetary power. The reason is very simple: the decisions on strategy and major strategy made by the U.S. are directly connected with the plans of all other actors on the international scene. In view of this, we should examine, albeit very synthetically, the genesis of the most recent American decisions, starting from a long time ago.

During the decades of the Cold War, the U.S. developed, essentially in anti-Soviet perspective, a complete planetary strategy.(in the same period also the USSR tried to implement a similar strategy, but only with partial results).

STRATEGIC RAMPARTS

This strategy was supported by several pillars. First of all, a planetary sensor system which, together with an equally planetary telecommunications network, operates for an extremely functional politico-military command apparatus. Secondly, the U.S. availed itself of a mighty strategic and nuclear "Triad", consisting of manned bombers, land-based ballistic missiles and nuclear submarines

armed with the same weapons.

A very important role was also played by a large conventional system – air, land and amphibious forces – stationed overseas and suitable for interventions in any possible situation, climate and environment.

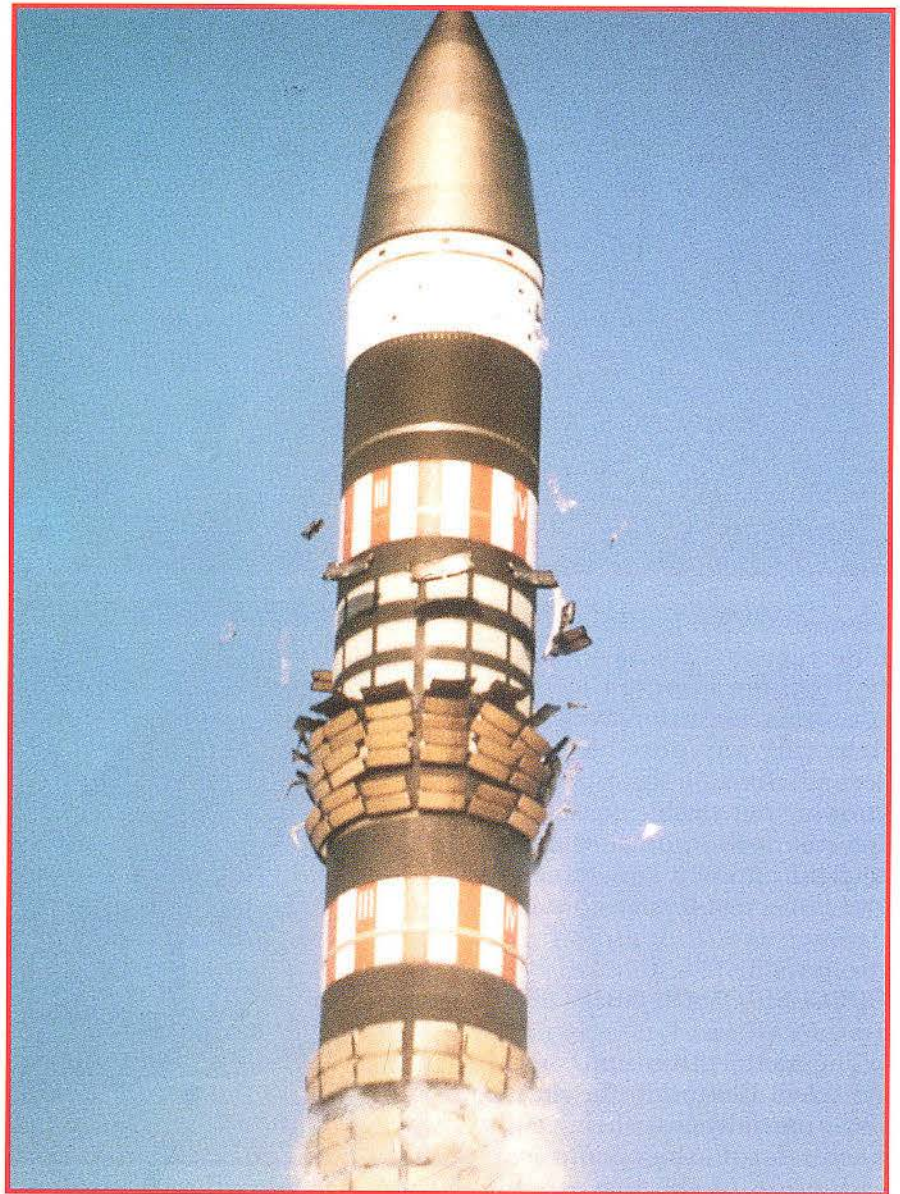
Moreover, there was an air-naval system, capable of operating at planetary level, for controlling the air-maritime spaces and for offensive projections on land. It was an imposing bulk of forces, particularly air and naval, structured for the purpose of providing the fighting forces with

an adequate logistic, strategic and tactical support anywhere in the world.

Finally, a worldwide system of bases and installations ensuring the total mobility of the operating forces.

This formidable bulk of forces and equipment reached its maximum expansion during the Reagan Administration. Then, for a number of technical and economic reasons, there was a certain decline. Let's see these reasons in short.

With the disintegration of the Soviet Union and the Warsaw Pact, the need for the U.S. to consider a global war in a world





Left.
C-17 four-jet transport aircraft.

Below.
HIMARS (High Mobility Artillery System) rocket launcher.
It employs a MLRS launcher.

Facing page.
An M109A3 self-propelled gun.

scenario came to an end, but a different and twofold need arose: first, to maintain an adequate strategic nuclear force capable of deterring any possible enemy; second, to retain the capability of carrying out sizable conventional interventions in order to be able to fight and win simultaneously two important limited conflicts.

SUCCESSION OF OBJECTIVES

These objectives, pursued by President Clinton in the nineties, have partially lost their validity because of the progressive reduction of the forces which were to achieve them. Afterwards, with the defence plans launched by the Bush Administration for the defence against ballistic missiles, a big change took place, confirmed at first with the "Quadrennial Defence Review (QDR) of 2001, completed after September 11 and, later, with the "Nuclear Posture Review" (NPR) of 2002, which should be completely adopted in 2012. But what is the situation today? How is it going to develop?

The events of September 11 have caused, as regards both strategy and major strategy, radical changes, whose importance cannot be easily



determined yet, and this creates problems which, at first sight, could seem downright unsolvable.

On the one hand it is in fact necessary to proceed quickly but, on the other, medium- and long-term solutions are needed, owing to the long times required by doctrinal elaborations and the time, even longer, necessary for developing modern weapon systems. Everything must be done while taking into account the limitations imposed by the always inadequate financial resources and the existence of systems which, having been originated by different goals, are only partially adaptable to the

new purposes and cannot be promptly replaced.

These problems concern mainly the U.S. but also, directly or indirectly, those Countries and coalitions which could be called to confront, side by side with the

American superpower, the new threats represented by terrorism and proliferation of weapons of mass destruction. In this picture, the U.S. policy will condition the decisions of all the other actors on the international scene.

Today, the U.S. strategy is based, first of all, on what is already available. An this shows some of its limits.

GLOBAL CHALLENGES

To meet the new challenges, the U.S. has at its disposal the same means that were available to face the old threats prior to September 11. The advantage is that, in most cases, they are



systems very advanced from the technological viewpoint (suffice it to say that in many cases the gap between the American equipment and that of the other Countries can be measured in decades). A disadvantage is that the equipment available is not always completely adaptable to the new requirements, while the development of new systems requires relatively long periods of time.

There is, moreover, another important factor to consider: quantity. The American nuclear arsenal is certainly sufficient for a valid deterrence against any enemy, and it will continue to be so even after the reductions agreed upon with Russia, with the Treaty of May 24, 2002; but it is an arsenal which is growing old. Sooner or later, it will have to be renewed, albeit on a scale smaller than the present one. On the other hand, the system of defence against ballistic missiles, once operational, will not be able to confront the deterrent that, after the agreed reductions, will remain in Russian hands. However, with 200 or 300 antimissile missiles, it will

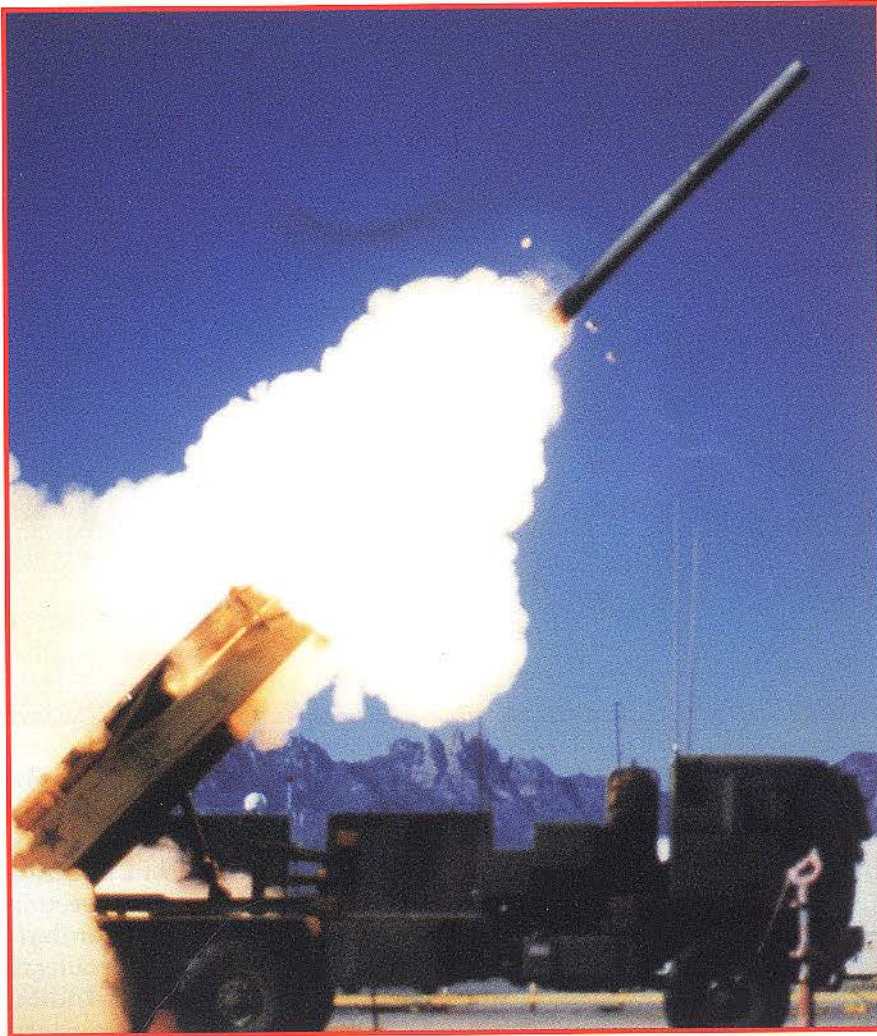
certainly be able to effectively face the arsenals for mass destruction of all other Countries, including China.

The main problems concern the conventional forces. The U.S. has approximately 200 heavy bombers – about ninety B-52Hs (the last one was produced in July 1962) about ninety B-1Bs (to be cut down to sixty and – according to reliable information – not to be reconverted for nuclear employment), plus twenty-one B-2As. These aircraft are the only ones capable of long-range interventions, thanks to in-flight refuelling (by the way, it is worth mentioning that also the number of air-tankers is decreasing). The opposite is true for tactical aircraft, both fighters and ground-attack, which, although they can be refuelled in flight, need bases not too distant from the operations area. But here we must speak of major strategy, considering the necessity to pursue a policy which can ensure the availability of bases on the territory of allied and/or friendly Countries.

Besides, there is the problem of the aircraft-carriers. The Ame-

rican units are formidable, but there are few of them. Considering rotations, ships in dockyards and units in training, the U.S. Navy does not succeed in having three of them combat-ready (one in the Mediterranean, one in the Persian Gulf-Indian Ocean area and one in Western Pacific), unless it extends the operational cycles, with sure non-positive consequences. Besides, without an adequate air support from the Air Force and Naval Aviation, the land amphibious forces operating in faraway theatres could find themselves in critical situations.

It is precisely these latter forces which are undergoing a fast and sharp qualitative adjustment, laying stress especially on flexibility and on strategic and tactical mobility. The results of this process, which anyway requires extensive experiments and new materials, could be jeopardized, at least partially, by some negative elements, starting from the progressive obsolescence of a sizable portion of the strategic-transport air fleet, the inadequate number of the new aircraft under construction



Left.
HIMARS Rocket Launcher.

Facing page.
French "Leclerc" tanks during an exercise.

extending the operating life of important, but rather old, systems. Not even the American superpower can afford too many luxuries.

DIPLOMATIC BALANCES

The U.S – and here we enter the field of politics, and therefore of major strategy – cannot act alone. It needs the political support of NATO, the EU, the Asian allies (with Japan in the forefront), the "moderate" Arab Countries and, possibly, also Russia and certain ex-Soviet Republics. It needs furthermore the support of those Countries which, even without formal agreements of alliance, are under its economic and military influence. And here the intertwining of problems, concerning both the U.S. and all the other Countries, risks to become really inextricable. Let's try to proceed in an orderly manner.

In the long years of the Cold War, the strategy of NATO was actually a fundamental element of the U.S. global strategy: in practice, each Country took care of the defence of its territory and airspace, helping at the same time to control the maritime areas and protect the sea routes converging towards its own ports. The American forces supported all the allies since, for their structure and equipment, they were the only ones suited for worldwide interventions. This was due to the fact that the threat was well defined and, therefore, the strategy adopted assigned precise tasks to the Alliance as a whole and to each of its members.

(C-17 Globemasters III, capable of transporting the heaviest pieces of equipment of the U.S. Army and Marine Corps to and from rough airstrips) and, last but not least, by the political problems connected with the availability of bases in areas close to the operations zone.

This synthetic and necessarily incomplete assessment of the situation has served to point out the main difficulties that the American "traditional" instrument, however powerful, must face. But the two factors mentioned before – proliferation of weapons of mass destruction and terrorism – compel to consider the situation from a new angle. These factors force the U.S. not only to acquire adequate defensive armaments (anti-ballistic missile systems),

but also to develop more special forces, to bolster its intelligence systems (through a better coordination of the various services that operate in this field) and to adopt difficult measures for internal security. Clearly these requirements create a very difficult problem of burden-sharing, from both the financial and the scientific-technological viewpoint, even considering the increases in budget appropriations which are already taking place. Economy is not an exact science, even if it has large recourse to mathematical methods. No one can guarantee that possible increases in costs – especially for the experiments on new programmes – will not end up by penalizing other projects, beginning with those aimed at



DOCTRINAL CHANGES

Today the situation has radically changed. We can even talk about a reversal of requirements. Yesterday the forces of the European members of NATO could essentially operate in a national context, and this made acceptable, within NATO, a standardization based on the fact that each Country could procure, for its particular needs, materials provided by its own industries. The planetary strategic mobility, mostly based on air and naval systems, practically concerned only the Americans, since their forces were the only ones that could be called to move from one theatre to another. Now, on the contrary, most frequently the discussion regards out-of-area interventions, and this is not a matter of words only, as proved by the Gulf War of 1991, the operations in the Balkans, the recent war in Afghanistan and other minor operations. Consequently and first of all, it is necessary to decide the range of action of the NATO forces and, in view of this, that of the forces of the NATO-EU Countries (or, if possible, of

all the EU Countries).

Every decision is obviously retraceable to a political responsibility (and things could become thornier with the further enlargement of NATO and EU), but involves also enormous technical implications: on the one hand, it concerns the problem of armament production in all its financial, industrial and social aspects because it is necessary to achieve, at least for the projection of forces, an acceptable level of standardization; on the other, they make even more complex – and we could say dramatic – the problem of logistic, strategic and tactical support, which has to be organized in order to provide these forces with an adequate and timely mobility. It isn't inopportune to mention that the solution of these problems requires a close European and transatlantic coordination. It is also worth stressing that any solution in this sector must be pursued with a spirit of sincere collaboration at all national and supranational levels.

We can say that these aspects are internal to the part of the West which includes NATO and

the EU (here the term "West" is not meant in a geographical sense, but is extended to every Country with Western-type political and economic systems). Then there are the essentially political aspects, which belong to major strategy and which lead to consider suitable, and sometimes indispensable, the conclusion of difficult compromises.

The very intricate Middle East question is part of this picture. It is common knowledge that the Middle East is the strategic fulcrum of the continents – Europe, Asia and Africa – which gravitate on the area. Furthermore, it has huge reserves of oil (and oil is, at least for the moment, a practically irreplaceable source of primary energy). Finally, it includes a waterway – the Suez Canal – which is vital for the economies of all the industrialized Countries, from North America and Europe to Asia and the Far East.

TRANSVERSAL SCENARIOS

But this is not enough. The strategic importance of the area

is determined by two fundamental factors: the possible availability of air and naval bases and the practicability of the Canal, in both directions, by warships. It is worth noting that while both factors were all-important, in 1991, for the success of operation "Desert Storm", the latter played a non-negligible role in the recent "Enduring Freedom" campaign. In addition, the 5th Fleet of the US Navy, reconstituted a few years ago for operations in the area encompassing the Red Sea, the Persian Gulf, the Arabian Sea and the Indian Ocean, consists of ships coming from the Pacific Fleet. Should the traffic through the Suez Canal become risky or downright impossible, the 5th Fleet's activities could be seriously jeopardized, and so would be the operations of the US Central Command, whose Headquarters at Tampa, Florida, extends its jurisdiction to the Middle East area.

For the above reasons, it is absolutely necessary for the United States and the West as a whole (meant, as we said, in a non-strictly geographical sense) to defuse the Israeli-Palestinian mine (a task in which the US role is certainly determinant). We wish and hope that a fair and well-balanced solution to this crisis is found, both to avoid tensions in the international relations (and, therefore, not only among the Countries of the area) and to save some important economic programmes (such as the construction of oil and gas pipelines coming from the ex-Soviet Republics of Central Asia).

CONCLUSIONS

To end this long, albeit summary, discussion, instead of drawing conclusions it is perhaps more appropriate to make some closing remarks.

First of all, we should note that

here the aim was to point out the international subjects who – at least in the writer's view – are in a position to adopt, practically or potentially, important decisions on strategy and major strategy. Other subjects, however important, or very important, whose spheres of action do not affect the options of the former subjects – or can do it only in a limited form – have been excluded. For example, it is difficult to think that China, whose enormous military apparatus has limited strategic mobility and is very interested in exploiting international stability in order to carry out its programmes of economic development, would really oppose any possible initiative of the West, with which it has closer and closer relations (even though China, as a permanent member of the UN Security Council, can exercise the so-called power of veto, it is doubtful that the Chinese leaders would take advantage of this right). It is also difficult to think that the rulers of some big Latin American Countries, like Brazil and Argentina, which, besides, are struggling against serious economic problems, could adopt measures capable of interfering with the decisions of strategy and major strategy taken by the most important actors on the international stage.

The latter – at least as concerns the subject of our discussion – can be identified in some informal organizations such as the G8 and the "Quartet", in the United Nations, in NATO, the European Union, Russia and especially the United States. For different reasons, all these actors to not want to clash, not even when their interests do not coincide or are downright conflicting (as is the case with the Middle East, where the interests of the US and Russia are at least partially contrasting).

In this field there is an



Aircraft on board the USS Enterprise.

interweaving which, from several angles, compels the protagonists to act more or less together: the G8 includes six NATO Nations (Canada, France, Germany, the UK, Italy and the U.S.), a NATO-associate Country (Russia) and an ally of the U.S. (Japan); the "Quartet", as we said, includes the UN, the EU, Russia and the U.S.; all G8 and EU Countries are UN members and four of them (France, the UK, Russia and the U.S.) are nuclear powers and



permanent members of the Security Council. This does not mean that there are no differences in ideas and interests within the various formal and informal organizations, or outside them. But it means that the common interests – crisis control, prevention of the proliferation of weapons of mass destruction, fight against terrorism – must not be overlooked, even at the cost of difficult compromises.

In an international picture where, as we repeatedly said, the war phenomenon has assumed radically new features together

with the traditional ones, the main difficulty lies in singling out the priorities, defining the roles of the various actors, States and Organizations, and in the political, economic and technical coordination of the short-, medium- and long-term initiatives. Without forgetting – but here, in a way, we leave our argument – that many crises can be averted through a more equitable distribution of the resources of our planet, within what we call today a sustainable development. The problem is enormous and cannot be thoroughly investigated here.

Nevertheless, here it is not useless to underline that, in today's world, also this problem concerns, albeit indirectly, both strategy and major strategy. □

**Contributor to Italian and foreign military magazines, author of essays on international politics, economics and contemporary history*

PHOTOGRAPHS FROM THE
AUTHOR'S PERSONAL ARCHIVES

Throughout history, migrations have always changed societies for the better, turning them into harmonious compounds of many tesserae of a still growing mosaic which began thousands of years ago

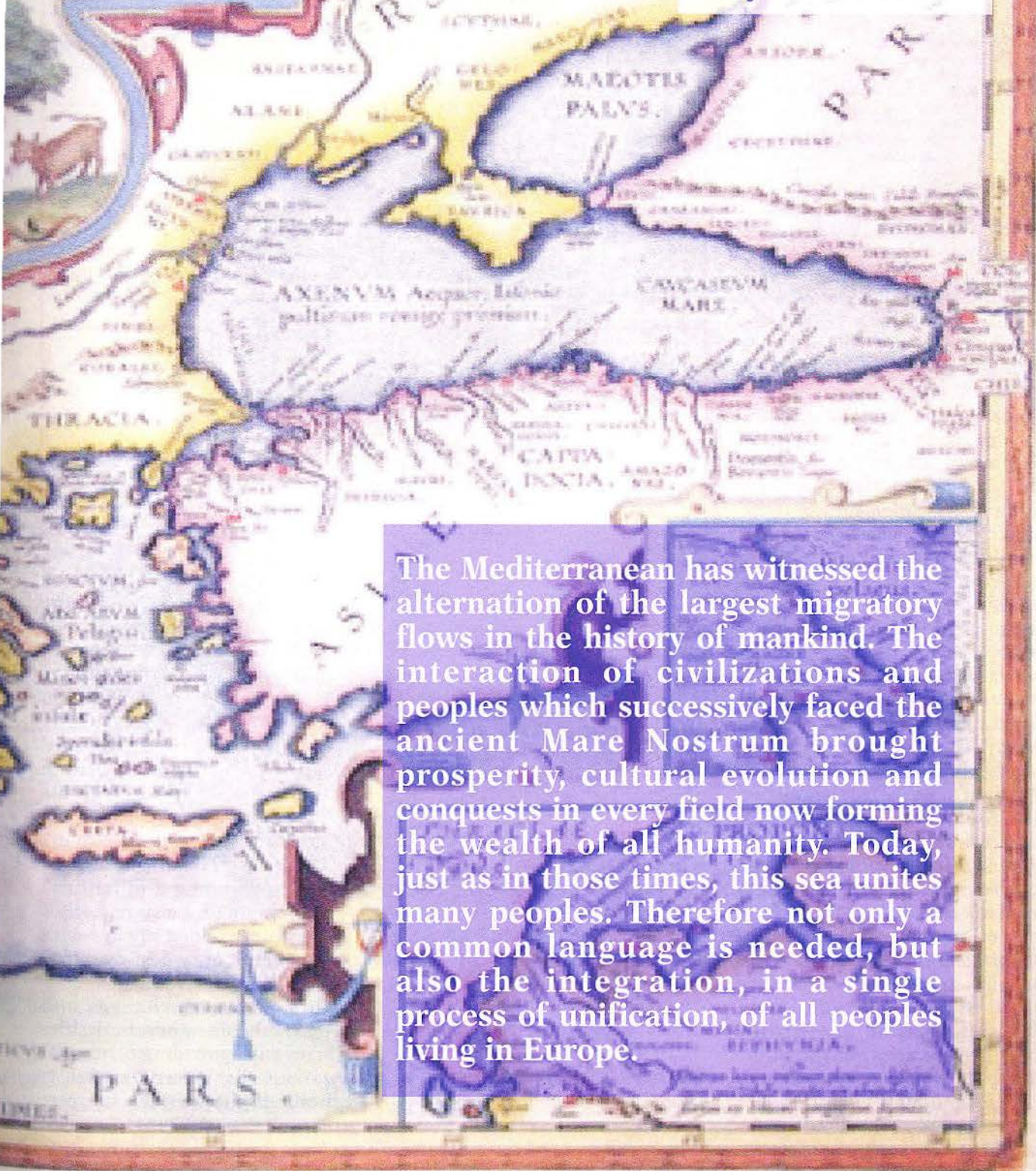


THE MEDITERRANEAN: A MOULDER OF CIVILIZATIONS

The withdrawal of a civilization within itself is a sign of the beginning of its decline: a real development occurs when cultures and peoples mix together

VTICA.

by Louis Godart*



The Mediterranean has witnessed the alternation of the largest migratory flows in the history of mankind. The interaction of civilizations and peoples which successively faced the ancient Mare Nostrum brought prosperity, cultural evolution and conquests in every field now forming the wealth of all humanity. Today, just as in those times, this sea unites many peoples. Therefore not only a common language is needed, but also the integration, in a single process of unification, of all peoples living in Europe.

THE FIRST MIGRATIONS

The history of the Mediterranean mingles with the odyssey of the great migrations reaching the area that, more than any other, marked the history of mankind.

The first and strongest migratory movement was that of the Indo-Europeans, which took place in two phases.

The earlier one occurred from East to West between the end of the third and the end of the second millennium B.C. and moved to Anatolia, the southern part of the Balkan peninsula, Italy, Gaul and to the domains of the Hittites, the Hellenes, the Italics and the Celts.

The second takes place in the fifth century of our era, at the end of Rome's imperial experience and causes the inclusion, in the old territories of the Empire, of the peoples who will give Europe its definitive character: Franks, Longobards, Slavs. These, therefore, are migrations from East to West and from North to South. We shall find them again along the millennia of the Mediterranean's history.

Contrary to what many believed in the past, these migrations were not sudden and destructive. On the contrary, slow but inexorable arrivals of new ethnic groups slowly modified the order of the old societies. More than once, with my students, I have compared the transformation of the Roman Empire of the 4th and 5th Century, owing to the arrival of new populations, to that which is changing the physiognomy of the United States as a result of the massive migration of Hispanic populations to the southern States.

The second movement is that of the Arabs. They embarked on the conquest of the western territories, starting from the tropical deserts of the Near East,



rapidly overcame the weary resistance of the Byzantine Empire and, in the short span of two centuries, succeeded in imposing their new faith and language from Baghdad to Gibraltar. Their expansion overflowed to the North with the occupation of Spain and Sicily and, with several raids, to the coasts of Italy and France.

The third migratory movement concerns the Turks who, arriving from the barren steppes of Central Asia, in the ninth Century settle in Anatolia. Three hundred years later, the Osmanlis seize the Balkans, conquer Constantinople and subdue the whole Mediterranean Islam.

THE MEDITERRANEAN MOSAIC

These invasions gave the Mediterranean most of its typicality up to WWII. Mare

Nostrum appears like a harmonious mosaic formed by the countless tesserae made by peoples of different origins, but peacefully settled along its northern, eastern and southern shores. The wealth of the Mediterranean civilization is linked to the exchanges and relations that different ethnic groups and peoples were capable of keeping and augmenting over the centuries, despite the many difficulties. The moments of greatest economic and cultural development of every region of the basin coincided always with the moments of widest openings to the culture of others.

The constant exchanges and loans which enriched the patrimony of the littoral civilizations often make it difficult to identify the masters who conveyed their art and techniques to the various peoples. Only one thing is sure: the Mediterranean became the

Facing page.

The funerary gold-plated wooden mask of Tutankhamen was placed directly on the Pharaoh's face.

Right.

Clay statuettes dedicated to Astartes, goddess of fecundity. Hands are kept under the breast, a source of life.

Below

Funerary mask of King Agamemnon.



coffer where a great civilization developed because it knew how to accept and improve other people's experiences.

Let us consider some examples from the ancient history of our sea.

Today there are good reasons to



Around 2200 B.C., the Aegean peoples invent writing, an extraordinary instrument of power and a vehicle of culture, through which man can transmit a univocal message in time and space. Unfortunately, around 1190 B.C. they forget this great conquest and break off the exchanges among the Mediterranean peoples. The closing of the borders produces destitution and desperation; ancient Greece will have to wait several centuries before it rediscovers, thanks to the Phoenician merchants, the civilization of writing.

The brilliant Arab civilization, bearer of extraordinary cultural experiences and technical innovations, has lit with thousand fires a West made sectarian by the fading of the ancient values and by religious intolerance. Some texts describe the amazement of the Arab physicians vis-à-vis the customs of the Crusaders, and illustrate the abyssal gap between the two cultures. For example, a document tells the story of a poor Frank woman suffering from a terrible migraine. Convinced that a demon had taken possession of the brain of the unlucky woman, the Frank "doctors" decided, in order to restore her to health, to

believe that the Neolithic revolution, through which man was transformed from hunter and gatherer to breeder and farmer, was passed on to the peoples of the old eastern Mediterranean by immigrants coming from the Syrian plain at

about the end of the eighth millennium B.C.

The first organized states are born in the Aegean world at the end of the third millennium B.C., in the wake of the economic and political experiences of ancient Mesopotamia and the Nile valley.

open her skull with an axe, to force the devil to leave in peace his prey: The poor woman died after a few hours, under the astonished eyes of the Arab prisoners who were present at the scene.

HOW THE MEDITERRANEAN HAS CHANGED IN THE LAST CENTURIES

Until the end of the 19th Century the transformations involving the peoples of the Mediterranean have been marked by the slow rhythm of long-term changes.

Then, all of a sudden, everything was accelerated owing to three main factors: the southern peoples' impelling need to emigrate in order to find work, the advent of mass tourism after WWII and the attraction towards the West felt by the underprivileged masses of the East and South of the world. Let us examine briefly some of these aspects.

At the end of the 19th Century, the populations, that had become too dense, could not survive in a very poor land with the fifty or hundred working days of the old agricultural societies. At the time, Europe offered very little space to the old Mediterranean societies. Therefore the peasants from the South, in particular Italians and Greeks, in great numbers tried to reach the Countries of the New World. The United States, Canada, Latin America and Australia became the destination of masses of emigrants in quest of work and hope. After WWII, the North European Countries attracted Italians, Greeks, Spaniards, North Africans and Turks. After the migration of the end of the 19th Century, when millions of southern citizens left their countries and went to America, other millions of people left the Mediterranean and sought their fortune in the fogs of



the North. Thus a kind of "contrary" migration made the Mediterranean lose its primacy as pole of attraction; the area became a reservoir of labour for the capitalist industries of the strong Countries. Italy is probably the Country that was most damaged by this recent mobility of men. It is estimated that in just over a century (1860-1970), about 25 million Italians left their Homeland.

They were often brave people. One needs courage to leave his native land, without great hopes of returning, and go towards an unknown horizon. I shall quote the words of a special emigrant, old Pythagoras, who, compelled to leave his native country and try his luck elsewhere, at the dawn of the first millennium B.C. wrote what are probably the bitterest words in the whole Greek literature: "If you have to emigrate, when boarding the ship turn your eyes away from the borders that have seen your birth".

They were desperate people. Wherever they went, they tried to recreate parts of their Motherland (Little Italy, Brooklyn) and to reconstitute a common culture made, in the words of essayist Sergio Romano, of "some, religion, some superstition and

some gastronomy". Their sacrifices often contributed to the respect of their "Mediterranean nature" by the implacable capitalist societies of North America and Northern Europe. I remember the story of Sacco and Vanzetti and their execution in 1927, or the death at Marcinelle, Belgium, of 253 coal-miners, whose toil and sweat contributed to enrich an often ungrateful Nation.

With their work and the diffusion of their traditions, these millions of Mediterranean citizens influenced the economy and culture of the whole Western world. To deny, as some are trying to do, the decisive contribution of the humble labourers from southern Italy, the Peloponnesus or Crete to the Europe of today and to its industrialization would be a shameful historical nonsense.

Together with this "contrary" migration, the Mediterranean has been for some decades – and today more than yesterday – at the centre of another type of migratory movement. This is correctly underlined by Maurice Aymard in the chapter on migration in his fine collection of articles on the Mediterranean, published under the supervision of Fernand Braudel and Georges

Facing page.

Egyptian limestone statuettes representing two women: one grinds wheat and the other prepares beer.

Right.

Two Carthaginian masks made of polychrome glass-paste (IV and III Century B.C.)

Below.

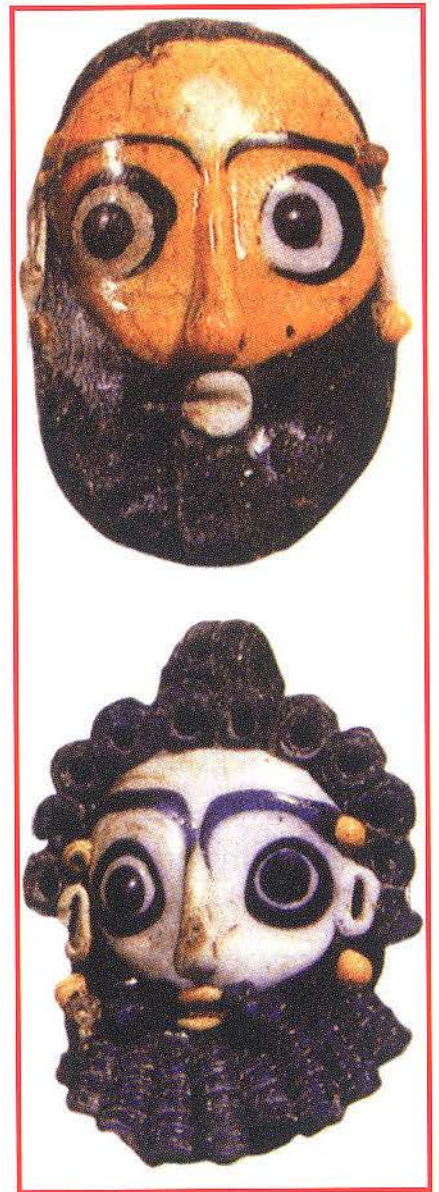
Sumerian standard from Ur, made of a mosaic of shells, lapis lazuli and red limestone.

Duby, where he refers to the huge crowds that every year swarm into the cities and on the beaches of the Mediterranean.

A real "holiday migration" of millions of peaceable people seems to take possession of the

values and parameters, and considers the Mediterranean and its people a folkloristic world, foreign to the European reality, rather than the crucible where the cultures of the West were moulded.

The young, often dazzled by the contact with modernism and the apparently carefree and easy life led by the hordes of tourists arriving from Northern Europe, live in a kind of "apnea" the months which separate the departure of the last holiday-makers from the following spring, which will bring back to the Mediterranean the same waves of vacationers. Thus, in the deep South, a new generation is born: it is content with leading a



southern regions of France, Spain, Italy, Greece and the Aegean islands. This migration brings money and employment, and decisively contributes to improve the balance of payments of regions which still have relatively few industries.

As a matter of fact, this invasion, albeit peaceful, is not that innocent. It destroys areas and landscapes with the gaudy luxury of the reinforced-concrete hotels facing the sea, it spoils societies which had different

working life of a little more than five months a year. Just as the bears of the Abruzzi and the Pyrenees, the boys in the south accept to spend more than half of their life in a state of lethargy, waiting for the event that will bring back to the Mediterranean the migrations, bearers of currency and dreams.

Besides the damages, of which the Mediterranean landscapes bear the marks, the migratory flows of every summer have produced, in the villages of the

southern regions, a serious social phenomenon: not real unemployment, but lack of a steady job and absence of prospects for young people, who could use their strength in a very different way to contribute to the development of the Mediterranean area.

Aymard points out that, for the first time in history, the Mediterranean succeeds in seducing its invaders without assimilating them, and is satisfied with being a pure and simple place for performances, peopled by actors who spend their life in the dichotomy that separates the fossil existence of



Left.
Fatimite miniature depicting the encounter of two horsemen (X-IX Century).

Below.
Relief representing Sargon II, King of the Assyrians (VIII Century B.C.) with a dignitary of his Court.

Facing page.
Battling gladiators (from a III-IV A.D. mosaic).

to Naples, I saw in the main square of Villa Literno, a large rural centre near Caserta, more than 50 black immigrants sitting on the ground, waiting for someone to recruit them for a day's work in the tomato fields. I asked one of them about his daily

the tedious winters and the false life of the venal summers.

Since the end of the eighties, and particularly after the fall of the Berlin Wall, new migrations have had the Mediterranean as their aim. Greece, Italy – especially the South – Spain and France see daily landings of thousands of desperate people arriving from the Near East, the Middle East and Africa. They are the vanguard of the infinite masses of the Third World. They knock at the doors of the affluent West and humbly ask for the leftovers of the banquet.

They are not threatening or arrogant. They simply are men and women like us, who did not have the luck of being born in the industrialized West; they often come from Countries which were dominated and exploited at the time of colonialism. They are very similar to those who, in the 4th and 5th Century, pressed on the frontiers of the Roman Empire, attempting to get inside its borders. Their dream is similar to that of the millions and millions of emigrants who

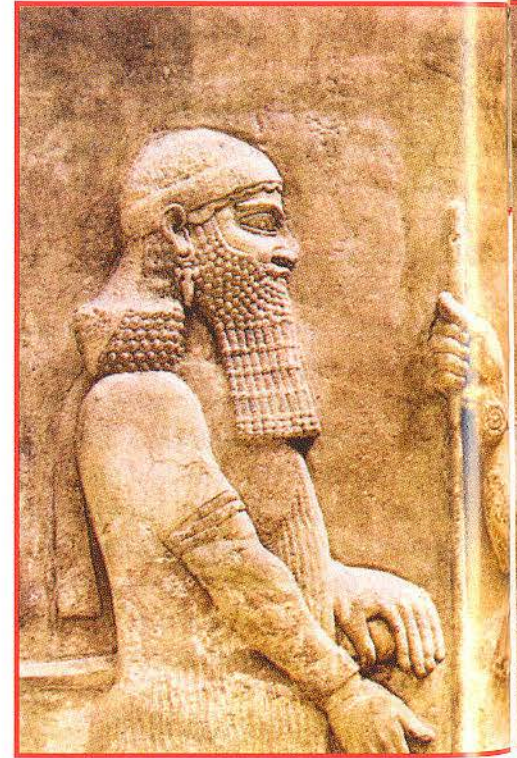
preceded them along the endless routes of desperation and pain; they hope to find a modest place in our prosperous society, to save their children from hunger and poverty and to conquer with their work the freedom they never had.

THE VARIOUS AND COMPLEX ASPECTS OF EMIGRATION

Emigration, which should not be demonized, implies the solution of some problems, starting from public order. Some political organizations believe that there is a correlation between immigration and crime, and distrust the immigrants.

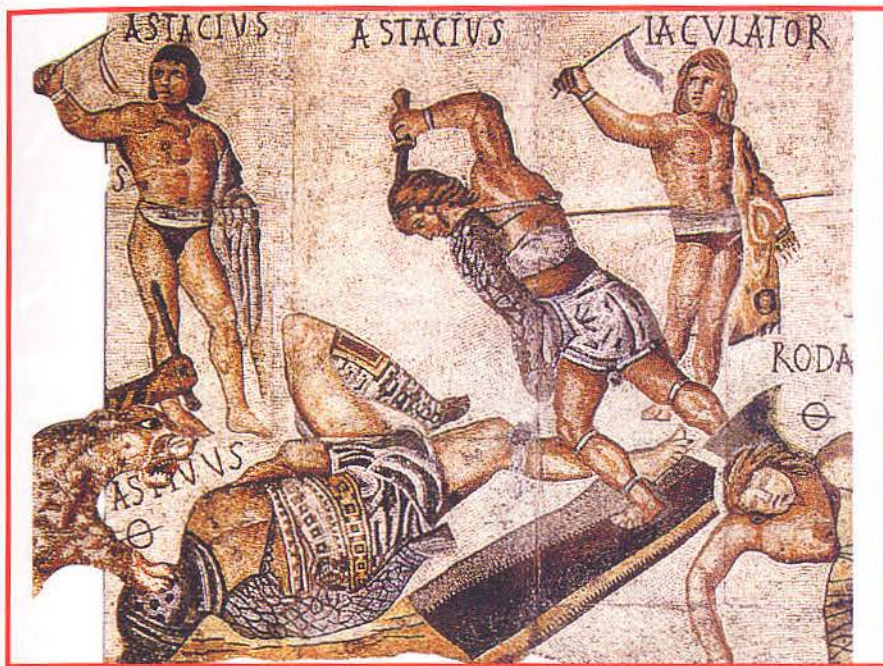
Actually, there is no doubt that immigrants are often involved in criminal deeds. Why is that?

Of course among the immigrants, as in every society, there are criminals. However, I am convinced that desperation often throws decent men and women, coming from the West or the East, into the welcoming arms of organized crime. One morning, at daybreak, on my way



pay and he told me that he would earn a whole 10 Euros. Such an ignoble exploitation cannot but arouse violent reactions, compelling those who are starving to death to turn to criminal gangs in order to secure a decent salary.

Secondly, there are organizational problems. It has been repeatedly said that our western



economies could not do without the contribution given by the immigrant workers. But these labourers, who are often very willing, are not coherently distributed within the most economically advanced nations of the old continent. This inevitably causes regrettable situations due to the high concentration of immigrants in

some areas and to the tensions that such a presence is bound to stir up among the locals.

A third point derives from religious questions. The impact between the old Jewish-Christian societies and other religions is often difficult. Intolerance is always lying in wait, and can be overcome only by adopting the words of old Voltaire: "Sir, I am not of your opinion, but I'll fight to the end so that you may express your opinion".

THE FUNCTION OF EUROPE

The last point concerns the role and function of Europe in the complex question of the migratory flows that are investing the old continent today.

Soon after WWII, the founding fathers of Europe rightly decided to set up a union of the nations of the Old World, in the hope of avoiding tragedies like those which had plagued the planet between 1914 and 1918, and between 1939 and 1945.

The birth of a united Europe has been difficult; its last accomplishment, the creation of a common currency, gives us the opportunity to look at the long

way covered since May 8, 1945, when arms were silenced in the smoking ruins of Berlin.

However, today's Europe is not the one mentioned in the Treaty of Rome of 1958. The citizens of the European nations belong to horizons that are geographically, politically and culturally much wider than those encompassing the signers of the Treaty.

The political leaders must take into account the new components of the present European States, if they want the structure – which they laboriously strive to create – to have any future.

In other words, today's question is not only to find a common language capable of uniting the old populations which wrote Europe's history. It is also necessary to combine in a single process of unification all the peoples who live in Europe but are foreign to the millenary history of the Old World. Another requirement is to plan for the near future, keeping in mind that our Continent will become multiethnic in the next few years.

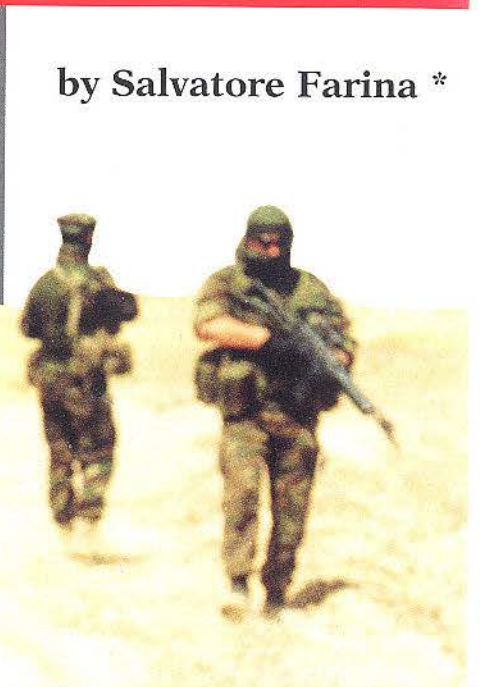
In conclusion, history teaches us not to worry about migratory flows which are changing the character of the Mediterranean countries. We should rather be concerned about the sectarian or racist reactions that some individuals, within the old populations which contributed to the history of the Mediterranean and the West, do not hesitate to have when faced by the phenomenon of immigration. It is for those who are able to learn from the lessons of the past and know that a closed civilization is a dead civilization, to help Europe to acknowledge the potential wealth represented by the new ethnic contributions.

□

** Advisor to the President
of the Republic
for the Preservation
of the Artistic Patrimony*

THE CENTRAL ROLE OF THE LAND INSTRUMENT BETWEEN SECURITY REQUIREMENTS AND NEW OPERATIONAL CAPABILITIES

by Salvatore Farina *



The numerous activities carried out in multinational environments confirm the Land Forces' capability of operating in any situation, achieving highly valuable results.

When a soldier is called to intervene, he operates directly among the people and acts in environments often characterized by insecurity. He is the one who consolidates success and provides protection to those who need it. In order to better perform this duty and meet the new challenges, the Army is now equipping itself with sophisticated and technologically advanced tools, including satellite systems. This is done in order to perform the institutional duties as best as possible and, last but not least, to reduce risks.

Within military operations, the land forces have proved their role as a really decisive instrument in solving conflicts, and, predictably, in the future this trend is not going to change. Therefore we must keep on strengthening and improving the capabilities of this fundamental military component, in order to maintain a balanced instrument, apt to carry out its tasks in the international field.

Undoubtedly in the last years the themes of defence and security have been attracting an increasing attention, not only in the expert circles, but also – and mainly – among operators and citizens of every category.

The reasons for this growing sensitivity are to be ascribed firstly to the great anxieties generated by the proximity of the Balkan conflicts of the '90s and, secondly, to the Country's awareness of the risks due to acts of terror or to the use of weapons of mass destruction by hostile persons or groups, possibly coming from faraway bases.

The consequent, progressive need to settle crises and solve conflicts calls for a growing employment of the military, who are requested to bring peace, sometimes imposing it by force, or simply promoting it through their presence by speeding up the solution of disputes and the return to normal.

In view of this, the Italian Armed Forces have become very popular for their professionalism and humanity. In particular, the Army has given a remarkable contribution to peace in terms of number and quality of personnel, and by employing its forces in all peace-support missions under NATO, EU, OSCE and UN aegis, with an average employment in the various Theatres of about 7000 men, with peaks of over 10,000, over the last ten years.

Considering the experience gained, we can say that the land forces proved to be determinant and crucial in every circumstance: combat operations, peace enforcing, crises control, peace support, peacekeeping, humanitarian mission and cooperation for internal security.

The analysis of the lessons learned from every intervention provides a clear indication about the employment of the various components of the military instrument which can also be projected into the future. This is a possibility that permits to adjust the foreseen improvements to our operational capabilities, so that the Army may be in a position to carry out its frequent missions as best as possible, with a view to defence and security.

THE RECENT LESSONS

In order to fully understand the decisive role of the land forces, one has just to proceed to a careful review of the parameters characterizing the recent operations in which the Army



participated, beginning from the period following the Cold War.

In 1991, during Operation "Desert Storm", some observers held the view that a certain number of fire actions carried out with "smart" systems and ammunition, launched from air and naval platforms, would have been sufficient to neutralize the Iraqi defensive deployment. On the contrary, facts proved that only the action of the land troops could disrupt and outflank the enemy defences and liberate the occupied territory of Kuwait, thus showing the full capability of carrying on their in-depth action.

The same situation reoccurred in Kosovo, when it was immediately evident that the land Major Units deployed in FYROM (Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia) had achieved, in just a few days, a deterrence much more effective than that of the air campaign, paving the way for the successive entry of the allied troops into Kosovo. It was precisely the land contingent commanded by Gen. Jackson that, with Operation "Joint Guardian", actually put an end to the fighting between the warring parties, resolving the situation of ethnic cleansing which had been going on for months in that tormented region.

Also the operations in Afghanistan confirm the decisive role played by the land components of the Northern Alliance and of the US-led coalition in the collapse of the Taliban regime.

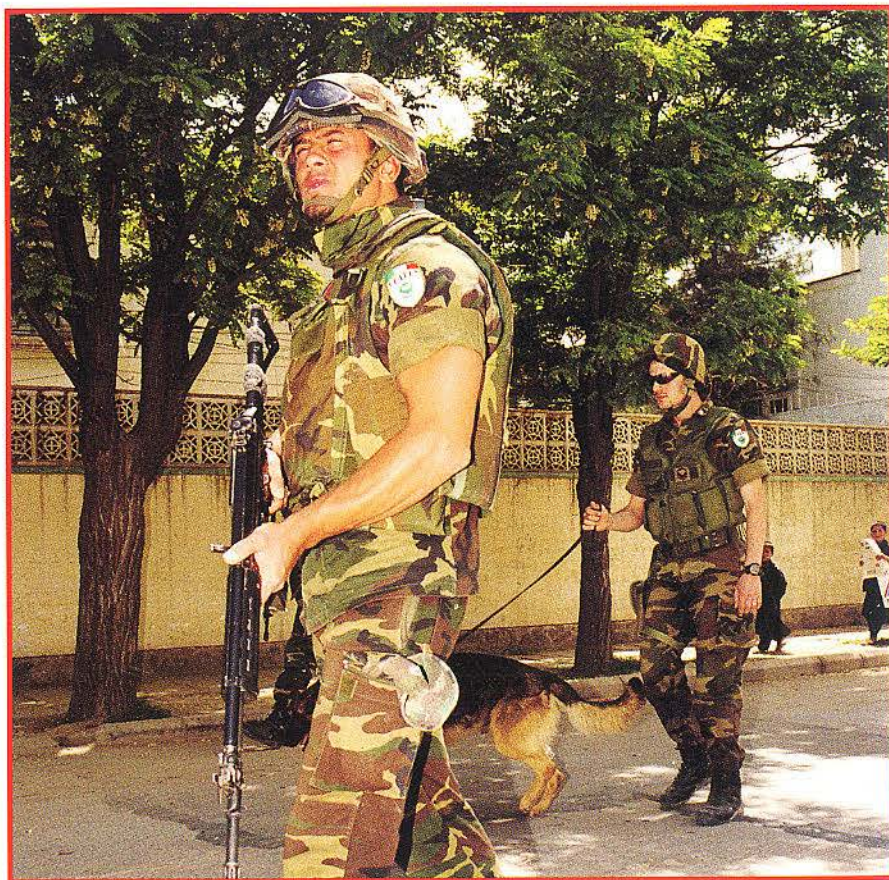
Lastly, an immediate analysis of Operation "Iraqi Freedom" shows, even more clearly, that the Anglo-American Army succeeded in neutralizing the enemy only thanks to the land battles, including those in inhabited centres.

Equally important is the experience gained in CROs and PSOs, where conflicts and risks are at medium/low level. Suffice it to mention operations

"Albatross" in Mozambique (1993-1994), "Joint Endeavour" in Bosnia (December 1995), "Alba" in Albania (April-August 1997) and "Interfet" in East Timor (1999).

In every mission, the widespread presence of the land instrument was decisive for ensuring the security frame necessary for straightening out the existing conflict situations. Certainly it cannot be denied that in many cases the land forces took advantage of "long range" actions carried out by naval and air instruments, for embargo and interdiction operations. In some ways, the results were important, but almost always limited. Indeed, in most cases, the critical conditions persisted, often to the detriment of the social and economic levels of the area concerned and, therefore, with prolonged hardships for the civilian population.

In substance, the land option in the employment of the military





Unloading a container of the ISAF Italian contingent from a commercial airplane.

Facing page.

An Italian patrol on surveillance duty in Kabul.

instrument turned to be a set pattern, adaptable to the various levels of conflict and to the changing characteristics of the national environment of the theatres. Suffice it to consider the highly successful employment of the manoeuvre land-forces in very different operational settings, from the deserts of the Persian Gulf (1991) to the mountains of Kosovo and Afghanistan and the villages of the Bosnian valleys.

A further lesson was learned as regards terrain. In a situation of inferiority – at least from the technological viewpoint – the

enemy tend to prefer those asymmetric confrontations which progressively push the operations towards compartmented and urban areas, where intelligence and remote-intervention technologies are less effective.

Precisely in these contexts, the army units with a marked capability of operating in particular environments and situations – such as special forces, mountain troops, air mobile formations and armoured units – are therefore most appreciated and requested. The experience on the field has moreover demanded other particular units apt to counter the asymmetric threats (NBC attacks and mines), conducting, at the same time, an accurate tactical intelligence activity, for the interception, surveillance and acquisition of particularly mobile and shifty targets.

Equally important for assessing

how much the land forces are necessary, is the factor connected with collateral effects, especially at a time when the participation of public opinion in war events has a strong influence on many political and military decisions. It is true, in fact, that the new technologies permit to strike with a certain effectiveness very distant targets, but unfortunately they do not permit to eliminate the collateral damages, to the detriment of people and structures.

The individual fighter's capability of discerning, selecting and evaluating the complex reality on the field, or his ability to give a more accurate intelligence picture are still there. The new technologies permit effective actions, but the soldier remains the mainstay of the military.

Only a combination of tactical skill, excellent recruitment and technological training can give

an effective answer to the new threats.

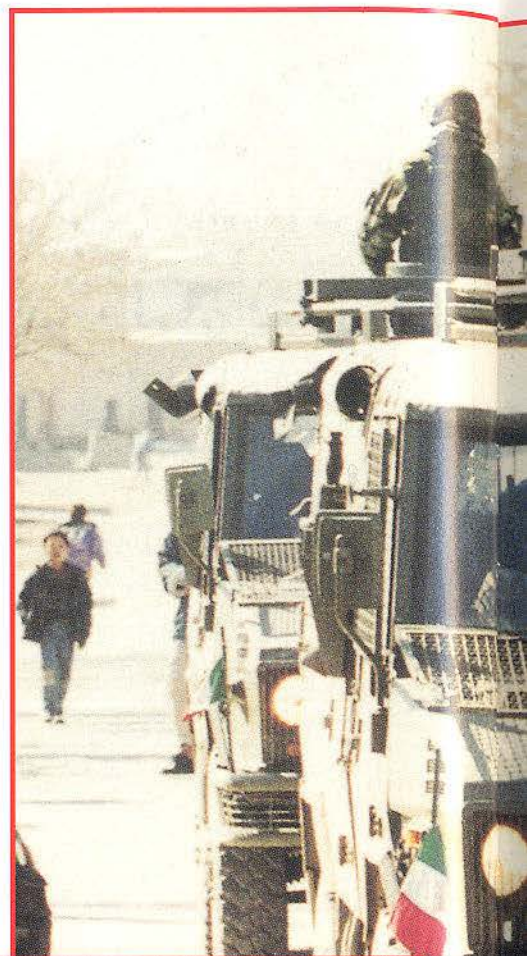
If we consider the humanitarian missions and those in support of the internal security of sensitive areas, we cannot but realize that the higher the level of distress or need was, the more suited the land units were. Evident examples of this are the humanitarian operations like "Airone" in the summer of 1991, in Northern Iraq, "Allied Arbour" in Albania in 1999, as well as operations in support of home security, such as "Vespri Siciliani", "Partenope" and the very recent "Domino". The result of these missions was a restored confidence and security among the population, brought about by a military presence expressed in an effective way and without arrogance.

This picture clearly shows that the recent and manifold, national and international, operational activities carried out during the last decade, con-

conflicts as it is in peacekeeping and peace-support situations and in humanitarian and internal-security emergencies. It is actually the direct interaction with the enemy, the opposing parties and the civilian populations that permits to achieve the mastery and control of the situation and therefore accomplish the mission, also – and mostly – in difficult operational scenarios.

THE FUTURE SCENARIOS AND THE LAND FORCES

Having taken note of the indications issued from the recent interventions, we should now have a look at the foreseeable future scenarios and the consequent role of the land forces. The security context will be characterized, at least in the near future, by several parameters which should not be overlooked.



firmed the fact that there is no substitute for the land component in modern conflicts and in crisis situations and have also emphasized its decisive character.

The infantryman's presence on the ground is as much necessary in medium-high intensity

First parameter

Taking for granted that the integration among Services is now necessary, it is increasingly difficult to imagine non-multinational interventions. This implies a series of measures, the most important of which are:

revision process of the NATO force structure; creation of a EU defence pillar with the relevant military capabilities; constitution of multinational formations, on bi- and multi-lateral bases, and, finally, the frequent recourse to multinational units within "Coalitions of the Willing" for



An Italian team on patrol in the Afghan capital.

Facing page.

A helicopter of the Italian contingent in Bosnia.

Second parameter

The time available for interventions in areas which could be very far from the national territory is very short, therefore we need forces that are ready, mobile, projectable and sustainable. The measures taken by NATO and EU in the last four years concentrate on the availability of high-readiness and rapid-reaction forces. The development of the NATO Response Force (NRF), approved at the Prague Summit last November, goes precisely in that direction. It is natural that whenever a discussion concerns

rapid deployment and introduction of forces into any operational Theatre, the land component assumes a pre-eminent role in preventive deployments and serves as a deterrent in coercive actions.

Third parameter

One should also consider the marked heterogeneity of the threat and the presence of areas with different levels of conflict. Although, in the short-medium term, the chances that an international "actor" could threaten vital national and allied interests (such as territorial

carrying out various types of operations. All this requires the establishment of multinational organizational structures, particularly at Headquarters and staff level, as well as the availability of combat forces with a land component capable of shouldering considerable burdens.



Italian soldiers on patrol in the Afghan desert.

Facing page.

A paratrooper of the Italian contingent during the mission in East Timor.

integrity) using traditional methods are very low, the future will probably be characterized by more terrorism, more instability, more conflicts, more proliferation, more internal crises.

The potential enemies will try again to move their offence, or the Theatre of the action, to almost inaccessible and compartmented environments, or to urban areas (also in our Country), where the selective capability of the smart weapons is less effective and there is a greater possibility of offsetting the technological gap. In view of this, it will be necessary to come in contact with the potential enemy, showing a through knowledge and control of the territory. It is more and more probable that, within the same operation, there will be the simultaneous presence of high-conflict situations included in ampler but lower-conflict realities and the prospect of having to deal also with humanitarian emergencies. Thus, the cautious, selected and reasonable use of force will be even more valuable, because of the existence of areas of conflicts of different levels and the presence of civilian populations. Only the land units can ensure this high level of accuracy, flexibility, sensitiveness and proportionality in the use of force.

Fourth parameter

Finally, we should point out the growing role of public opinion and the amplifying effect of the mass media. They

are, and are going to be also in the future, a determinant factor, not only for securing the support of the national communities, but also for influencing the operational decisions during the actions. In this sense there will be a strong spur towards the selections and dosage of military interventions, limiting the use of force to the bare minimum. Everything must be done while avoiding losses within one's own forces, collateral damages and civilian casualties, and reducing to the minimum the duration of the operations by having recourse to precise and decisive actions. In short, in the future it will be difficult to imagine lengthy air campaigns with repeated bombings of civilian structures, or mass-operations of air, naval and land forces over large areas and for long periods of time. Better to conduct rapid actions

with mobile crack troops, suited to the particular environment and supported by an adherent and accurate intelligence framework.

In brief, the picture just outlined confirms that, also in the future, the land forces will play a central role in the security context, in conflicts of every level and in any operational environment. At the same time, the various armies are required to have integrable multinational Headquarters and composite, interoperable and projectable forces, equipped with advanced weapon systems, with very good protection and firepower, centred on the professional skill of the individual soldier, who is the real protagonist of today's operations. Therefore, in this context, the strengthening and future qualification of the Army is more important than ever.

DEVELOPMENT LINES OF THE ARMY'S OPERATIONAL CAPABILITIES

Now, if we look at the future developments of the Army, we notice, first of all, that the reorganization of our Service, started in 1997, in its main elements, is already in line with the parameters of the future strategic context.

The evolution of the land instrument will certainly take into account the guiding principles of the higher political and military Authorities which envisage a greater availability of efficient operational units, guided by joint command structures and sustained by a school, training and logistic organization with no redundancies. The rationalization/optimization of the general support components is indeed the starting point for the recovery of



the resources necessary for staying within the "professional-Army limits" (112,000 men and women) and for strengthening the operational component, which is the real strategic objective of the renewal.

Now, let us try to examine the evolution of the Army's operational capabilities, on the basis of the three above-mentioned directions: multinational integration, development of the general capabilities, further enhancement of the soldier's role.

Multinational integration

The road taken by the Army in its multinational integration has already achieved very important goals. The Rapid Reaction Corps HQ, which only two years ago was a mere intention or a paper project, is now a splendid Italian-led multinational operational reality under NATO's operational command, and is also available to the EU. Also the Multinational Land Force (MLF), an Italian-Slovenian-Hungarian Major Unit, hinged on the "Julia" Brigade HQ, has achieved its full operational capability.

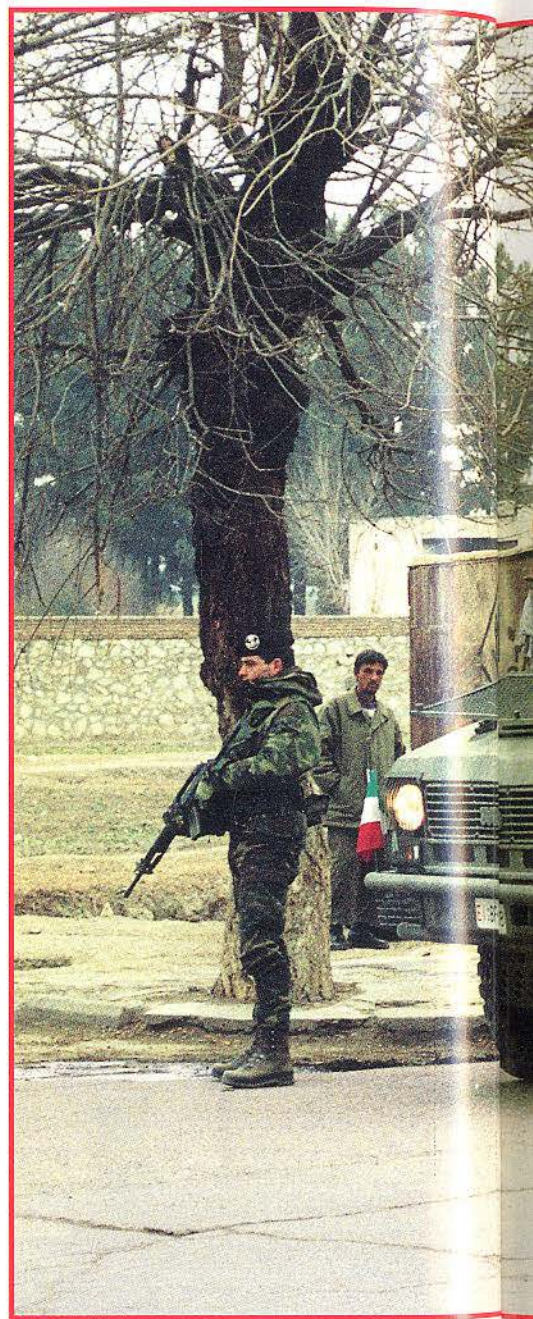
In the near future, after a complete revision of the NATO forces' structure and the implementation of the European defence pillar, the Army will start to confer to the projectable Division HQs all the capabilities needed for rapid deployment and Command/Control in operations. The procedures will be gradual and similar to those adopted for the constitution of Solbiate Olona's Rapid Reaction HQ. One Division HQ will be completed in 2004: the other will follow in the successive years. In this growth course, the Solbiate Olona HQ will be the guiding beacon as well as a training and amalgamation school for the application of NATO's procedures. This will start a virtuous circle with repercussions on every ma-

noeuvre and support Brigade HQ and with indubitable advantages for the entire Service and for the Defence in general.

Completion of the necessary operational capabilities

Besides the mentioned Command-and-Control capabilities, the Army of the future will need a composite bulk of forces, in line with the level reached by the main European Countries, in order to face diverse conflict situations in the various operational environments.

Considering the institutional tasks, the NATO, European and multinational engagements and the size of our Army, it was necessary to envisage: strengthening the special-operation forces (a component much more important today than in the past, since it is in a position to solve the difficult situations prevailing in a complex operational environment); completing and modernizing the manoeuvre Brigades, making all of them projectable and sustainable (they are divided into light, medium and heavy Brigades, plus an airmobile one, in order to ensure flexibility in the various operational scenarios, and modulate the formations according to the specific environment and level of conflict); shaping of Brigades and Groups (artillery, engineers, AA systems and Air Cavalry) in support to the manoeuvre forces in all operational situations, from the highest-intensity ones to those in support of peace; setting up a Brigade-level body of forces, grouping together all the RISTA-EW units capable of acquiring, in real time, a complete informative picture; completing the equipment of a logistic Major Unit for projection and close support of the forces; developing and strengthening the specialistic sectors, including those charged with the security of contingents



Italian servicemen controlling an important crossroads in Kabul.

and population. This group includes the NBC defence units, which are, already now, a showpiece of our Army and of our Defence as a whole, and for which a reinforcement is envisaged. Another special sector, internationally on the forefront and with remarkable capabilities, which is also going to be strengthened, is the clearing of



explosive devices (removal and neutralization). Finally, in order to better meet the parameters introduced by the presence of civilians in the operation areas, the civilian-military cooperation (CIMIC) is going to be expanded, together with the so-called Operational Communications. The former will give Italy a leading role in the Southern Region of NATO, while the latter will ensure the support of the local populations to the national units in operations, increasing

the level of protection of the contingents.

To sum up, our Service, accepting the NATO challenges created by the so-called Defence Capability Initiative (DCI) and the more recent New DCI, is now planning to strengthen the capabilities of command/control, communications, information, projectability, sustainability and protection of its contingents in operations.

Thus we can say that for all the manoeuvre forces we shall have

to envisage a different development of capabilities, following two complementary and converging lines.

In the short-medium term (2004-2012) we shall have to complete and update the existing capabilities at Brigade level, and concentrate mainly in Command/Control, Warning/Surveillance and Navigation/Engagement systems, in order to make them interoperable with those of the main European Countries.

In the long term (2012-2025), the Army will have to envisage the development of future combat capabilities based on new concepts, technologies and systems apt to become completely integrated. Practically, the innovation of the long-term transformation will not concern the so-called "platforms" (tanks, armoured cars, aircraft) but a complex system, including several assets, closely integrated through the Network Centric Warfare". The concept is therefore to focus on the knowledge of the situation on the ground, in order to keep the initiative and neutralize the enemy, avoiding collateral damages.

This survey shows that the Army has, and will have, an extremely operational configuration and a support component with no redundancies.

However, the period needed by the Army to become fully professional requires some further temporary changes.

In this respect, in fact, in order to quickly overcome the moment of the end of conscription – and also expand the recruitment of volunteers – we wish and hope that the "Defence Bill", (the so-called Professional 3) is approved as soon as possible.

The new law, once passed, will guarantee a working future to the personnel serving in the Armed Forces for at least one year. In practice, in order to become a regular volunteer or to join the Police forces, one will have to serve voluntarily for one year in the Army, Navy or Air Force.

Strengthening the human component

Precisely the human component, the third direction of the Army's development, is the hinge of the instrument's transformation. There is no doubt that man, the individual fighter, is the highest expression of operativeness and an irre-



placeable factor in any envisaged capability.

The increased heterogeneity of the missions, the high professional level required by the complex weapon systems, together with the lethality and multidimensionality of the manoeuvring space will increasingly affect the preparation of the personnel.

The fighter, even when included in minor-level formations, will have to be ready to move among the various types of missions and to quickly assimilate the relevant changes. The real key to success is the soldier on the ground, the man who walks through the minefields, who must neutralize the enemy and operates side-by-side with the population. He is the actual bearer of security. To

him, our soldier, we must give the best the Country can offer for the performance of his mission and the establishment of the values of security and peace.

Therefore his preparation must be very extensive, because the performances requested of him will be wide-ranging.

The fighting man will have to acquire, thanks to an appropriate and oriented training, the mental flexibility needed to know, at any moment, what to do and how to do it. In substance, the objective is to give our soldier an all-around operativeness.

Equipment is a very important aspect in the enhancement of the soldier's capability. In this connection, the Administration has planned to acquire the "Future-soldier system" – which

Facing page.

A sharpshooter and his observer in Bosnia.

Right.

A sapper clearing a mined area in Afghanistan.

will go into service in 2006 – and to adopt the provisional equipment for the foot-soldier (waiting for the “Future-soldier system”) in order to equip, starting from the current year, complete force-packages at Regiment and Brigade level.

On the other hand, the lessons learned in this sector indicate that the individual fighter is not going to be more effective simply because he is better trained or better equipped: he will be so only – and mainly – through the enhancement of his human dimension, from the cognitive, professional, behavioural, ethical and moral viewpoint.

Therefore, a great attention will continue to be paid to the strengthening of the reference values, such as loyalty, sense of duty, sharing, cult of traditions, esprit de corps, solidarity, promoting also the improvement of the quality of life and the initiatives in support of the servicemen's families.

In short, the Army of the future will maintain and emphasize the human values, the role and the equipment of the fighter.

CONCLUSIONS

The lessons learned lead us towards the best solutions, enabling the Army to provide operational responses in line with its institutional tasks and the changing times. The analysis of the recent military operations, including those in which our Service participates in a multinational context, shows that the land forces are the only component of the military instrument capable of tran-

sforming a temporary superiority into a lasting success. The land forces have proved fundamental because they can simultaneously express coercion, control and a continuous presence on the territory, among the people. Therefore they are essential in every phase: combat, pacification, and moral and material reconstruction. Evidently all these activities are necessary for achieving the objectives of the military operations of defence, security and peace-support.

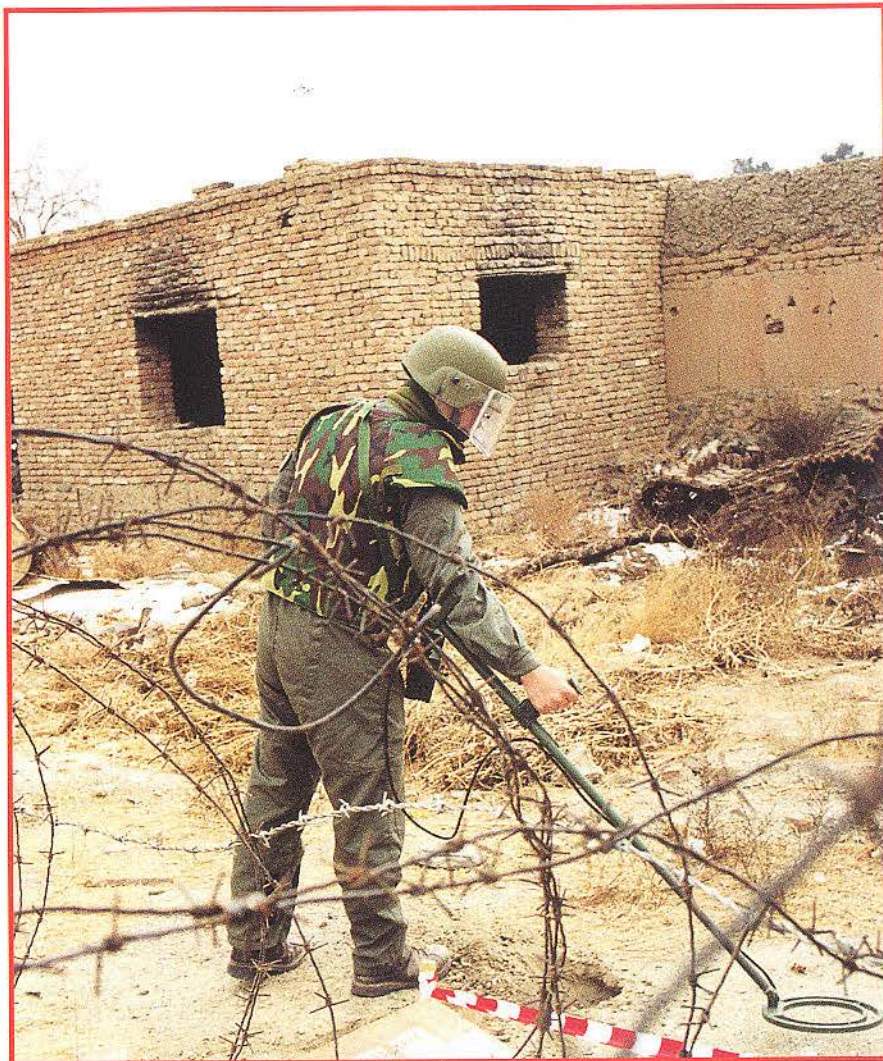
The trend will also be confirmed in the foreseeable future scenarios and, in view of this, the strengthening of the Italian military instrument becomes even more important. Thus, it is not only necessary to

have on hand adequate financial resources and skilled personnel, but also to manage and employ what is already available in the sectors which give better returns in terms of effectiveness and security.

The Army has shown, on the field and in every operational situation, its full capability of carrying out all its missions. It is now ready to professionalize all its units, to modernize its weapon systems and to strengthen its soldiers in order to continue being a protagonist of security, both at home and in the future international scenarios.

□

**Colonel,
Chief, Plans Office,
Army General Staff*



THE ACTIVITY OF INFORMATION AND PREVENTION IS ONE OF THE FUNDAMENTAL PILLARS KEEPING THE MEDICAL SERVICE AT ITS WIDELY ACKNOWLEDGED HIGH LEVEL OF EFFICIENCY

THE NEW FRONTIERS OF THE MEDICAL CORPS WITHIN THE NATIONAL SYSTEM

Military physicians are an unfailing reference for the health of our people and for the health of entire populations of different cultures. They participate in all humanitarian missions and are now present also in Afghanistan and Iraq

by Michele Donvito *

Present on the whole national territory, very active in Civil Defence and in all out-of-area missions (Afghanistan is the latest example), always ready to relieve pain and sufferings and to safeguard the physical integrity of people without neglecting the moral and spiritual implications, the Medical Service avails itself of the most innovative scientific and technological discoveries. A great importance is given to communication, in order to inform on risks and pathologies and on the way to avoid them. The Service is an integral part of the National system and cooperates with many Ministries other than Defence in order to offer an irreplaceable support to anybody in any circumstance, with altruism and generosity.



The Medical Corps is a complex functional structure which envisages the continuous renewal of men, techniques and procedures, in order to be always "young" and ready to face the ever-changing needs connected with the health of the Italian community, meant not only in the traditional military sense, but also in its civilian aspects. It is a composite organization which must be always abreast of the times and in line with the events of the

scientific and social evolution.

The Corps must also defend the important history and the traditions that enrich its outstanding course of growth and progressive technical and scientific evolution. Its history corresponds, in many points, to the history of our Nation and finds reasons for pride and valour in the countless events which occurred on the Italian soil during the last three centuries.

The medical component of the

Armed Forces has eventually assumed a growing and decisive role within the logistic military organization, to the point of being today the oldest among the logistic services but also one of the most important, due to its reflections on the social and professional problems.

The Medical Corps, in fact, has always had to carry out its tasks in accordance with its prevailing institutional goal, which is that of safeguarding the most important national wealth: the



A successful delivery in a field hospital.

health and welfare of its human patrimony, both civilian and military.

It ensures not only the health of the whole community but, in more general terms, a psychological, physical and relational well-being, as described in the most modern directives of the World Health Organization.

The international events of the last years have emphasized and amplified these specific functions of the military doctors, not only on the national territory, but also in all those Countries which needed medical and sanitary aid. It is with legitimate pride that we underline that a good part of the Italian military commitment abroad, in the various peace and humanitarian missions, is represented by the effort of the Medical Corps.

Therefore, its history is a long

and prestigious one, connected, as it is, with the political and social history of our Country. Italy has grown and evolved in many social sectors and has deserved international acknowledgements. This is also due to the commitment of the military physicians who, both in war and in the numerous natural disasters which have hit our Country, have done their utmost to relieve and soothe pains and sufferings. They have committed the whole of themselves: complete devotion, physical sacrifice and competence.

THE MEDICAL CORPS IN SERVICE OF THE COUNTRY

The institutional tasks of the Medical Corps, as they have been ultimately defined and characterized, envisage the medical intervention in many important sectors of the Public Admini-

nistration. In some of these, the medical involvement is not directly related to military medicine. In this regard we can mention the forensic medicine activities carried out on behalf of many other Government Administrations, as is the case with the Hospital Commissions called to pass their judgement on service-caused pathologies or fair compensations for civilian personnel. Worth noting also the services of urgent and emergency medicine given to civilians in case of natural disasters.

The increase in the request of medical services occurred in recent years has demanded of the Military Medical Administration a growing amount of financial resources and professional skills. The military doctor is often alone in facing delicate and urgent situations and, besides his competence in military medicine, he must be well informed on every specialized branch and on the most recent resources made

available to military and civilian users.

These cultural and professional demands have participated in motivating military doctors to broaden their horizon and go beyond their specialization.

With the growing information given by the media on the themes of welfare and health, the requirements for an adequate primary prevention and timely diagnoses has sharply increased within the Italian population. Our citizens, both military and civilians, are now more demanding in their request for high-level medical services. Therefore it has become necessary for the Corps to extend the specialization of military doctors to branches which were new to them, such as pediatrics and gynaecology, required by the humanitarian missions and the recent recruitment of women.

At the same time also the technological content of the diagnostic and therapeutic equipment has grown. Thus, a remarkable financial effort has been made in order to meet the requests of the civilian and military users, and this also caused a positive and favourable change in the consideration for the military world.

The military physicians have been capable of giving, without clamour, a very high professional contribution, both in Italy and abroad, accompanied by unanimously acknowledged humanity and sensitivity. In the tents of the earthquake victims, or under the sun of an African or Middle East desert, a large number of military doctors have worked in difficult conditions, placing their skills and science in service of their fellow-men.

THE STANDING FIGHT AGAINST DRUGS

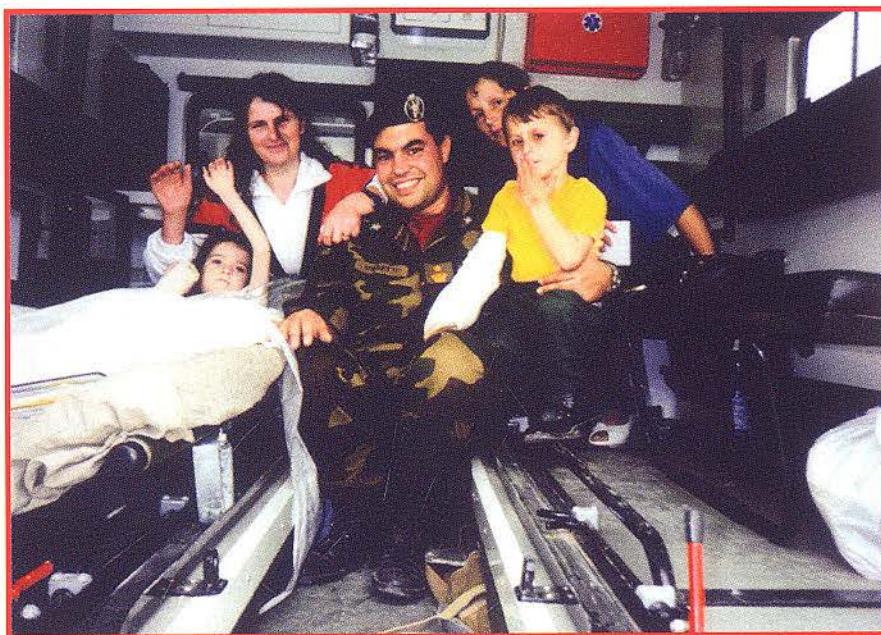
The Medical Corps, being directly in contact with the social

problems of the young, is tackling, with very good results, the issue of prevention and fight against drugs.

In order to do this, the military physicians, working together with personnel from other Ministries interested in social issues, are engaged in promoting health education among the young soldiers.

As a matter of fact, the task of informing and educating has become a very important and

A patient and his family on an ambulance.



irreplaceable moment of primary prevention which provides a remarkable spin-off and a great benefit for the general health-rate of the Italian society. Health information and education aim at making the young feel responsible for the care and hygiene of their bodies as well as for the safeguard of their well-being. This entails a reduction of morbidity besides considerable savings for the State.

Our doctors have been working for many years in close contact with the Ministry of Labour and in particular with the Department of Social Affairs, and

every year receive financial contributions to be employed in the prevention projects for fighting against the diffusion and use of drugs in barracks and other military establishments. In order to carry out these projects, the Defence Administration operates in cooperation with other important Ministries, such as the Ministries of Health, University and Research, Justice, Internal Affairs and, through these activities, gives a substantial contribution to the general health.

The engagement of the military doctors on these social fronts has

resulted in a progressive reduction in the use and diffusion of drugs among the young military, as is witnessed by the yearly reports on drugs which, since 1997, the Ministry of Labour has been submitting to Parliament.

THE IMAGE OF THE MILITARY PHYSICIANS IN ITALY

The activities and tasks described above make the Medical Corps, and the men and women who belong to it, an



A medical officer assisting a Kosovar inside an ambulance.

established social reality. For the young, to be in the vanguard of the social issues involving the Country is a very interesting opportunity.

Owing to the effect of the countless images which, in the last years, have appeared in the papers and on television, the young have started to change their mental attitude towards the military world and, in particular, towards doctors in uniform.

At the same, time also the attitude of the military towards the young has changed in a positive way, and this has produced an increase in the attention of the Defence Administration vis-à-vis the

youth problems.

The military world, through its medical branches, takes an interest in all that occurs in the social environment and, in the selection and recruitment phases, integrates its competences with activities of orientation and preparation to the actual work. The most important task, however, is that of reducing the psychological, emotional and physical impact that the young soldiers may experience in their contact with the military.

In this regard, the medical contribution was that of introducing psychological screenings aimed at singling out the fragile personalities more exposed to the danger of psychological discomfort in dealing with a different life-style. There have been numerous

initiatives and realizations of precious activities of psychological support, concerning servicemen of every rank and level, under the management of the Psychological Advisory Bureaus present within the various Services.

Also, many social initiatives have been started in order to safeguard the well-being of the citizens in uniform: from epidemiological surveys of every kind to the integration of military medical structures with civilian ones, both public and private, for preventing drug use.

In the last years a particular impulse has been given to the activities regarding health education and prevention of infectious diseases, with special regard to anti-HIV measures. The same considerations regard also the study and prevention of all emerging pathologies

THE INTEGRATION BETWEEN CIVIL AND MILITARY HEALTH ORGANIZATIONS

In order to defend and safeguard the health of our citizens, a decisive role is being played by the diagnostic and clinical activities carried out at the time of recruitment. These medical examinations are very important for the young citizens' health. On the medical plane, i.e. from the epidemiological, preventive and social viewpoints, their soundness is unquestioned and irreplaceable. In many cases, this is the first contact between the young recruit and a complete medical check-up. In particular, some pathologies such as, for example, the urogenital ones, are diagnosed and pointed out to the doctors in charge.

The preventive activities continue with further examinations and controls after recruitment and, later on, with the prescribed vaccinations. There have been long discussions

on how to convey these data to the National Health Service. It was often suggested to include them in the magnetic card that the Ministry of Health should deliver to all citizens, which contains the most important medical data. It was often pointed out that these data, gathered during the military life, could be useful also in the civilian medical sphere. Today this can be done with the multiservice card for the military, which will be described later.

The integration of the Medical Corps with the civilian organizations is also represented by the lots of data, diagnoses and therapies accompanying the citizen during his service and after his discharge, to the advantage of the doctors of the National Health Service.

As a matter of fact, the data and information that emerge during a soldier's life can be so particular and detailed that, when transferred to a more general environment, can give epidemiological information very useful for the national health as a whole.

IT IS EASIER WITH THE MULTISERVICE CARD CONTAINING THE MEDICAL DATA

The Military Administration is replacing the old identity documents with a more functional chip-card, which includes the digital signature and all that is necessary for personal identification. In view of the many humanitarian missions abroad, a multiservice card for all Defence personnel has been realized. This document will permit the optimal and timely management of all medical data. It was experimented on the field by the ISAF personnel in Kabul and the positive results have been very useful for perfecting its completeness as regards

acquirable data, practicability and easiness of use.

The multiservice card has the same value of an electronic identification document, is similar to an electronic ID card and offers the possibility of managing more electronic-signature applications and certificates, in order to grant access to restricted areas, personal computers and remote data banks. It may be used to collect equipment and fuel, to

"Netlink System" through which data are introduced in the net according to the international standardization protocol of the medical data). The medical personnel can use palmtops to gain access to the data contained in the card and, through wi-fi systems, connect themselves to the Hospital's servers, so as to facilitate all operations of admission and assistance. In emergency situations, when the wounded soldier cannot speak, the card provides the medical data and all the necessary information for an immediate intervention. Furthermore, it

A paediatric control in Kosovo.



join messes, to buy goods at military structures in operations and gain access to the services through the Data Transmission Network. The card gives also the possibility of knowing the data of the medical logistic system, since it can manage all the information relevant to prescriptions as well as medical and specialist's examinations. The whole system is consistent with the international project for a civilian medical card (the

permits to add more data for a possible subsequent hospital treatment. It was also decided that the multiservice card should be legally valid not only for the Defence organization but for the other Government Administrations as well. Therefore, it can be used both on sight and in its electronic form and, at the same time, it is an identity document and a small information-bank providing the data necessary to ensure the functions of an



Medical examination of a little patient.

emergency card. It is completely interoperable at national (as electronic ID card) and international level (being compatible with the "Netlink" medical data structure), as well as in a joint setting at the Ministry of Defence. The access to non-medical data is possible only after typing in special codes, while the emergency medical data are available to all through the hardware now being readied by the National Health Service.

GENERAL EMERGENCIES AND NATURAL DISASTERS

The Medical Service gives a fundamental contribution to the activities of Civil Defence, since it is a medical structure that can

rapidly reach the site of the event and provide an effective medical and surgical assistance in case of urgent national and international emergencies.

The Service can therefore offer an organizational model capable of giving timely and effective answers, not only to the military users, with a performance similar to that of the National Health Service, but also to the populations hit by natural disasters, as is the case with the frequent earthquakes that afflict the Italian territory and involve entire cities or even regions.

In this regard, a strong impulse has been given to the Military Transfusion Service and its tasks, with the establishment of four Transfusion Centres, whose main duty is to make the Armed Forces completely self-sufficient in this sector. Once this primary requirement is met, the Centres give a significant contribution

also to the civilian organizations. The production of transfusion units and hemo-derivates ensures the functioning of the Medical Corps' surgical activity, both at home and abroad. The stocks are also used in case of disasters, in cooperation with the National Health Service and Civil Defence. For the management of the blood supplies, according to the National Health Board, a flow of information on Transfusion Medicine is now in force and very important services of immuno-hematology have also been activated within the Armed Forces. To offset the chronic shortage of blood in our Country, the Medical Corps has made an agreement with AVIS, the national association of voluntary blood donors. The interest about this special issue has also been aroused by means of a joint campaign and use of common AVIS-Armed Forces posters, which has obtained a fair increase in voluntary donations by both servicemen and civilians.

The capability and competence of dealing not only with single patients, but with entire populations in difficulty or in medical emergency situations, is a distinctive quality of the military medical Organization.

THE CITIZEN'S MEDICAL EDUCATION

Health protection, to which we have often referred, is implemented with the activities of primary prevention, through the programmes of health education set up for both conscripts and volunteers. Medical Officers, particularly trained and prepared for this task, regularly inform all military personnel on very complex social subjects, such as drug addition, psychological malaise, sexually transmitted diseases and so on. During the last years, many

conferences and seminars have been held on these themes. At the moment of the discovery of HIV, the AIDS virus – just to mention a specific case – a widespread informative and preventive campaign was started, together with the study of the correlated pathologies. Many military doctors were asked to give information and deliver lectures, also outside the military circle. Every year, different types of information material on subjects of social interest, such as drugs or AIDS, are prepared and distributed, mainly in the form of booklets, which can be handed out also to the young visitors of military installations. On the same subjects of social interest, materials of different types (slides, videotapes) have been used for lectures and seminars.

Thus, the whole military personnel has been awakened to the general medical problems afflicting our Country, to which young people are the most exposed, and therefore more at risk. Also in this case the

cooperation with the civilian world is remarkable. The aim of the sensitising activity is not only that of providing information but also that of giving answers and concrete indications wherever cases of infectious diseases can be foreseen, or which involve the use of drugs and situations of psychological discomfort that could justify the suspicion of possible self-destructive behaviour.

CONCLUSIONS

The closeness of the Medical Service to our whole society is the cause of legitimate pride and satisfaction for doctors and medical operators in general. Satisfaction, for the reason that all that military physicians have been able to achieve expresses competence, humanity and spiritual wealth. Pride, for the precious work carried out, which is continuously requested and repaid by the gratitude of our people and of many other

peoples of different languages and culture. Pride, also for the way hope has been made to shine in so many hearts, for the capability of giving love and dignity to those who had lost them, in war and in peace, after an earthquake or along the lonely desert paths, on the brink of the precipice of depression or under the effect of a drug, day and night, during the hours of duty and beyond, with altruism and serenity, in every moment. The military doctor is a source of help, peace, relief and comfort. Because passion, love and great respect are needed to be able to put aside one's own problems in order to solve those afflicting others.

□

**Lieutenant General, MD,
Director General,
Medical Corps*

*Field hospitals can provide excellent
paediatric services.*



THE PERMANENT EVOLUTION OF THE INFORMATION SYSTEMS

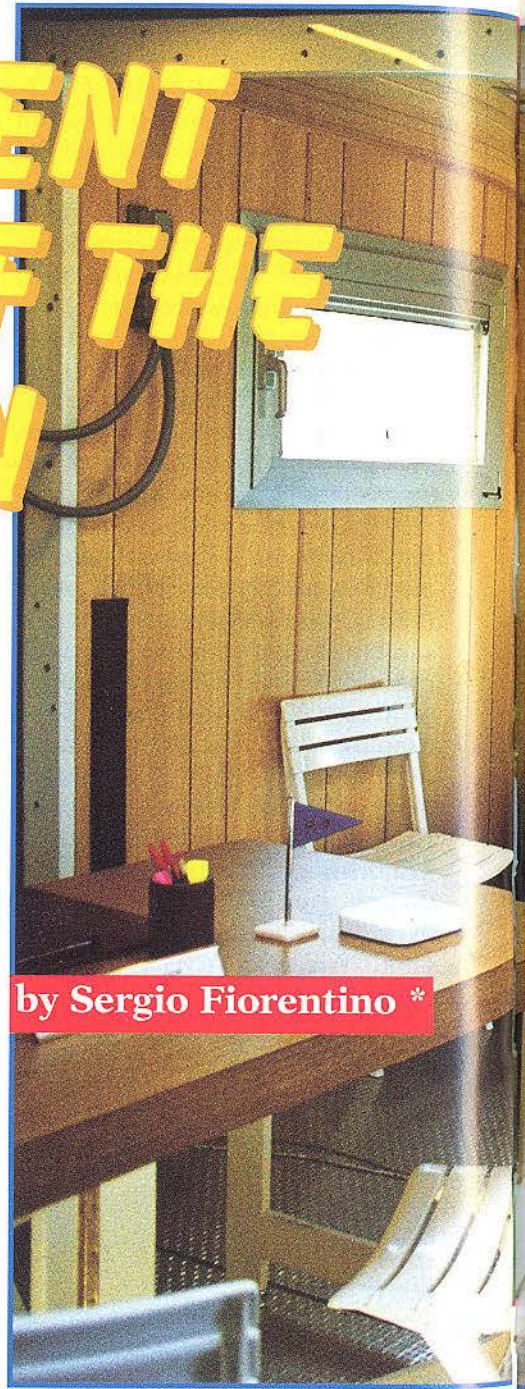
Public and private organizations are making deep changes in order to improve the efficiency of their structures

Computer science is asserting itself as one of the main frontiers of the new millennium, capable of incrementing the potential and efficiency of organizations, companies and institutions. The higher and higher performance of the data-processing systems encourage their employment in every sector of activity, and the best organizations are readily adopting the computerization suitable to their reality. One of the main operational references are the Information Centres, which can avail themselves of the most modern computer technologies. In any efficient structure there are two evermore outstanding figures: the technological manager and the data-bank administrator. This confirms the farsightedness of those who, for quite a time, have been wisely investing in human resources.

by Sergio Fiorentino *

As is already well known, the reasons for the increase in the data-processing activities can be found in the new awareness that the top management of the various organizations have vis-à-vis the enormous potential of computerization.

In general, computerization started to evolve with the automation of repetitive activities, such as administrative





The top managers of the various organizations, for costs and efficiency reasons began to use these analyses to support their decisions. This produced a remarkable rise in demands for computer systems, thus calling a greater attention on information science as a whole.

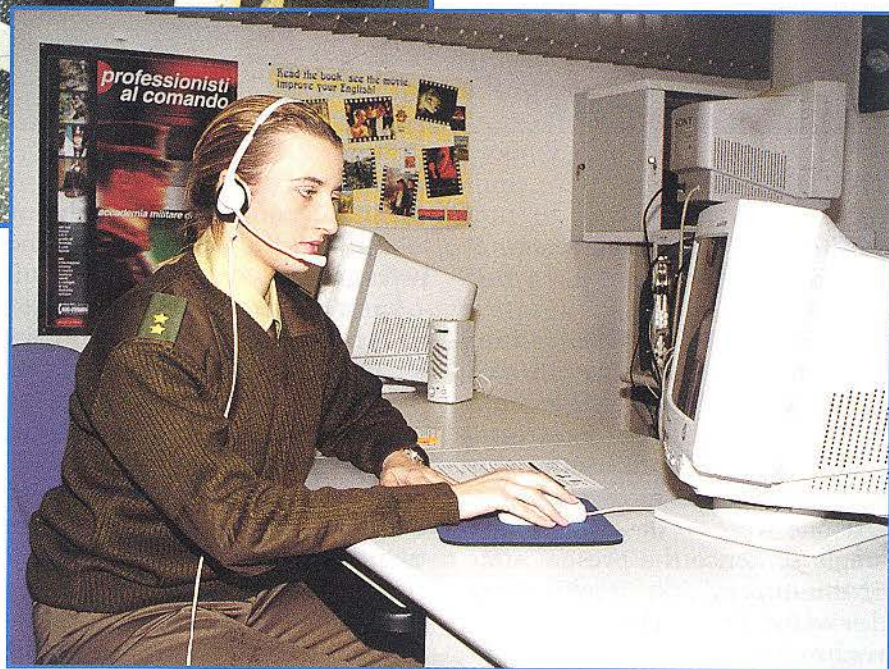
At present, the computer systems' potential is considered by operators an essential factor of production, equal to investments and labour. Hence the managers' increased attention to the development of these systems, because the productivity of the whole organization depends also on the timely acquisition of updated information on the real trend of the various activities.

In view of this, the implementation of a policy of systems development has become one of the most important functions for the managers of large organizations. As a consequence, those in charge of the structures tasked with developing information systems (IS) have been raised to a higher functional level and have assumed the responsibility for the whole data-processing organization.

sectors' management and materials handling.

Later on, the data produced were used for a number of statistical investigations, which permitted significant analyses of the activities carried out.

With the widespread use of computer systems, the number of sectors interested in their analyses has grown to the point that now they cover every sector of activity.



This is proved by a survey made at some large companies, which showed that the level of the managers of the Information Systems structures had been raised from the non-executive rank of Office Manager to that of Assistant Director. This change is not attributable to a terminological problem but to a real change in the activity of these figures. In fact, Assistant Directors define the medium- long-term policy of their sector, while Office Managers are only responsible for the development and management of the various sectors of the company, according to the directions given by the former.

tion could be: "Technologically-produced semi-orderly chaos".

The balance point between "chaos" and "semi-order" varies from one organization to another, according to the degree of utilization of the new technologies: Nevertheless, most structures in charge of the Information Systems suffer from this trouble, even if in different proportions. For instance, it is difficult to find a computational organization which of late has not been compelled to transform itself one way or another, in order to be up to the new possibilities offered by the market. In the most important

the PC sector is relatively stable and controllable. The first generation of IS managers had to deal only with data-processing on large computers. Today the same persons must manage several systems, very diverse as regards processing capability (large, medium, small) and technology employed.

At the moment, the answer given to these growing pressures from the various organizations is represented by the institution of the so-called Information Centres (IC). The first structure of this kind was organized by an important US company (IBM) in the early 80s, and envisaged the establishment of an organization concerned only with the new technologies, mostly PCs, in order to meet the requirements of the final users at the right time, and applying the slogan "If you don't know where to turn to solve your problems, call us". An increasing number of organizations, albeit in different forms, have been adjusting their structures precisely in that sense.



THE INFINITE OPPORTUNITIES OFFERED BY MODERN TECHNOLOGY

Together with the management's increased attention and expectations, there has been a boost in the operational possibilities offered by the new technology.

If one were to describe with a single sentence the present state of the information organizations deriving from the emerging technologies, a possible defi-

industries, the expenditure for personal computers – a sector where, until a few years ago the investments were practically null – has now reached almost 3.8% of the budget. Even more amazing is the software market, which is currently estimated at one billion € a year, with an annual growth of approx. 100%.

Also office automation and data-transmission technology are two particularly active areas in the development of the "semi-orderly chaos" mentioned above.

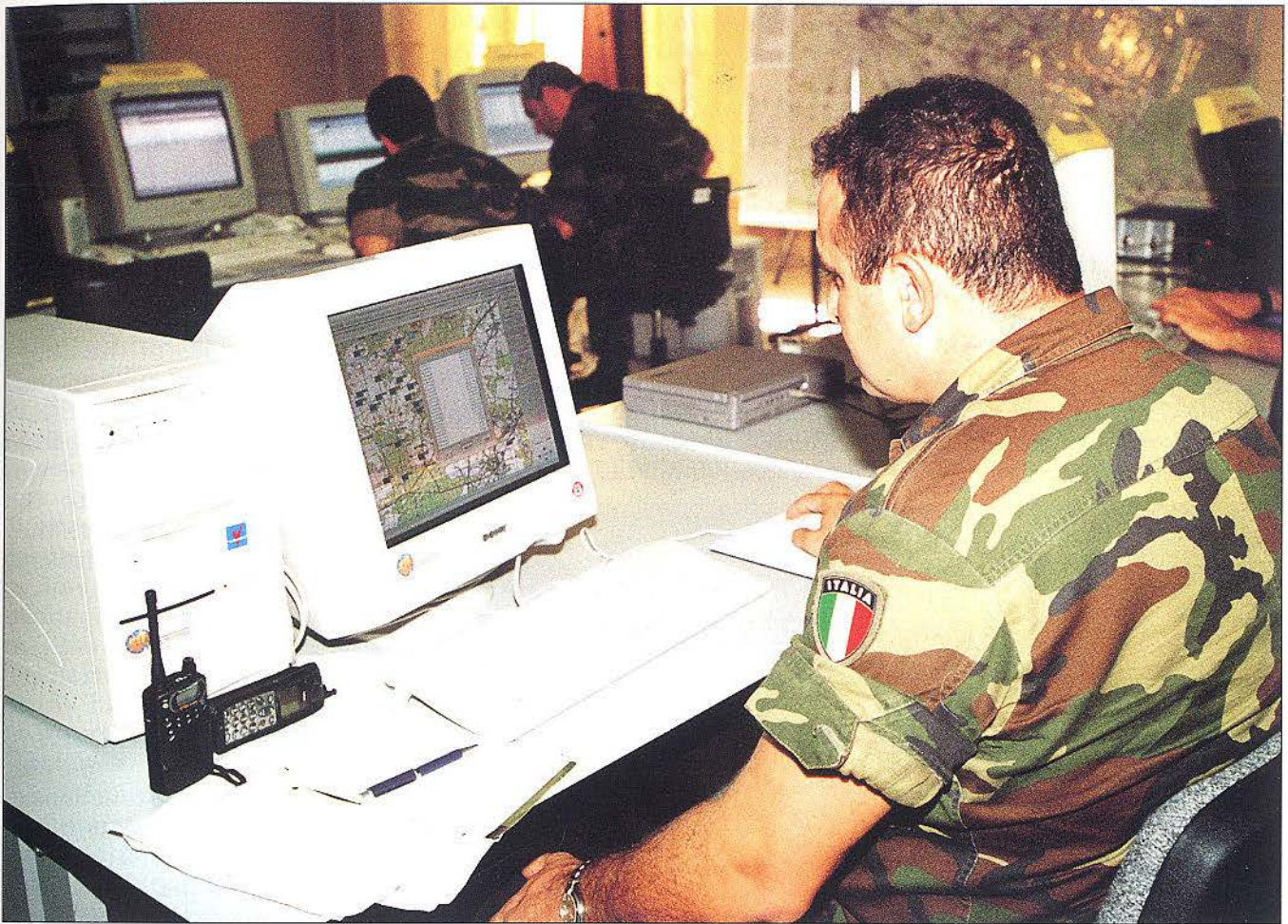
Compared to these two areas,

THE LATEST STRUCTURAL CHANGES

At this point, one could ask if the solutions adopted in order to adjust to the new situation are appropriate and, if the answer is "no", what else can be done.

Rising the structures in charge of IS to a higher level can by itself attract more attention to this sector and bring about some changes.

Nevertheless, as for the real effects on the efficiency of the system, very little is to be expected of this sole variation. On the contrary, the increase of the management's anticipations will probably cause a subsequent disappointment for not having attained them. The most immediate consequence of rising the SI structure's top to a higher level – considering a typical



pyramid-shaped structure, with the Office Chief at the summit, the manager in the middle and the executives at the basis – is the separation of the last two levels from the first.

In view of this, the Chief of the structure deals with the most important problems (policies, strategies, etc.), while the other two levels must tackle the tasks and responsibilities deriving from the new environmental situation. Clearly, in his new role, the Chief is very busy and can devote very little time, or no time at all, to his guiding function which, on the contrary, the other two levels continue to perform. The fact that the IS Chief is more of a manager than a technician is a real step forward, but nevertheless the improvement expected of his new position within the company's organization is very limited, owing to

his coming apart from the other levels. Furthermore, one can foresee that in the long-term a manager of the computer systems of the past, by becoming a manager of the future systems, will increasingly move away from the managerial roles. While he was used to decide the employment of simple computers, now he will have to deal with systems that support his decisions: therefore he will tend to be less responsible for the employment of advanced technologies and more oriented towards the global model of the structure and the data necessary for its management on order to link the IS requirements to the purposes, objectives and strategies of the organization. In a word, he will move towards information engineering.

The second change in the information structures was the

introduction of the abovesaid Information Centre (IC) concept. Actually, this Centre is the response of some structures to the greater opportunities offered by the continuous scientific discoveries. In particular, the IC operates in the field of the new technologies which optimize the productivity of the final users. In short, its task should have been that of "providing the users' community with the information and assistance on electronic systems so as to obtain a production increase"

The basic intention was to augment the users' autonomy in their access to the data, thus reducing their needs for assistance from the information structure.

But the ICs have two weak points. The first point is that this autonomous body is added to the present IS structures as they are

now, without changing them; therefore neither is there a real advantage in all sectors of the new technologies nor a better support is provided to the IC's new strategic role.

The presence on the market of new technologies widens the range of action of the IS structures, and this leads us to the second weak point of the Information Centre: the new technologies are introduced in the system without a formal definition of responsibilities within the structure. An or-

productive for the organization.

Finally, the IC activities are focused at present only on the use of the new technologies and are not backed by a general utilization policy. The operational personnel have actually widened their responsibilities as regards the new technologies employed by the structure, but the organization has not made the corresponding corrections at its higher levels.

This is, by itself, an aspect which could cause rather serious problems within the structures in

this sector would make his qualification insufficient. When all this coincides with the separation caused by the elevation of the organizational level, the effect on the IS structure is such that the connections among the various parts become too weak and have an inadequate reactivity to all the internal and external demands.

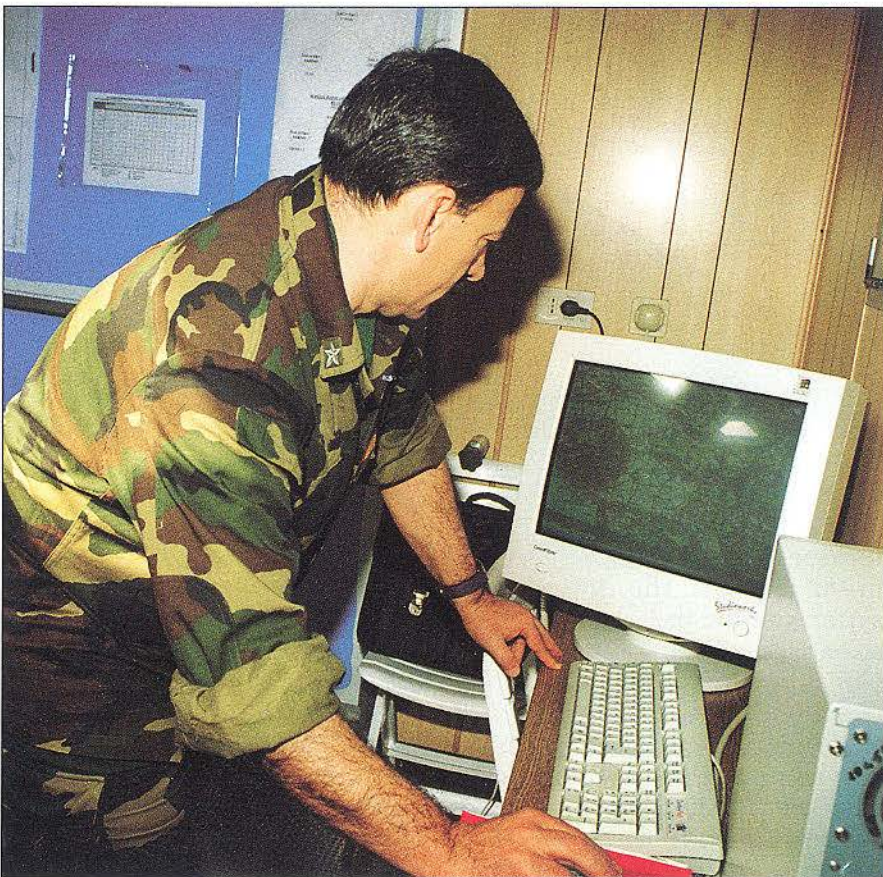
On the grounds of the above considerations, we can conclude that the changes made in the IS structures, even if springing from the best intentions, are not sufficient to respond to the abovesaid pressures since they solve the existing difficulties only partially and, moreover, produce more problems.

SPECIFIC SOLUTIONS TO DIFFERENT REALITIES

The scrutiny of the functions of the IS top managements of the past shows that they are responsible for the activities of research and study on a single system, which was normally set at central level, or on a certain number of similar systems distributed over several sites.

Thus they did not have to deal with a lot of systems – as happens today – each of them characterized by different technologies, nor did they have to face a continuous scientific evolution.

Today, the Head of an IS structure must be able to handle the top management's policy problems, facing, at the same time, the continuous and rapid evolution of technologies. Many of these are very special and meet exactly the requirements of the most diverse sectors of the firm. Actually the swift succession of these transitions has caused the loss of an ancient figure: "the technological expert". We have lost sight of the fact that, while technology is changing, a management remains a



ganization may have hundreds of PCs and not a specific component of the organizational structure officially responsible for them. Software products (SW) are installed, training is carried out, maintenance is provided, but nobody is accountable for ascertaining if what has been introduced is consistent with the whole system and if the cost of the operation is

charge of the development of data-processing systems.

The above reflections are even more important if one considers that normally the Office Chief of an IS structure is not qualified for managing this new technology. But even if he had been an expert at the moment of the system's appearance on the market, surely the many and considerable changes occurred in

management. Still, there has to be someone who has the real technical and specific knowledge in the various technological sectors!

Technology does not change this aspect of management. The function of technological expert, which was once entrusted to the Office Chief of the computer systems, today is no more performed by the Head of the Information Systems: he is too high up, and the technological basis is too ample. Besides, this is not a task that can be carried out by a single individual. Necessarily, there must be a number of persons, because the technologies are different, much wider and more complex than they were in the past.

Unfortunately, those in charge of the IS cannot perform these tasks, and nobody else does it.

As regards the possible solutions, one should make some preliminary statements: usually when changes in the organizational structures are decided, they normally concern the institution of a new sector or a new post related to a particular activity within the staff. Another method consists in assigning a new role or a new sector of responsibility to the preexisting structure.

It is precisely this latter method which, owing to habits originated from routine activities and from the organizations' inertia, most frequently led to entrust IS managerial responsibility to persons not really capable of handling them.

Through the scrutiny of the organizations charged with developing information systems, one can see that most of them have remained unchanged all along this period of transformations. At present, most IS structures are divided in two segments: "Resource Management" and "Application Development". In support of these two main components,

there can be some additional ones, such as the ICs. The increased demand for centralized and decentralized data-processing, office automation, data-transmission (DT) nets, are at present met by the same structures designed 30 years ago for managing systems based only on centralized computerization and for solving repetitive/administrative problems. A harmonic development of the structures in charge of processing systems into structures dealing with information systems

establishing an intermediate level of technological management which permits to maintain a connection between the top of the organization and its basis. The creation of the figure of Data-Bank Administrator allows the IS manager to meet the information requirements of the whole enterprise (information engineering).

Finally, the presence of technological managers and relevant support personnel clarifies subordinations and responsibilities, ensuring at the



should have envisaged also the conversion of the functions at all levels (top, managerial and executive).

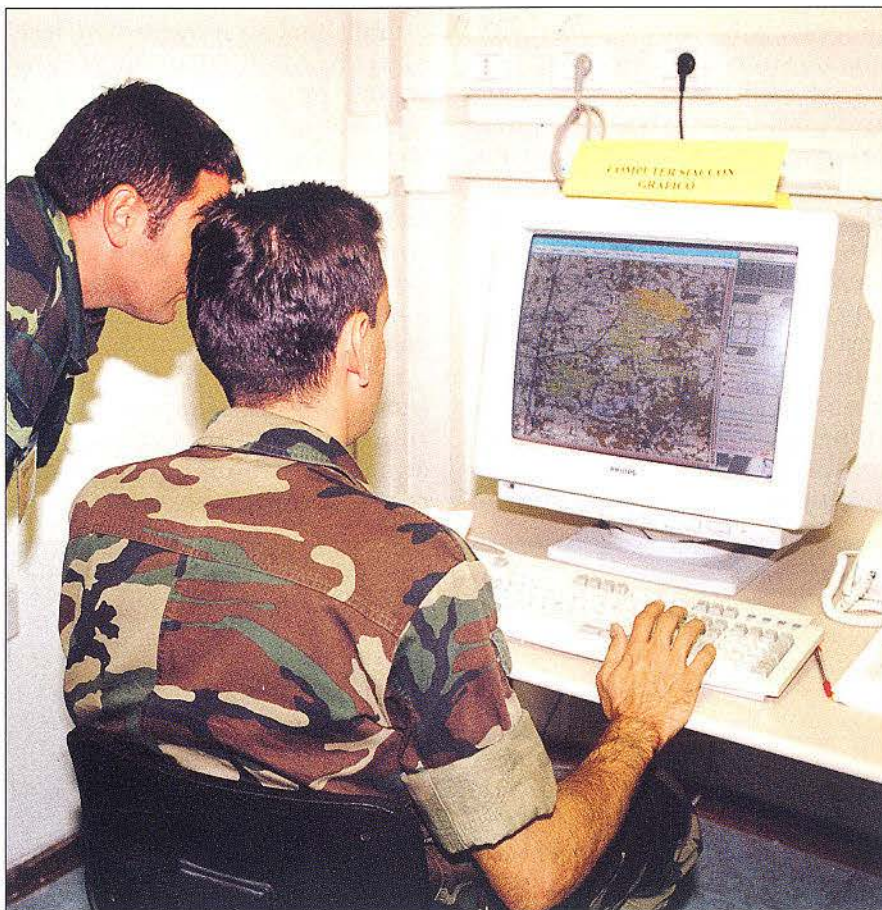
THE SYSTEM MANAGERS

This new figure loses the technical responsibility of the IS manager and assumes a strategic role. This is obtained by

same time a fair balance between the activities of control and management within the information system.

THE TECHNOLOGICAL MANAGERS

The disappearance of the single technological manager is a very significant aspect and could be



crucial for the future success of the computerized organization in its new and ampler role.

All the new managers have similar responsibilities, but in different areas, as used to be the case with the managers of data-processing. The institution of these managers should solve the problems deriving from the indiscriminate introduction of new technologies that have no sector officially responsible for them.

These critical aspects should be successfully taken care of by the new structures, since the new managers will fill the void left by the previous Chief, who moved up to the top of the firm. Each manager becomes officially accountable for his division.

The internal organization of the four sectors can vary, but in each of them there will have to be an application-oriented structure and a structure for running the

systems used in the specific sector.

The manager of the office automation systems will head the areas where there are more problems due to PCs and office automation systems. The work load of this area will probably be considerable, since an increase of about 30% is foreseen for these systems.

The communications sector will probably be a novelty for many organizations. It will downsize the increasingly complex aspects of the new technologies which permit to swap information among the systems. Furthermore, the concentration of responsibility for the development of all transmission systems, formerly subdivided among several sectors, will avoid their wild and uncoordinated diffusion.

The whole thing is even more crucial where these technologies have a direct impact on the

information systems.

THE ADMINISTRATORS OF THE NEW DATA BANKS

Also this field is new for many firms. This function, directly subordinate to the top management of the structures, is an investment for the future. In fact, the pressure of the organization leaders is going to be increasingly focused on the necessity to acquire information in the form more appropriate to support their decision.

This new function allows the former IS Office Chief to avail himself of a technical adviser in the field of information flows, during his advance towards the position of manager of the organization's information systems. Moreover it is the instrument through which the IS structure can rationalize the availability of information within the system, thus achieving the capability of situation-data management outlined above.

FOR A BETTER DIRECT SUPPORT OF THE TOP MANAGEMENT

The functions of the direct support staff consist in defining the development, acquisition and coding of the productive and methodological standards.

Owing to the independent and rapidly developing technologies, it becomes more and more important that these functions be coordinated and carried out by the top.

The meaning of the development policy is understood as identification of the evolutionary lines and not as real planning activity, which is a responsibility of the technological manager.

The centralization of the procurement sector permits to opportunely advise the tech-

nological managers on the purchase of new systems. This is an essential function, because the wide range of technologies now available on the market requires a continuous screening before any acquisition. This involves the compatibility with the existing hardware and the assessment of the economies of scale that can be achieved.

The Information Centre's goal is to become a reference point for the whole company for solving the various problems arising in the field of computerization ("if you don't know whom to call, call us").

The IC, by reporting directly to the IS manager, guarantees a balance between the technological managers and the users' community. With the introduction of this function among the other staff tasks, the IS structures acquire a new element representing the firm's real world, which otherwise

would tend to develop in a sterile and autonomous manner vis-à-vis the rest of the IS organization. It could be necessary to redistribute some tasks, which in the past were typical of the Information Centres, to the respective technological managers.

CONCLUSIONS

The rise of the top's functional level and the establishment of Information Centres represented effective starting points, necessary for meeting the requirements for increased information within the organizations and for new technologies.

However, these are only partial measures, taken only to ease the problems deriving from such requirements. Further actions are necessary in order not to frustrate the expectations of the top managers and to optimize the

potential of the new technologies for the purpose of improving the productive capabilities of the organization. The recent proposals should be interpreted as a first step towards a further adjustment of the IS instrument to this ever evolving environment. The proposed solution fills the void existing between the IS manager and his organization and, at the same time, takes into account the broader responsibilities deriving from the new technologies.

Reorganization is rarely a panacea for all problems, and the solution proposed here should not be considered in that perspective. Rather, it permits the IS organization to recover the reference-picture necessary for handling the new technologies and, furthermore, it allows the IS manager to take part in the high-level decision-making process.

The new and constantly changing technologies must be employed appropriately in order to meet the specific requirements of the single user and of the whole organizational structures.

As a last remark, we can emphasize again the fact that many organizations are now proceeding to a new phase called "information-source management". The IS manager is the focal point of this new task, and in the future we can expect to see him as the new manager of the firm's information. This change has already taken place in many large organizations, since the need for this new function is widely acknowledged. Names vary, but everybody agrees on the direct subordination of this function to the top management of the company. In such a situation, the role of the IS manager grows again significantly, to the extent of including the entire information area and not only the systems it uses.

□

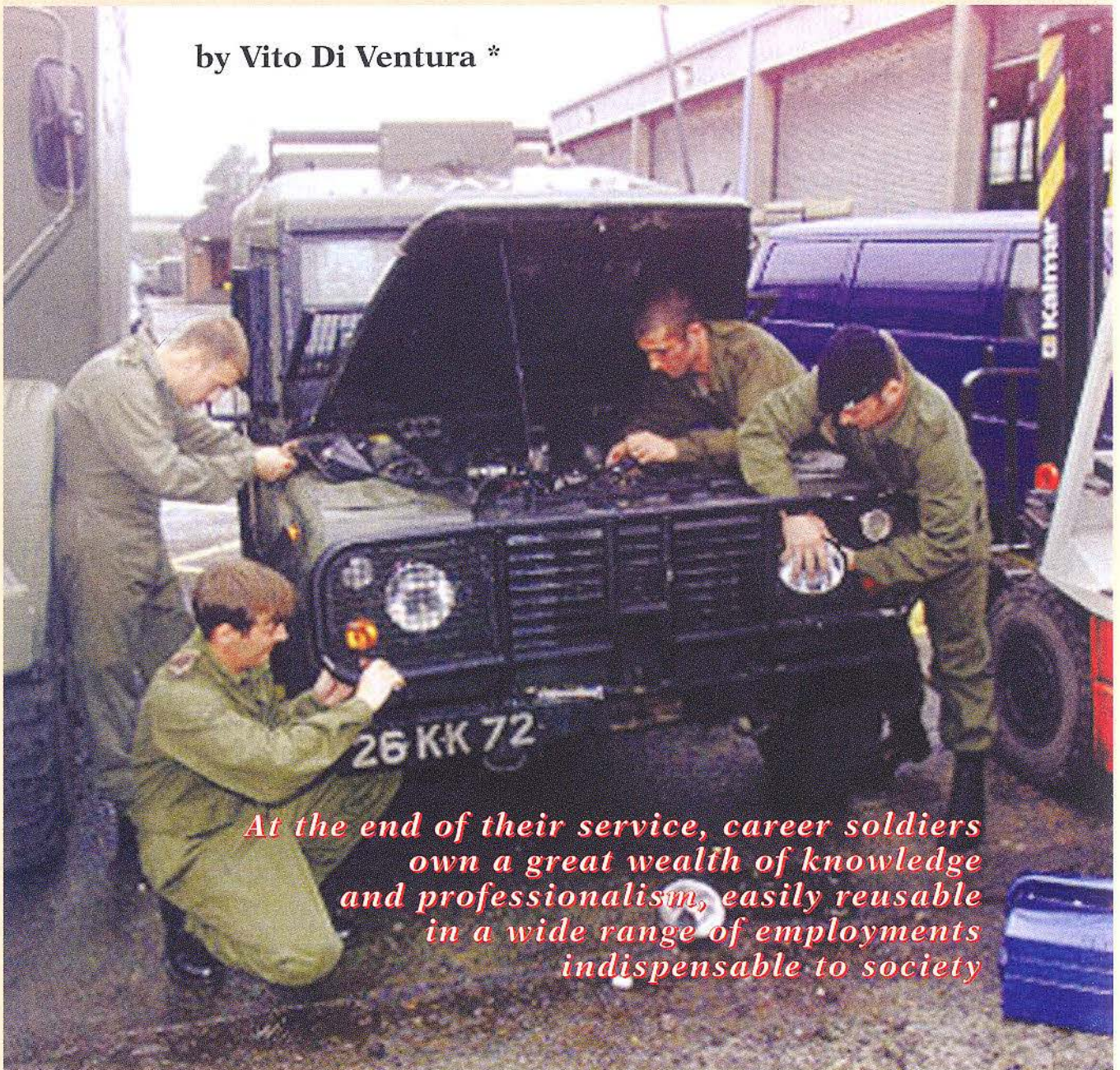
**Brigadier General*



Here is how the United Kingdom brilliantly solved the problem of using to full advantage the human resources of those who leave the Armed Forces

WORK STARTS AGAIN AFTER SERVICE

by Vito Di Ventura *



At the end of their service, career soldiers own a great wealth of knowledge and professionalism, easily reusable in a wide range of employments indispensable to society

For a regular soldier , the end of active service can be a very particular moment: after devoting his best years to the Service, he is compelled to change radically the deep-rooted rhythm of his life. Furthermore he is still at the height of his forces, has professional knowledge of the highest level and a long life-expectancy. Today, many Countries are endeavouring to use this immense wealth of professionalism and experience through a wise action of reemployment in productive activities, with unquestionable social advantages. The brilliant and innovative British solutions are a clear proof of it.

At the moment when the Italian Armed Forces' system is evolving into a fully professional one, it is interesting to see how the British military, who have a long experience in this sector, tackle one of the most delicate and important issues: the reemployment of the discharged servicemen in civilian life. This, in fact, is the "key" that could attract the many young people who, although inclined to military life, do not consider going in for that "career", but rather wish to live that experience as an interlude – interesting but limited in time – made even more inviting and less binding by the awareness that their subsequent return to society's productive life is ensured by a sound professional qualification, easily absorbed by the labour market. This would also improve mobility and generation turnovers, which are the nourishment, strength and vigour of an ever young Army, without having to resort to laws or other special measures

favouring only the exit of personnel close to retirement, in exchange for economic concessions. Laws that benefit some but disappoint others. The instrument of reemployment would be a catalyst for those who have lost their initial enthusiasm or do not have any further career expectations and, rather than dragging along listlessly till the age of retirement, would willingly return to the civilian context, knowing that they can be reintegrated within the labour world and therefore be able to continue to support their families.

But the reemployment programme is also for those about to leave the Armed Forces having reached their retirement age. As a matter of fact, it is not unusual for persons who were particularly active during their military life to become completely idle and depressed when they retire, because they do not find a useful place in society, although they still have their intellectual and physical energy, since there is no correspondence

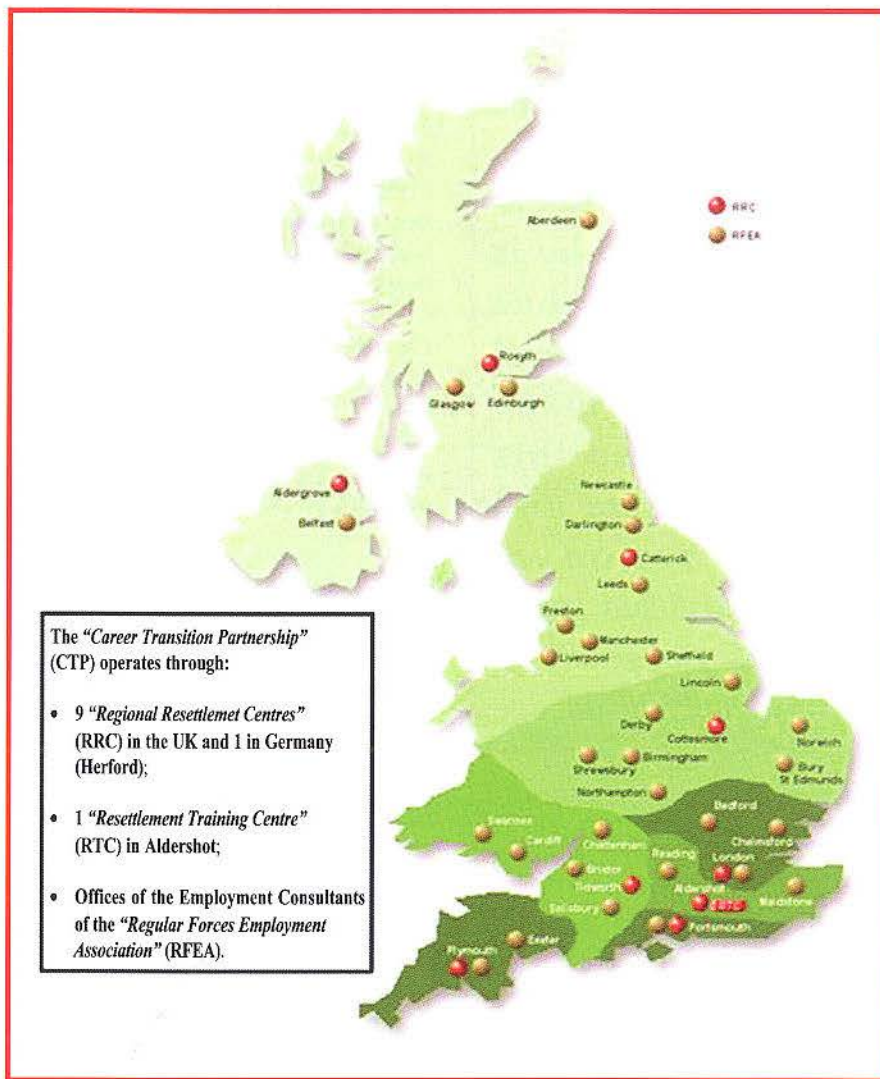
between what they have been doing for years and the new situation. After all, soldier...or General, sooner or later, every military man must return to civilian life! And that day must not be lived in a "traumatic" way, but rather as a natural passage to new motivations. The dynamism of the labour world is a characteristic of the modern world and the Armed Forces, which have always been on the forefront of renewal, cannot avoid accepting this new challenge.

THE BRITISH WAY

On leaving service, either for having reached the age of retirement or before, the British military (Officers, NCOs and volunteers) can avail themselves of an ample support structure, which helps them to find a new employment in civilian life.

The resettlement's aim is not only that of giving the individual a specific professional qualification suitable for starting a new working life but, above all, it allows every military man to serenely face the passage from military to civilian life and to enter the social fabric without anxiety. It is a very important change of mentality, it means reasoning in terms of "I" instead of "we". One should consider that a military person who, for years, has been living within an organization where he was accustomed to reason in terms of collectivity, of working groups, where the esprit de corps and the sense of belonging prevail over the individual, on leaving active service finds himself facing a world, the "real world" as the common jargon has it, which although brushed against in everyday life was never really experienced in its fullness.

This is particularly true for the British military, who usually live in barracks or military com-



process as an activity that is an integral part of the career and an appropriate period of time and adequate funds should be guaranteed to the military who leave active service so as to obtain a resettlement according to their qualifications and entitlements.

If the support offered by the resettlement programme is efficient and effective, i.e. strengthened by the convinced action of the chain of command, it helps to mitigate the fear connected with post-service employment and therefore to discourage an early exit, for fear of becoming "too old" to start a new career.

The resettlement is regarded also as a means of improving the recruitment because, by ensuring a future, induces the young to go in for the military career with the certainty of obtaining the maximum benefit from their service. Therefore a strong and adequate system of reintegration becomes a fundamental pillar of the personnel's welfare, a strategic instrument of the quality of life. Every member of the Armed Forces is allowed to serve in tranquillity and security.

pounds, where one can find everything (cinema, gyms, supermarkets, post office) and for whom the Administration takes care of all the additional problems. Suffice it to think that the upkeep of the housing facilities is entrusted to a civilian firm which, as soon as a malfunction is reported, promptly and automatically provides to send the staff to repair it. Everything is charged to the Administration.

In the real world, everyone, individually, is called to "battle" for the everyday survival, every one counting on his specific talents and abilities.

Therefore the resettlement assumes a very important social function, both vis-à-vis society, by giving back ready and qualified

citizens, and for the individual himself, who does not see that the experience accumulated along the years of military profession is completely lost. Through retraining, each individual is enabled to fulfil his expectations in a particular moment of his life, such as discharge (or retirement) is, and is not made to feel like "a fish out of water".

The resettlement, moreover, is an additional value for the Armed Forces, for it acts as an incentive for remaining in service, since it is seen as the final link of a personal learning and development process which has lasted the whole length of military service. In fact, the chain of command should consider the resettlement

In view of this, it should be emphasized that the professional training along the entire length of the career concurs in the recruitment and is oriented towards the reintegration in civilian life. The present British regulations which govern the progression of the career in accordance with to the duration of the service are aimed at supplying a qualified professional knowledge, not only in "military" terms but also employable in a civilian job, if one decides to interrupt his military experience. The acknowledgement of the studies made, the twinning with prestigious universities and institutes, the acquisition of "credits" of study, the participation in school and university expenses, are only a

SOME EXAMPLES OF COURSES HELD AT THE ALDERSHOT CENTRE

Denomination	Duration	No. of Attendees
Technical Courses		
Computer Repairer	4 wks	10
Household appliances repairer (kitchen)	3 wks theory + 1 wk practice	12
Satellite antennae repairer	2 wks	12
Cable TV technician	2 wks	12
Installer, electric household appliances	2 wks	No limit
Auto mechanic: electronic parts and motor systems management	2 wks + 1 wk practice	10
And others...		
Management and Public Service		
Adm management Institute (certificate)	2 wks	18
Adm management Institute (diploma)	4 wks	18
Service Administrator	5 wks	22
Safety and health on the job	3 wks	18
Log and transport Institute	3 wks	18
Personal files certificate	4 wks	18
Course for potential Police Officer	2 wks	18
And others...		
Computer applications		
European Computer Driving Licence (ECDL)	2 wks	10
Specialist in Microsoft "Office"	2 wks	10
Basic course on computer	4 days	10
Bookkeeping, small commercial activities	1 wk	16
Marketing and sales, small commercial activities	1 wk	16
And others...		

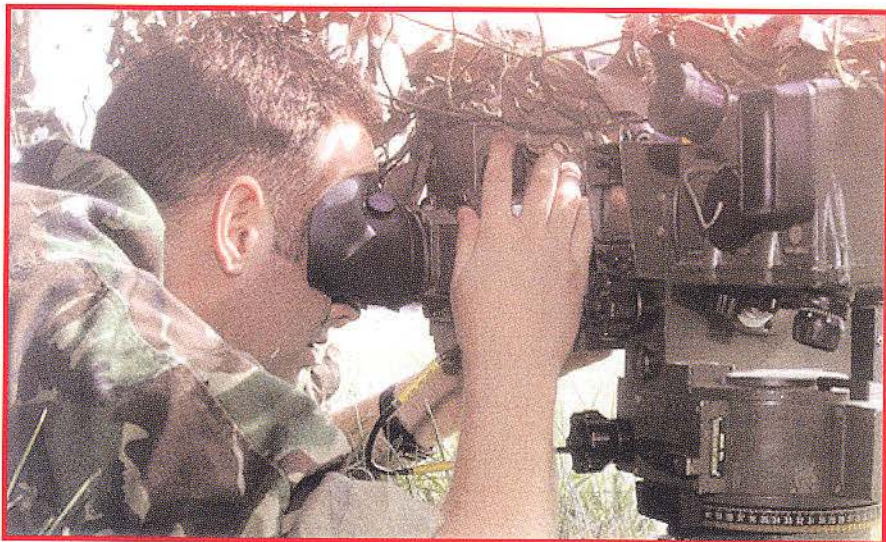
few examples of the ample personnel "policy".

THE RESETTLEMENT ORGANIZATION

The British Army tackled the problem of resettlement already at the end of the First World War, precisely in 1918, with the constitution of the Vocational Training Centre at Aldershot, which had the aim of teaching discharged soldiers a trade (plumber, electrician, etc.) that they could use in the civilian world, being conscious that the "military trade" finds no suitable place in it.

Since 1963, with the return to volunteer recruitment, the

British troops stand out for the high level of their specialization and professionalism.



process of reintegration has been developed by improving the quantity and quality of the support offered, up to the point of reaching the present configuration and name: Career Transition Partnership. The CTP, founded in October 1998 within the Strategic Defence Review (a fundamental document for the renewal of the British Forces) assembles the Ministry of

Defence (MOD), the Coutts Consulting Group, the Regular Forces' Employment Association (RFEA) and the Officers' Association.

The CTP is a private agency, within the Private Partnership Programme (PPP), which has been entrusted with the management of the entire resettlement process, on the basis of the directives issued by the Director for Resettlement (Dresettlement).

Dresettlement is the top institute concerned with the harmonization of the resettlement policy of the three Services, worked out together with the Service Directorates of Education (SDE) of the Armed Forces and included in a special handbook (JSP 524-The Tri-Service Resettlement Manual). The governing body is the Resettlement Working Group (RWG), made up of the representatives of each Service

who, in four-monthly meetings, perform functions of interface, ensure that the policy is updated and applied and that the various members of the organization act in an eurythmic way.

The primary purpose of Dresettlement is that of assisting the military person who decides to leave active service, making the transition as gradual and successful as possible. Moreover,

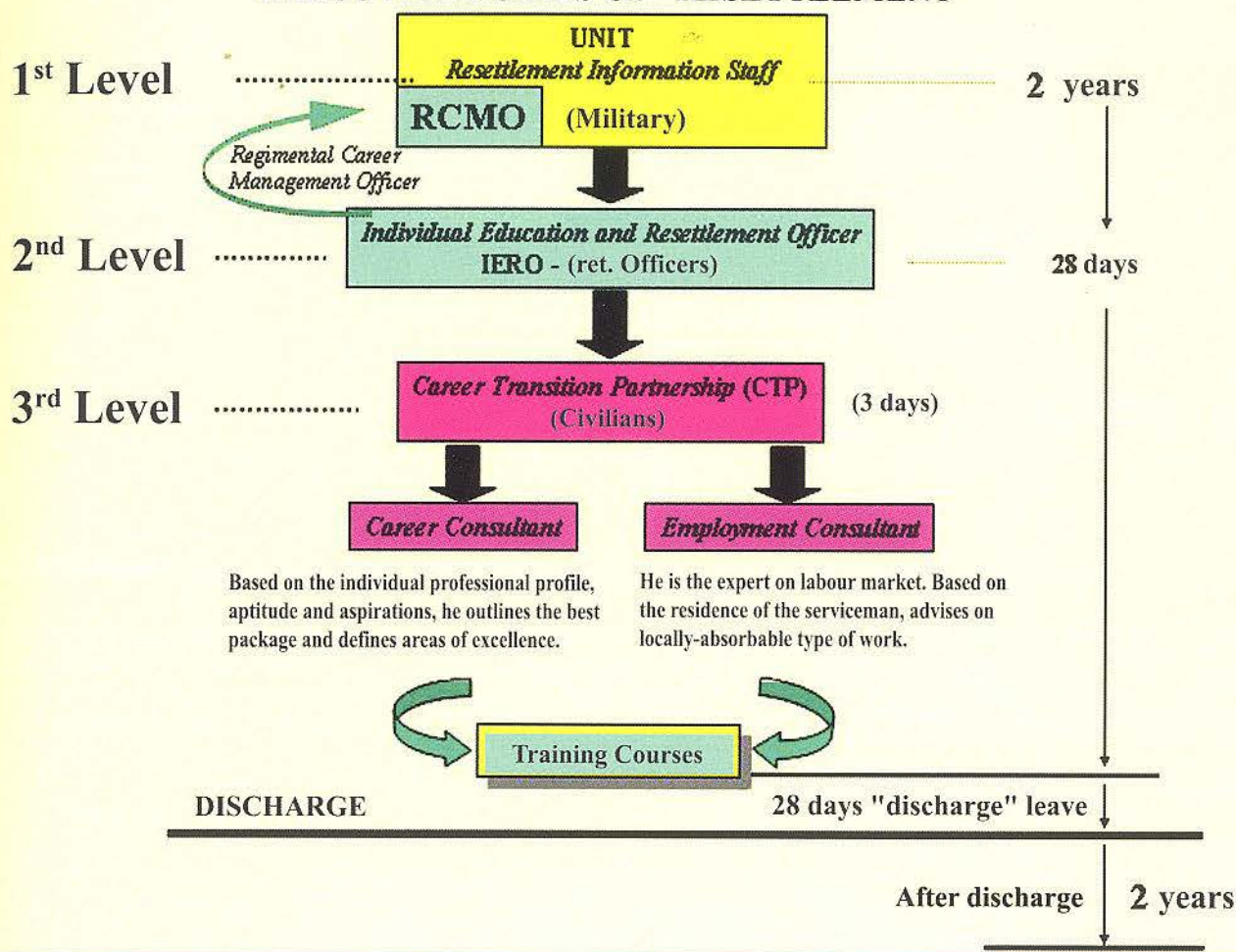
he is responsible for the management and functioning of the contract with the Career Transition Partnership, by making sure that the product offered by the latter conforms with the policy and financial resources allocated, i.e. that the best cost/effective service is provided.

The executive structure is based on three fundamental levels:

1st level, an individual and Unit Commander's responsibility. In every Regiment (or equivalent) of the three Services there is, even if with different denominations, a special Office, the Resettlement Information Centre (RIS), where an Officer assigned to the resettlement (Unit Resettlement Officer - URO), and his assistant (Unit Resettlement Clerk - URC), operate on behalf of the Commander. The support offered to the military consists mainly in providing useful information and administrative assistance. When a serviceman renders official his decision to leave the service, his name is entered in the resettlement registry.

2nd level: within 28 days since his insertion in the registry, the serviceman is sent to the Army Educational Centre (AEC), where he has an interview with the Individual Education and Resettlement Officer (IERO). Through this personal interview, which covers every aspect of the soldier's future life, this Officer counsels and helps the serviceman to orient himself in his choices and to overcome the fears and anxieties of reintegration in civilian life. The IERO is a graduated Officer, usually retired and coming from the Army Educational Office, therefore specialized precisely in the management of personnel. First of all he tries to find out the basic reasons that induce the serviceman to leave the Army, if he does it before reaching the time of retirement, and what are

EXECUTIVE BODIES OF "RESETTLEMENT"



his expectations once discharged. If the reason is dissatisfaction, both because he finds that his task is no more stimulating for him or because of the working environment (relations with his superiors or colleagues), quite often the man is reassigned to another unit or specialization, or even to another Service. This is because of the need to keep in service as much personnel as possible. Because of this function, the IERO becomes a particular "observatory", through which the Armed Forces acquire indications that may help the organization to improve its functioning. Even if the interview remains strictly confidential, the information useful for the development process are transmitted to the hierarchic chain, to the Career

Management Officer of the Unit the man belongs to, up to the Adjutant General's office, responsible for personnel in every aspect.

Among the worries about the future there is the one about housing. Many servicemen, owing to the high costs of the real estate market in Great Britain, cannot buy a house. The IER Officer provides information about the possibilities of obtaining a loan, using, for instance, his severance pay. A serviceman receives a severance pay equal to three times his pension and this varies from 30 to 50% of his salary, according to the years of service. The housing issue is very much felt and precisely because of this there is a specialized monthly ("Housing Matters") which deals with these

problems especially for the military.

At the end of the interview the data are transmitted to the superior level.

The 3rd level, finally, stands within the province of the Career Transition Partnership (CTP), which acts through the Regional Resettlement Centres (RRC) and the Resettlement Training Centre (RTC), at Aldershot. The CTP provides workshops, seminars, employment advice and training, starting from two years before leaving service, and a service of research of a possible job at least six months before. The Career Consultant and the Employment Consultant, consisting of exclusively civilian personnel, operate at this level.

The former, on the basis of the professional curriculum of the

REQUIREMENTS AND ENTITLEMENTS

YEARS OF SERVICE		NORMAL DISCHARGE			DISCHARGE FOR MEDICAL REASONS		
Before 01/09/02	After 01/09/02	CTP	GRT (*)	IRTC	CTP	GRT	IRTC
2							
<1	<1	NO	0	NO	FULL	10	YES
1+	1+	NO	0	NO	FULL	30	YES
3+	4+	JFO	20	NO	FULL	30	YES
5+	6+	FULL	20	YES	FULL	30	YES
8+	8+	FULL	25	YES	FULL	30	YES
12+	12+	FULL	30	YES	FULL	30	YES
>16	>16	FULL	35	YES	FULL	35	YES

(*) The GRT is expressed in "working" days, to which week-ends (Saturday and Sunday) must be added. Therefore, the "real days" for travel documents can vary from 28 to 49.

serviceman (specialization, courses attended, school degrees), his inclinations and aspirations, outlines, together with the candidate, the package that is best suited to the capabilities of the individual and identifies the civil area in which he can excel.

The Employment Consultant, who belongs to an agency called Regular Forces Employment Association, is the employment expert. According to the place where the serviceman intends to settle, he suggests the type of work which is most suitable, secure, easily absorbable locally and which offers guarantees of employment. Ninety per cent of the military find a job within six months and hundred per cent within a year.

At the end of the interviews, which last three days, the serviceman is in a position to draw up his curriculum vitae and outline "his" course of reintegration (Personal Resettlement Plan): the type of course he wants to attend, where he wants to

attend it, its duration, its cost and the facilitations offered by the Administration.

REQUIREMENTS AND ENTITLEMENTS

Every serviceman can join the 1st and 2nd level at any time during his career. However, the opportunities and facilitations increase in proportion to the number of years spent in service. In relation to this, there are three possibilities (see table).

Utilization of the Graduate Resettlement Time: the number of days acquired to attend courses of professional qualification. The GRT is structured in such a way as to reward those who have longer periods of service. In other words, the days available for the retraining courses increase with the number of years spent in service and this gives the advantage of being able to attend the most prestigious courses, which generally last longer and sometimes exceed the

time allowed by the Administration. In this case, the person concerned can ask to continue the course using the 28-day leave granted at the end of his service, continuing to enjoy the benefits provided by the Administration (travel documents, food, accommodation), excluding the expenses for additional lessons or accident insurance. The GRT is flexible and permits to attend specialization courses organized by the Army or other bodies, go to exhibitions and conferences in order to meet possible employers, work with civilian firms for limited periods of time, solve personal problems connected with their civilian resettlement (looking for a place to live or a new school for the children, applying for a job, etc.).

The GRT does not apply to those who are authoritatively discharged.

The admission to the services of the Career Transition Partnership may include the complete package (Full) or only the search of a job (Job Finding Only - JFO).

The acquisition of the Individual Resettlement Training Cost (IRTC) is a subsidy of 534 pounds, granted to those who are entitled to it, as a contribution to the expenses for the qualification courses.

The table shows the requirements and entitlements for those who enlisted before and after 2002, the year when the new norms were introduced. One can clearly see that a serviceman discharged for health reasons connected with his duty is entitled to the whole resettlement package, even if he has not completed the required period of service. In this case, he can take advantage of the benefits acquired up to two years after discharge and, if this is impossible owing to serious health problems, the benefits are transferred to the serviceman's



A machine employed by the Engineers of the British contingent of ISAF.

wife. In other words, his wife will attend the qualification course and receive the reimbursements envisaged. This procedure applies also to the widows of the soldiers who died while doing their duty and to those who are compelled to resign on account of serious family problems. For the latter, the concession is on the discretion of the Authority and must be approved by the Director of Resettlement.

If a serviceman, after starting the resettlement course, decides not to resign, the remaining GRT days are considered valid and, if he stays in service for two more years, is entitled to

the whole package.

Officers over fifty and other ranks (NCOs and Volunteers) with more than thirty years of service are allowed to start the resettlement process before entering the last two years normally envisaged.

COURSES AND FINANCING

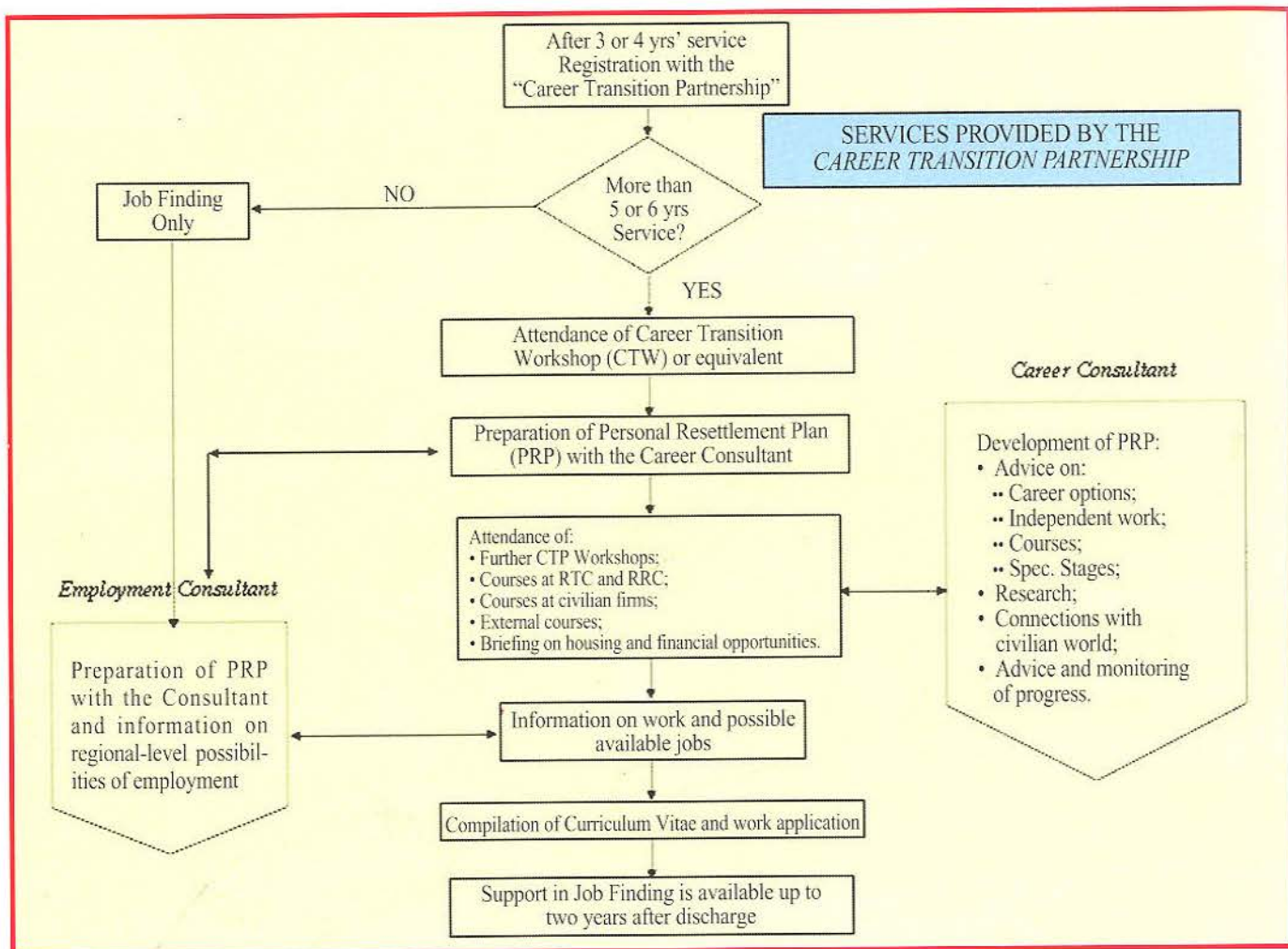
It is possible to attend any course of professional training, both in the United Kingdom and abroad. This means that the selection is not limited to the courses provided by the Career Transition Partnership Agency and conducted at the Resettlement Training Centre at Aldershot or other authorized external Centres. Anyone can go to any other organization,

provided that reliability and professionalism are guaranteed.

Therefore, around the resettlement there is a very active market aimed at securing the funds made available by the Administration.

As regards the administrative responsibilities, there is an ample and complex set of rules, which take into account almost all possible cases, each requiring a special form to be filled and countersigned at the various levels. Red tape has its price but, once the "paper work" is done, the soldier receives every possible assistance.

As a matter of fact, besides the said 534 pounds from the IRTC, the serviceman can get several benefits. For example: food and lodging, if he cannot be accommodated in barracks;



allowance for transportation for those who must travel to reach the location of the courses; access to a Standard Learning Credit (SLC) of 175 pounds, as reimbursement of the tax required for the final exams of a nationally recognized course. With these and other small advantages, the available per capita income can reach the amount of 3,000 – 3,500 pounds which, multiplied by the hundreds or thousands of persons starting the resettlement process every year, justify the spreading of a vast commercial network – from the labour market to real estate, from professional training to financing – in a system of free competition. All courses are also open to discharged personnel, but in this case the costs are to be paid completely by the party concerned.

CONCLUSIONS

Those who must make important decisions about their life are assailed by worries and doubts. To leave the military after many years in uniform and wear a civilian dress is a difficult step, made even harder by the uncertainties of resettlement, be it due to age (retirement) or reduction of the initial motivations.

Today's labour market is open to "flexibility" and "mobility", meant as possibility of moving, and not in a physical sense only, i.e. from one place to another, but mainly in terms of new jobs and professions. The military cannot remain anchored to the concept of a "steady job" for the whole life. The military world, which is undergoing a continuous evolution as regards

structures, tasks and materials, must meet the new challenge made by voluntary recruitment and the new international dimension.

In fact, with conscription, a large number of personnel, with the exception of Cadres, consisted of young soldiers who went back to civilian life after a period of service of only one year which, although in some social classes was considered "long", was not long enough for them to acquire the mentality and "modus operandi" typical of the military. On the contrary, the problem with voluntary service is that it returns to society a large number of unprepared and maladjusted young men.

Furthermore, the new missions outside the national borders require enthusiastic and prepared young soldiers, and this

A British serviceman conducting a survey near Kabul.

can only be obtained through continuous turnovers, to avoid the risk, after a few years, of having to deal with tired personnel longing for garrison life.

The inclusion of a serious and valid resettlement programme among the benefits provided by the military can meet many different needs and cases, and concerns those who lose their enthusiasm and interest along the way and those who go through the entire length of their career. Actually the resettlement courses, even when they are not directly connected with the working world and are only aimed at teaching or perfecting a hobby, contribute to the attendee's greater serenity and vitality; also the awareness that,



in case of need, his wife can benefit of the same rights, and work for the support of the family, increases his reliance on the security of military life. All soldiers, for one reason or

another, go back to civilian life one day, and when they leave the Armed Forces have the right of being helped to take that step.

Like any other measure, also resettlement, in order to be effective, must meet with the firm conviction of the hierarchical chain, i.e. the Commanders who, acknowledging its manifold objectives (recruitment, service extension, quality of life) should consider it as part of their command action and work things in such a way as to obtain, through the efficiency of the responsible offices, that everyone knows and gets what rightfully belongs to him.

What is due cannot but depend on the length of the time one has been on service; that means rewarding those who have served longer and have therefore endured more than others the hardships typical of military life.

□

** Brigadier General,
Military Attaché, Italian
Embassy, London*

British "Challenger" tanks pausing during Operation "Desert Storm" in 1991.



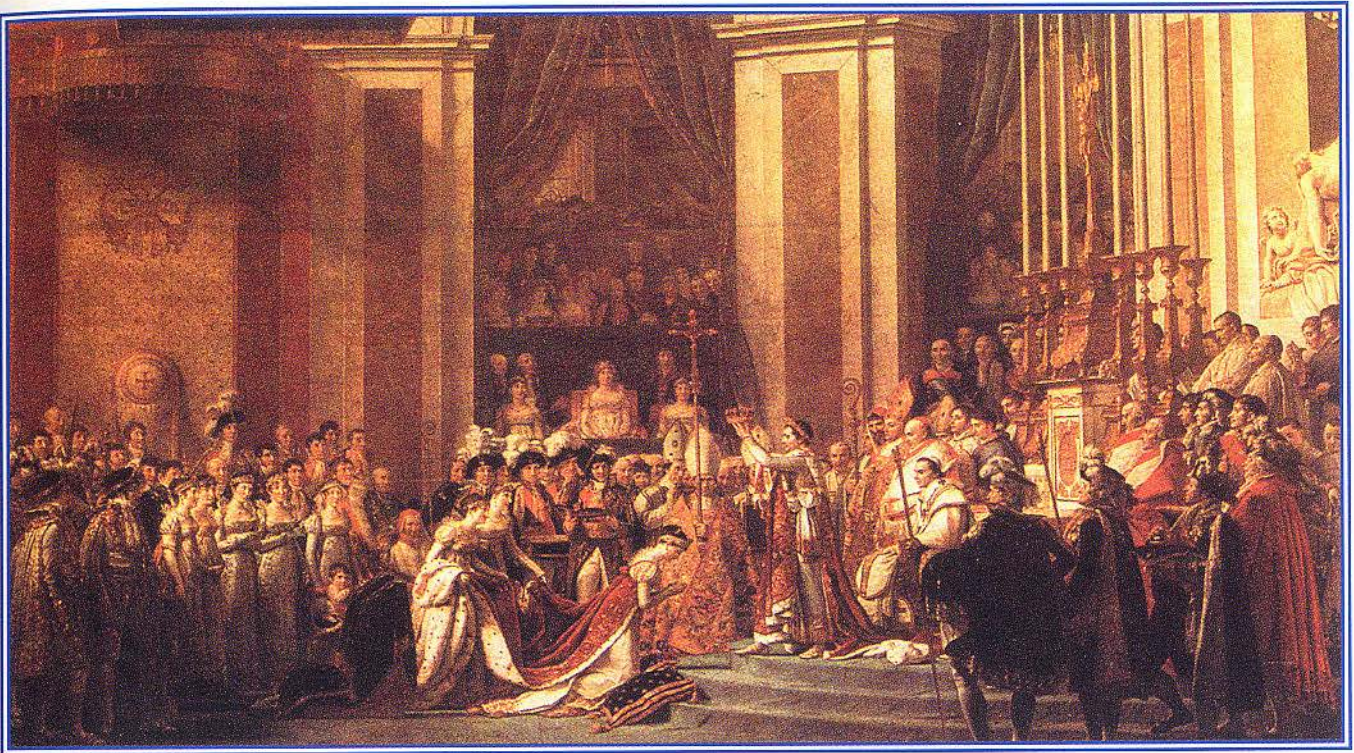
THE ART OF DECIDING

Learning to make the right decisions in any moment is a non-secondary exercise which may become a turning point in one's profession and even in one's life

by Antonio Marchetti *

Decision requires a complex mental process, in which many recently-identified elements concur and can be enhanced on the basis of particular elaboration procedures. Well tested techniques thus help to solve the problem of deciding in a natural and self-confident manner, also in extreme situations. Therefore, science helps to make up for scarce experience. Simple rules, which even the very young can apply during the day, are sufficient for obtaining concrete benefits in many fields with a minimum engagement.

IMPARTIE



Jacques-Louis David: Napoleon I crowning Empress Josephine (1805-1807).

During one day we make many decisions. Even the reader of this article has made a decision: he has decided to read it. Certainly he could have avoided to do it, still he is reading it, and later can choose whether he wants to continue to read or to stop. Anyway, he has made a decision, he has made a choice.

Making decisions is so deep-rooted in our behaviour that we do not even realize it. Only when the decision has a clear priority among the many events of a normal day does it become visible, emerging from the fog of routine and showing its irrepressible vitality.

Every profession entails choices and decisions. Every profession characterizes and diversifies our choices. Among the many professions where taking decisions implies a deep-rooted capability of making choices in a short time and with a non-negligible emotional component, there are two pre-eminent ones: the physician and the soldier. In both cases, he who decides involves other people and

determines their physical and psychological life.

Therefore, in order to be able to decide one should know the mechanisms of this fundamental ideational process.

Let us try, then, to find out what a decision is, what we mean by decision-making and, above all, why we decide.

THE KEY TO EVERYTHING

We can say that decision-making implies a procedure guided by a correlative series of choices such as , for instance: solving a problem by oneself or not; finding the best strategies for its solution; choosing the most effective course of action; stopping the process or continuing it.

Consequently: to make a decision, to find or reach a solution are complex ideational processes involving many factors external and internal to the human being.

Whoever thinks that a decision-making action could prescind from the character and personality of the decider, not only does he make a serious evaluative

mistake but runs the risk of not understanding how, when and why a decisional behaviour is preferred to another.

Thus the task of the psychology of decision consists in understanding and trying to learn the inner mechanisms, the infinite factors and the environmental influences which enable the individual to decide.

In order to make the decision-making process more visible, let us portray it as an endlessly moving and infinite liquid mass. Small particles of different, apparently autonomous, substances, with their own characteristics and identity, move within this mass and an infinite number of forces act upon it. These particles, for reasons unknown to us, all of a sudden begin to run together, aggregate and start to build – in an anarchic manner at first, then more rationally – a form, indefinite at the beginning,



which successively becomes an image with its own characteristics and properties.

The liquid mass is the environment in which we live, our personality, our nature as individuals. The particles are our ideas, our knowledge, our past life. The complete form is our final objective, the result of our decision, while the forces that act on the system are our fears, our experience, the possible risks, the likelihood of success, the uncertainty of the outcome.

WHY WE DECIDE

Every person, in any given situation, opts for a course of action rather for a different one

according to a personal ideational process leading to a particular way of acting.

Many times we have posed ourselves questions in considering a decision adopted by somebody else; and many times, if we fish out of our memory facts occurred to colleagues, relatives, friends or acquaintances who had faced decisions, with positive or negative consequences, we have wondered why they had acted in that particular way.

Some other times even our own decisions, re-examined days, months or years later, appeared strange, absurd or even completely wrong. This difference of behaviour and judgement, as compared to that of others, this critical reconsideration of

ourselves encloses the core of the decision-making process.

As a matter of fact, when faced by a problem and compelled to decide, each one of us acts in a different way.

Psychologists and mathematicians, economists and statisticians, philosophers and researchers, each in his own province, have been trying to examine and single out the various stages preceding the decision, in order to obtain a final choice as close as possible to the optimal solution.

HOW TO DECIDE AT BEST

It is very important to underline that a decision, in order

Opposite.

Eugene Delacroix: "Liberty leading the people" (1831).

Right.

Jacques Louis David: "Napoleón I in his study" (1810).

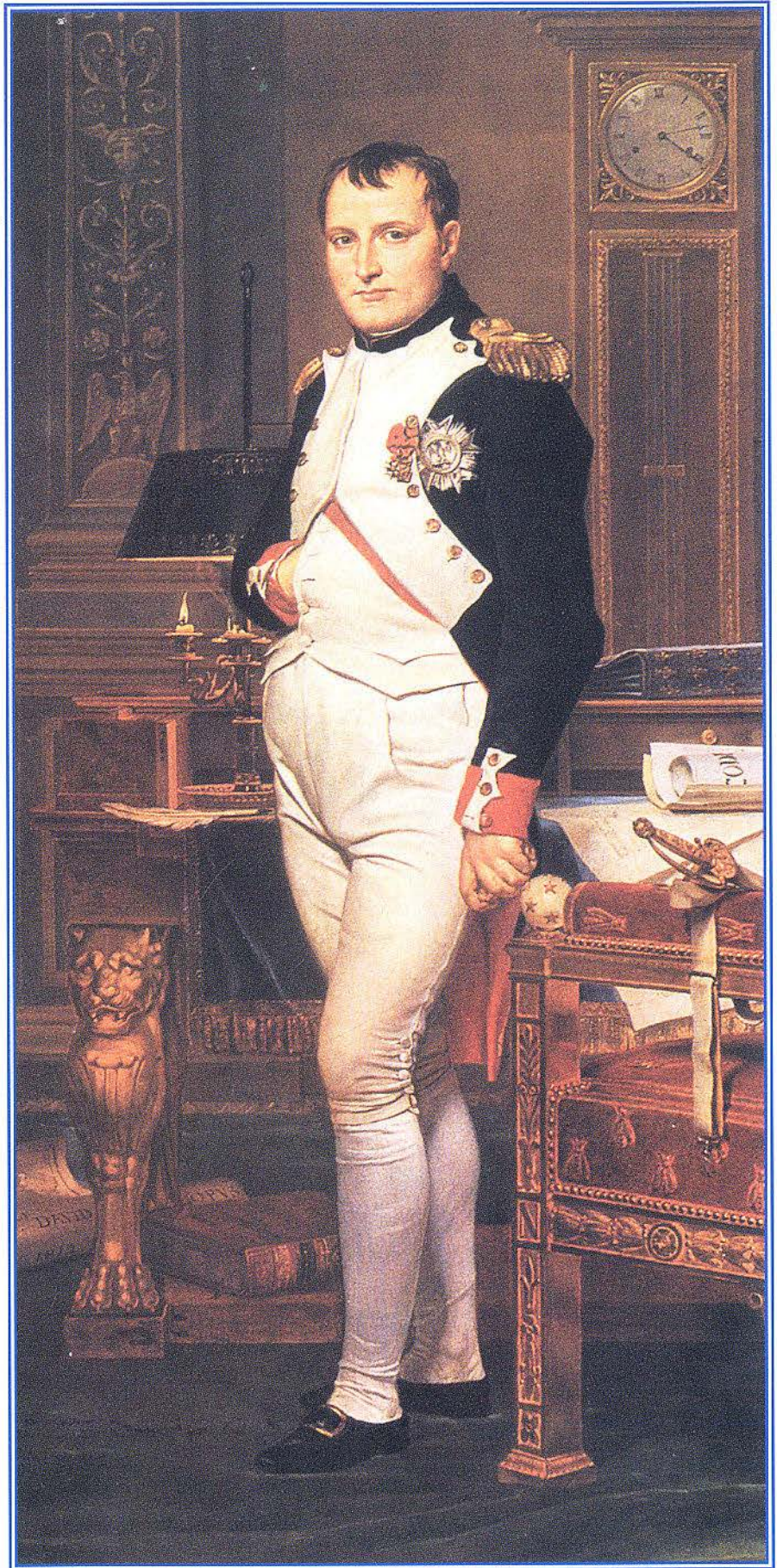
to be implemented, requires an uncommon mental process in order to remove and overcome the block hindering the achievement of the result. The block is represented by a series of elements which not only interfere with the correct evaluation of the information about what we are doing, but, paradoxically, they are the very notions needed for achieving our objective.

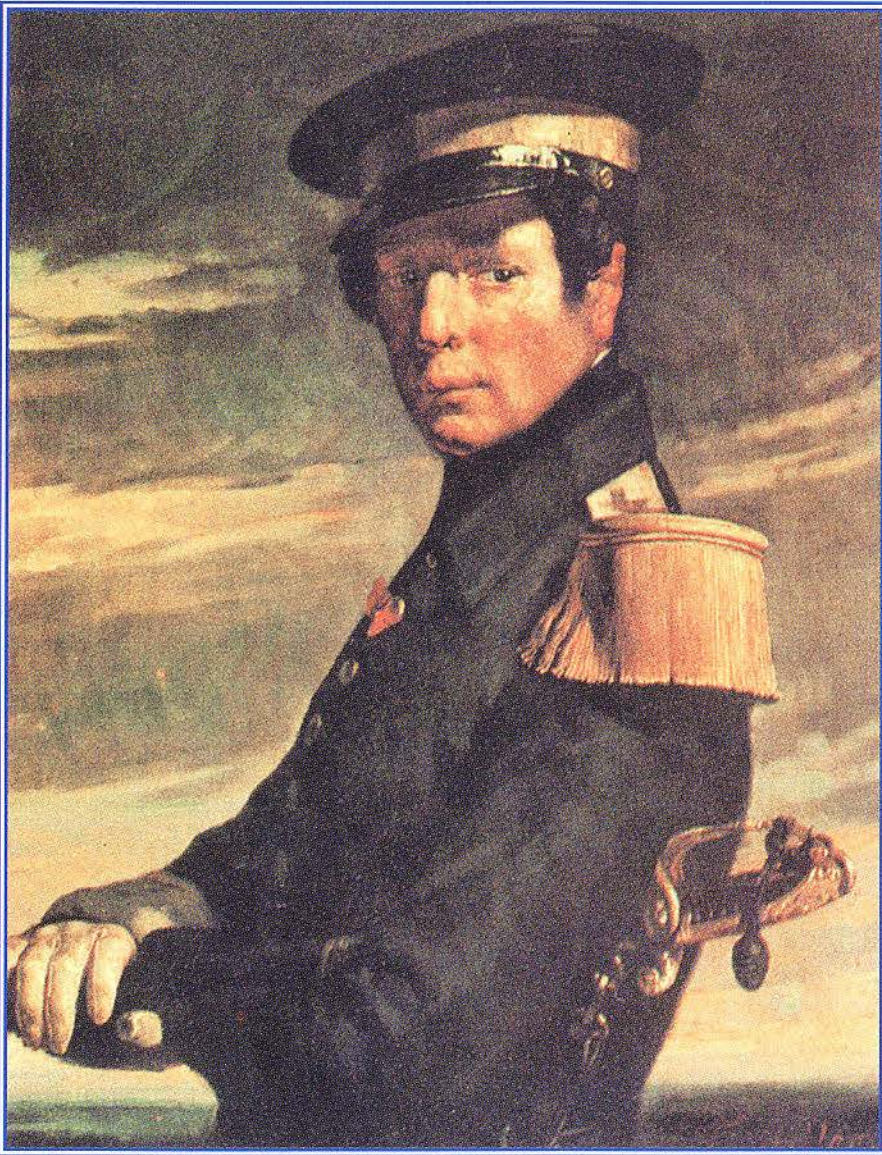
If, for example, someone is at a tram-stop and must decide whether to wait longer or take a taxi in order to be punctual at an important appointment, he becomes anxious, due to his indecision on whether to take a taxi or not.

Let us examine the various evaluation phases intervening in his decision: the probability that, by taking a taxi, he could make up for the time lost at the tram-stop; the uncertainty connected with the tram delay; the risk of being late for an important appointment; his state of agitation.

All these components (the risk of missing a deal, the uncertainty of transport, the probability of failure, the fear of being unable to make it) constitute the block hindering the achievement of the objective, but are also, and mostly, the elements which make up the subject's evaluative capability. The latter, in fact, is not only based on the collection and analysis of all possible information, but also on the other options available for achieving the objective.

In practice, it is a question of reducing to the minimum the level of risk and uncertainty connected with the various





Jean François Millet: Portrait of a Navy Officer (1845).

every time one knows the results of a decision (if one waits for a tram, one could arrive late) and the probabilities of success or failure of the project associated with them (I might miss an opportunity).

Of course, what is important in the final choice is the subjective evaluation of the risk connected with a given situation. This subjective perception of the risk is an individual characteristic, i.e. the particular propensity towards risk. Therefore, those who enjoy hazardous challenges will, more often than others, embark on objectively riskier actions.

This leads to the fact that if this type of decider is the leader of a group, the whole group will be affected by this behaviour and will be tendentially more inclined to act in a risky manner.

In our case, if the decider belonged to the above-said category, he would almost certainly wait for the tram, running the risk of being late for the appointment but satisfying his gambler's nature.

Probability

Probability is the assessment of the likelihood that a given event might occur. In the case discussed above, it consists in the awareness that the tram's delay could prevent the successful outcome of an important appointment. This anticipation is based either on previous direct experiences (delay of public transport), on indirect information acquired from others, or on personal convictions (usual delays of public transport), emphasized by the emotional character of the decider, who could be convinced of being dogged by bad luck.

results, and this can be done through the removal of errors of over- or under-estimation.

This operation of coding information implies also the elaboration of a behavioural strategy for connecting the new knowledge with the pre-existent mental schemes, in order to reduce to a minimum the sources of uncertainty and, therefore, of error.

THE VARIABLES OF THE DECISION-MAKING PROCESS

The variables which most frequently interfere with the

decision-making process are: risk, likelihood of success, uncertainty, usefulness, personal choices, wrong judgements, gathering of information, experience, environment in which the action takes place, psychic state of the decider.

These variables are always present in any decision we make, from the simplest one to the most complex.

Now, let us apply these factors to the example mentioned before.

Risk

The risk is represented by the possibility of being late due to the tram's delay. This is present

Uncertainty

The third variable element in the decision-making process is uncertainty. This includes every situation where the decider, although knowing the outcome of his choice (take a taxi), ignores the consequences of this alternative (being late all the same, owing to traffic or taxi driver's lack of skill). The problem connected with the uncertainty of the result is the core of the study of the decisional process, both because the consequences of the actions undertaken can extend beyond the objective (the taxi could stop for a long time due to an accident) and because one cannot be completely certain that the assumed outcome really occurs (one could take a taxi and be late anyway, or could arrive on time and not find the right person).

It is precisely the impossible certainty of the result the cause that feeds and supports the uncertainty (taking a taxi and being late). This creates doubts, hesitation, wavering and, finally, insecurity.

To offset all these emotions which restrain and deflect the normal course of the decision-making process, several techniques can be adopted, which put into perspective the state of tension.

Thus, it is possible to employ safe and tested strategies and models (the tram has been late before, but we kept the appointment) or have recourse to a reassuring deductive logic (if the tram does not come, we can make up for lost time by taking a taxi).

To sum up, the degree of uncertainty of an event is directly connected with the knowledge that each one of us has of the



action he is performing. The more information we have on the case, the more analogous experience we have made, the easier will be for us to rationalize the event and control, or contain, both our insecurity and our uncertainty in tackling the problem serenely.

Individual choices

Faced by a problem, each person behaves in a different way.

Just as there are not two perfectly equal persons, so there are not two equal decisions. This is true because every individual is the living product of many small events that have built his life day by day, contributing to form his experience, his culture, his character, his personality, his social environments, his friendships.

The Police forces of the whole world know that if ten people witness a robbery, they will give ten different accounts. If urged to portray the physical traits of the robber, they will describe him through the features they consider more important: nose, mouth, eyes, face. In short, a witness will be more inclined to remember, and therefore describe, those details which, by personal choice, affinity or assonance, he considers more familiar or better known (nose, mouth, or other physical details of the offender reminding him of other people he knows).

Nevertheless, one should not forget that the special selection of some characteristics is the product of the psychological phenomenon known as "Perception", a dynamic and active process through which one becomes aware of an event.

Perception is divided into two learning moments: that of awareness (elaboration of signs such as nose, mouth, shoulders etc., received according to a perceptive scheme deriving from



personal experience) and in the active manner through which the perception becomes concrete (as is the case with an identikit obtained from witnesses).

The sensorial content is always present in perception, but this acts as a filter for the incoming messages. The study of this filter must be conducted by taking into account the relations connected with the decision-making process, the moment of the perception and the characteristics of the individual concerned.

As a matter of fact, each perception is a consequence of all the preceding ones, and contributes to the characterization of those which will follow in the future.

Errors

The "error" variable is certainly important in the pre-decision phase.

Generally, the decider makes mistakes in assessing and gathering data and in coordinating information.

If the phase of assessment, collection and elaboration of data is defective, incomplete or superficial, there will be errors which can often be fatal to the decider.

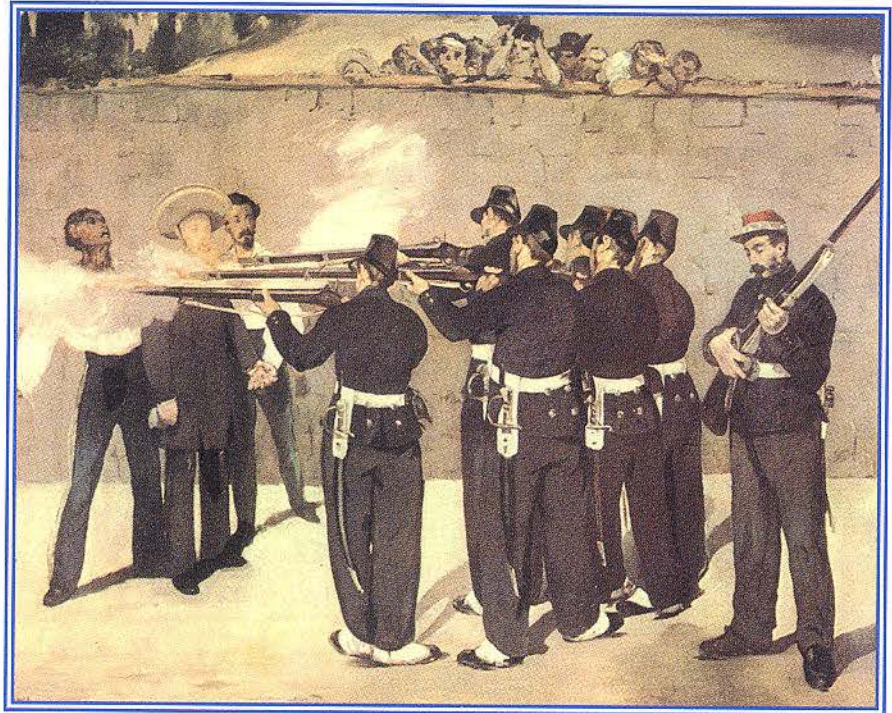
This could be the case of a mountain-climber who, starting an ascent, makes a wrong evaluation on the state of the snow, does not pay enough attention to the weather forecast, does not seek advice from the

Opposite.

Jacques Louis David: "Army Oath administered by the Emperor, at the "Champ de Mars" in Paris, after distributing the Eagles on December 5, 1801", detail (1810).

Right.

Edouard Manet: "Execution of Emperor Maximilian" (1867).



local guides, does not employ the right equipment or does not consider that the climb could last longer than expected. He will commit a series of errors of evaluation, collection, and elaboration of data, which will inevitably lead him to take a dangerous decision (i.e. set off just the same).

Experience

Very often the decider, in order to leave the quicksand of uncertainty, risk and indecision, resorts to memories or similar situations he has previously faced.

The decider is reading the menu of a seaside restaurant. He has a quick look at the list of the first courses and lingers over a dish unknown to him. He wonders what it is but, considering that he is by the sea, thinks that it should be a fish-dish (probability), a food he does not like (personal choice). Since he does not intend to call the waiter and ask what the ingredients are, he orders it anyway (error), because he remembers that on another occasion he ate a similar dish which contained asparagus (previous experience); but it could also be a meat dish. He decides to try (risk), also because he does not want to waste time (emotionality).

In our example, experience was not a good counsellor: in fact, the dish was made of delicious fish from the Mediterranean.

Our friend made an incredible heap of mistakes: he did not ask

the waiter or gather information from the other diners in order to know the ingredients of the dish. In practice he decided under the illusion that his past experience could be sufficient and, anxious to be quick, presumed that it was a dish of vegetables, only because the year before a similar dish contained asparagus.

In conclusion, he was destined to make a wrong decision, as inevitably happened.

It should be specified that, in order to weigh a present action against a past one, a comparison should be made with similar events already occurred, held in a virtual archive located in the mind.

The comparison takes place thanks to "Representation", which permits to recognize a fact, an object, an episode, an event, because our mind has recorded it in the past. This happens because through our memory (a mass of chemical reactions taking place in the brain when for emotional, sensorial or voluntary reasons we wish to call to mind time, episodes, facts, circumstances, names or dates of the past) we

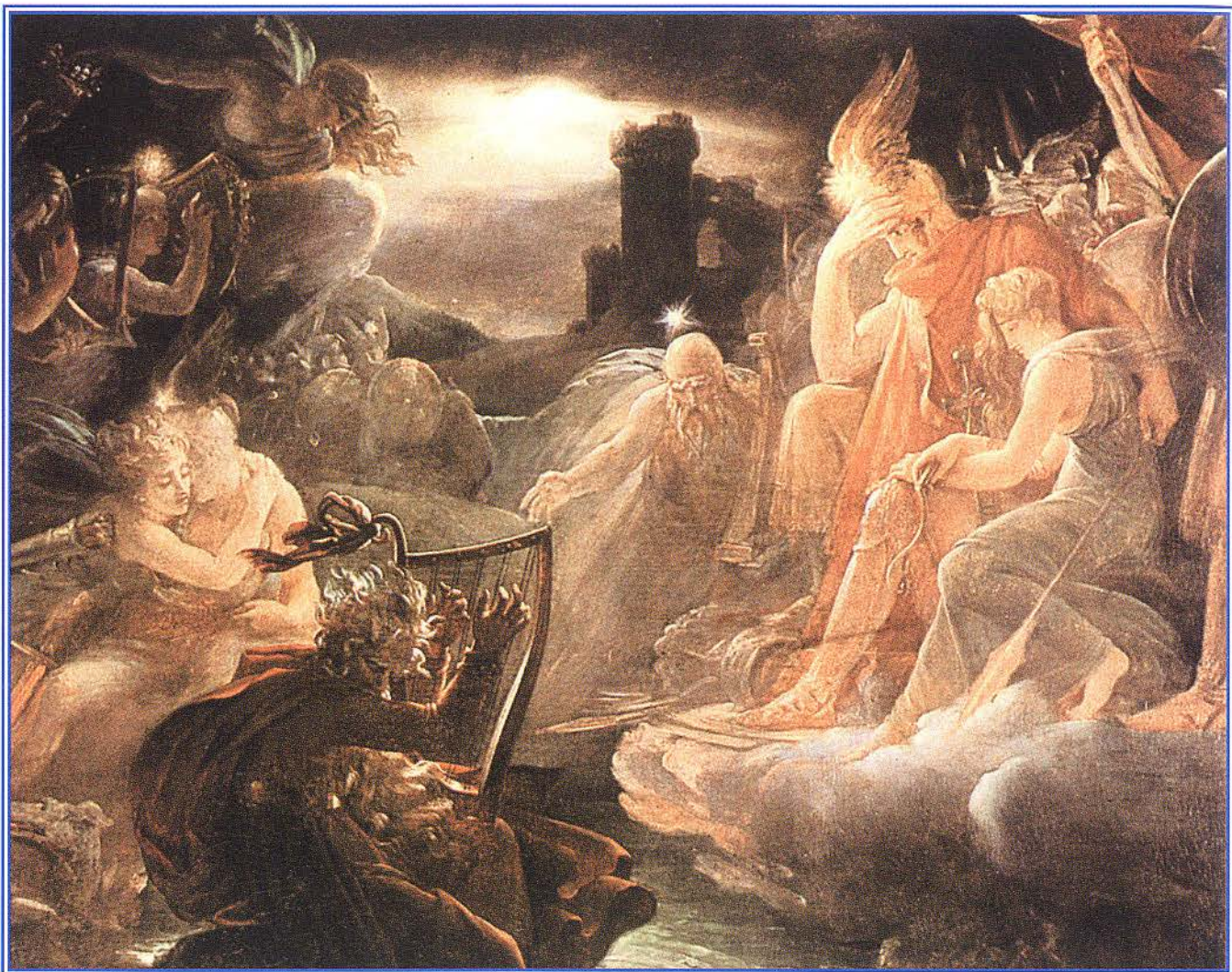
store and record actions, faces, noises, words and events. The collection of this information develops in our mind behavioural schemes which automatically compare themselves with the event occurring at the moment.

The bulk of these schemes forms the "representation". If we associate a sound of a certain tonality, intensity, loudness and duration to the siren of a ship, we can do that only because we had already heard, identified and memorized that signal.

Representation, therefore, is nothing but the comparison between a present and a past event. It informs us about that stimulus and what we know about it. But this does not mean that similar events imply similar solutions; on the contrary, very often the opposite is true. Past experience is only useful in order to make the decision-making process easier, not to shape it. In a word, it is a short cut in the long journey to the final decision.

Environment

The environment affects the decision-making process. If we



go to a party where everybody is very elegant, or to a degraded area, we will certainly choose to wear the appropriate dress.

Thus the environment is a conditioning element in decisions, and often speeds up our choice. In fact, in rushing to the scene of an emergency, we will try to activate every available means in order to arrive as soon as possible.

Emotionality

Emotionality is one of the last variable influencing a decision. At the culminant moment it flutters, creeps, interferes, advises, suggests, and ranges over all the acts which imply a decision, imparting acceleration or braking, indecision or resignation, euphoria or depression.

How many times, faced by a difficult decision, did we back out, and how many times again, before sitting for an examination were we advised by our inner emotional voice to go away? If we could fish freely in the sea of our memories, I am certain that we would find traces of decisions where the emotion of the moment was about to condition, and sometimes did condition, a decision that we had already made (e.g. be about to take an examination and leave the classroom just before it).

Emotionality must be repressed and mastered. It emerges from our depth in a spontaneous and natural way, spreading over our action with its impalpable essence, dominating, conditioning and feeding it.

Therefore, when we are about to decide, we must remember that an emotional state can affect our choice. Otherwise we would behave like the sailor who, before setting sail, does not consider the force of the wind: it is in fact the wind that gives speed to the boat, but the same wind can also shake, toss, overturn or even sink it.

Emotionality is the wind of our boat of decisions and, precisely like a sailing ship, our decisions, hit by the wind of emotionality, endure accelerations, slowdowns, waverings, careenings, hesitations, about-turns and shipwrecks.

This happens because the decision-making process is not a cold and formal listing of acts and assessment of events or, even less, an accurate sequence of data

Opposite.

François Gérard: "Ossian" (1801).

Right.

Jean-Antoine Gros: "The surrender of Madrid", detail (1810).



to be acquired, processed, examined and developed. Nor is it a simple arrangement of tesserae in the construction of the mosaic of our decision, but rather the human being in its identity made of soul and body, mind and substance, fears and grudges, joy and pain, life and death, education and culture.

The sequence of events, the gathering of data, the elaboration and assessment of actions, all go through the filter of the personality of the decider. That is why two people with equal notions, when facing a problem, behave in different ways: they judge the situation differently and different, therefore, will be their decision in relation to that particular event.

DEPRESSION AND EUPHORIA

One thing is to decide in the middle of a crisis of depression, another is to do it after receiving a good piece of news.

Some expert historians, after reading with a critical eye the decision adopted in Yalta by President Franklin Delano Roosevelt, concluded that some excessive territorial and political concessions made to Stalin originated from the very serious crisis of depression that had overtaken him when he had become aware that his illness allowed him only a few days of life.

In this case, as in almost every decisional event affected by a temperamental negativity (depressive state, fear of dying, awareness of being unable to cope, insecurity, inadequacy of

one's role), emotionality creates an ideational, comparative and evaluative block of the information possessed by the decider, causing errors of judgement characterized by passivity or overestimation of events.

At the other extreme, we see the decision made in a phase of excessive optimism.

In this case, the decider will tend to underestimate most of the notions in his possession, without realizing that euphoria will be a bad counsellor.

Considering all we have said so far, let us go back to the initial example, the choice between tram and taxi. The emotional state interfered with the protagonist's wait, in full accordance with our conclusion: it actually greatly accelerated his final decision.

In fact, before being gripped by the anxiety for the delay, the decider was confidently ready to wait for the tram, without any special emotion. Only when the time of the appointment got closer, considering that a possible delay could cause him a damage, our man opted for the taxi.

Had he been affected by a depressive syndrome, he would have passively endured the delay

and the loss of a favourable opportunity. For him, bearer of a grey and negative position on life, this would have been a further substantiation of his inner malaise (he knew that things would go wrong). He would not realize that the non-achievement of his goal was not due to events unfavourable per se, but rather to his incapacity to react (overestimation of events).

On the contrary, a positive and optimist individual, radiantly open to life, would have waited for the tram, trusting his lucky star (delay of the summoner, according to an underestimation of events) and hoping that the tram could make up for lost time.

THE NON-DECISION

The non-choice is a subject similar and complementary to the decision-making process. It is an entirely normal act, one of the means of facing a dilemma.

Why do we choose "not-to choose"? Because at the moment of decision we realize that we are not ready to tackle the problem.

This could depend on: inaccurate or incomplete collection of data, wrong evaluation of the



Jean Antoine Gros: "Cavalry charge led by General Murat at Abukir", detail (1806).

doubtful. On the contrary, precisely in these cases it is extremely important to know what to do, how to behave, how to act, whom to ask for advice.

In a dilemma, everyone can choose a different way of behaving, but each action will reflect the individual's character and way of thinking. In fact, he can opt for adhesion without conflict, for change, or for defensive dodging.

Adherence without conflict is adopted when the change is too risky, and one prefers to wait and see. As a result, there is no conflict, no hesitation but, rather, a concrete and immediate serenity of judgement.

Change is a situation totally opposite to the preceding one, where there are valid reasons for a radical modification (extreme difficulty in achieving an objective, job is unbearable, distance from home, health reasons, economic grounds, and so on). In this instance the decider has made a qualitative (scarce esteem, inadequacy, various tensions, distance) and quantitative (insufficient earning) analysis of his current job, considering the alternative activity more rewarding and productive (determinate and self-confident person).

Defensive dodging occurs when there are no sufficient elements for assessing the change (no knowledge about the new environment, badly-defined earning). In this instance, the questions that the decider asks himself are apparently resolute in order to exclude a change, but in fact they are not: they produce no valid effect, the decider is passive, undecided, self-doubting.

This is a sterile and useless stalemate. The decider could

problem, incorrect selection of the objective, insufficient information, insufficient time for making a decision.

Thus we can infer that there are three possible behaviours: refusal, which implies the acceptance of the *status quo ante*, since all possibilities of deciding have been rejected (I am tired and I take neither tram nor taxi); postponement, determined by the need to examine more elements, in addition to those already available (I do not go to the appointment since I am not sure about the

proposals); inattention, where the available elements are not organized in such a way as to favour a decision (no people at the stop and no passing trams). In this case the decider has been unable to connect the absence of passengers and trams to a possible impediment (suppression of the stop, strike in public transport).

CONFLICTING DECISIONS

In deciding we are often irresolute, hesitant, perplexed,

have: postponed the choice to a successive moment (let some time pass and then see what happens); delegated to someone else the responsibility of the decision (someone more expert who decides and advises); emphasized the favourable consequences of the decision, minimizing the negative ones (accept renunciations and sacrifices in order to have advantageous returns); adopted a super-vigilance (decide without being able to rely on others or on anything but himself).

In this latter example we are in the middle of an emotional conflict, due to an increase in the tension linked to the scarce time available, the anxiety of being in a hurry and the uneasiness of being alone with nobody else to help him decide (anxious person). Whatever decision is taken, it will not be the outcome of a rational and considered analysis of the impending situation but the product of the decider's character and personality. He will, or will not, change his job without considering the type of activity that he is going to start, but following only the mood of the moment.

THE EXPERTS' DECISION

An expert is he who has experience, i.e. a direct knowledge, due to a long personal practice and study, of the phenomena of life, science and art.

It is him we turn to, to the man of learning, the technical expert, the advisor, the specialist, every time we wish to have a definite word on something that interests us. He is the beacon, the light we look for when we need someone to back our thesis, or to clear up our doubts. This is because, owing to his culture and knowledge, we deem him able to solve and disentangle our own and other people's problems.

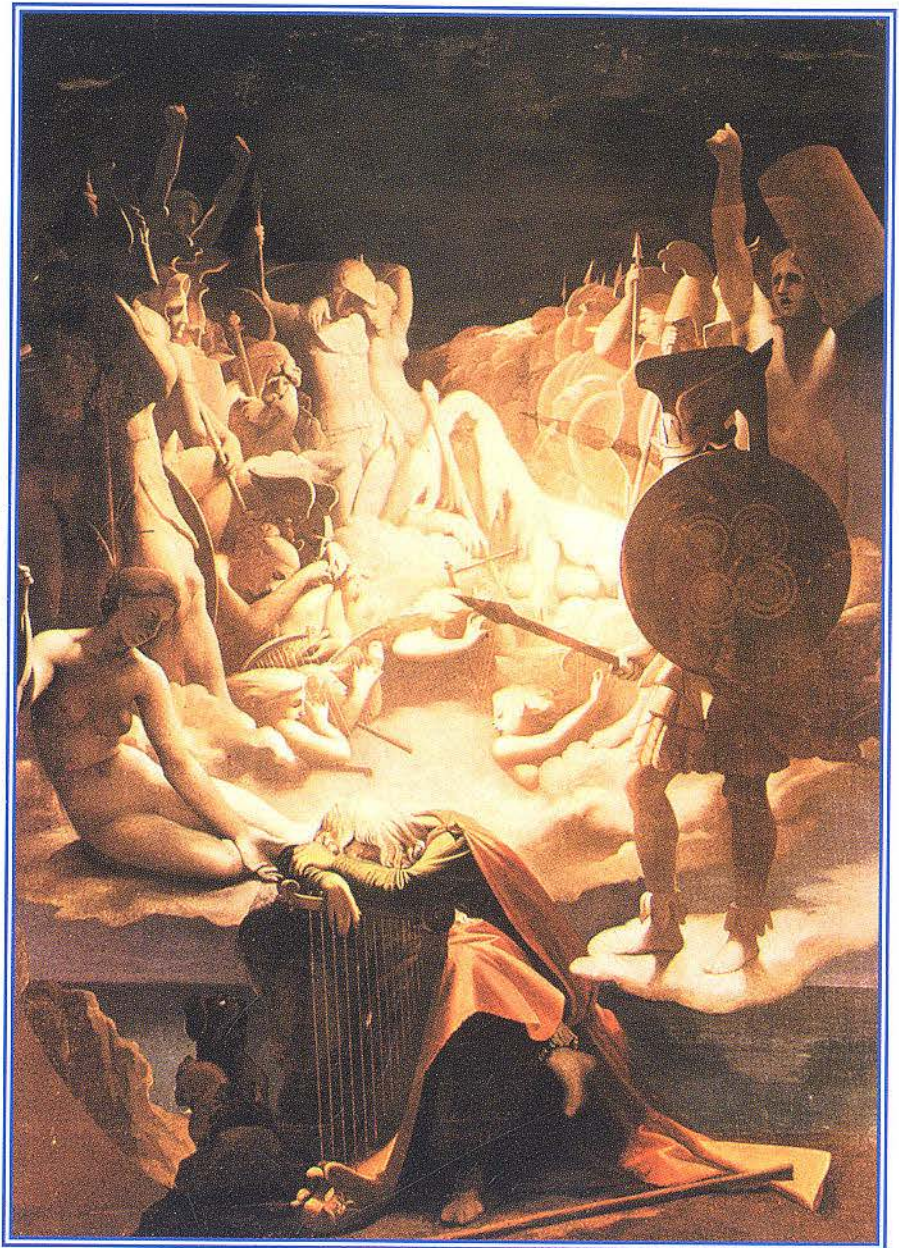
Nevertheless, also the experts make mistakes and meet difficulties in a decision-making procedure, and run up against difficult and intricate situations that lead to failure, even if they can avail themselves of a wide range of information. It is not always true that information nullifies mistakes, because the variables of the decision-making process are always there: uncertainty, probability of success, risk, individual choice, previous experience, environment, emotionality.

What makes experts less

Jean Dominique Ingres: "Ossian's dream" (1813).

exposed to error is a greater knowledge of the specific issue and a customary daily practice in solving problems. They have a greater familiarity with a certain reality, acquired through a long practice and personal direct observation.

For instance, the more culture a physician has in his field, the more capable he is. The great surgeon is not only a professional





Théodore Géricault: "Officer of the 'Chasseurs à Cheval' in a charge" (1812).

other likely alternatives for tackling the problem and reaching a solution, such as: diagnosis (prescribing further tests, ask for a colleague's advice, hospitalize for a better verification of the cause of symptoms); project (changing the zone of construction, build a block of twenty storeys instead of one of forty); process preparation (deciding about mental illness or relying on alibis and witnesses).

In practice it is a matter of reducing to a minimum the risk and uncertainty connected with the possible results, through the removal of possible mistakes of under- or over-estimation: (a pain in the chest, although present in an infarction, can also be due to a banal inflammation of the pulmonary muscles; the crack in the wall can be a signal of structure failure but also a plaster fissure).

Therefore, the expert, by gathering data and using the information acquired, tries to control the error, caused by uncertainty, in attributing to a result an importance different from the actual one, and the risk that it may be improperly interpreted.

Before implementing a decision, a cardiologist, a surgeon, an engineer, a manager, a lawyer make an accurate estimation of every possible solution through the study, the examination and the evaluation of every piece of information at their disposal.

This coding of information entails the successive working out of a decisional assumption, which permits to link the new knowledge (lab tests results, concrete calculation, expertise) with the pre-existent mental schemes (acquired experience, specific culture in a given sector)

at the top of his career, he is also the repository of many notions and has to his credit numerous operations that lead him to foretell a pathology before it becomes manifest.

Experts can go wrong because the decision-making process does not diverge from the general procedure, which starts by the initial evaluation capability.

This latter is based on the collection and knowledge of all obtainable information and on the possible alternative ways at the expert's disposal.

The gathering and knowledge of every possible information about the case being examined is aimed at gaining a precise knowledge of the area where the action takes place (for a doctor: the patient's anamnesis, lab tests, X rays, previous occurrence of the same pathology, correlated illnesses, familiarity; for an engineer: reinforced-concrete calculation, geological situation of the ground, materials resistance; for a lawyer: judicial precedents, alibi, expert opinions and so on).

The expert has at his disposal

Théodore Géricault: "Officer of the 'Chasseurs à Cheval' in a charge".

in order to reduce to a minimum the sources of uncertainty, and therefore of error.

At the end of all this, the expert is ready to make a decision, and the more precise the gathering, assessment, interpretation of data is, the more adherent to the optimum solution the decision will be. Of course, everything ought to be sifted through one's own experience.

A negative decision is the outcome of: inaccurate gathering of data (not all the necessary tests are prescribed to the patient; superficial examination of the ground; wrong choice of witnesses); underestimation of symptoms (pain in the left arm undervalued and interpreted as cervical arthrosis; presence of water near the building's foundations); the expert's scarce knowledge in a given sector (gastroenterologist visits a cardiopath, a civil engineer plans an airplane; a criminal lawyer handles civil law); error of judgment and elaboration of information (lowering of voice believed to be pharyngitis and not a possible polyp of the vocal cords; cracks in the walls considered only a sign of ground settling); imprecise interpretation of the results (glycaemia increase thought to be only a temporary rise and not the first symptom of latent diabetes); underestimation (for a doctor: ascribing the cause of a symptom only to the psychic-emotional state of the patient).

NEGOTIATION

Also in this case the achievement of a fixed objective is the outcome of a careful decision. Contrary to the examples concerning the decision of experts, in negotiation we face

the case where it is not the individual who has to decide, but a group of persons. In this instance, the final result is the product of thinking minds with their own characteristics, personality, culture, social roots and different emotional states.

Therefore the set of events and variables that interfere in the decisional act, which before burdened a single individual, now weighs on a number of persons, endlessly multiplying all the possibilities of error. The ultimate aim of a negotiation is that of reconciling several

persons on a final objective that combines the reciprocal interests. Therefore one must coordinate the single individuals who constitute the confronting groups and see that each component does not feel autonomous in deciding, but operates as an expert in a given sector, so as to obtain a single decision which is the product of the individual opinions. Which seems easy, but can be obtained only through an immense effort and a remarkable amount of experience.

In case of a negotiation, the





objective is mostly known (an economic rise; a discount on a purchase and so on). The complication of the problem resides in deciding the moves that must be made in order to have our proposals accepted by the other side and, above all, convince them that their proposals are unfeasible.

In this role-playing, the decisional moves follow one another swiftly and only an alert mind, inured and trained for that purpose, can stand the pace without making gross mistakes of under- or over-evaluation of his own or somebody else's offers.

HELP IN MAKING A DECISION

There are some by now well-tested techniques, which greatly facilitate the process of making a decision.

Of course this methodology is used when pursuing complex solutions, which positively or negatively affect many people. It is difficult to employ them in everyday life, but this does not mean that they cannot be used.

They include: analysis of the decision, gathering of further

Anne Louis Girodet: "Apotheosis of the French Heroes fallen for the Motherland during the War of Liberty" (1802).

information, focusing techniques, artificial systems.

Analysis of the decision

It entails the assessment of the various stages of the decision-making process and leads to the choice most compatible with the fixed objective.

The evaluation envisages the

structuring of the decision-making process, the appraisal of consequences, uncertainties and alternatives and the analysis of sensitivities.

The structuring of the decision-making process allows an in-depth analysis of the problem, thus obtaining a precise picture of the objectives and of the various practicable ways (one can quantify the complexity of the problem and decide the possible interventions). If we go back to the first example of the tram, the taxi and the work appointment, we can structure the problem by giving priorities (one must not be late at the appointment, must reach the pre-established place at the fixed time, can use a tram or a taxi) thus the complexity of the problem becomes very small.

The evaluation of the consequences examines the repercussions (the severe one: loss of an opportunity).

The valuation of uncertainties (is average : one can go by taxi if the tram is late).

The valuation of alternatives (none is possible: being late means loss of an opportunity).

The analysis of sensitivities consists in changing the rates of probability of the events, observing how much the decision is sensitive to the following variations: by arriving late no opportunity is lost (it isn't true because the waiting party likes punctuality); perhaps the waiting party will be late (it isn't possible, the other party is always punctual).

The decision is not affected by variables, therefore one must be punctual.

Gathering of further information

It may happen that one has not



enough time to gather all the necessary information. In order to have a complete collection of the needed data, it is convenient to split up the problem in many little groups, which will be examined separately and then reassembled. Thus it is easier and simpler to make use of the information and find out the sector where our information is wanting.

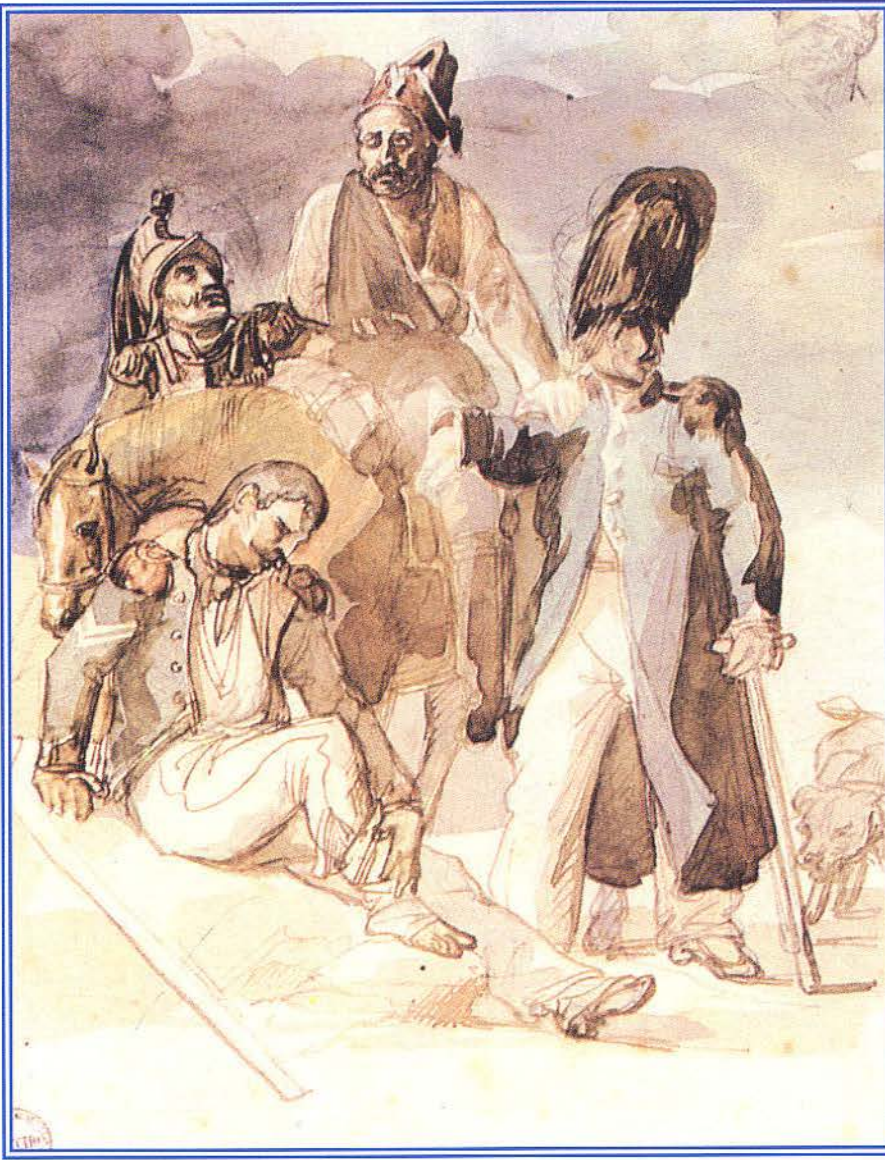
This technique is usually employed by stockbrokers and doctors who, by examining a great amount of data regarding stocks or analyses, show a high

degree of decisional uncertainty connected with the numerous data they have to examine. In order to reduce it, they tend to rescale their data.

Therefore, to make their task easier, they divide simplify, code and group the pieces of information, then they recombine them until they obtain a simplified scheme where only the most significant parameters stand out.

Focusing techniques

They are used to improve the



Théodore Géricault: "Wounded soldiers retreating from Russia".

range of notions, selected by sectors of investigation, and are employed when the mind's capacity is unable to solve a problem, or when the complexity of the tasks is such as to make the presence of several experts necessary.

The structure of an Expert System is made up by an information basis, concerning the notions specific to that sector, by the set of data received from the outside and by the explanations and conclusions on the reasoning effected in order to obtain the answers.

The Decision Support Systems, on the other hand, are programmes which supply several series of information otherwise unobtainable, permitting to use them in specific cases. They are formed by a data-base, a pattern (to which to compare), an interface and a user.

These Systems are particularly effective in solving problems in which the user's data are scarce or disorganized; they support rather than replace the decider's judgement, incrementing the decisional process notably.

Nevertheless, a good decision, leaving out artificial systems or exclusively human elaborations, not always corresponds to a good result, or vice versa.

According to the common yardstick and to the by now firmly established conception of everyday life, a decision is considered correct if it answers the requisites of usefulness, opportunity or convenience, otherwise it is deemed incorrect. This is because in daily life, as far as our decisions are concerned, we do not always value according to correctness or goodness. More frequently, we prefer values such as usefulness and the interest of the moment, if we do not go as far as choosing the ready-made

decider's ability to bring out logic judgements, capable of promoting a greater ability in sorting out the information or the group of data more profitable for reaching a good decision.

They are: the analysis of separate information (it examines every piece of information and for each piece expresses a decision); minimum focusing; subjective analysis of balanced sensitivity (summarily envisaging the final outcome by means of all the available information).

Artificial systems

Even if the human mind has infinite resources at its disposal,

there are situations where, in order to implement a quick, safe, precise and accurate valuation of a problem, one must make use of artificial systems. Suffice it to think of the help that these forms of constructed intelligence give to the astronauts in flight, through the formulation of new routes. The contribution given by artificial intelligence to the solution of complex problems is by now an unquestionable fact.

The systems can be divided into Expert Systems and Decision Support Systems.

The Expert Systems work in sectors where the intervention of an expert is required. They are programmes that have a wide

Théodore Géricault: "Wounded Cuirassier seated on a mound" (1814).

and tested solutions adopted in the past for similar problems. To the detriment of a serene decision, removed from emotional impulses linked with the decisional act.

DECISIONS IN EXTREME CONDITIONS

A decision is not always taken serenely, on the contrary we are often called to decide in a precipitous, impelling way, when we have only a few data, no information, scarce experience and are perhaps also in a particular psychic-emotional condition.

To decide while we are sitting at our desk, serene, self-possessed, relaxed is one thing, to do it in extreme situations, in which deciding is difficult and complicate, is another.

When emotionality, instinct and fear prevail, when only the man and his soul decide, when the balance of logic and culture decreases, when rationality and experience do not counteract the fragile nature of being ourselves, probably a wrong choice will be made.

The causes which lead to an extreme condition of decision are: age, illness, disability, (physical reasons); imprudence, contentiousness, ambition, timidity, hate, resentment, (psychological reasons); wrong strategies, false valuations (cultural reasons).

Most of these motivations are harboured in our soul, but a normal, averagely balanced person, controls, recombines, reins and proportions them. They do not prevail in the decisional moment, they only fill the niche of variables which, as we know, amalgamate and sometimes influence the final



choice. History is full of explicative examples of wrong decisions made under the predominance of one or more of these factors. Let's mention just a few cases.

Wrong strategies

The example of General Sir Reverse Buller proves a sequence of errors of evaluation, incomplete information, scarce elaboration of the data in hand which, in South Africa during the Boer war of February 1900, at Hussar Hill, resulted in an incredible massacre. A wrong attack strategy, in fact, led to the death of more than 90% of the

1700 soldiers engaged in the battle.

And yet Sir Reverse Buller was considered an exceptionally capable, genial, bold and prepared strategist, to the point that Queen Victoria, a few years before, had awarded him the Victoria Cross, the highest military decoration of the British Empire.

General Buller imprudently underestimated the battle: the wrong prevision produced a strategy which resulted in a crushing defeat and in the death of hundreds of young British soldiers..

Sir Reverse, in his frenzy of all-powerfulness, had stubbornly

and systematically ignored the information in his hands. Therefore he underestimated the rough ground that the soldiers had to negotiate in order to reach the hill occupied by the Boers, forced the troops chosen for the assault to an approach march of more than 40 kilometres, under a scorching sun and with little water for the entire day, with a temperature of 45 degrees. Moreover, he minimized the fatigue of his soldiers and, instead of making use of fresh troops for the attack, he compelled the entire Regiment, exhausted by the heat and the march, to rush forward and conquer the hill.

It was a real massacre. The Boers from the top of the hill fired mercilessly on the British troops that were already at the end of their strength. In only three hours they slaughtered an entire Regiment of 1700 gallant soldiers.

Ambition

General George Armstrong Custer, fierce enemy of the Indian Chief Crazy Horse, was one of the most mentioned and celebrated Commanders, and as for wish to excel he was second to no-one. Everybody knows the legendary Custer, the bold fearless hero, who stood up to the Indian waves riding around the circle of the 7th Light-Cavalry men, which got narrower and narrower.

But reality is indeed quite different. In June 1876, his Regiment sighted a large Indian camp. Although he was ordered not to attack it, on his way to the battle he answered: "the 7th Light Cavalry fights alone".

Therefore he split his Regiment into three columns. While the first two headed to the south and west of the encampment, he was drawn into a trap set by Crazy Horse, who forced him to fight in the space between a then

Jean Antoine Gros: "The battlefield of Eylau" (1808).

unknown stream, the Little Big Horn, and the hills.

Two hundred and eleven cavalymen died with him. Only the state of blindness induced by a craving for personal glory, by ambition, by a paranoiac impulse to stand out, can explain so much ineptitude in dividing the forces, in confronting a fifteen-times superior enemy and have himself bottled up in less than three hundred square metres of territory.

Illness

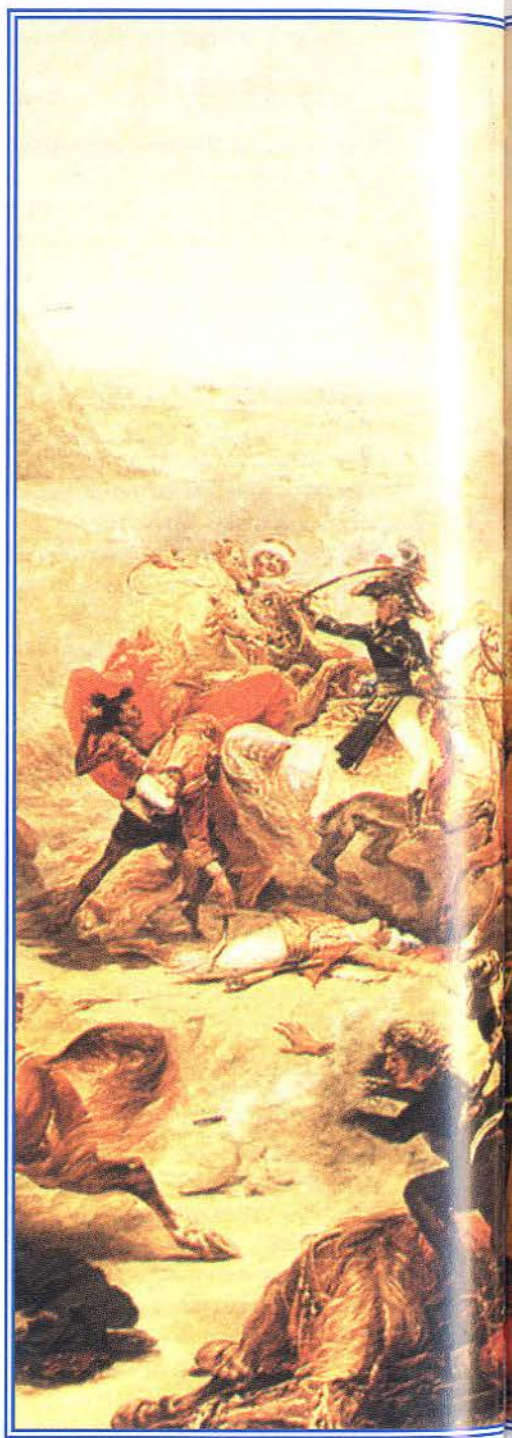
No military commander was ever more the object of accurate medical control than Napoleon Bonaparte.

Even if it is impossible to assert with absolute certainty that his various physical ailments did compromise in a determinant way his capacity of decision during his command action until 1807, undoubtedly still today there are questions about why Napoleon, in some crucial battles, adopted suicidal strategies and produced attack plans inconsistent with his tactical canons.

Fact is that, after 1807, the effects of the many hardships, deprivations and harsh conditions of life and nourishment, suffered in dozens of military campaigns, were the reasons for his decline.

Under the effects of the pain caused by duodenal ulcer, his mood changed, and he became grim, contemptuous, arrogant. He was intolerant of suggestions, looked down on his collaborators and started to lose readiness of mind in deciding, precisely when his Armies were invading Europe and his power was at its apogee.

At Borodino, Russia, in 1813, exhausted by a violent prostatitis, which had been tormenting him



for days, he lost control of the battle.

At Leipzig, Germany, a "stomach ache" left him in such a state that, when the colic ceased, he dozed off and thus was unable to organize an efficient and orderly retreat.

The consequences were disastrous. More than 10,000 young soldiers of the glorious



Great Army perished.

At Waterloo, Belgium, other infirmities prevented him from riding and thus he lost sight of the battle, which, entrusted to General Ney, came to a tragic end.

In normal conditions he was an unequalled leader, perhaps the best strategist of modern times but, in those years, the serene

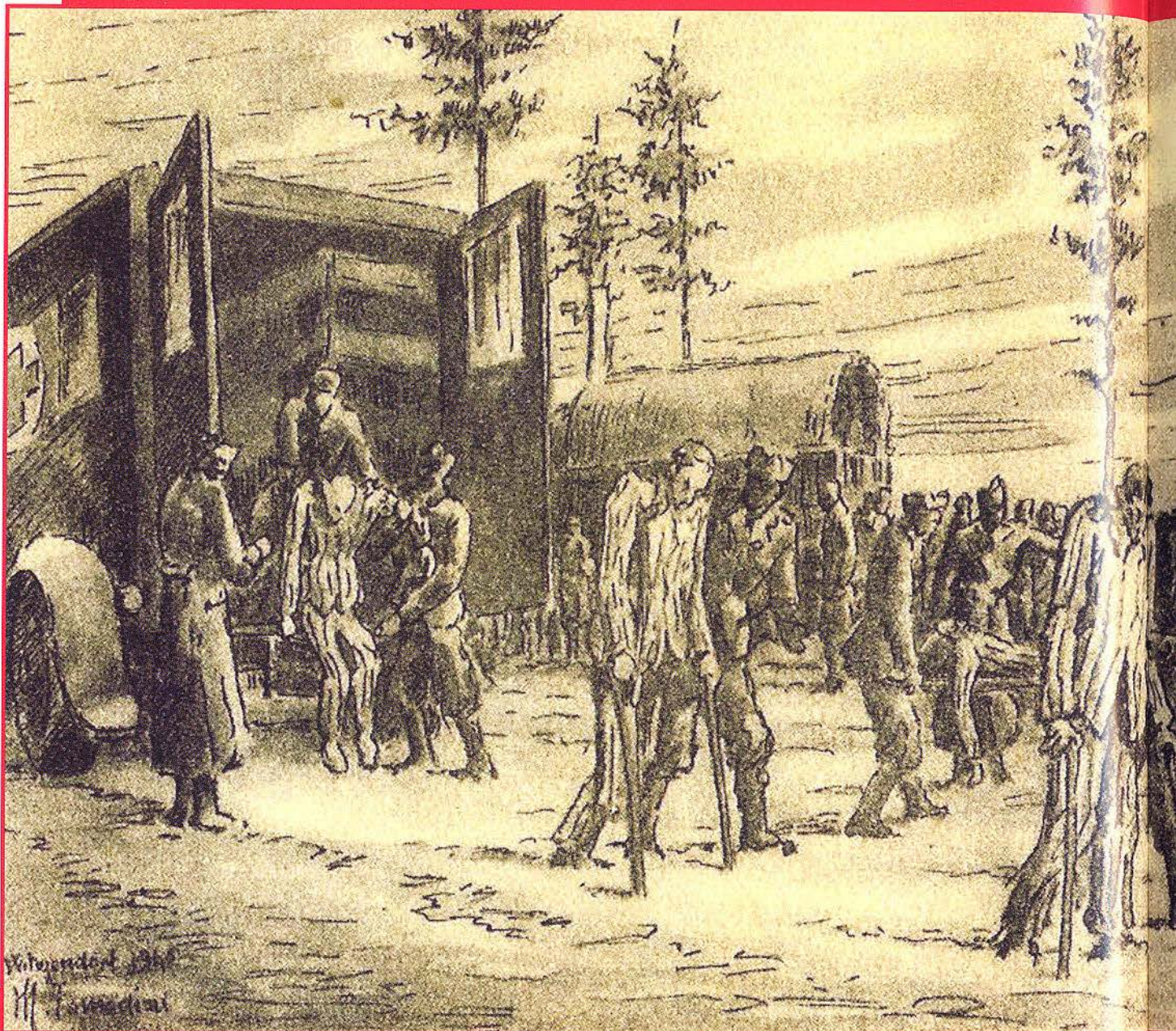
days free from physical problems were very rare.

In 1815, at Waterloo, the letups due to physical decline reached their maximum level, to the point that Sir Arthur Wellesley, Duke of Wellington, put off the attack on the French troops until the aches of the Emperor had revealed all their devastating presence. The French surren-

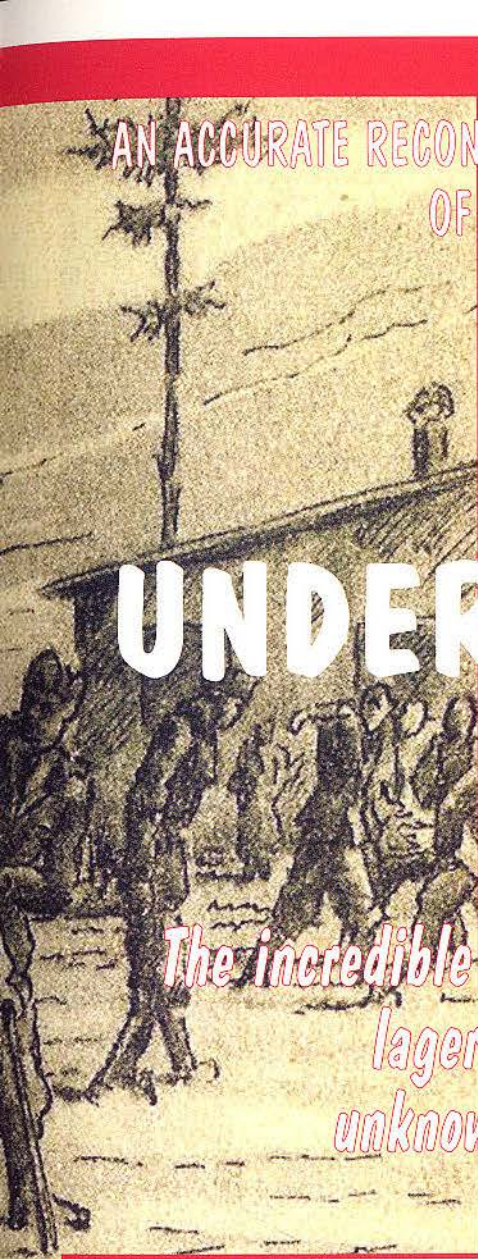
dered without even having the possibility of fighting with the ardour, the force and the determination that in 15 years had led them to conquer half of Europe.



**Lieutenant Colonel, MD,
Org Resources/Communication
Office, Army General Staff*



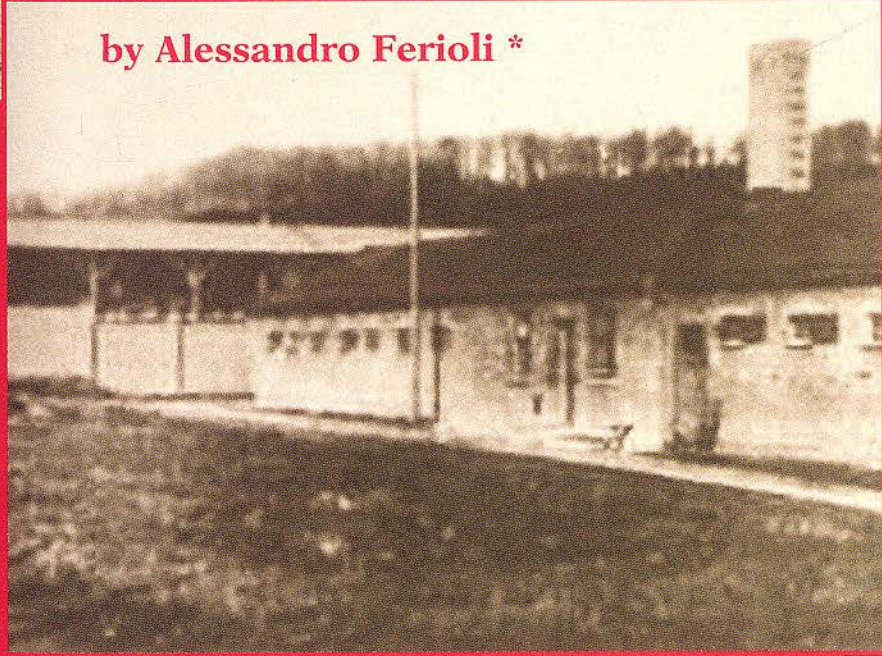
After the armistice of September 8, 1943, thousands of Italian servicemen were deported to Dora, a very secret and little-known concentration camp, and one of the most brutal in history. Dora was the underground detachment of Buchenwald, in Thuringia and, owing to its importance, was directly subordinate to the General Staff of the SS. It was the place where most V1 and V2 flying bombs – which were to pound the city of London implacably – were designed, tested and produced. It was also the place where experiments on human guinea-pigs were carried out. Among anguish and dignity, atrocity and pride, injustice and solidarity, our soldiers were the unwitting pioneers of the space age. They worked by the thousand for the experiments of scientists like Wernher von Braun, Helmuth Groettrup and Walter Dornberger. The conquest of space was attained at a very high cost and much blood was shed, also by many Italians.



AN ACCURATE RECONSTRUCTION – SUPPORTED BY A DIRECT TESTIMONY –
OF THE INFERNAL FACTORY THAT COULD HAVE CHANGED
THE COURSE OF WW II

FROM THE UNDERGROUND LAGER TO THE MOON

*The incredible story of our soldiers deported to the Nazi
lager of Buchenwald-Dora and their tragic and
unknowing contribution to the conquest of space*



by Alessandro Ferioli *

VON BRAUN'S SECRET UNDERGROUND PLANTS

In 1917, an important German industry, BASF, purchased a vast area on the Kohnstein hill, in Thuringia, and started to excavate its characteristic rock (of a very light colour and rich in anhydrite, a mineral useful for the realization of an explosive based on ammonia) constructing the first rudimentary tunnels. In 1934, a government-owned company, WiFo, settled there with the purpose of using those tunnels for sheltering military materials in case of need. In 1935, a massive extension and increase of the tunnels was planned in order to achieve a real



Dora: aerial photo of the lager.

"secret underground system", code-named "Ni 109". Work started the following year and laid the foundations of a structure constituting two main parallel tunnels, connected by a number of cross-galleries, which in 1943 reached the number of 46.

Therefore, at the outbreak of the war, it was natural that the responsible for the research on the development of armaments, who had to find installations where the production of the new weapons could be decentralized, would take into consideration also the "Ni 109" factory, besides the better known ones of Friedrichshafen (Zeppelin) and Wiener-Neustadt (Rax), while the research centre, where the scientists lived and worked, remained in Peenemuende. But in the summer of 1943, the British carried out a series of

carpet-bombings on the bases known to their intelligence service: on June 22 the Zeppelin industries were wiped out, on August 13 it was the turn of Rax and in the night of 17 and 18 August even Peenemuende, the heart of the research on missiles, was heavily bombed.

At that point it became necessary to transfer the whole production to "Ni 109" and Hitler entrusted the operation to Himmler, the SS leader, taking it away from the responsibility of Albert Speer, the armaments minister. The reasons for this were obvious: first of all the Fuehrer wanted to employ, as very low-cost manpower, the political deportees and prisoners of the nearby Buchenwald camp, managed by the SS; furthermore, the secrecy required by the circumstances imposed a very hard regime for the management of the new camp, permitting no leaks about the factory's existence and activity (therefore, from the very beginning, it was probably

envisaged that all those who worked in the tunnels would never leave the *lager* alive). Thus a detached headquarters was established in the underground structure. It was named "Dora" and was directly subordinate to Buchenwald. Dora was a *Geheimlager*, a secret camp, where the famous V1 and V2 rockets were going to be produced, together with Junkers airplane engines, synthetic gasoline and a new rocket called Typhoon (1).

LIKE MOLES

The first deported prisoners, about a hundred, arrived from Buchenwald at the end of August 1943. At that time only one tunnel had been excavated and it was necessary to enlarge and extend it with more digging and drilling. These tasks were assigned to the prisoners, who at the beginning did not even have the necessary tools and had to

work with their bare hands. They also had to carry the machines inside the tunnels, build huts and service sheds (which did not exist when they arrived), build a road system, a railway station (laying platforms, tracks, sleepers and gravel) and put up telephone poles.

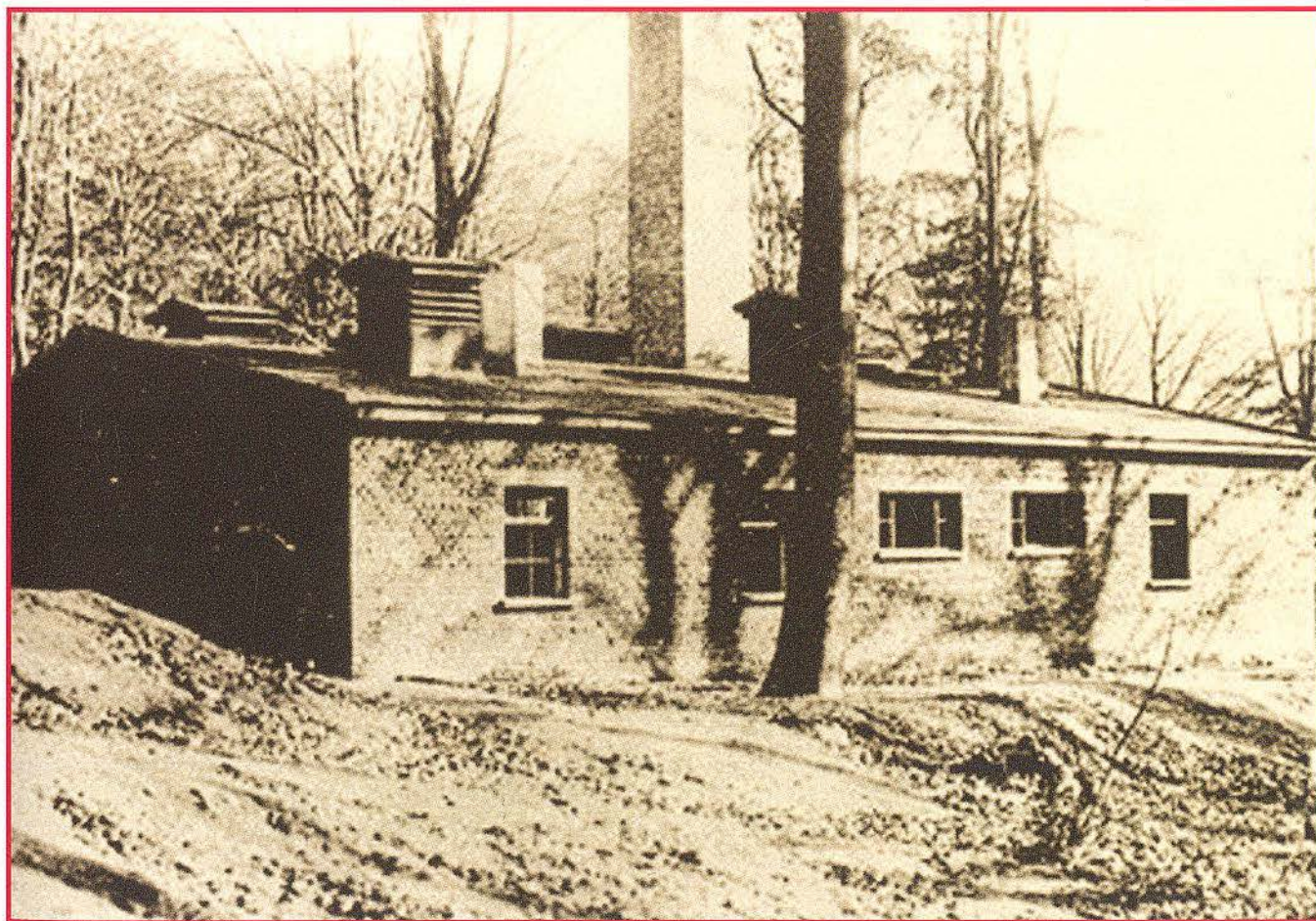
The machines that had to be moved by hand were so heavy that the prisoners, already greatly debilitated by scarce food and by beatings, were often crushed under them. To tunnel through the rock-wall, the technicians employed mines, whose explosions filled the air with dust and ammoniac gas which, added to the exhaust from the earthmoving machines and lift trucks, in the long run burned the men's lungs. There was neither heating nor ventilation. Work was non-stop and organized in two 12-hour shifts (day and night); about four/six

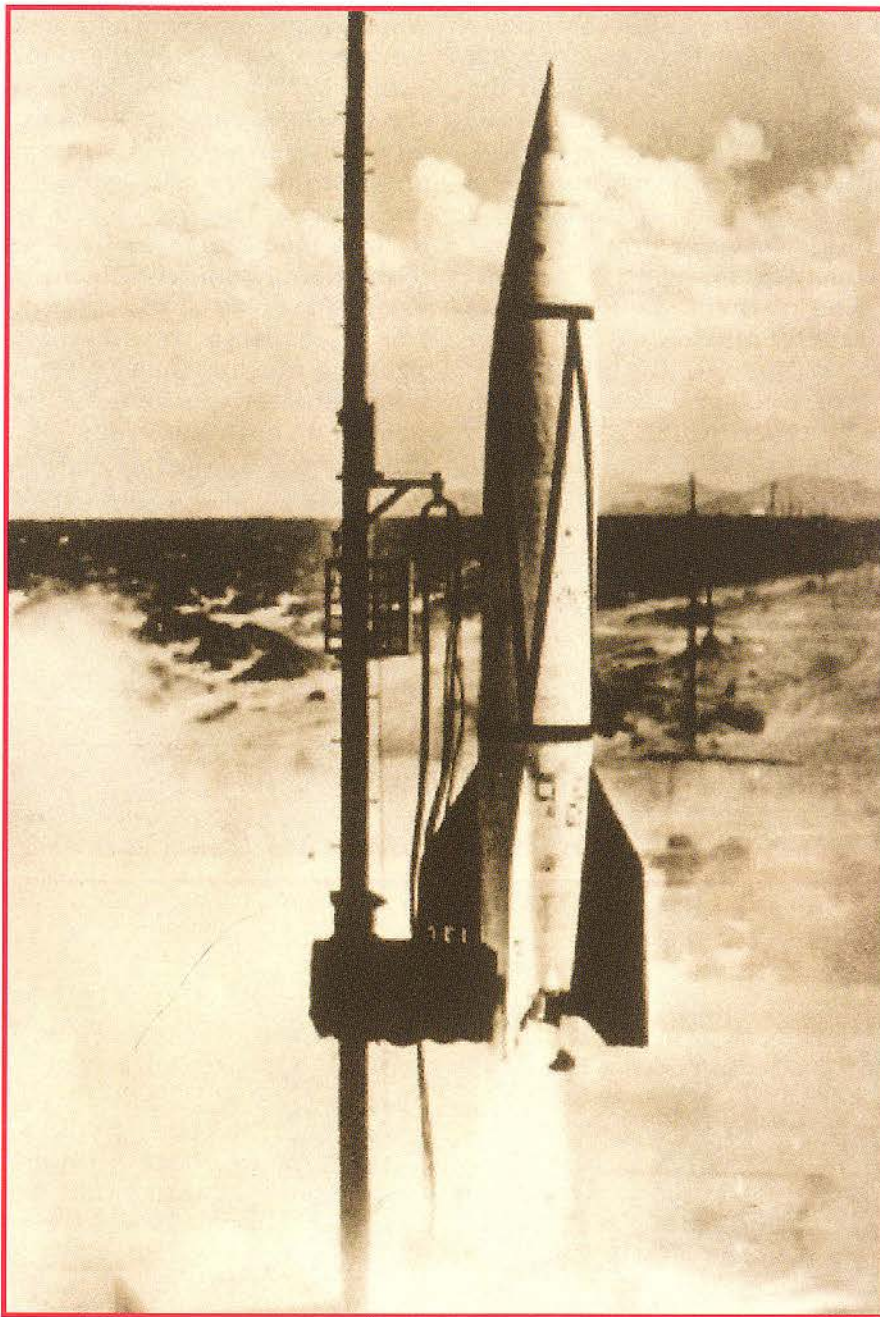
hours were used for controlling the prisoners, with an enervating succession of roll-calls. Since the construction of the camp itself started only in the spring of 1944, until then the convicts had to live in the tunnels, three hundred metres underground, without seeing the sunlight for months. Some of them, on leaving the tunnels, discovered that they could not tell the difference between colours. These men built two tunnels which were 1800m long and 8.50m high and were connected by forty-six 190m-long parallel galleries; some of them were deeper than the others, in order to accommodate the factory and the depot of the V2s.

Besides the periodical disinfections, no form of personal hygiene was envisaged; when one's face was covered with dust, it could be cleaned only with saliva or urine. For bodily needs, there were some open barrels

with a plank on top. Those who were compelled to use them (which happened often, owing to the widespread diarrhea) had to be ready to endure the SS' jeering and were often pushed into the pile of dung. Then they had to go back to their comrades, covered with excrements from head to toe, and the only way to clean up was by rolling in the dust. Drinking was forbidden, because potable water was kept for the operation of machines and cement mixers. Work was carried out in a darkness barely lightened here and there by the faint glimmer of a kerosene lamp or an electric bulb. The psychological resistance of the internees was put to a severe test by the deafening noise: the roar of machines and pneumatic

Dora: the crematory.





Launching of a V2.

morning, at midday, during the half-hour break, one was overcome by the pangs of hunger; if, on the contrary, something was kept in the pockets, one risked being robbed. The prisoner, therefore, had to "learn how to eat", shrewdly rationing his food, trying to appease his hunger also through his eyes and his smell, and to gratify his senses with the gesture of spreading the margarine and then chewing slowly, letting the food melt little by little in the saliva.

Then there were the continuous beatings by the *kapos* and the SS (kicks, slaps, and blows with rubber cudgels) and the growl of the Alsatian dogs, set by the Germans on the workers: a sound which would long torment the nightmares of the survivors. The workers were mostly political deportees and the leaders of the camp tended to interpret any delay in the execution of work or any suspicious gesture as sabotage, which was punished by hanging. The executions were carried out in public, with particularly dreadful procedures, so that they could serve as an example for all: a wooden stub was poked into the sentenced prisoners' mouth, they were to line up with a noose around their neck and finally put to death. Often, considering the high number of prisoners to be eliminated, things were sped up with group hangings, using a system of ropes connected to a winch, or even to a crane.

In March 1944, the Dora camp acquired its own furnace, suitable for cremating two corpses together; when the number of the bodies to be disposed of was too high for the capacity of the furnace, the corpses – after the extraction of the golden teeth by the SS – were

drills, the explosions, the yells of the *kapos*, the moans of the dying, the bell of the locomotives were an incessant sound track which, endlessly resounding and growing through the tunnels, invaded the ears and the brain of the workers. It was a continuous running and chasing, an unrelenting hustle and bustle in a spectral atmosphere. "It was like being in the cavern of a sorcerer" Col. Castillo, of the Intelligence Service of the 3rd US Division, said upon entering the

tunnels for the first time. Food consisted in a slice of bread, a little margarine and a piece of *wurst*, which were distributed in the morning and had to last all day; in the evening each prisoner was given one litre of turnip soup. It is disconcerting how the memorials show the difficulty for the prisoners to administer this scarce food which, on the other hand, was far from providing the minimum indispensable caloric supply: if everything was immediately eaten up in the

piled up in an external area and burned in the open. The particular harshness of the discipline, exceptional even for a Nazi *lager*, can be explained by considering that at Dora the *kapos* were selected among common criminals (who wore a green triangle) and that, at the beginning of 1945 when, with the advance of the Red Army, Auschwitz was evacuated, the tormentors of that camp all went to Dora. To secure the prisoners' submission and the punctual execution of the work, the SS knew only one way: keeping the deportees in a state of incessant fear.

The camp had an infirmary (*revier*) to which the prisoner could have recourse if their temperature was higher than 39 degrees or if they had an accident at work: the medics were improvised, and performed surgical operations with no competence and without anaesthesia, but on the contrary

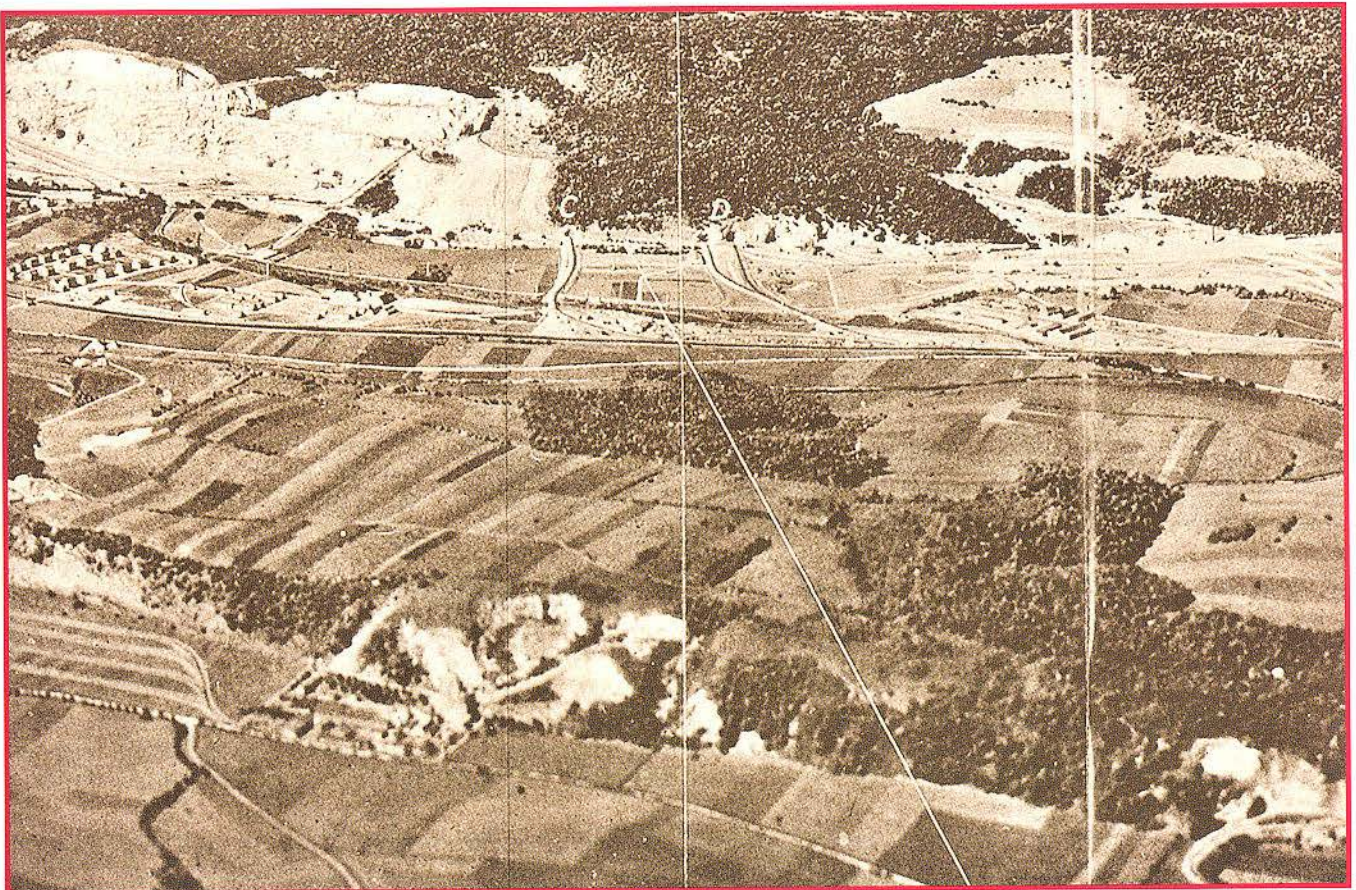
they were very skilled in beating up the unruly patients. Those who went to the *revier* had to be prepared to endure every kind of outrage, both when they went there (a witness remembers a German doctor who forced a Russian with bad legs to dance in the middle of the room) and when they returned, in case they had been declared fakers. Several former prisoners declared that in the infirmary there had been experiments on the sick: a serum which caused death by gangrene was tested on some patients, others were immersed in a tub full of water which was then frozen while a doctor timed their resistance. In January 1944, since the infirmary had reached a considerable number of inmates, the SS collected a thousand men between patients and healthy deportees (in order to reach the planned number) and sent them by train to the Lublin-Maidanek *lager*, described as a special camp, almost a sanatorium, but

actually well-known as a particularly efficient extermination camp. Other similar convoys left Dora at the beginning of February and at the end of March, headed to Bergen-Belsen: there the sick prisoners, already moribund, were finished with bucketfuls of ice water or, if they did not die fast enough, with intravenous injections of gasoline.

SEVEN HEROES IN GREY-GREEN

On October 8, 1943 the first group of Italian military internees (IMI) arrived at Dora. They were soldiers who, after the armistice of September 8 had been captured by the Germans and refused to support the Nazi-

Dora: aerial view of the Nordhausen factory.





Deportees at work.

deportees did not harbour a great liking for them since their political ideas could not be recognized at once. Furthermore, the Italians were less numerous than the other nationals and this made them weak; they were not advised by their Officers and were not spiritually assisted by their chaplains; in most cases they had little education and could not communicate in German. Besides, the IMIs could not correspond with their families or receive any aid from humanitarian organizations.

The tragedy occurred on December 14, 1943. For some days an half-litre supplement of turnip soup had been dispensed to all the prisoners assigned to drilling, with the exception of the Italians. Thus, seven of these turned to their *kapo* demanding an equal treatment and, faced with a firm refusal, declared their intention of abstaining from work. The guard immediately informed the SS Officer on picket duty in the tunnel, probably without specifying the reason of the problem. The German called the seven Italians in order to question them, but they could not understand a single word of his language and he could not make out their attempts at explaining themselves with gestures. Annoyed, the Officer had them jailed with the accusation normally attributed to those who obstructed work: sabotage. (2)

The next day (December 15), early in the afternoon, the SS ordered Sergeant Luigi Liegi to take command of fifty Italians and lead them to a slightly raised open space near a shed. Once there, Liegi was told that he and his men were going to witness the execution of their seven comrades, who would be publicly shot as an example for all the

Fascist cause. There were 27 of them, between NCOs and privates, all skilled in the building trade; they were immediately sent to work in the tunnels, where they were soon decimated by exhaustion and accidents. These first arrivals were followed by others in November. The living conditions

of our soldiers were even more tragic than the deportees', owing to the special rancour that surrounded them: in the Germans' opinion they were traitors and double-crossers who, following the King and Badoglio, had sold themselves to the Anglo-Americans and deserved to be treated as such; even the political

others: "You must be eyewitness, as sons of the nation which betrayed us – said the SS Major – and because the Germans are now compelled to continue their fight alone, till the final victory". One of them could not even walk because he had typhus: taken out of the infirmary on a stretcher, he was dropped at the appointed place. After that, the execution took place and the corpses were sent to Buchenwald for cremation.

All eyewitnesses reported that the seven Italian soldiers refused to be blindfolded and behaved with great dignity. Osiride Brovedani, a political deportee, reported: "They went to their execution as real soldiers, without hesitation or weakness, refused the blindfold and died like heroes"; another prisoner, private Pasquale Romano, recalled that "they refused to be blindfolded and some of them opened their shirts, exposing

their bare chests to the executioners". Sergeant Liegi declared: "They faced death with an astonishing willpower and refused to be blindfolded".

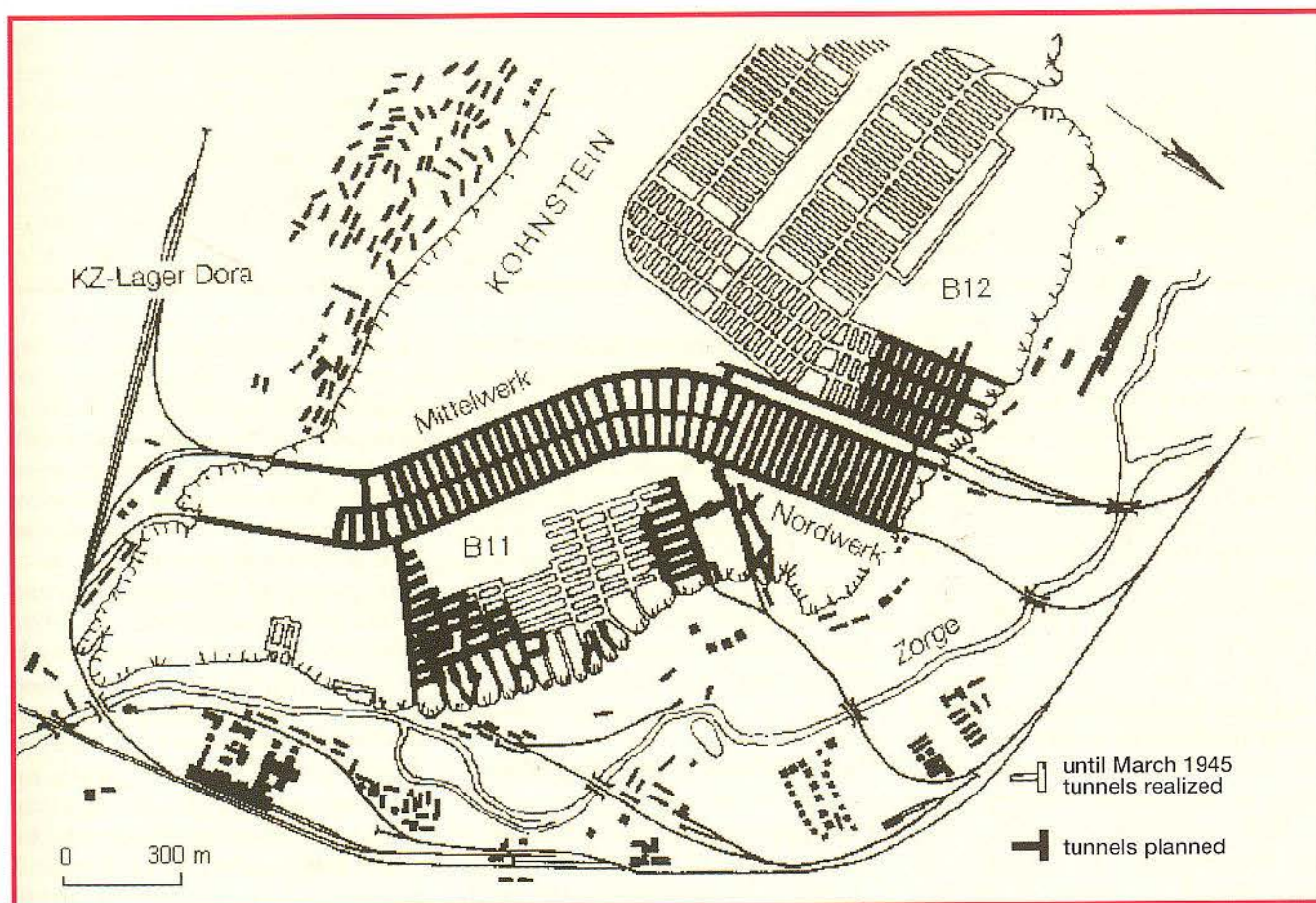
Their names deserve remembering:

- Baccanelli Giuseppe (s.n. 0457), 5th "Alpini" Rgt, born at Borno (Brescia) on March 10, 1924;
- Bianchet Erminio (s.n. 0276), Frontier Guard, born at Tarzo (Treviso) on November 1, 1921;
- De Noni Giacomo (s.n. 0456), Railway Engr Rgt, born at Revine Lago (Treviso) on April 20, 1921;
- Flematti Efisio (s.n. 0275), 5th "Alpini" Rgt, born at Spriana (Sondrio) on October 17, 1924;
- Mossoni Carlo (s.n. 0458), 74th Inf Rgt, born at Breno (Brescia) on February 23, 1914;
- Cpl Moz Ernesto (s.n. 0279), 17th Sector, Frontier Guard, born at Revine Lago (Treviso) on December 17, 1921;

- Scola Giovanni (s.n. 0278), Engineer Corps, born at Falcade (Belluno) on April 26, 1921.

Some testimonies underline that the real issue was the non-application to the Italians of the treatment due to prisoners of war. In fact – as Jean Michel, a French political deportee, says – just outside the *lager* there was a camp for prisoners of war where, initially, also the Italian servicemen were interned. Every morning they left the compound and went to the concentration camp to carry out their work, but one evening, without warning, they were forbidden to go back to the usual camp and ordered to remain with the deportees. Therefore, their protest should be considered a precise appeal for

Dora: original plan of the tunnels.



IN VON BRAUN'S FACTORY

A conversation with a survivor from Dora.

Angelo Pezzoli was born in Bologna on May 27, 1922. On September 8, 1943 he was a sergeant with the "Re" 2nd Infantry Regt and was captured in Fiume on September 19. He arrived at the Dora *lager* on October 10, 1944 and was registered with number 03197. He was then assigned to hard labour in the factories of Hitler's secret weapons. When he was freed by the British he weighed a little more than 31 kilos.

In what sector did you work and what was your job?

At the beginning I worked as a test-driver with Volkswagen, in a secret place called K.d.F. (now Wolfsburg Rothenfeld). This lasted until the first bombing, which took place on June 20, 1944. Then I was sent to Schoenebeck am Elbe, to a former radiator factory, where parts of V1s and V2s were assembled. On October 3, 1944 I was transferred to Dora, to test V1s and sometimes V2s.

Did you ever see technicians or scientists in the Dora tunnels?

Now and the some civilians arrived; they were interested in the V1s and V2s, discussed among themselves and went away. None of these gentlemen ever said a word to us, and I don't think they were interested in our dreadful conditions.

Were there sabotages, at Dora, against the installations or against the weapons being constructed?

We could not do any act of sabotage because the tester had to put his identification mark on each part; after that, the test was confirmed by a Major of the Luftwaffe. At most, sabotages could take place in the arsenal, where the rockets were filled with explosive. On December 1, 1944, at the end of work, they told me to take my tools with me. I was put on a truck whose tarpaulin was rolled up (and it was cold, really cold!). Around me there was an escort of fifteen armed SS. When we arrived, I was shown three V1s that had not taken off at launching, and was asked why. I removed a finger-size little tube, 70-80 cm long, which carried the pulverized gasoline to the radiator-motor of the bombs: it was full of aluminium filings, a material that was not used in the factory. I said to the SS Major who questioned me that in our department that kind of material did not even exist and therefore the sabotage had been done elsewhere. On my return, with no food and no sleep, I had to go back to work. My shift started at 9 p.m.; I arrived at 8,30 p.m. I was called outside and the *oberkapò* administered 50 lashes on my buttocks, because I had wasted time... in proving that I was not a saboteur. In those conditions, without food and sleep, and with my backside burning badly, I had to carry out the usual 12-hour shift.

the SS to observe the norms established by the Geneva Convention (which, as is known, the German always refused to apply to the Italian prisoners) (3).

Considering the testimonies, I think it is hardly the case to observe that such behaviour, which undoubtedly was one of the many refusals opposed to the Nazis by our soldiers at the cost of their lives, was spontaneous and occurred in a condition of great spiritual isolation (owing to the small number of compatriots present, the lack of Officers and – in that particular situation – also of older men that could be consulted for advice). Neverthe-

less, the seven soldiers did not recede from their position. At this point, I believe that the foregone conclusion is that those brave young soldiers deserve – even if awarded tardily – a posthumous Gold Medal for military valour, considering that in those days no one could have made the proposal, since in the *lager* there was obviously no Italian military authority(4).

THE SS' LAST ATROCITIES

Altogether about 138,000 men were deported to Dora; roughly 90,000 did not return. But, more

than from statistics, a rather clear idea of the number of deaths can be derived from a passage of Giovanni Araldi's presentation at a Convention of Studies held at Salsomaggiore on 25-26 October 1997: "In order to give a concrete demonstration of this mortality, I am going to read some serial numbers and the only still-existing original cards of Block 18, the hut of the Italian soldiers. These cards were drawn up by the block-leader, Mario Mali, a Czechoslovak with an Italian mother. He had made them for the deceased of the camp and, at the risk of my life, I succeeded in collecting them

during the whole time of my imprisonment. I took them to Italy, and now I read some serial numbers of the deceased, in order to make you see that, between one number and the next, very little space remained for the living. We can start – let's say – from 0166, 0167, 69, 71, 75, 77, moving forward to 185, 86, 87, 91, 93, 94, 95, 96, 98, 99, 200, 201, 2, 4, 5, 6, 7, 9, 11, 12, 16. Such was the mortality of the Italian soldiers at camp Dora: as you can see, between a number and the following one there are very few survivors.

At the end of March 1945, when the troops of the Third Reich were already routed on all fronts, an order from Himmler arrived at the camp: all prisoners were to be eliminated, to conceal the horrors committed by the Nazis, safeguarding at the same time the secrets of the new weapons. At first the SS decided to assemble all prisoners inside the tunnels for a general roll-call, with the purpose of blasting the exits after filling the galleries with poison gas. But once the prisoners were inside, several trucks arrived from all over the region, full of civilians fleeing from the massive Allied bombings and determined to find shelter precisely there. While the deportees were desperately trying to mingle with the civilians, despite their striped prisoner's uniform, the Wehrmacht entered the scene and, after an argument with the SS, took charge of the tunnels, thus thwarting the wicked plan.

However, the SS were not going to give in so easily. On April 4 the prisoners (about 12,000) received a piece of bread and a small tin of meat, together with the order to take with them a blanket and a mess tin and prepare to depart on cattle trailers. So, a gruesome convoy of doomed men set off, and after some days arrived in Bergen, from where the column

proceeded on foot towards Belsen. Those who had not died of hunger during the transfer by train or out of exhaustion during the march would be eliminated through a distribution of poisoned bread. But the SS' plan was dashed by the continuous bombings until, on April 15, the prisoners saw the Allied tanks approaching, and were set free. Several other prisoners from Dora ended up in other places and died in the most atrocious ways. Dora had already been freed by the British; many SS kept a very low profile and quietly returned to their homes as normal demobilized soldiers.

And what about the scientists? At the beginning of April 1945, when the Third Reich was already collapsing, Wernher von Braun escaped with several truckloads of papers and projects, hid the precious documents in a cave and reported to the US Headquarters: he was immediately recruited and sent overseas with many of his expert collaborators, with whom he was later to set up the NASA. Some of his colleagues, like Helmut Groettrup, were engaged by the Russians and hoped to start new projects without Von Braun's cumbersome presence. The results were soon to be seen on both sides: research and development programmes on V2s started in the US and the USSR, with hundreds of experimental launchings. Intercontinental missiles equipped with rocket-engines similar to the V2s were built, and in October 1957 the Soviets put into orbit the Sputnik, the first artificial satellite, followed some months later by an American one. Later, it would be the first man in orbit and the landing on the moon.

We owe all these fundamental steps in the history of astronautics – as well as those that would follow, starting from space shields – to their father Wernher von Braun and to Dora.

Nevertheless, in order to send a few men to the Moon, how many men suffered on Earth and deep in its bowels, and how much blood was shed, also by our fellow countrymen in grey-green uniforms!

□

**Professor
of Letters*

NOTES

(1) Dora was a kommando of Buchenwald's until October 28, 1944, when it became autonomous with the name of *Dora Lager Mittelbau*, with at least 32 "undercamps". Two of them were Ellrich and Nordhausen. The name Mittelbau referred to the group of installations around Dora.

(2) Actually, sabotages were very frequent and consisted in delaying the assemblage of missiles or damaging them. They were mainly carried out by politically organized groups of prisoners, such as the French and the Russians.

(3) Michel: Dora, p.102 and Slama: "Tears of Stone", p.44. The SS' consciousness of violating the Geneva Convention in denying the status of prisoners of war to the Italians can also be seen from the fact that they changed the prisoners' serial numbers to others starting with zero. At the end of December, probably owing also to these protests, the Italians succeeded in getting a separate hut (still inside the *lager*), marked by number 18.

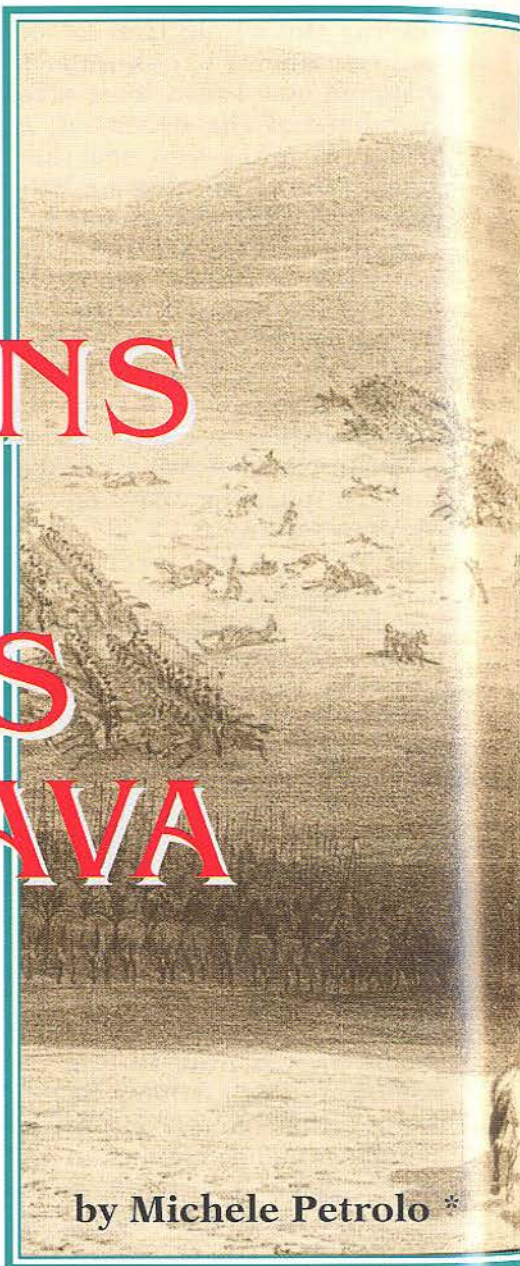
(4) Decorations for Military Valour are awarded to those who have knowingly faced "a serious and clear personal risk in war events", performing "a daring deed that could have been omitted without breaking the laws of duty and honour", setting "an example worth imitating" (art.3, Royal Decree November 4, 1932, no 1423). These qualifications are all there, since: first, an unarmed rebellion against the SS is certainly a daring enterprise; second, the act could have been omitted with no detriment to military honour; third, the act implied a very evident risk, to the point that it caused the loss of the prisoners' life; fourth: still today, that deed is a great and noble example to all men in arms.

The famous charge of the six hundred heroes of the Light Brigade included two Italians who distinguished themselves on the field, deserving the allies' praise for their valour

TWO ITALIANS AMONG THE HEROES OF BALAKLAVA

On October 25, 1854, during the Crimean War, Captain Giuseppe Govone and Lieutenant Giuseppe Landriani took part in the battle, despite their position as liaison Officers

Among the brave six-hundred who charged at Balaklava in the ranks of the Light Brigade, two Italians decided to follow the British allies conquering, stirrup to stirrup, every inch of land battered by arrays of artillery. The many voids were filled by other horses and cavalymen who closed ranks, thus permitting a new charge. Captain Giuseppe Govone and Lieutenant Giuseppe Landriani, wounded in the battle, deserved the gratitude of Queen Victoria. We are now able to shed light on an event which had disappeared from the history books.



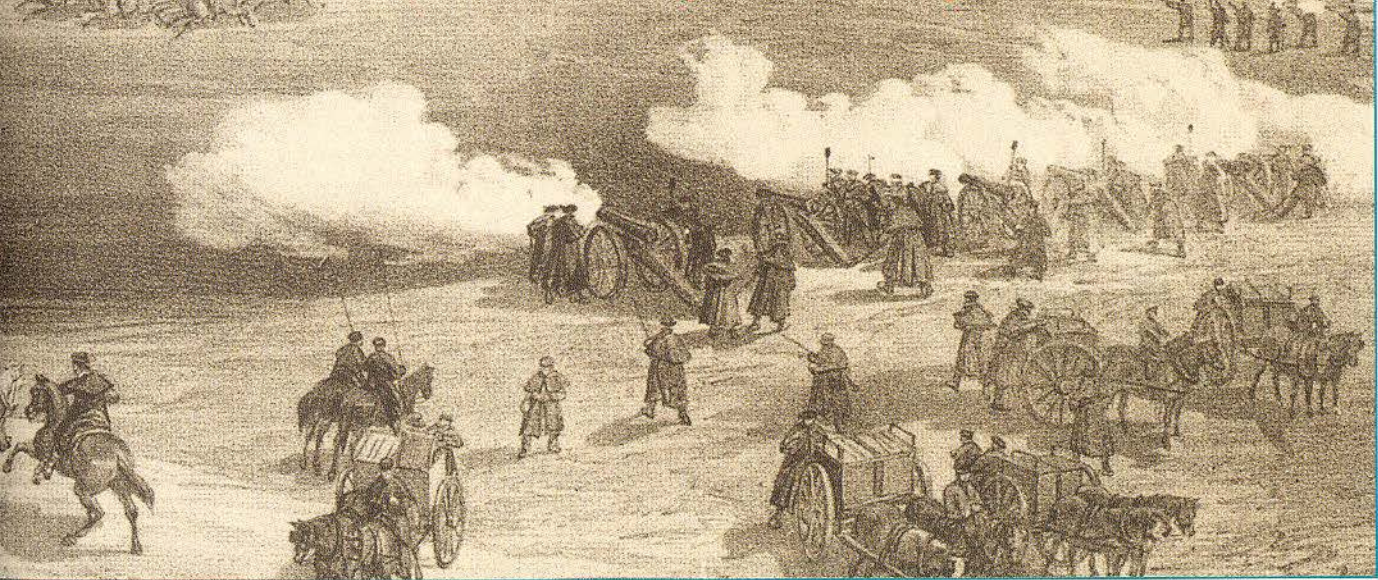
by Michele Petrolo *

History has apparently forgotten, or at least overlooked, an event that makes us feel closer to one of the most famous battles of all times: the charge of Balaklava.

Two Italian Officers, Captain Giuseppe Govone of the General Staff, and Lieutenant Giuseppe Landriani, of the "Piemonte Reale" Cavalry Regiment, took part in the famous charge of the Six Hundred. An extraordinary and little-known episode where two compatriots of ours distinguished themselves on the field, were wounded and won the

*Half a league, half a league
Half a league onward,
All in the valley of Death
Rode the six hundred.
Forward, the Light Brigade!
Was there a man dismay'd?
Not tho' the soldier knew
Some one had blunder'd:
Their's not to make reply
Their's not to reason why,
Their's but to do and die:
Into the valley of Death
Rode the six hundred.*

(Alfred Lord Tennyson, "The Charge of the Light Brigade")



appreciation and gratitude of Queen Victoria.

A century and a half has elapsed since that tragic 1853 when, in the distant Crimean peninsula, strategic epicentre of the Black Sea, the so-called "Crimean War" flared up.

France and Great Britain support Turkey in the conflict and in 1855 are joined by the Kingdom of Sardinia.

Russia has had for centuries the aspiration to become "the Third Rome" (after the Western and Eastern Roman Empires) and aims at controlling the whole

European shore of the Dardanelles as far as the Mediterranean, expanding its supremacy over the entire Balkan peninsula which, since the VI Century has increasingly been invaded by Slavs.

On the basis of this considerations, Russia wants Sultan Abdul Mejid I to acknowledge its protection of the Greek Orthodox subjects. The Sultan refuses and Russia, in retaliation, occupies Walachia and Moldavia (July 3, 1853).

"The Porte" (or "Sublime Porte"), as the Court and Government

of the Ottoman Empire are called, (the term derives from the ancient custom of the Oriental Monarchs to administer justice sitting near the gate of their Palace), responds by declaring war on Russia. (October 4, 1853). In March 25, 1854 Turkey is joined by Great Britain and France, with a total force of 59,000 men. Austria, although it supports the coalition, remains neutral, because Russia withdraws from Walachia and Moldavia. Between April and May 1855, the Anglo-French units are supplemented by an expeditionary force sent by the Kingdom of



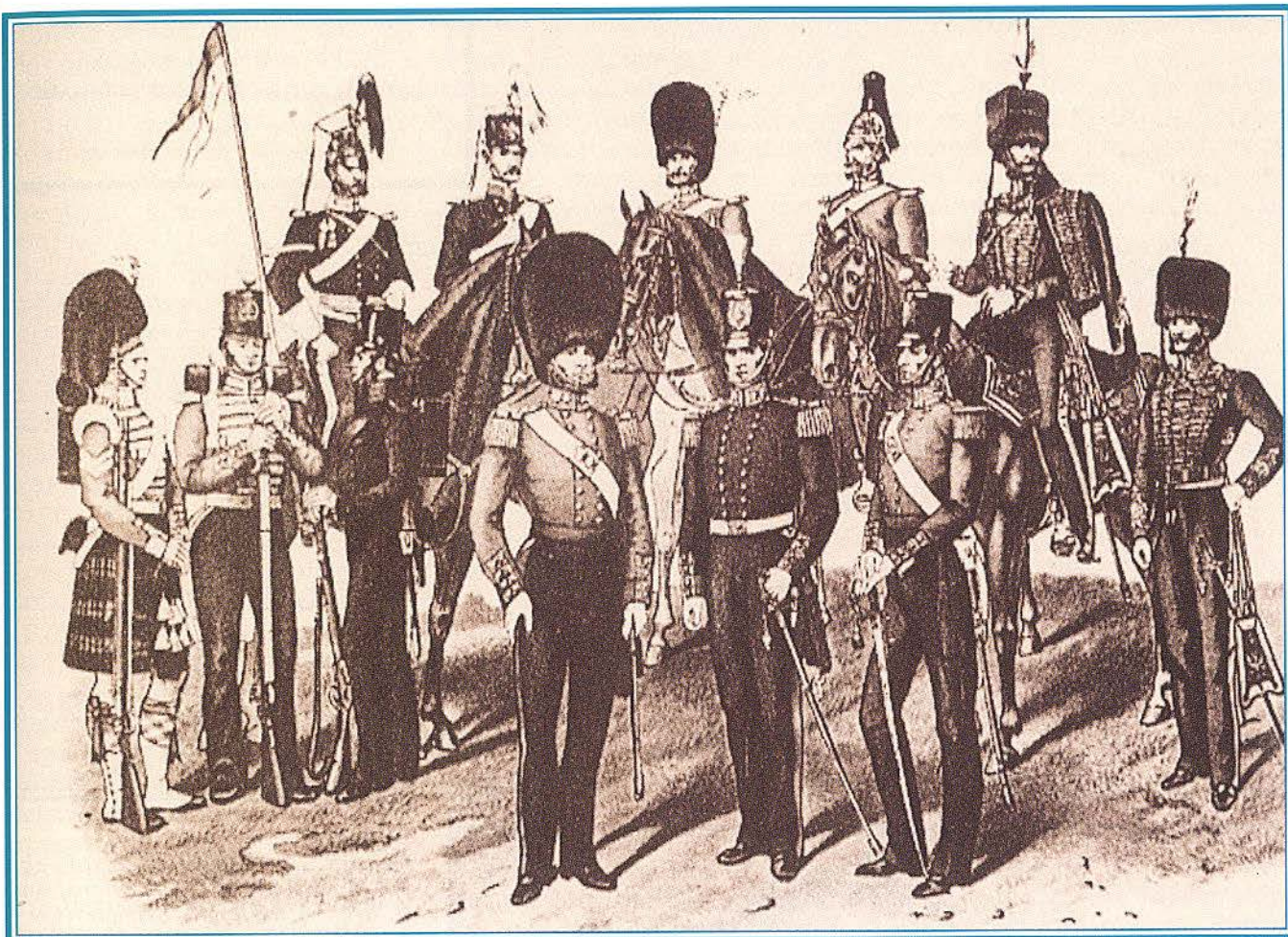
Sardinia: 15,000 men, drawn up into two Divisions of two Brigades each, plus a Brigade in reserve. The Sardinian Commander is General Alfonso La Marmora.

The intervention of the small European country, not directly interested in the Oriental questions, is the product of the intelligent diplomacy and far-sighted intuition of its Prime Minister, Camillo Benso Count of

Cavour. He understands the possible benefits of a direct participation in the conflict in terms of increased consideration, authority and prestige of the Sardinian Kingdom, which was heavily penalized by the negative outcome of the campaigns of 1848 and 1849. Cavour feels that there is now the possibility of obtaining France and Great Britain's assent and help to his fervent and

onerous commitment to realize a free, independent and united Italy. This expectation is certainly met thanks to the remarkable contribution given by the bravery of the Italian Expeditionary Force in Crimea, which excites the attention and admiration of the political and military world.

The charge of Balaklava fits in this historical context. The event is a further proof of the valour



Above.

Uniforms of the British units which took part in the battle of Balaklava. On horseback, from left to right: 17th Lancers, 4th Light Dragoons, 2nd Dragoons, 1st Royal Dragoons, Officer of the 11th Hussars. Standing, from left to right: corporal of the 93rd Scots Infantry, soldiers of the 14th Infantry and Fusiliers Brigade, Officers of the Grenadier Guards, Royal Artillery, 26th Infantry and Royal Horse Artillery.

Facing page.

Map of the Sevastopol area.

and courage of our soldiers. In this regard it is worth underlining that, at the time of the battle, the Kingdom of Sardinia had not yet got into the war. In the long chain of events of the Crimean campaign, the Sardinian Army displays valour and skill, rousing

the respect and appreciation of allies and enemy alike.

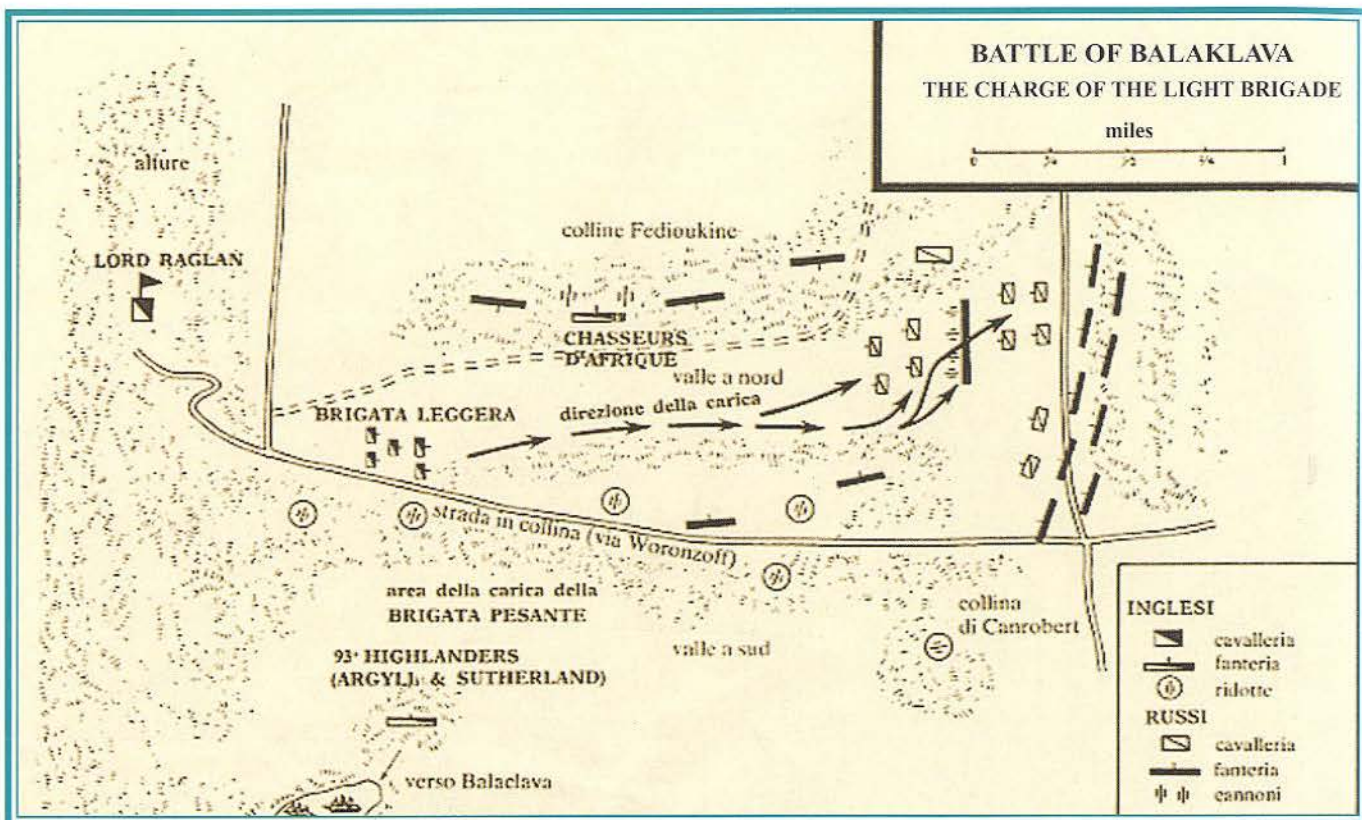
The tragic "Charge of the Six Hundred" is widely diffused and exalted in literature, cinema, etc. Suffice it to think of the famous ballad by Alfred Lord Tennyson – which extols in an admirable manner the valour of the British cavalymen – and of the films on that subject. At this point one could ask: what is the meaning of the participation of two Italians, who have no obligation whatsoever?

Govone and Landriani are sent on assignment by the Sardinian Government to the Turkish Sultan. Several European Countries have interests – sometimes conflicting – in the war. Consequently, the Orient becomes an international dispute ground and, from the technical-operational viewpoint, a very interesting manoeuvring field for

modern armies.

The two Officers' mission is part of a far-reaching programme accomplished by Cavour. Giuseppe Govone is selected because of his excellent military and diplomatic qualities.

From the very beginning of his career he has successfully carried out several assignments. He graduates from Turin's Academy in 1845 and participates in the war of 1848, fighting in violent battles. Later he takes part in the repression of Genoa's uprising. Govone is highly thought of by General Alfonso La Marmora, who considers him one of the best Officers in the Army. He goes on educational tours to Vienna and Berlin. With his studies and experiences he contributes to the reorganization of the Army and, besides, creates a modern and efficient intelligence service. He goes to Crimea as a Staff Officer.



Above.

Graphic representation of the positions held by the Russians, and Charge of the Light Brigade (Cecil Woodham-Smith, "Balaklava, the Charge of the Six Hundred", Milan, 1981, Rizzoli ed.).

Left.

General Giuseppe Govone.



He takes part in the war of 1859 and successively is elected to the Chamber of Deputies. As a Division Commander, Gen Govone is actively engaged in the operations against brigands in Central-Southern Italy and Sicily. He deals, with remarkable skill, with Prussian Chancellor Von Bismarck for the alliance treaty of 1866. As Commander of the 9th Division, he displays excellent professional qualities, despite the serious mistakes of the High Commands that would eventually lead to defeat. He is appointed Army Chief of Staff and then

Minister of War. Unfortunately he dies aged forty seven. Govone's life is characterized by many remarkable activities in the Country and Army's service; he carries out his work not only in the strictly military field but also in the political, diplomatic and social sectors, always with an extraordinary skill. A careful scrutiny of the various events of his life proves his high moral and patriotic qualities, together with a profound generosity and a delicate urbanity.

At the beginning, the Turkish Army is concentrated in the Danubian region, between the present-time Romania and Bulgaria, in defence of the borders of the Empire. Its organization and training are not up to the European armies' and Govone gives a significant contribution to improve the situation, also by pointing out some faults in the defensive organization and in the operational plans. In October 1853 the war breaks out and the first border clashes take place. Govone follows the operations on the Danube and, in particular, he observes the battle of Oltenitza, located a few kilometres to the south-east of Bucharest, and gives sound suggestions about the defensive organization of Calafat, near the border of the present-time Rumania, Bulgaria and Serbia. After various battles, the Russians leave the Danubian region.

The operations theatre moves on to Crimea, where the Allied forces begin the long siege of Sevastopol, which is firmly held by the Russians.

The situation is extremely difficult for the Allies, particularly as regards logistics. It is precisely here that they realize that they need a through reorganization. Among other complications, there

is a very serious sanitary problem which is enormously worsened by a cholera epidemic.

In the Orient, Govone, besides having very good relations with the Allies, improves his experience and his knowledge, especially with the purpose of devising new operational and organizational concepts.

In October 25, 1854, the British Cavalry Division commanded by General Lord George Bingham, Earl of Lucan, is in the neighbourhood of Balaklava, a locality near Sevastopol. It consists of : the Heavy Brigade commanded by Brigadier General James Yorke Scarlett (Scots Greys, 4th Dragoon Guards, Royals, 5th Dragoon Guards, Inniskillings); the Light Cavalry Brigade commanded by Brigadier General Lord James Thomas Brudenell, 7th Earl of Cardigan (the knitted, long-sleeved woollen jacket, worn during the campaign, was named after him) formed by the 4th Light Dragoon Regiment, 7th Lancer Regt, 8th Hussar Regt, 13th Light Dragoon Regt, 11th Hussar Regt. After several encounters between British, French and Turks on one side and Russians on the other, the British Commander-in-Chief, Lord Fitzroy James Somerset, 1st Baron of Raglan (he gave his name to the loose overcoat with the slanted seams of the sleeves that extend to the neckline: he was

the first to wear it after he lost an arm at the battle of Waterloo) sends to the Division Commander the order to attack the heights around Balaklava, in order to reconquer them and recover some cannons that had been captured by the Russians.

The bearer of the orders is Captain Nolan, a cavalry Officer. He is a very intelligent, gifted and enterprising young man, with a polemic and rebellious character. The typical qualities of a cavalry Officers are very marked in him. He studied in Milan, where his father was the British Consul. Nolan and Govone are very similar, they become friends.

The plan envisages an attack by two British infantry Divisions and the cavalry Division supported by French cavalry units, in order to reconquer some positions which had been lost. Lucan, being in a location lower than Raglan's, cannot grasp the situation in full. Therefore, both because the orders were not very clear and also owing to the insufficient knowledge of the situation (and to personal incomprehensions due to a deep divergence between the two Commanders), the events develop in the wrong way.

Lucan orders the Light Brigade to attack along the northern valley, which runs between two rises and, to the east, ends in bottleneck. The Russians are deployed there



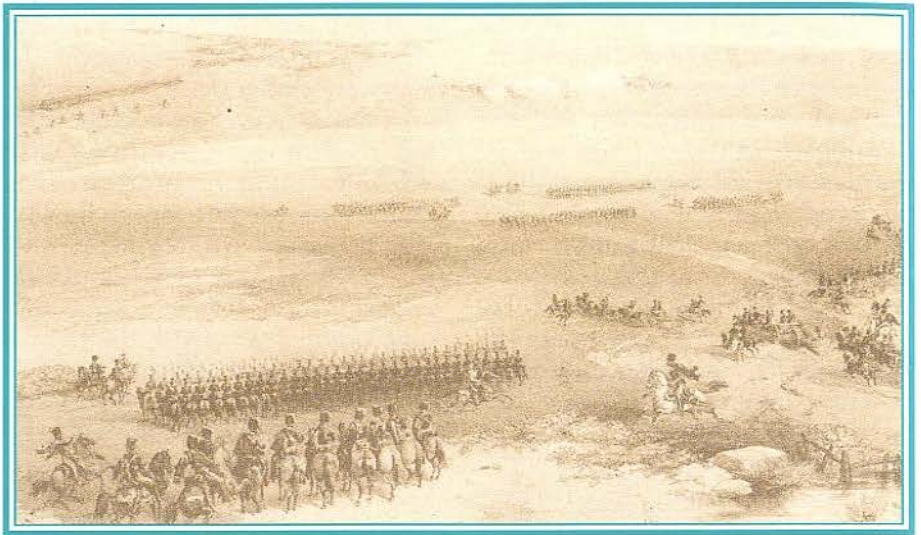
The 7th Earl of Cardigan in a hand-to-hand exercise at Phoenix Park, Dublin, 1843.

The Bulganek river, reached by the Light Brigade on September 19, 1854.

and on the two hills, with infantry and artillery units.

The attack of the cavalry Brigade, therefore, besides going in the wrong direction, takes place without infantry and cavalry support,. At the last moment, Nolan tries in vain to warn Cardigan about the mistake and direct him towards one of the rises: the charge along the northern valley continues.

That day, Govone is with the light cavalry Brigade. When the order of attack arrives, he and his subordinate Landriani do not hesitate to join the British Regiments in the tragic charge. It is one of the bloodiest and most glorious episodes in British military history, with many dramatic implications. The attack is carried out under a fierce fire from cannons and rifles, coming from the two hills on the side and from the front positions. The cavalymen suffer heavy losses. Govone and Landriani advance on the right of the formations and during the charge Govone is slightly wounded. Lieutenant Landriani, seriously injured, is taken prisoner by the Russians, who attend to his wounds on the spot and later in Russia.



Afterwards he would be sent back to Piedmont, where he was to die some years later, as a consequence of the injuries suffered during the charge.

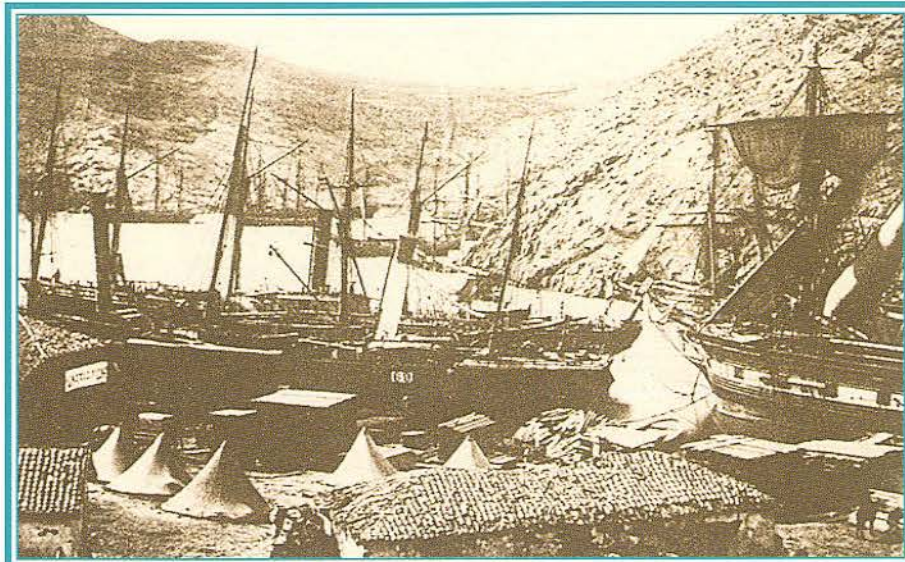
In this regard, it seems appropriate to quote an excerpt of Govone's report to the Minister of War, Alfonso La Marmora (1):...the British cavalry did not hesitate to advance. It consisted of the 17th Lancers and the 13th Light Dragoons, who formed the first line, followed by the 8th Hussars and the 4th Light Dragoons, who made up the second line. The first line had just moved forward two hundred steps that the batteries on the right, left and front opened a terrible cross-fire, as was expected, with about 30 pieces. At first the

volleys of grenades, cannon balls and shrapnel went high, but very soon an uninterrupted hail of mitraille and all kinds of bullets, plus the infantry fire from the redoubts, rained on the whole British line, without stopping a second. Every shot struck and toppled men and horses. The others continued their gallop and not a single man thought of holding back his horse.

Both the first and second cavalry lines, under fire, went past the battery on the right, dashed past the one on the left and, almost destroyed, reached the battery in front, slashing the gunners on their pieces, and went beyond the battery itself, deep into the Russian lines massed behind.

The 17th Lancers was reduced to a few men, the 4th Dragoons was more than halved...they formed a mass of hundred horses and rushed on the enemy cavalry and infantry, smashed them and withdrew, under the heavy fire still pouring from the redoubts.

The battery covering the front was unmanned and reduced to silence: the one on the left, meanwhile, had been dislodged by a French squadron of Chasseurs d'Afrique which, suffering some



Unloading British supplies at the port of Balaklava.

losses had charged on the hill, hacking the battery's escorts.

This charge of the British light cavalry is rare to the point of being unique: without a purpose and no result, it was nevertheless an admirable proof of the solidity of the British cavalry, but most of the force was lost...

Lieutenant Landriani of the "Piemonte Reale" Cavalry Regiment and myself were on the right of the first line during the charge, but could not witness the last part, since Lt Landriani fell to the ground about 400 or 450 steps from the enemy battery, his horse was hurt or dead and he himself was probably wounded. As for myself, 50 or 100 steps farther on, I had my horse injured and was slightly wounded in one shoulder. Lt Landriani was left on the field and was probably taken prisoner by the enemy. I was able to retreat on foot.

Afterwards, the order of the charge was severely reproved, but certainly not those excellent troops. Captain Nolan, of the Hussars, author of a treatise on cavalry, who is blamed for that error, was struck by a bullet in the heart after a few steps.

It is also useful to quote part of the letter written on November 15 by Govone to his friend Major Incisa Beccaria (2):...a charge made under the cross-fire of 30 guns, where Landriani of the "Piemonte Reale" and I, who had come down into the valley, charged on the right of the first line! The unfortunate Landriani was wounded and taken prisoner; I was unable to help him, since I was also hit 100 steps further, 300 steps from the front battery, and risked being run over by the second line and taken prisoner. Therefore I had to retreat on foot, my horse was injured and fell for the second time, my left shoulder hurt for a shot that

took away part of my epaulets, and I had lost my cap, probably because of a grapeshot. I was very sorry for Landriani: I saw him laying on the ground, with a smiling expression, but I could neither approach nor help him.

This episode strikes the British so much that Queen Victoria awards Govone the "Order of the Bath", an order of knighthood created by George I in 1725.

On November 5, among the General Staff's suite of General François Canrobert, Commander at the time of the French expeditionary Corps, Govone takes part in the battle of Inkerman, near Sevastopol. Later he observes the first part of the siege.

Govone has the functions of observer, adviser to the Sultan and Sardinian-Piedmontese representative to the Allies. In these capacities he gives a largely positive image of himself and the Sardinian Army, strengthened by the courage shown at Balaklava and in other battles.

During his stay in the East, he sends to the War Minister, General Alfonso La Marmora, about a hundred letters, with analyses,

reports and very important information on the operations under way. They are very carefully examined, with great interest, also at the Court.

On account of his qualities, the Sultan awards him the "Medal of Silistria" and the "Order of the Mejidiè", two important Turkish decorations. Furthermore, he offers him the appointment of Chief of Staff of the Turkish Army with the rank of General. Dutifully, Govone asks La Marmora for the necessary authorization. The Minister refuses but, at the same time, promotes him to the rank of Major.

Successively Govone returns home and works at the organization of the Sardinian Expeditionary Force to Crimea. During the campaign, as Staff Officer of the Commander-in-Chief, Gen. Alfonso La Marmora, he participates in several battles, conducted by the Sardinian-Piedmontese and by the Allies.

A devastating cholera epidemic strikes the Armies. About 3000 men die. Among the most distinguished victims: Marshal



The Charge of the Light Brigade: detail of a scene near the battery on the Don (Warner).

Right

"Bersagliere" at the Chernaya.

Below

The first uniforms of the "Bersaglieri".

Saint-Arnaud, Commander of the French contingent, who dies on September 29, 1854. General Alfonso La Marmora dies on June 7, 1855, after a reconnaissance of the Kamara camp, to devise measures for coping with the epidemic. On June 28, 1855, also Lord Raglan, the British Commander, dies.

The battle of Chernaya (August 16, 1855) and the general attack on Sevastopol turn out well for the Allies; but the conquest of Kars by the Russians (October 25, 1855) saves their national honour and speeds up the peace negotiations.

On January 16, 1856, the Czar accepts the peace terms and on February 1, in Vienna, a protocol is signed. It will serve as a basis for the final Peace Treaty, initialled on March 30, 1856, at the Congress of Paris. The treaty sanctions the independence and territorial integrity of the Ottoman Empire, prohibits the transit of warships in the Straits, limits the Russian and Turkish armaments on the Black Sea and proclaims the autonomy of the Principedoms of Moldavia and Walachia, under Ottoman sovereignty.

Thus, once more, the Russian Empire has to renounce its centuries-old aspiration for an outlet to the Mediterranean.



**Historian and Researcher*

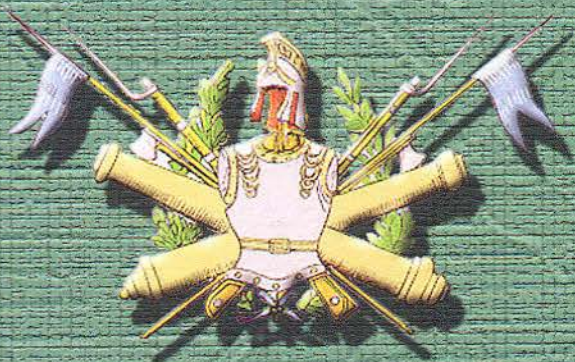
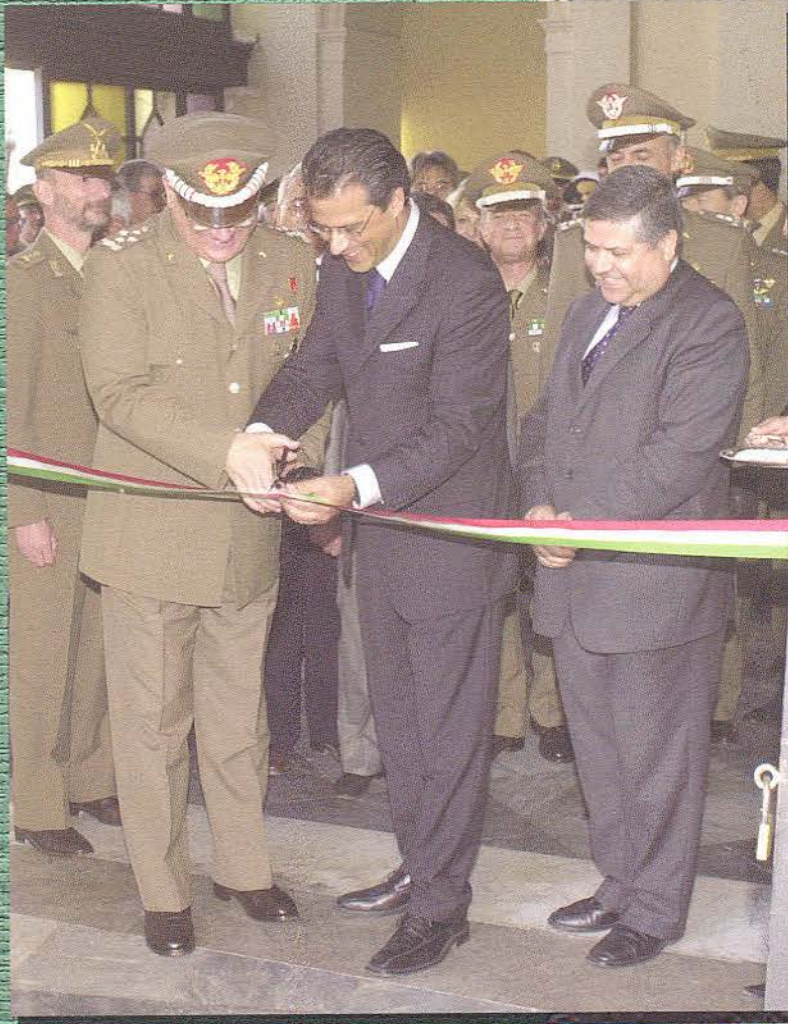
NOTES

(1) Govone's report to the Minister of War, October 27, 1854, in: Umberto Govone, *Gen Giuseppe Govone, fragments of memories*, Turin 1902, p.80.

(2) Letter to Maj. Incisa Beccaria in: Uberto Covone, *ibidem*, p.82.



Army Day



**SPECIAL
REPORT**

**For a week, Sicily has been the marvellous scenario
surrounding the Italian Army's celebration
of its 344th birthday and of the 142nd anniversary
of its present name**

A LUMINOUS AND

**The heart of the celebration was
Palermo, but the whole island joined
our soldiers in common moments of
union and brotherhood, confirming
the generous character of the Sicilian
people and their genuine affection
for our Service**

by Giuseppe Maria Giovanni Tricarico *

BEAUTIFUL FEAST



Today, the Italian Army, in the light of a past ennobled by centuries of untiring activity, celebrates the anniversary of its name and recalls its origins, going back to the first standing units of the second part of the XVI Century. After the unification of the Nation, our Army has always offered the Country, in peace and war, a generous contribution of silent heroism. Also today, the personnel of all Branches and Special Corps devote the same enthusiasm and spirit of sacrifice, outside the national territory, performing humanitarian missions and contributing to the maintenance of peace and order, under NATO and UN aegis, earning the respect and esteem of their international partners. I am pleased to express to the Army, on this auspicious day, my heartfelt wishes for a continuing and growing success.

On. Antonio Martino
Minister of Defence

MESSAGE OF THE PRESIDENT OF THE REPUBLIC OF ITALY TO THE ARMY CHIEF OF STAFF

Today is the 142nd anniversary of the constitution of the Italian Army. On this festive day, I want to extend my well-wishing greeting to the Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, Troops and Civilian Personnel operating in the Service's Headquarters and Units. A special thought goes to those who gave their life to the Country in the performance of their duty. They live in our memory and, with their example, show us the path of honour. The Italian Army originates from the ancient Regiments which existed before Italy's unification; through the war campaigns of the *Risorgimento*, they participated in the construction of the unitary State, after writing pages of glorious history. It is a patrimony proved by the decorations for Military Valour which still adorn the Flags of the oldest Corps. Fortified by this centuries-old tradition, the Army of today is a modern and efficient instrument, formed by prepared and motivated men and women. Army units operate abroad, in crisis-areas such as Bosnia, Kosovo and Afghanistan, where their presence is essential to guarantee conditions of peace. In those places, your professional and human qualities are unanimously acknowledged and make your presence welcome everywhere. Together with these thoughts, I ask you to accept my highest appreciation for the past and present work carried out by the Army, and my best wishes for a continuing and increasing success.

Carlo Azeglio Ciampi

A great assemblage of colours, sounds and suggestions merged in an admirable synthesis of past, present and future. High temperatures, not only on account of the torrid heat, more vigorous than usual, but also, and mainly, for the emotional warmth shown by the generous and hospitable people of Trinacria and its fascinating capital, millenary meeting point of civilizations and cultures.

From April 30 to May 4, Palermo was in fact the capital of all the Italian soldiers and the echoes and sounds of the "Italian Army Day" expanded all over Sicily, with the concerts of the Band of the Army and the itinerant presentation of the volume on "Vespi Siciliani", the first large-scale intervention of modern times, carried out together with the Police forces. The operation lasted from July 1992 to June 1998 and was the turning point between the old and the new concept of employment of the Army.

The reasons linking Palermo and Sicily to our soldiers are manifold: this wonderful island is a great potential recruitment basin, and this is also favoured by the great fondness of the Sicilians for our Service and by

their contribution to the nation's *Risorgimento*.

The event was further highlighted by the presence of numerous military, civilian and religious authorities. We wish to mention, among the distin-



guished guests, the Hon. Salvatore Cicu, Under-Secretary of Defence; Cardinal Salvatore De Giorgi, Archbishop of Palermo; Gen. Rolando Mosca Moschini, Defence Chief of Staff; Lt. Gen. Gianfranco Ottogalli, Army Chief of Staff; Lt. Gen. Roberto Speciale, Deputy Army CoS; the Hon. Francesco Cascio, Regional Councillor for Tourism; the Hon. Diego Cammarata, Mayor of Palermo; Dr Gianfranco Romagnoli, State Commissioner for Sicily; Senator Dante Vizzini, Dr Renato Profili, Prefect of Palermo; the Hon. Salvatore Cardinale.

BAND CONCERT AT THE OPERA HOUSE

The first appointment took place in Rome, on April 28, at the Opera House for a meeting with the immortal music that opened the celebrations. The Band of the Army, with its performance, confirmed to be worthy of its fame. The concert was attended by VIPs of the political, religious, military, intellectual and show-business world, who greatly





concert activity in the most important cities and theatres, both in Italy and abroad. Furthermore, the Band performs an important educational function by organizing concerts and lessons in its own auditorium, in collaboration with conservatories and academies. Besides, it organizes the tests for the State-competitions for appointing conductors and deputy-conductors of other military bands. The Band produces a considerable number of records and frequently participates in radio and television programmes. Since 1997 the Band of the Italian Army has been conducted by Lt. Col. Fulvio Creux.

appreciated the music and its execution. The guests were welcomed by the Army Chief of Staff.

The repertoire, presented by Michele Mirabella, was a masterly combination of commemorative marches and hymns, together with lyrics and symphonies by Verdi, Bellini, Rossini, Tosti, Donizetti, Novaro Brahms, Beethoven, Stravinsky and Respighi. The soloists, Rita Cammarano, soprano, and Emilio Guidotti, bass, together with the choirs of the "Alpini" and the "Sassari" Brigade, earned great praise.

The Band of the Army was founded on February 1, 1964. It consists of 102 members, all Non-commissioned Officers and music masters, most of them graduates from the Conservatory and recruited through national competitions. Its conductors



were Amleto Lacerenza (1964-1972), Francesco Sgritta (1972-1976), Marino Bartoloni (1976-1994) and Domenico Cavallo (1994-1997). The Band has numerous tasks, going from its institutional duties (Swearing-in ceremonies, Honour Guard at the "Quirinale" Presidential Palace, military honours to Heads of State and Government on official visits) to an intense

THE PRESS CONFERENCE, AN INTRODUCTION

The Garrison Officer's Club of *Piazza Sant'Olivà*, in the historical centre of Palermo, is an ideal "osmotic" meeting point between the civilian and the military worlds, and this was precisely the place where, on April 30, a press conference was held with the purpose of

MESSAGE OF THE CHIEF OF STAFF OF DEFENCE
TO THE ARMY CHIEF OF STAFF

In today's festivity, in which the Italian Army celebrates, with legitimate pride, the anniversary of its constitution, let my personal warm greeting and that of the Armed Forces go to the Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, Enlisted Men and Civilian Personnel. In the 142 years elapsed from that distant May 1861, the Army has been a protagonist in the Nation's life, with the fundamental task of ensuring for the Country the primary good of security.

In this long journey, in the critical moments of conflict or in the dramatic situations of the many national emergencies, splendid pages of military and civil valour have been written, as witnessed by the highest decorations awarded to the Flags and to individual servicemen.

Aware of the importance of this luminous legacy for the Armed Forces and for Italy, we address a heartfelt and reverential thought to those who sacrificed their life in the execution of their duty.

On the strong and stable basis of its traditions and values, the Army has built the structures of a modern and dynamic operational reality, constituted by outstanding human and technical capabilities, which are essential in order to operate successfully in the present difficult and increasingly intricate scenarios.

In these scenarios the military instrument is more and more a protagonist, with its participation in the numerous initiatives of the international community, aimed at securing peace and stability in many regions of our planet, where situations of crisis and conflict produce devastating consequences for the local populations and severe repercussions at world level.

The many Army men and women who today operate with the enthusiasm, dedication and professionalism that have always distinguished them, in Albania, in Kosovo, in Bosnia, in FYROM, in Afghanistan and in many other Countries, decisively contribute to the many successes obtained by the Armed Forces in this ulterior frontier of national security, which is an integral part the international security.

In this festive day, Seamen, Airmen and Carabinieri look with gratitude and admiration to the exceptional contribution that the Army gives to the Armed Forces and to Italy and express, through my words, their best auspicious wishes.

General Rolando Mosca Moschini

explaining in detail the programme of the celebrations. The representatives of the media arrived in great numbers, wishing to hear, in the best possible way, about an event that had been awaited for years. The guests were welcomed by Lt. Gen. Roberto Speciale, Maj. Gen. Giorgio Ruggieri, Chief of the General Affairs Office of the Army Staff and by Maj. Gen. Bruno Petti, Military Commander of Sicily.

During the meeting with the journalists, Lt. Gen. Speciale said that "after Rome, Naples, Turin and Trieste, this year is Palermo's turn to celebrate the national Army Day. I am very pleased to be here, as a Sicilian and a former Commander of the "Aosta" Brigade, the resolute Sicilian Major Unit which in 1992 started Operation "Vespri Siciliani". "The

army – went on General Speciale – comes from a far-off time. In 142 years of history, we have travelled a long way. Important changes are now under way, but they respect our roots. In an period such as the present, when our Service is becoming progressively professional, it our duty to remember the contribution made by the conscripts, a category which in 2005 will cease to be in our ranks. I shall always be grateful to the young conscripts who enabled the Italian Army to stand out, at home and in the world in general. Here in Palermo, on the occasion of this year's celebrations, we shall see the first performance – after the presentation that took place last year in Rome – of the recently instituted military carousel, an exhibition which, I am certain, Sicily will appreciate".

The Mayor of Palermo, the

Hon. Diego Cammarata, welcomed all participants and expressed his gratitude for the choice of Palermo, confirming the reasons for a bond strengthened by time. In the Mayor's words "the history of the Italian Army and its relation with Sicily and Palermo is made not only of brave deeds and real heroism, but also of everyday occurrences. How could we forget the feats of the Risorgimento, the disastrous events – from the tragic earthquakes of Messina and Belice to the eruptions of Mt Etna and Stromboli – and the Army's participation in the fight against the Mafia and against thirst? The latter unfortunate event is also full of symbolic meanings, since water has been for decades one of the most difficult problems for Sicily. At the moment, the construction of a water pipe from the Rosamarina dam to Palermo is well



under way. For almost a century and a half we have been pursuing, together with the Army, a common objective: to ensure the social and civil growth of our island, safeguarding, at the same time, democracy and liberty. The Army Day celebrations are a very good opportunity to make all citizens, including the younger ones, aware of the courage, the spirit of sacrifice of the members of our Army: Officers, Non-commissioned Officers and Troops. For all of us, representatives of the Institutions or common citizens, the Army of today is a bearer of the values of peace, tolerance and coexistence, which have made our Country great and free. My participation in this event as Mayor of Palermo, but also as a citizen, is not a formal act, but rather a sign of the full and convinced appreciation of the city for the role and the activity of the Italian Army".

A suggestive moment was the direct videophone connection with the Italian Commanders in

the Theatres of operations where Italy is present with its personnel (8000 servicemen) to protect the peoples' rights.

Brig. Gen. Giorgio Battisti, Commander of the Italian Contingent in Afghanistan, said that our personnel in the area is





engaged in fighting against international terrorism by means of patrols, surveillance and control of the territory. "We are not – he explains – an occupation army. Our intervention in Afghanistan was requested by the local Government which wanted the presence of military forces from the West. Today we can say that the relations with the civilian population are very positive. Certainly there are risks, but we must guarantee the return to normality and create the best security conditions in the cities, also within the wider framework of the fight against terrorism".

Brig. Gen. Claudio Tosi leads the International Contingent in Albania "We have reached many objectives – he points out – confirmed by the moral, economic and social growth of the Country of the Eagles".

Col. Antonello Vitale, Deputy Commander of the Italian forces in Kosovo, is equally proud of his work: "The Army has been here

since 1999, in order to ensure security and stability, in the name of tolerance and mutual respect. The results are under everybody's eyes".

Col. Marcello Bellacicco is the Commander of the Italian Contingent in Bosnia, our first out-of-area mission. "The territory – he says – has been ravaged by a bloody and indiscriminate war, but at last enmities are subsiding. Today our military efforts are less demanding but a constant vigilance, with patrols and frequent contacts with civilians, is still necessary".

03/03



ARMY GENERAL STAFF

ADDRESS TO THE ARMY

ARMY DAY

Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, Volunteers, Conscript Soldiers, Civilian Personnel!

On May 4, 1861, the Italian Army received in its ranks, under the Tricolour, men and units coming from every part of Italy. Often different as regards culture, traditions and education, they found, united by a single ideal, the force and enthusiasm to complete the work started by the Founding Fathers, definitively affirming the values of the Risorgimento.

In the difficult and laborious process of the Country's unification, the Army rose to the role of element of aggregation and diffusion of ethical and moral principles. From then on, our Service, wherever it was called to operate, has always made loyalty, honour and spirit of sacrifice its distinctive features. In war, fighting also at the cost of sacrificing some of its best men, and in peace, declaring with force its loyalty to the institutions and intervening to help the neediest ones.

Today, the Country continues to ask its men and women in arms to be bearers of those values. At home and abroad, safeguarding security and freedom or stopping bloody genocides, the men and women in uniform, silently but with the conviction of those who know that they operate in the name and on behalf of a superior interest, ennoble the prestige of the Nation more and more.

To all of you, Officers, Non-commissioned Officers, Volunteers and Conscript Soldiers, Civilian Personnel, my thanks for what you have done, are doing and will do for the welfare of our Country, together with my wishes of the best of fortune to you and your families.

Long live the Italian Army, long live Italy!

Rome, May 4, 2003

Lieutenant General Gianfranco Ottogalli
Army Chief of Staff

THE ARMY'S HISTORY ASSEMBLED IN AN INTERESTING EXHIBITION

In the solemn Mirrors Room of the "Giuseppe Garibaldi" Theatre there were people of all ages, but the young were the ones who left a special mark on the occasion, confirming a trend that somehow had already been felt: the interest of the younger generations in recovering the old memories. One of the most famous centres of Palermo's culture housed, from May 2 to May 11, the exhibition "The History of the Army". The



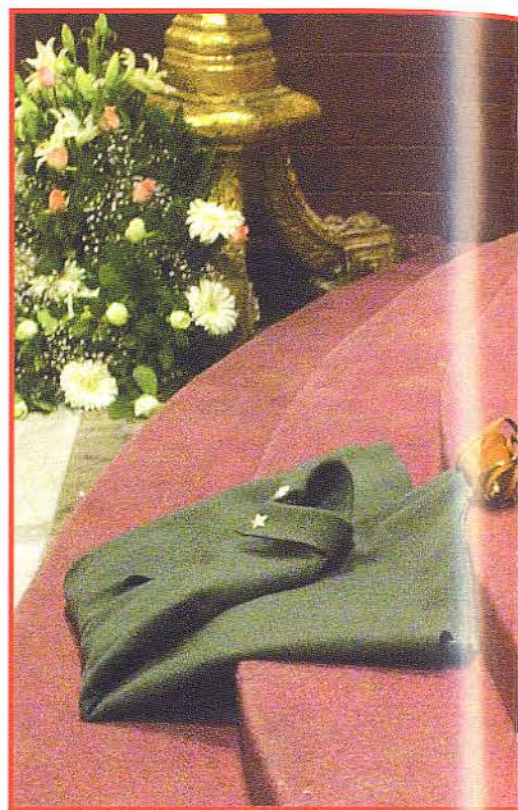
display traced an evolutionary path, supported by documents, relics, photographs, drawings, arms, uniforms and models from military museums and institutions, and underlined the Sicilian military traditions. A set of large tables depicting the Sicilian coasts assisted the visitors in understanding the contents of the successive sections. The interesting description was taken from Tiburzio Spannocchi's work *"Descrizione de las marinas de todo el Reino de Sicilia"* (Description of the coasts of the whole Kingdom of Sicily), published in the second half of the sixteenth century.

The sequence illustrated the almost four centuries of regimental continuity of some units, still existing today, which have marked the most important moments for the Army and the Country.

Among the many mementos, we can mention the cannons of Aduwa which, in March 1896, with "Africa's Sicilian Mountain Batteries", bravely fought in Ethiopia; the uniform of Col. Cordero Lanza di Montezemolo, Gold Medal for Military Valour, shot at the *Fosse Ardeatine*; the uniforms of the Eritrean Askaris, the heroic comrades-in-arms of the Italian soldiers in the colonial wars and the Second World War. There were many curiosities, such as, for example, the equipment used for the employment of homing pigeons (the first air dispatch-riders which, from the end of the 19th century to the mid-fifties, provided a rapid correspondence among the units, supplementing the other means of communication) and the WWI scale-covered protective jacket, a shield against bayonets and forerunner of the bullet-proof vest of today.

THE WHOLE "VESPRI SICILIANI" OPERATION, AT LAST IN A SINGLE VOLUME

On May 2 the "Imperia" movie-theatre was the setting of the



presentation of "I Vespri Siciliani" a volume describing the main elements of the well-known operation in support of the Police Forces, which took place from July 1992 to October 1998, immediately after the massacres of Capaci (murder of Judge Giovanni Falcone) and via D'Amelio (where Judge Paolo Borsellino was killed). The authors of the book, Prof. Maria Gabriella Pasqualini, a Middle-East expert, and Lieut. Gen. Giancarlo Gay, history scholar, expounded the reasons for their work to an audience which included in the first row, among the authorities, the Under-Secretary of State for Defence, Salvatore Cicu, the Army Chief of Staff, Lt. Gen. Gianfranco Ottogalli and his Deputy, Lt. Gen. Roberto Speciale. The discussion, chaired by TV journalist Maria Grazia Capulli, was actively followed by the students of some secondary schools of Palermo and neighbouring towns.

As Prof. Pasqualini pointed out *"This book was written applying*



the method of historical research. Therefore we dug into the documents of the Chamber of Deputies in order to find the questions and the debates concerning the operation and found that, for the whole period of the mission, i.e. until 1998, the Army intervention was fully supported by all political forces, which considered the operation in a very positive way.

The Under-Secretary of State for the Interior, Antonio d'Alì, stated that for six years our soldiers controlled the territory side by side with the Police Forces. "The pages of this book" – he added – "take our memory back to some tragic moments of the history of Sicily, but they also remind us of the commitment of our soldiers to the security of the judges engaged in the fight against the Mafia, and to the safety of every citizen. The Ministry of the Interior, thanks to their professionalism, was able to count on the complete integration of the Police Forces and the Army and, also owing to this synergy, could

successfully complete several important investigations. The name "Vespri Siciliani" was meant to represent the self-determination of a people, of a society, who work to be free. The Sicilians must remember their history and the strength which distinguished them in their fight against enemies who were always stronger than they were".

Lt Gen. Gay said that he had intended to satisfy the wishes of many scholars and researchers. He also mentioned the support given by public opinion and underlined that Operation "Vespri Siciliani" was a link between two different models of Army, which now has become an efficient institutional instrument.

Under-Secretary Cicu, in his statement, said that Army Day is a feast for the people and of the people. "It takes place in Palermo – he went on – "to repay the willingness of the Sicilians to enlist in the Armed Forces as volunteers, and for the strong historical ties binding the Army to this land. "Vespri Siciliani" was a

significant moment for our history and, with its success, provided security conditions which had been lacking before. The mission offered the people of Sicily the perception of security they needed. The operation was followed by "Forza Paris" in Sardinia and by "Partenope" and "Riace", in the most difficult areas of Campania and Calabria. This celebration also reminds us of the recent reform of the Service, which cancelled conscription. Today the Army continues to evolve, thanks to its international experience in a number of peace missions, where it gives a reliable evidence of its professional skill. Our intervention in Afghanistan was not requested by chance. More and more professionalism and well-prepared servicemen will be necessary in view of the great reform starting in 2005, when conscription will end and we'll have only volunteers".

The Army Chief of Staff recalled that "Vespri Siciliani" was an important watershed. "The operation" – he explained –



"was the point of no return between the old and the new course, between past and future. Through this mission the Army convinced itself, and the Country, of its actual capabilities and potentials, and entered the road of renewal and modernization. Sicilians have always been close to us and made our soldiers feel at home. An example is how they were easily received within the social environment".

Some very interesting and keen presentations were also made by Dr Giovanni Pepi, co-editor of the "Giornale di Sicilia" and by Dr Maria Luisa Maniscalco, sociologist and author of a specific research on the military engaged in "Vespri Siciliani", who outlined the operation's phenomenological contours.

GETTING TO KNOW THE ARMY

The "Rap Camp", a real interactive exhibition of equipment

and materials, open from May 2 to the end of the celebrations, provided a better knowledge of the Service, satisfying all kinds of curiosities. The initiative was much appreciated by a large number of visitors interested in this expositive and promotional formula, which offered also information on enlistment and opportunities of recruitment and careers.

The most modern devices for mine-clearing and ordnance disposal were displayed at the entrance of "La Favorita". Among them a radio-controlled sapper robot (which could even climb stairs), bombproof suits and many other devices. The visitors' attention was also attracted by the equipment exhibited by amphibious troops, "Alpini" and paratroopers who, in order to show the equipment at work in their normal operational environment, made very accurate reconstructions of the most familiar landscapes, creating unexpected visual effects. Children and

youngsters were particularly interested in the "Rap Camp" but, to tell the truth, the equipment, materials and technology of the Army were greatly admired by people of all ages.

THE TOUCHING TRIBUTE TO THE FALLEN

Remembering the Fallen is not only a duty but also an expression of our intimate feelings, made more precious by reason, which enhances its significance. To give one's own life for a duty or an ideal is a noble deed which induces us to reflect and remember. It was with these feelings that on May 3, in Piazza Vittorio Veneto, our silent heroes were honoured at the War Memorial. In the presence of citizens, authorities and schoolchildren waving little tricolour flags, at the most significant moments one could tangibly feel the emotion. While



a Guard of Honour of the *Bersaglieri*, with their band, presented arms, a laurel wreath was laid at the monument by Maj. Gen. Bruno Petti and Dr Renato Profili. To the sound of Taps, the Stela received the homage to the Fallen of all times and all battles, to all Soldiers perished in war and peacetime.

At the end of the ceremony, Palermitans and soldiers sang together the National Anthem and the "Song of the Piave".

THE HOLY MASS

"Oh Lord, we present you the bread offered by the soldiers of the peace missions,

we present you, oh Lord, the wine offered by the sister of the Italian Red Cross,

we offer you, oh Lord, the helmet of the Centauro armoured car of the Lancieri di Montebello, engaged in the "Ibis" mission in Somalia,

we offer you, oh Lord, the helmet of the Pilot of the Army Light Aviation,

we offer you, oh Lord, the trumpet of the "Bersagliere" in Russia,

we offer you, oh Lord, the parachute of the El Alamein boys,

we offer you, oh Lord, the water flask of the "Granatiere" in the Italian East Africa,

we offer you, oh Lord, the cape of the "Alpino" on the mountains of "Adamello",

we offer you, oh Lord, the entrenching spade of the Italian-Turkish war,

we offer you, oh Lord, the horse-brush and the curry-comb of the "Voloire" artilleryman,

we offer you, oh Lord, the mess-tin of the Infantryman of the wars of Independence,

we offer you, oh Lord, the powder-horn of the "Dragone di Genova",

oh Lord, we present you these flowers, offered by the Association for the Spiritual Assistance to the Armed Forces".

The Offertory procession, accompanied by these touching words, opened a moving Eucharistic liturgy which offered to God the everyday tools that for centuries have been accompanying the work and the sacrifice of the Soldiers of Italy.

The Cathedral, a masterpiece of Arabic and Norman art, rich with the memories and the splendour of different cultures and fascinating spiritualities, was exceptionally crowded. The Holy Mass of May 3, presided over by the Archbishop of Palermo, Monsignor Salvatore De Giorgi, was officiated in united and brotherly remembrance of the Fallen of the Army. Citizens and military met in a constant emotional crescendo.

At the beginning of the holy rite, the officiating priests invited all participants to pray. *"How many sacrifices and heroic deeds were consummated to seize a piece of land from the enemy or to maintain it? As it is impossible to imagine it, let us collect our*



thoughts on this solemn Eucharistic celebration, in order to remember those we met during our life through family stories, belonging to tradition or to legend. Those soldiers gave their life to conquer or defend a position, to succour friends or strangers, at all times and in many parts of the world, with their Country in their hearts. May our gratitude and our prayer reach them this evening".

During the sermon, the Archbishop devoted profound reflections to the Fallen. *"They left their homes and their loved ones to offer the Country their sacrifices and even their life, following Christ's sacrificial journey. The Holy Mass – he continued, recalling the meaning of the third Easter Sunday – reminds us of the mystery of death and resurrection, the resurrection of Christ is a sign for the salvation of all. Those who devote their time to the institutions deserve our consideration and respect".* He then turned his thoughts to the thousands of soldiers serving in many parts of the world, wishing for them *"God's support in the*

accomplishment of their duty, which is a great act of love for the Motherland. The military – he concluded – are constructors of peace and bearers of love and solidarity throughout the world".

The Prayer for the Fallen was said with the background of "Stelutis Alpinis" (edelweiss in the Friulan dialect), a moving song from WWI. The Band of the Army accompanied the main moments of the holy rite.

MILITARY CEREMONY AND CAROUSEL: TWO EAGERLY AWAITED MOMENTS

The last day of the celebrations started with a very intense morning for Palermo and Sicily.

On May 4, "La Favorita" was very warm, owing both to the climate (more than 30 degrees) and to the intense participation which deeply involved protagonists and onlookers. The military ceremony attracted, already since the early morning, children and adults, military and civilians,

young and not-so-young, who occupied the wide spaces of the racecourse in order to watch and express their affection to an Institution which in this region has always enjoyed a very high prestige.

At the opening, the paratroopers kept everybody's eyes turned to the sky, following the evolutions of the men who painted the sky with tricolour vaults, carrying the flags of Italy, the European Union and Sicily. The flag-rising ceremony preceded the in-flow of the units, about 1000 servicemen coming from all over Italy, the Army Band and a two-Regiment Brigade.

The 1st Regiment, led by the Commandant of the Modena Cadet Academy, included the 1st Battalion (a company of Academy cadets wearing their historical uniforms, a company from the NCO School, a company with two platoons from the "Nunziatella" and one platoon from the "Teulie" Military College); the 2nd battalion, which included a company with a

platoon from the 1st Regiment "Granatieri di Sardegna", a platoon from the "Lancieri di Montebello" Regiment and a platoon from the 12th "Bersaglieri" Regiment, all wearing their historical uniforms; a company with two platoons from the Infantry School and one from the Artillery School; a company with a platoon from the Engineer School, one from the Signal School and one from the Transport and Materials School.

The 2nd Regiment, led by the Commander of the 5th Infantry Regiment "Aosta" consisted of the 1st battalion (a company with a platoon from the 5th "Aosta" Regiment, one from the 62nd Infantry Regiment and one from the 82nd Infantry Regiment "Torino"); a company with a platoon from the 9th "Alpini" Regiment, a platoon from the 186th Paratroops Regiment and one from the "Serenissima" amphibious Regiment; a company with a platoon from the "Lancieri di Aosta" Regiment, a platoon from the 31st Tank Regiment and one from the "Sirio" Air Cavalry Regiment; the 2nd battalion was formed by a company with a platoon of the 24th Regiment Land Artillery "Peloritani", a platoon from the 7th Regiment A/A Artillery and one from the 7th "Cremona" NBC Regiment; a company with a platoon from the 4th Sapper Regiment, a platoon from the 6th Engineer Regiment and a mixed platoon consisting of elements from the 2nd Pontoneer Regiment and the Railway Engineer Regiment; a company with a platoon of the 46th Signal Regiment of the C4 Infrastructure Group, a platoon from the 10th Manoeuvre Regiment and one from the 10th Transport Regiment.

After the military honours to the Banners, Standards and to the Army Flag, the highest Authority present, the Hon. Salvatore Cicu (who was



accompanied by the Defence and Army Chiefs of Staff) delivered a speech.

"Sicily has always given a generous contribution in men and resources to our Armed Forces – he said. – Today, here in Palermo, all the men and women of the Army symbolically renew their pledge of fidelity to their duty and to the free Institutions of our Country. A very long stretch of time separates us from that distant 1861, when the forces of the pre-unitary States began their incorporation into the Sardinian Army. Thus the young Kingdom of Italy acquired a military importance equal to the Country's potentiality and demographic dimension, and was ready to become one of the main actors on the international political scene. On this occasion, our thoughts go to those who served the Country, proudly wearing the uniform of the Army: from the Risorgimento

to the World Wars and the Liberation, from the long period of the Cold War to the recent missions abroad. To the Fallen, wounded and disabled soldiers we renew our heartfelt memory and gratitude for their sacrifice, which continues to be the foundation of the unity, independence and freedom of our Country. But, for Italy, the Army was something more than an Armed Service: It was the very place where, already in the 19th Century, thousands of young men from every region learned to know each other and felt that they shared the same heritage of history, culture and values. On January 1, 2005, the historical institution of conscription will be suspended, but this will not break the strong bonds between the Armed Forces and the people of Italy. For more than half a century, by wearing the Armed Forces uniform for one year, the Italians have learned to love and



understand the delicate role of defending their Country. The memory of that period, harsh at times, continues to be the patrimony and wealth of entire generations. Today our young people are no longer required to serve the Country for a year, but we ask them to choose voluntarily this noble duty as a highly qualified profession, in a primary role for the common interest. The Army opens to society and blends with it, in order to attract new forces by offering to many young people of every region of Italy not only a job, but also an extraordinary opportunity for highly specialized training and human growth. The whole Country is grateful to you, men and women of our Army, for all you have done for our community, and particularly for your generous commitment in over ten years of peace missions.

In the Balkans, the Far East, Africa and wherever you have been and still are, you have always represented our Country in an excellent way. Thanks to your work, today Italy has a front-ranking role in the international

arena. In the Balkans, in Afghanistan, we proved to be reliable and very valuable allies; this is why the whole international community acknowledges the leading role of our Country as never before.

And Italy owes this to you, who often in difficult situations and at the extreme limits of our military capabilities, have never failed to guard our interests with devotion and spirit of sacrifice, a real credit to yourselves and to us.

After the attack to the Twin Towers, we all felt in danger: a new and terrible threat, capable of striking anywhere and anytime, upset the international balances and the consciences of people all over the world. Together with our allies, the Italian Government responded to terror with determination and resolve. At the present time, 4000 soldiers from our Army are employed in the defence and control of sensitive objectives in Italy, and over a thousand servicemen are in Afghanistan, in the still very unstable area of Kost where, thanks to their presence, the last Al Qaeda members are prevented

from recapturing their old positions and from regaining strength in order to deprive the Afghan people of the freedom and democratic rights promoted by the Barzai Government, thus threatening the whole world again. For there is no peace where there is no freedom. Furthermore, we cannot forget the Army's contribution when natural disasters occur, and the support given to the Police Forces for a better preventive action against organized crime and international terror. I am very pleased, therefore, to mention what was done in the 90s, right here in Sicily, with the Operation "Vespri Siciliani" which, by relieving the Police Forces of the heavy tasks of territorial control, allowed them to concentrate on their special tasks, on investigations and fight against organized crime. That was a new experience, where innovative intervention procedures and capabilities of coordination, prevention and contrast against unexpected risks were rapidly tested. On the other hand, we cannot hide that, even with these important tasks and its important

ARMY GOLD-MEDAL FOR VALOUR AWARDED TO THE FLAG OF THE 4TH SAPPER REGIMENT

The Regiment, always on the front line, conducted numerous actions aimed at saving human lives, preventing disasters and mitigating their consequences.

Among the most significant activities are: the contribution given on the occasion of the Etna and Stromboli emergencies in 2001 and 2002, the water crisis in Sicily in 2002, the countless operations of explosive-devices clearing, the cooperation with the Police forces in pursuing fugitive offenders, the surveillance of depots, the escort to sensitive materials, the search of missing persons, the demolition of unauthorized constructions.

In every circumstance, the men of the 4th Regiment worked with serenity, courage and great skill, at times risking their safety in the performance of their duty, thus honouring the most significant values of the military profession.

The highly qualified work of the 4th Regiment was clear evidence of superior military virtues and great spirit of sacrifice, and contributed in a decisive manner to further the prestige of the Engineer Corps, as well as that of the Army as a whole, in the national social context.

role at international level, Italy destines to its Armed Forces an amount of resources much lower than that of our European partners, which spend for defence an average 1.5% of their GDP. The Government, as repeatedly stated by our Prime Minister, considers that reaching an equal level of expense for defence is a fundamental objective for completing the modernization of the Armed Forces, making them fit for the important service they render to the Country and the entire international community. As, today, security has a global dimension our response must be global. In the last years, the Army has faced and won this challenge, effectively cooperating with our Allies. Now it is time to take again, with force and confidence, to the road towards the constitution of a common European defence, in order to reach together the operational capabilities essential in order to operate effectively in the international scenarios, which exceed the range of the single European Countries. In this regard, during its six-months

chairmanship of the EU, Italy undertakes to give its contribution towards the resumption of the dialogue to set right the frictions of the last months and lead Europe to speak with one voice, as a single political subject when defence and security are involved. Therefore, we entrust to our soldiers – and to their capability of integration – also the political future of the European Union. With these considerations – the Under-Secretary concluded – I renew to all men and women of the Army the warm greetings of the Government, which I wish to express particularly to those who are now operating outside the borders of the Motherland, to those who give their silent contribution to our security, welfare and freedom; Italy as a whole conveys to them unanimous feelings of affection and gratitude, with the absolute certainty that their commitment will always be equal to our traditions and to the noblest examples of valour”.

After the Under-Secretary's speech, the Chief of Defence and

the Army Chief of Staff delivered their messages.

Particularly moving was the moment when Under-Secretary Cicu decorated the Flag of the 4th Sapper Regiment for Civil Valour, in recognition of the Unit's operations for saving human lives and ensuring public safety during natural disasters.

Individual decorations were awarded to Lt Michele Fraterrigo (Silver Cross of Merit of the Army) and WO Giuseppe Colangelo (Bronze Cross) for their service in East Timor, and to WO Antonio Martina (Bronze Cross) for his distinguished service in Kosovo. Cpl Fernando Giannini and Cpl Silvio Rotunno received a solemn citation for their marked public spirit.

After the units left the scene, the whole area was occupied by the Carousel, which went through 344 years of traditions and historical and social evolutions. The exhibition was very interesting and suggestive, and evoked old times and doctrines in a sea of colours and uniforms, preceded and accompanied by the offstage voice



of a speaker who described the most significant events and details. A diorama represented the "Breach of Porta Pia" which was broken through with gunshots. This was the prelude to the final honours.

THE GREAT CONCERT AT THE "TEATRO MASSIMO"

The concert of the Band of the Army, presented by Paola Saluzzi, concluded the celebrations. The guests thronged into the theatre, looking forward to enjoying the performance of one of the world's most prestigious bands, conducted with masterly skill by Fulvio Creux. The rich and refined selection of the pieces was impeccably interpreted by highly rated artists.

The concert started with "May 4th" by Fulvio Creux, followed by "Conservet Deus su Re", the Anthem of the old Kingdom of Sardinia, and "Inno Dimonios", by an anonymous author, sung by the Choir of the 152nd "Sassari" Infantry Regiment; "Hymn of the Alpini", "Benia Clastoria" and "Trentatré", by an anonymous author, sung by the choir of the "Julia" Brigade and Alpine Troops Command; "Music of the Memory". "Addio Mia Bella Addio", "Hymn of Garibaldi", "Va' Pensiero", "Il Silenzio (Taps)", "Daghela Avanti un Passo", "Echoes from the Trench" and "The Bells of San Giusto", all arranged by Maestro Fulvio Creux.

After the intermission, the concert resumed with "An Homage to Bellini" by Saverio Mercadante; a fantasia from

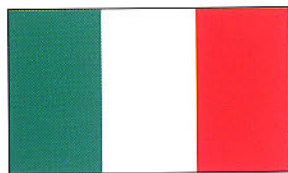
"Cavalleria Rusticana" and "Vespri Siciliani" by Giuseppe Verdi.

At the end, after Maj. Gen. Bruno Petti's address, Lt. Gen. Ottogalli expressed his thanks to Palermo and to Sicily for their warm welcome. *"Our Service – he concluded – represents the Italian Unity and the Italian People. The Italian Army is our Army and your Army"*. Gen. Ottogalli took leave by inviting all present to join together in singing the National Anthem.

More information and details on the celebrations are reported on no. 2/2003 of "Rassegna dell'Esercito", the supplement to "Rivista Militare".

□

*Colonel,
Editor-in-Chief,
"Rivista Militare"



Facce della stessa medaglia, di Vittorio Barbatì (p. 4).

La strategia è arte e scienza, perché nella organizzazione e nella condotta delle operazioni belliche si basa sull'intuizione e sulla preparazione professionale. La grande strategia è, invece, arte e scienza della condotta politica, economica e militare della guerra stessa. Questo, almeno, secondo una definizione classica dei due concetti. Orbene, oggi pare che tali parametri comincino a ritenersi non più validi come un tempo. Ma in fondo è soltanto apparenza, in quanto, mutando il concetto stesso di guerra, cambia pure quello di minaccia. Vediamone allora il perché.

Il Mediterraneo da sempre plasma le civiltà, di Louis Godart (p. 16).

L'antico *Mare Nostrum* ha visto l'alternarsi dei più grandi flussi dell'umanità. L'interazione delle civiltà e dei popoli che progressivamente vi si affacciavano ha apportato benessere, evoluzione culturale e conquiste in ogni campo, oggi patrimonio dell'umanità. Il Mediterraneo accomuna oggi come allora tanti popoli. Pertanto urge sempre più non solamente un linguaggio comune, ma una integrazione in un singolo processo di unificazione di tutti i popoli che

vivono in Europa.

Il ruolo centrale dello strumento terrestre tra esigenze di sicurezza e nuove operatività, di Salvatore Farina (p. 24).

Il soldato, quando chiamato a intervenire, opera direttamente fra la gente e agisce in ambienti spesso caratterizzati da insicurezze ambientali. È lui che consolida il successo e dà sicurezza a chi ne ha bisogno. Per meglio assolvere tali compiti e far fronte alle nuove sfide, l'Esercito si sta dotando di sofisticati equipaggiamenti, nei quali domina la tecnologia più moderna, anche satellitare. Questo per assolvere convenientemente i compiti istituzionali ricevuti e, non ultimo, ridurre i rischi.

Le nuove frontiere della Sanità Militare nel sistema Paese,

di Michele Donvito (p. 36).

Presente su tutto il territorio nazionale, operosa nella Protezione Civile e in tutte le missioni fuori area, l'ultima delle quali è quella in Afghanistan, sempre pronta a lenire dolori e sofferenze e a tutelare l'integrità fisica delle genti senza tralasciarne il risvolto morale e psicologico, la Sanità Militare si avvale delle più innovative scoperte scientifiche e tecnologiche. Notevole è l'importanza che viene data alla comunicazione, al fine di informare e prevenire su rischi e patologie. Perfettamente integrata nel Sistema Paese, collabora con molti Dicasteri diversi dalla Difesa, per offrire un apporto

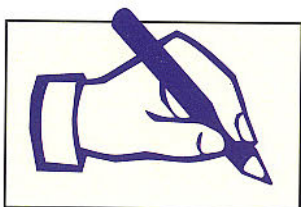
insostituibile a chiunque, in ogni circostanza. Con altruismo e generosità.

La permanente evoluzione dei sistemi informatici, di Sergio Fiorentino (p. 44).

L'informatica si sta imponendo come una delle principali frontiere del nuovo millennio, in grado di accrescere potenzialità e rendimento di enti, società ed istituzioni. Le crescenti prestazioni dei sistemi elaborativi ne favoriscono l'impiego in ogni settore di attività e, prontamente, le migliori organizzazioni si dotano di sistemi informatizzati in funzione delle loro realtà. Uno dei principali riferimenti gestionali sono i Centri d'Informazione, provvisti delle più moderne tecnologie. In ogni struttura efficiente spicca, con sempre maggior forza, la figura del dirigente tecnologico e dell'amministratore delle banche dati. Una conferma, questa, della lungimiranza di coloro i quali, da tempo, hanno saggiamente deciso d'investire nelle risorse umane.

Il lavoro ricomincia dopo il servizio, di Vito Di Ventura (p. 52).

Il termine del servizio può rappresentare un momento particolare per un militare di carriera il quale, dopo aver dedicato i suoi migliori anni all'Istituzione, si vede costretto a modificare radicalmente un ritmo di vita già consolidato. Egli si trova, inoltre, ancora nel pieno delle forze, al massimo delle proprie cognizioni professionali e con una lunga aspettativa di vita. Oggi molti



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

Paesi stanno cercando di valorizzare a fondo questo immenso patrimonio di professionalità e di esperienze, mediante un'accorta opera di reinserimento nella vita produttiva, che ha indubbi vantaggi sociali. Le brillanti e innovative soluzioni britanniche ne sono una chiara dimostrazione.

L'arte di saper decidere, di Antonio Marchetti (p. 62).

La decisione richiede un complesso procedimento mentale, a cui concorrono molti elementi recentemente individuati, che si possono potenziare in base a particolari procedimenti elaborativi. Tecniche già collaudate aiutano così a risolvere il problema del decidere con naturalezza e disinvoltura, anche in situazioni estreme. La scienza aiuta dunque a compensare la poca esperienza. Bastano semplici regole che anche i più giovani possono applicare durante la giornata e, con un minimo di impegno su sé stessi, ottenere concreti benefici in molti ambiti.

Dal lager sotterraneo alla Luna, di Alessandro Ferioli (p. 82).

Dopo l'armistizio dell'8 settembre 1943 furono migliaia i militari italiani deportati a Dora, il campo di concentramento più segreto, meno conosciuto e tra i più brutali della storia. Dora era il distaccamento sotterraneo di Buchenwald e, per la sua importanza, dipendeva direttamente dallo Stato Maggiore delle SS. Era proprio

lì che venivano progettate, sperimentate e prodotte la maggior parte delle bombe volanti V1 e V2, le stesse che avrebbero martellato implacabilmente la città di Londra. Come pure era lì che venivano effettuati esperimenti su cavie umane. Tra sofferenza e dignità, efferatezze e orgoglio, ingiustizie e solidarietà, i nostri soldati furono inconsapevoli pionieri dell'era spaziale. A migliaia lavorarono per gli esperimenti di scienziati come Werner von Braun, Helmuth Gröttrup e Walter Dornberger. La conquista dello spazio è stata ottenuta ad alto prezzo e molto sangue è stato versato, anche da parte di tanti italiani.

C'erano anche Italiani tra gli eroi di Balaclava, di Michele Petrolo (p. 92).

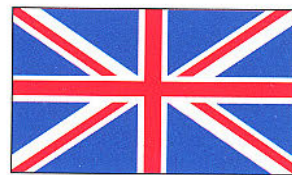
Tra i coraggiosi seicento, che caricarono a Balaclava tra le fila della Brigata Leggera, due connazionali scelsero di seguire gli alleati inglesi conquistando staffa a staffa ogni palmo di terreno dominato da schieramenti di artiglieria. I molti vuoti venivano riempiti da altri cavalli e cavalieri, i quali serravano i ranghi dando così modo di reiterare la carica. Il Capitano Giuseppe Govone e il Luogotenente Giuseppe Landriani, feriti sul campo, meritano poi la riconoscenza della Regina Vittoria. Siamo adesso in grado di fare luce su un episodio scomparso dai testi di storia.

Una festa bella come il sole, di Giuseppe Maria Giovanni Tricarico (p. 101).

«L'Esercito Italiano, alla luce di

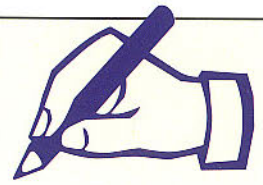
un passato nobilitato da secoli di diuturna attività, celebra nell'odierna giornata l'anniversario della sua denominazione, nel ricordo delle proprie origini che risalgono ai primi reparti permanenti della seconda metà del XVI secolo. Dopo aver portato a compimento l'unità nazionale, l'Esercito ha sempre operato, in pace come in guerra, offrendo un generoso tributo di silenziosi eroismi alla Patria. Anche oggi il personale tutto delle Armi e delle Specialità profonde uguale passione e spirito di sacrificio fuori dal territorio nazionale nell'assolvimento di missioni umanitarie e per concorrere al mantenimento dell'ordine e della pace, sotto l'egida della NATO e dell'ONU, meritando rispetto e stima in ambito internazionale. Nella fausta ricorrenza mi è gradito formulare alla Forza Armata i più fervidi auguri di sempre maggiori fortune».

Onorevole Antonio Martino
Ministro della Difesa



Two Sides of the Same Coin, by Vittorio Barbati (p. 4).

Strategy is both art and science because, for organization and direction of war operations, it bases itself on intuition and vocational training. Great strategy, on the contrary, is both art and science of political, economic and military direction



of war itself. This, at least, is true according to a classical definition of the two concepts. However, today it seems that such parameters are starting to be considered not so valid as formerly. But all things considered, it is only appearances; in fact, as the concept itself of war changes, as changes the concept of threat. Let us see why.

The Mediterranean, a Moulder of Civilizations, by Louis Godart (p. 16).

The old «*Mare Nostrum*» has witnessed the alternation of the biggest flows of humanity. The interaction of civilizations and peoples that progressively appeared on its scene brought prosperity, cultural evolution and great achievements in every field, today a patrimony of humanity. The Mediterranean has united many peoples, both today and once. Therefore, not only is a common language more and more desperately needed, but also an integration of all the peoples living in Europe in a single process of unification.

The Central Role of the Land Instrument Between Security Requirements and

New Operational Capabilities, by Salvatore Farina (p. 24).

When the soldier is called to intervene, he works directly among people and acts in places often characterized by environmental insecurity. It is him who consolidates success and gives security to those who need it. So, in order to better accomplish such tasks and cope with the new threats, the Army

is acquiring sophisticated equipment with the most updated technology, included the satellite one. All this is done to perform properly its institutional tasks and, last but not least, to reduce risks.

The New Frontiers of the Medical Corps Within the National System, by Michele Donvito (p. 36).

Present all over the national territory, active within the Civil Protection and in every out-of-area mission, the last one being that in Afghanistan, always ready to soothe sorrows and sufferings and to defend physical integrity of people, without leaving aside its moral and psychological consequences, Military Health can avail itself of the most innovative scientific and technological discoveries. Much importance is given to communication in order to inform and prevent risks and pathologies. Being perfectly integrated in the Country System, it co-operates with many Ministries other than Defence to offer its irreplaceable contribution to everyone and in every circumstance. With altruism and generosity.

The Permanent Evolution of the Information System, by Sergio Fiorentino (p. 44).

Information technology is standing out as one of the main frontiers of the new millennium, which can increase capacities and efficiency of corporations, societies and institutions. The growing performances of processing systems are furthering their employment in

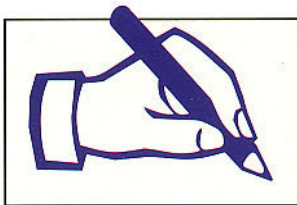
every activity sector and the best organizations are quickly equipping themselves with information systems suited to their specific field. Some of the main managerial references are the Information Centres, equipped with the most updated technologies. In every efficient structure, the technological manager and data bank administrator are going from strength to strength. This is a confirmation of the farsightedness of those who, for some time, have wisely decided to invest in human resources for a long time.

Work Starts Again After Service, by Vito Di Ventura (p. 52).

The end of service might be a delicate moment for a career military man, who, after devoting his best years to the Institution, is obliged to radically change a well-rooted rhythm of life. He is still at the height of his powers, with top professional knowledge and a long life expectation. Today, many Countries are trying to make the most of this valuable patrimony of professionalism and experience through a careful work of reinstatement of these people into productive life, which has undoubted social benefits. The brilliant and innovative British solutions are clear evidence to it.

The Art of Deciding, by Antonio Marchetti (p. 62).

Making a decision requires a complex mental process, where many elements meet, which, being recently detected, can be strengthened



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

thanks to particular elaborative procedures. In fact, already tested techniques help solve the problem of deciding with naturalness and ease also in extremely serious situations. Therefore, science helps make up for little experience. Simple rules, which also the youngest can apply throughout the day, and with very little pains, are enough to achieve concrete advantages in many fields.

From the Underground Lager to the Moon, by Alessandro Ferioli (p. 82).

After the armistice of 8th September, 1943, thousands of Italian soldiers were deported to Dora, the most secret, less known concentration camp and one of the most brutal in history. Dora was the underground detachment of Buchenwald and, due to its importance, depended directly on the S.S. General Command. It was just there that most of the V1 and V2 flying bombs were projected, tested and produced. They were the same bombs which were to hammer relentlessly the city of London. And it was also there that experiments on human guineapigs were carried out. Among sufferings and dignity, ferocities and pride, wrongs and solidarity, our soldiers have been unaware pioneers of the space era. Thousands of them worked for the tests of scientists like Werner von Braun, Helmuth Groettrup and Walter Dornberger. The conquer of space was achieved at the highest price and a lot of blood was shed also by many Italians.

Two Italians Among the Heroes of Balaklava, by Michele Petrolo (p. 92).

Among the brave sixhundreds who charged in Balaclava among the ranks of the Light Brigade, two fellow countrymen chose to follow the British allied, thus conquering inch by inch the territory controlled by artillery deployments. Many gaps were filled by other knights on horseback, who were closing the ranks so as to allow to renew the charge. Captain Giuseppe Govone and Lieutenant Giuseppe Landriani, both wounded on the field, afterwards deserved Queen Victoria's thankfulness. We are now able to throw light on an episode which has disappeared from history texts.

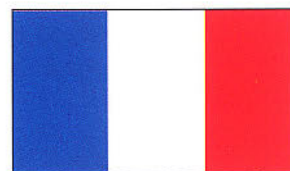
Army Day – A Luminous and Beautiful Feast

by Giuseppe Maria Giovanni Tricarico (p. 101).

«In the light of the past, ennobled by centuries of diuturnal activity, the Italian Army is celebrating today the anniversary of its denomination, in memory of its origins which go back to the first standing units of the second half of the XVI Century. After bringing about national unity, the Army has always offered its generous tributes of silent heroism to the Homeland, both in peace and at war. Today, all the personnel of Arms and Specialities is still lavishing its passion and spirit of sacrifice outside the national territory by carrying out humanitarian missions and contributing to the maintainance of order and peace, under the aegis of NATO and UNO, deserving respect and esteem in

the international scene. In this propitious festivity, I'm pleased to wish the Armed Force to become increasingly successful».

Antonio Martino
Minister of Defence

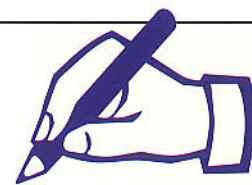


Les faces de la même pièce, par Vittorio Barbati (p. 4).

La stratégie tient de l'art et de la science car dans l'organisation et dans la conduite des opérations de guerre elle repose sur l'intuition et sur la préparation professionnelle. Quant à la grande stratégie, elle tient de l'art et de la science de la conduite politique, économique et militaire de la guerre elle même. Du moins selon la définition classique des deux concepts. Pourtant, aujourd'hui, ces paramètres ne semblent plus être valables. Mais ce n'est là qu'une apparence d'autant que c'est le concept de guerre qui change et que par conséquent celui de menace change lui aussi. Cherchons-en les raisons.

Depuis les époques les plus éloignées, la Méditerranée forge les civilisations, par Louis Godart (p. 16).

L'ancien Mare Nostrum a été traversé par les plus importants courants de l'humanité. L'interaction des civilisations et des peuples qui se sont progressivement installés dans



le bassin méditerranéen ont donné lieu au bien-être, à l'évolution culturelle et aux conquêtes de tous genres, des acquis devenus désormais le patrimoine de l'humanité. La Méditerranée réunit, aujourd'hui comme avant, de nombreux peuples. D'où le besoin non seulement d'un langage commun, mais aussi d'une intégration dans le cadre d'un processus unique visant à l'unification de tous les peuples vivant en Europe.

Le rôle central de l'instrument terrestre face au besoin de sécurité et aux nouvelles exigences opérationnelles,
par Salvatore Farina (p. 24).

Lorsqu'il est appelé à intervenir, le soldat accomplit une action en contact direct avec les gens et agit dans des milieux souvent caractérisés par le manque de sécurité. C'est lui qui affermit le succès de l'action et sécurise ceux qui en ont besoin. Pour mieux accomplir ces tâches et relever les nouveaux défis, l'Armée de Terre s'est dotée de matériel sophistiqué à technologie avancée et satellitaire. L'objectif étant non seulement d'accomplir les tâches institutionnelles attribuées mais également de réduire les risques.

Les nouvelles frontières du Service de santé des armées dans le cadre du «Système Pays»,
par Michele Donvito (p. 36).
Présent sur l'ensemble du territoire national, actif dans le cadre de la protection civile et dans toutes les missions hors

zone -dont la dernière en Afghanistan -, toujours prêt à soulager la douleur et la souffrance, à assurer la sécurité physique des personnes sans en négliger l'aspect moral y psychologique, le Service de santé des armées se sert des découvertes scientifiques et technologiques les plus innovatrices. Dans ce contexte, la communication revêt une importance toute particulière en vue d'informer et de prévenir les risques et les maladies. Le Service de santé collabore avec de nombreux Ministères, autres que le Ministère de la Défense, dans le but d'offrir un appui qui s'avère irremplaçable pour quiconque et dans n'importe quelle circonstance. Et ce avec générosité et altruisme.

L'évolution continue des systèmes informatiques,
par Sergio Fiorentino (p. 44).
L'informatique s'impose désormais comme l'une des principales frontières du nouveau millénaire, en ce sens qu'elle permet d'accroître le potentiel et la rentabilité d'organismes, de sociétés et d'institutions. Les performances sans cesse croissantes des systèmes de traitement de données en favorisent l'emploi dans tous les secteurs d'activité. Aussi, les meilleures organisations se dotent-elles promptement de systèmes informatisés susceptibles de satisfaire leurs différentes exigences. En matière de gestion, il convient de souligner les Centres d'Information, dotés des technologies les plus modernes. Dans toute structure faisant preuve d'efficience,

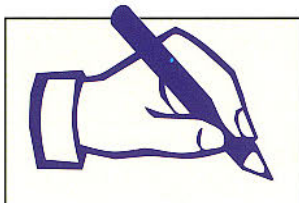
ressortent les figures du dirigeant technologique et de l'administrateur de banque de données. Voilà qui confirme la prévoyance de ceux qui ont eu la sagesse d'investir, depuis longtemps déjà, dans les ressources humaines.

Le travail recommence après le service,
par Vito Di Ventura (p. 52).

Au terme de son service, un militaire de carrière peut connaître un moment délicat d'autant qu'ayant consacré les meilleures années de sa vie à l'Armée, il se voit maintenant obligé de changer radicalement sa manière de vivre, alors qu'il est encore en pleine forme physique, qu'il a atteint les plus hauts niveaux professionnels et qu'il a une longue espérance de vie. Aujourd'hui, nombreux sont les pays qui s'emploient à mettre en valeur ce patrimoine d'expériences professionnelles et personnelles à travers un processus visant à la réinsertion des militaires dans la vie productive, ce qui ne va pas sans présenter d'importants avantages sociaux. Les solutions brillantes et innovatrices proposées par la Grande Bretagne en sont un exemple probant.

L'art de savoir décider,
par Antonio Marchetti (p. 62).

La prise de décision demande un processus mental complexe auquel participent de nombreux éléments récemment identifiés et pouvant être renforcés par des procédés de traitement particuliers. Des techniques bien rodées contribuent ainsi à résoudre le problème lié à une



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

prise de décision naturelle et désinvolte, même dans des circonstances extrêmement difficiles. La science semble ainsi compenser le manque d'expérience. Il suffit de quelques règles simples que même les plus jeunes peuvent appliquer au long de la journée, et sans trop d'efforts, pour obtenir des bénéfices concrets dans de nombreux domaines.

Du camp de concentration à la Lune, **par Alessandro Ferioli (p. 82).**

Après l'armistice du 8 septembre 1943, des milliers de militaires italiens furent déportés à Dora, le camp de concentration le plus secret, le plus méconnu et le plus brutal de l'Histoire. De par son importance, Dora, le détachement sous-terrain de Buchenwald, dépendait directement de l'Etat Major des SS. C'est là qu'étaient conçues, essayées et produites la plupart des bombes volantes V1 et V2, ces bombes qui auraient frappé implacablement la ville de Londres. C'est là aussi qu'étaient réalisées des expériences sur des cobayes humains. Dans un cadre caractérisé par la souffrance et la dignité, la cruauté et l'orgueil, l'injustice et la solidarité, les soldats italiens furent, à leur insu, les pionniers de l'ère spatiale. Des milliers d'entre eux travaillèrent pour les expériences de savants tels que Werner von Braun, Helmut Gröttup et Walter Dornberger. La conquête de l'espace a été payée cher, notamment en termes de vies humaines, y compris celle de nombreux militaires italiens.

Deux italiens parmi les héros de Balaclava, **par Michele Petrolo (p. 92).**

Parmi les six-cents valeureux soldats ayant pris part à la charge de la Brigade légère à Balaclava, deux italiens choisirent de suivre les alliés anglais pour conquérir pas à pas le terrain contrôlé par les formations des artilleries ennemies. Les vides étaient comblés par de nouveaux chevaux et de nouveaux chevaliers qui serraient les rangs, permettant ainsi de renouveler la charge. Le Capitaine Giuseppe Govone et le Lieutenant Giuseppe Landriani, blessés sur le champ de bataille, obtinrent la reconnaissance de la reine Victoria. Aujourd'hui nous pouvons présenter sous son vrai jour un épisode qui avait été effacé des livres d'Histoire.

Une fête belle comme le soleil, **par Giuseppe Maria Giovanni Tricarico (p. 101).**

«Forte d'un passé ennobli par des siècles d'activité incessante, l'Armée italienne célèbre aujourd'hui l'anniversaire de sa dénomination en commémorant ses origines qui remontent à la création des premières unités permanentes de la seconde moitié du XVI^e siècle. Après avoir accompli l'unité nationale, l'Armée n'a cessé d'offrir avec générosité, en temps de guerre comme en temps de paix, son concours silencieux et héroïque au service de la Patrie. Aujourd'hui encore, l'ensemble du personnel des Armées et des Spécialités accomplit à l'étranger ses missions

humanitaires et de paix sous l'égide de l'OTAN et de l'ONU, en prodiguant la même passion et le même esprit de sacrifice, méritant ainsi l'estime et le respect de la communauté internationale.

A l'occasion de cette heureuse commémoration, j'ai le plaisir de souhaiter à la Force armée un avenir des plus prospères».

Antonio Martino
Ministre de la Défense



Gesichter der gleichen Muenze, **von Vittorio Barbati (S. 4).**

Die Strategie ist Kunst und Wissenschaft, weil sie sich in der Organisation und Haltung der Kriegooperationen auf die Intuition und auf die Berufsausbildung stuetzt. Die grosse Strategie dagegen ist Kunst und Wissenschaft der politischen, oekonomischen und militaerischen Haltung des Krieges selbst. So ist es, zumindest nach einer klassischen Definition der beiden Begriffe. Nun scheint es heute, dass diese Parameter anfangen, nicht mehr so gueltig zu sein wie einst. Aber im Grunde ist das nur der Anschein: da sich der Begriff vom Krieg aendert, wechselt sich auch jener der Bedrohung. Wir werden sehen warum.



Das Mittelmeer formt seit jeher die Zivilisationen, von Louis Godard (S. 16).

Das alte «*Mare Nostrum*» hat das Wechseln der groessten Stroeme der Menschheit gesehen. Die Wechselwirkung der Voelker und Kulturen, die sich nach und nach gezeigt haben, hat Wohlstand, kulturellen Fortschritt und Errungenschaften auf jedem Gebiet gebracht, das heutige «Erbe der Menschheit». Das Mittelmeer vereint, heute wie damals, viele Voelker.

Deswegen ist nicht nur eine gemeinsame Sprache, sondern auch ein Vereinigungsprozess der Bevoelkerung Europas, immer dringender.

Die Zentralrolle der Landstreitkraefte zwischen Sicherheitsbeduerfnissen und neuen Einsaetzen, von Salvatore Farina (S. 24).

Der Soldat, wenn er zum Einschreiten aufgerufen wird, arbeitet er direkt zwischen den Menschen und wirkt in Umgebungen, die oft von Unsicherheiten charakterisiert sind. Er ist es, der den Erfolg befestigt und Sicherheit verbreitet, wo sie gebraucht wird. Um besser derartige Aufgaben erfuellen zu koennen und den neuen Herausforderungen gewachsen zu sein, wird das Heer mit hochtechnischen Ausruestungen beliefert, in denen modernste Technologien, auch im satellitaeren Bereich, vorherrschen. Und das, um die institutionellen Auftraege angemessen zu erfuellen und, nicht zuletzt, die Risiken

einzuschraenken.

Die neuen Grenzen der militaerischen Sanitaet im Landessystem, von Michele Donvito (S. 36).

Auf dem ganzen Landesgebiet anwesend, im Zivilschutz und in allen auslaendischen Missionen taetig, letztlich jene in Afgahnistan, immer bereit, Schmerzen und Leiden zu lindern, die koerperliche Integritaet der Voelker zu schuetzen, ohne jene moralische und psychologische zu unterlassen, macht die Militaersanitaet Gebrauch von den neuesten technologischen und wissenschaftlichen Entdeckungen. Bemerkenswert ist die Bedeutung, die der Information zugewiesen wird, mit dem Zweck, ueber Gefahren und Pathologien zu informieren, um sie vorzubeugen. Vollkommen im dem Landessystem integriert, kooperiert sie mit vielen verschiedenen Ministerien, um jedem, in allen Faellen, eine unersetzbare Unterstuetzung anzubieten. Grosszuegig und uneigennuetzig.

Die staendige Entwicklung der informatischen Systeme, von Sergio Fiorentino (S. 44).

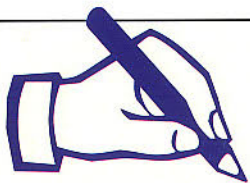
Die Informatik stellt sich als einer der hauptsaechlichen Schwerpunkte des neuen Jahrtausends dar, in der Lage das Potential und die Leistungsfahigkeit von Vereinen, Gesellschaften und Institutionen zu erhoehen. Die fortschreitenden Leistungen der Datenverarbeitung werden auf jedem Taetigkeitsbereich gefoerdert, sodass sich die

wichtigsten Organisationen mit ihnen angemessenen Informatiksystemen sofort versorgen. Einer der bedeutendsten Verwaltungsapparate sind die Informationsstellen, die mit den modernsten Technologien ausgestattet sind. In jeder wirksamen Struktur bekommt die Figur des technologischen Leiters und des Datenbank-Verwalters zunehmende Bedeutung. Dies ist eine Bestaetigung der Weitsicht derjenigen, die schon laengst mit Umsicht entschieden haben, in menschliche Ressourcen zu investieren.

Die Arbeit faengt nach den Dienstjahren wieder an, von Vito Di Ventura (S. 52).

Das Ende des aktiven Dienstes ist fuer einen Berufssoldaten ein besonderer Moment. Nachdem er den Grossteil seines Lebens dem Militaer gewidmet hat, sieht er sich gezwungen, sein Lebensrhythmus radikal zu aendern. Ausserdem befindet er sich in bester Verfassung, im Besitz maximaler Berufskenntnisse und mit einer langen Lebenserwartung. Heute versuchen viele Laender diesen immensen Wissens- und Erfahrungsschatz, durch eine umsichtige Wiedereingliederung in die berufliche Taetigkeit zu verwerten, was zweifellos soziale Vorteile hat. Die glaenzenden britischen neuen Einfuehrungen sind ein klarer Beweis dafuer.

Die Kunst, sich entscheiden



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

zu koennen, von Antonio Marchetti (S. 62).

Eine Entscheidung erfordert einen komplexen mentalen Vorgang, fuer den viele kuerzlich herausgefundene Elemente von Bedeutung sind und die, auf der Basis von besonderen elaborativen Prozessen, verstaerkt werden koennen. Erprobte Techniken helfen so, das Problem der Entscheidung mit Natuerlichkeit und Unbefangenheit auch in extremen Situationen zu loesen. Die Wissenschaft ist damit in der Lage, die unzureichende Erfahrung auszugleichen. Es bedarf einfacher Regeln, die auch Einsteiger mit einem geringen Aufwand tagsueber anwenden koennen, um dadurch konkrete Vorteile in verschiedenen Bereichen zu erhalten.

Vom unterirdischen Lager zum Mond,

von Alessandro Ferioli (S. 82).
Nach dem Waffenstillstand des 8. Septembers 1943, wurden tausende italienische Soldaten nach Dora, dem geheimsten, weniger bekannten und einer der brutalsten Konzentrationslager, deportiert. Dora war die unterirdische Abteilung von Buchenwald und, wegen ihrer Wichtigkeit, war sie direkt dem SS-Oberkommando unterstellt. Es war dort, wo die meisten Fliegerbomben V1 und V2 projiziert, hergestellt und ausprobiert wurden, diesselben, die die Stadt London unerbittlich beschossen haetten. Dort wurden auch Experimente mit Versuchspersonen

durchgefuehrt. Zwischen Leiden und Wuerde, Greueln und Stolz, Ungerechtigkeit und Solidaritaet, waren unsere Soldaten unbewusste Pioniere des Raumzeitalters. Zu Tausenden arbeiteten sie fuer die Experimente von Wissenschaftlern wie Werner von Braun, Helmuth Groettrup und Walter Dornberger. Die Weltraumeroberung ist unter grossen Opfern erlangt worden und viel Blut ist, auch seitens vieler Italiener, vergossen worden.

Es waren auch Italiener unter den Helden von Balaclava, von Michele Petrolo (S. 92).

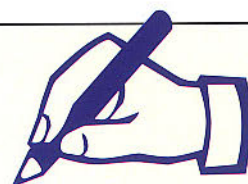
Unter den mutigen Sechshundert, die in Balaclava in den Reihen der leicht bewaffneten Brigade angegriffen haben, entschieden zwei Landsleute, sich den englischen Alliierten anzuschliessen und so Schritt fuer Schritt das Territorium zu erobern, das von Stellungen von Artillerie beherrscht war. Die entstehenden Luecken wurden von anderen Pferden und Reitern ausgefuellt, die die Reihen schlossen und so die Moeglichkeit gaben, erneut anzugreifen. Der Kapitaeen Giuseppe Govone und der Leutnant Giuseppe Landriani, die auf dem Feld verletzt wurden, verdienten sich so die Anerkennung der Koenigin Viktoria. Wir sind jetzt in der Lage, ein Ereignis zu beleuchten, das aus den Geschichtsbuechern verschwunden war.

Ein Fest so schoen wie die Sonne, von Giuseppe Maria Giovanni Tricarico (S. 101).

Das italienische Heer, angesichts einer in Jahren taeglicher Einsaetze geadelten Vergangenheit, feiert heute das Jubilaeum seiner Ernennung, zum Andenken seines Ursprungs, der aus den ersten festen Einheiten der zweiten Haelfte des XVI Jahrhunderts stammt. Nachdem die italienische Vereinigung zustande gebracht wurde, hat das Heer immer, im Frieden sowie im Krieg, gewirkt, indem es dem Vaterland einen grossmuetigen Tribut von stillschweigenden Heldentaten geliefert hat. Noch heute arbeitet das ganze Personal aller Waffengattungen und Spezialeinheiten mit Passion und Opfergeist ausserhalb des Staatsgebiets, in der Erfuellung menschenfreundlicher Missionen und um zu der Aufrechterhaltung der Ordnung und des Friedens, unter dem Schutz der NATO und UNO beizutragen, Respekt und Achtung auf Internationaler ebene verdienend. Bei dieser feierlichen Gelegenheit, ist es mir ein Vergnuegen, den Milirtaer-Streitkraeften meine allerbesten Wuensche und eine glueckliche Zukunft zu aeussern.

Antonio Martino -
Verteidigungsminister





**Dos caras de la misma moneda,
por Vittorio Barbatì (pág. 4).**

La estrategia es arte y ciencia a la vez, ya que en la organización y conducción de las operaciones bélicas se basa en la intuición y en la preparación profesional. La gran estrategia, en cambio, es arte y ciencia de la conducción política, económica y militar de la guerra misma. Por lo menos, esta es la definición clásica de los dos conceptos. Sin embargo, al parecer, dichos parámetros ya no valen más. Pero son tan solo apariencias ya que al cambiar el mismo concepto de guerra cambia a su vez el de amenaza. Vamos a ver por qué.

**Desde los tiempos más remotos el Mediterráneo plasma las civilizaciones,
por Louis Godart (pág. 16).**

En el antiguo *Mare Nostrum* se fueron alternando los mayores flujos humanos. La interacción de las civilizaciones y de los pueblos que progresivamente se asomaron al Mediterráneo ha acarreado bienestar, evolución cultural y conquistas en los ámbitos más diversos, contribuyendo a crear lo que hoy día se ha vuelto patrimonio de la humanidad. Como por el pasado, el Mediterráneo sigue aunando muchos pueblos. De ahí la necesidad no sólo de un lenguaje común, sino también de la integración en un proceso único encaminado a la unificación de todos los pueblos de Europa.

El papel central de la herramienta terrestre ante la

**necesidad de seguridad y las nuevas exigencias de operatividad,
por Salvatore Farina (pág. 24).**

A la hora de intervenir, el soldado opera directa entre la gente y actúa en ámbitos generalmente caracterizados por inseguridad ambiental. El es quien consolida el éxito y da seguridad a aquellos que lo necesiten. Para llevar a cabo correctamente estas tareas y aceptar los nuevos retos, el Ejército se está dotando de equipos sofisticados con tecnología ultramoderna y hasta satelitaria. Ello con el fin no sólo de cumplir con los tareas institucionales atribuidas sino también y sobre todo reducir los riesgos.

**Las nuevas fronteras del Cuerpo de Sanidad Militar en el Sistema País,
por Michele Donvito (pág. 36).**

Presente en todo el territorio nacional, activo en la Protección civil y en todas las misiones fuera de zona - la última en Afganistán - siempre listo para aliviar dolor y sufrimiento y salvaguardar la seguridad física de la gente, sin descuidar su aspecto moral y psicológico, el Cuerpo de Sanidad Militar cuenta con los más innovadores descubrimientos científicos y tecnológicos. La comunicación cobra en este ámbito una importancia primordial a la hora de informar y de prevenir riesgos y patologías. Perfectamente integrado en el Sistema País, colabora con numerosos Ministerios además del de Defensa, asegurando un apoyo insustituible a todos y en

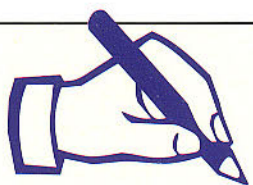
cualquier circunstancia, con altruismo y generosidad.

**La evolución continua de los sistemas informáticos,
por Sergio Fiorentino (pág. 44).**

La informática se está imponiendo como una de las mayores fronteras del nuevo milenio por ser capaz de incrementar el potencial y el rendimiento de entes, sociedades e instituciones. Las prestaciones crecientes de los sistemas de procesamiento facilitan su aplicación en cualquier sector de actividad. Tanto es así que las mejores organizaciones se dotan prontamente de sistemas informatizados capaces de responder a sus propias exigencias. Cabe señalar al respecto, en tema de gestión, los Centros de Información equipados con las más modernas tecnologías. En toda estructura eficiente destacan cada vez más, las figuras del directivo tecnológico y del administrador de bancos de datos. Lo cual confirma la sabiduría de quienes, como buenos previsores, decidieron invertir desde hace tiempo en recursos humanos.

**El trabajo empieza de nuevo al finalizar del servicio,
por Vito Di Ventura (pág. 52).**

Al finalizar su servicio, los militares de carrera pueden experimentar un momento particular de su vida ya que tras dedicar sus mejores años a la Institución, se ven obligados a cambiar radicalmente su ritmo de vida. Además, todavía cuentan con todos sus fuerzas



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN

físicas, alcanzaron los más altos niveles profesionales y tienen una larga esperanza de vida. Hoy día, numerosos países están tratando de valorizar este inmenso patrimonio de profesionalidades y experiencias a través de la reinserción en la vida productiva, lo cual conlleva considerables ventajas sociales. Prueba de ello son las brillantes e innovadoras soluciones propuestas por gran Bretaña.

El arte de saber tomar un decisión, **por Antonio Marchetti (pág. 62).**

La decisión requiere un complejo proceso mental en el que participan numerosos elementos identificados recientemente que pueden ser potenciados a través de procedimientos de elaboración especiales. Así es como técnicas probadas ayudan a resolver el problema de tomar una decisión con naturalidad y soltura, aun en situaciones extremas. Conque, la ciencia compensa la falta de experiencia. Son suficientes unas pocas reglas sencillas que hasta los más jóvenes pueden aplicar durante el día, con esfuerzos mínimos, para conseguir beneficios concretos en muchos ámbitos.

Del campo de concentración subterráneo a la Luna, **por Alessandro Ferioli (pág. 82).**

Tras el armisticio del 8 de septiembre de 1943, miles de soldados italianos fueron deportados a Dora, el campo

de concentración más secreto, más desconocido y más brutal de la Historia. Dora era el destacamiento subterráneo de Buchenwald, que debido a su importancia, dependía directamente del Estado mayor de los SS. Allí era donde se diseñaba, experimentaba y producía la mayoría de las bombas volantes V1 y V2, aquellas bombas que habrían martillado implacablemente la ciudad de Londres. Allí era también donde se llevaban a cabo experimentos con cobayos humanos. Entre dolor y dignidad, crueldad y orgullo, injusticia y solidaridad, los soldados italianos fueron, sin saberlo, los pioneros de la era espacial. Miles y miles de ellos trabajaron para los experimentos de científicos como Werner von Braun, Helmut Gröttrup y Walter Dornberger. La conquista del espacio se pagó cara ya que se derramó mucha sangre, de soldados italianos inclusive.

Había italianos entre los héroes de Balaclava, **por Michele Petrolo (pág. 92).**

Entre los seiscientos valientes de la brigada ligera que cargó contra Balaclava se encontraban dos italianos que habían decidido seguir a los aliados ingleses conquistando paso a paso cada centímetro de territorio controlado por los despliegues de artillería. Las bajas se compensaban con otros caballos y otros caballeros que cerraban filas para volver posible otra carga. El Capitán Giuseppe

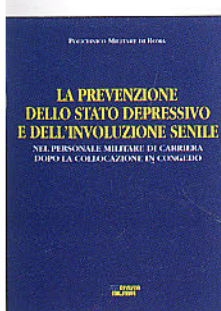
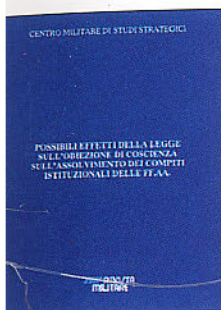
Govone y el Lugarteniente Giuseppe Landriani, heridos en el campo de batalla, merecieron el reconocimiento de la Reina Victoria. Ahora estamos en condiciones de arrojar luz sobre un episodio borrado de los libros de Historia.

Una fiesta hermosa como el sol, **por Giuseppe Maria Giovanni Tricarico (pág. 101).**

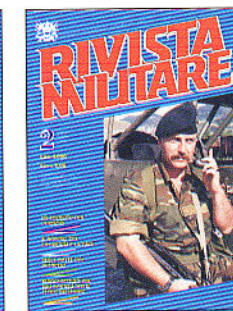
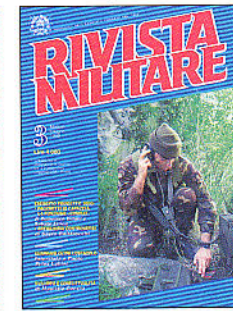
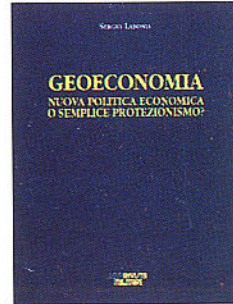
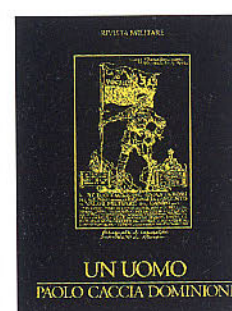
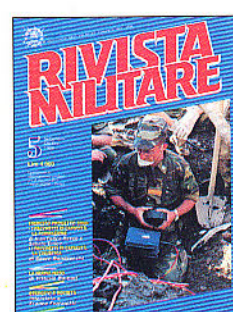
«El Ejército italiano, a la luz de un pasado ennoblecido por siglos de incesante actividad, celebra en el día de hoy el aniversario de su denominación, recordando sus orígenes que se remontan a la creación de las primeras unidades permanentes de la segunda mitad del siglo XVI. Tras lograr la unidad nacional, el Ejército siempre operó, tanto en tiempo de guerra como de paz, a través de las generosas y silenciosas aportaciones de los héroes de la Patria. Hoy en día, todo el personal de los Ejércitos y de las Especialidades sigue prodigando igual pasión y espíritu de sacrificio fuera del territorio nacional a la hora de cumplir misiones humanitarias y de mantenimiento de la paz, bajo la égida de la OTAN y de la ONU, volviéndose merecedor de respeto y estima internacional.

Con motivo de esta fiesta conmemorativa tengo sumo placer en desearle a las Fuerzas armadas un prospero porvenir».

Antonio Martino
Ministro de Defensa.



THE EDITORIAL STYLE OF RIVISTA MILITARE



RIVISTA MILITARE

JOURNAL OF THE ITALIAN ARMY FOUNDED IN 1856



3

SEPTEMBER - OCTOBER
NOVEMBER - DECEMBER
2003



Euro 2,10



RIVISTA MILITARE

JOURNAL OF THE ITALIAN ARMY FOUNDED IN 1856

HONOUR TO THE HEROES OF AN NASIRIYAH FALLEN FOR PEACE

REFLECTIONS OF THE
ARMY CHIEF OF STAFF

STRATEGY AND ITS MOST
RECENT DEVELOPMENTS

REPORT ON IRAQ

THE DAWN OF THE
SECOND "RISORGIMENTO"

ENGLISH EDITION

*Just when we were about to go to press,
we were struck by the dramatic news of the
terrorist attack of Nasiriyah. The Fallen Soldiers
are colleagues, friends, comrades, treacherously
hit by assassins who vilely want to destroy
the projects of peace and hope for Iraq.
All Italians joined the families of the victims,
surrounding them with their affection,
spontaneously expressed also through
the telephone exchanges of Headquarters
and Commands.*

*The servicemen who offered their life to give
others a longed-for serenity are our modern
heroes. Heroism is a universal good, which does
not change according to the times. It remains
unaltered and shines forever, since its aim is
to do good, in spite of those who have darkness
in their hands and in their hearts.*

*Those brave soldiers had gone there to bring
peace, but the enemies of peace have decided
to carry them away, not knowing that by doing
so they have made them immortal, because
their sacrifice will generate a better world.
May God receive those heroes of our time,
we are sure that He will love them forever. Down
here they have had very little time for being loved*

**Capitano Massimo Ficuciello
Sottotenente Giovanni Cavallaro
Sottotenente Enzo Fregosi
Sottotenente Filippo Merlino
Sottotenente Alfonso Trincone
Maresciallo Aiutante Massimiliano Bruno
Maresciallo Aiutante Alfio Ragazzi
Maresciallo Capo Daniele Ghione
Maresciallo Capo Silvio Olla
Brigadiere Giuseppe Coletta**

**Brigadiere Ivan Ghitti
Vice Brigadiere Domenico Intravaia
Appuntato Horatio Maiorana
Appuntato Andrea Filippa
Caporal Maggiore Capo Scelto Emanuele Ferraro
1° Caporal Maggiore Alessandro Carrisi
Caporal Maggiore Pietro Petrucci
Dottor Stefano Rolla
Dottor Marco Beci**



REFLECTIONS OF THE ARMY CHIEF OF STAFF

At the beginning of this year, on opening the first number of "Rivista Militare", I noticed the fine initiative of giving space to the "voiced reflections" of the Chief of Staff of our Service. At that moment it would have been difficult for me to anticipate that, soon after, I would be the author of these few but significant lines. Therefore, also because I am aware of the large readership enjoyed by this magazine, it is not without emotion that I set about following in the wake of this fine tradition.

Although only a few weeks have gone by since I took up my new office, I have had the opportunity to begin a cycle of visits to Commands, Organizations, Institutes and Units of the Army, both in Italy and abroad; this will allow me to comprehend, fully and personally, the "state of fitness" of the Service. I have already made some "sorties", among which the very profitable ones in the Afghan and Iraqi Theatres, from which I have been able to draw some precious initial information, including the pleasant discovery of gratifying sectorial and "niche" realities that unequivocally attest to a full activism, a growing participation and an absolute objective-sharing, even at the lowest levels. This is the right encouragement to continue on our course of growth, reorganization and modernization required by the new role of the military instrument.

It is precisely in order to play this role that the Italian Army is changing from a defensive war-tool – built on the principle of deterrence – into an active security instrument, rapidly employable and ready to contribute to the implementation of the decisions taken by the Political Authorities in the sector of national security. We are not facing a simple transformation, but rather a real and radical change, a professional and cultural growth, both on the organizational and on the individual plane. Our final objective is an Army characterized by great flexibility and versatility, fully integrable in joint and international environments, capable of expressing assets entirely interoperable with those of the allied and friendly armies, and in a position to participate, as a protagonist, in the realization of the European security and defence capabilities, as well as in the reinforcement of the United Nations' system of international security and cooperation. These are ambitious and demanding goals which cannot be missed, under penalty of loss of credibility for the whole Country.

The concept of integrability finds its justification in today's challenges to security, which are so complex that they require ever more structured instruments of prevention and contrast, which can be effective and incisive only if they originate in a joint or combined ambit. But the possibility of obtaining a correct integration is strictly connected with interoperability, i.e. the ability of several systems – Commands, Organizations, Units – to operate together. Both qualities – integrability and interoperability – can be obtained only through the strict observance of the fundamental principle of standardization. A principle that must be applied in every sector, from doctrine to materials, from procedures to training. What is needed is therefore the growth and maturity that I have just mentioned, which must lead us to develop new operational capabilities and to ensure a high performance in joint and combined environments.

Consequently the Italian Army is the protagonist of an unprecedented change, with a non-stop process of reorganization which, considering the extent of the reform, is proceeding very rapidly. In this constant activity of rationalization it is necessary to continue ensuring the capabilities of operation and intervention which, between the end of 1999 and the first months of 2000, permitted the simultaneous employment of up to 10,000 servicemen in operations outside the national territory, from nearby Kosovo to faraway East Timor. It is an exacting, continuous and resolute effort, which involves every component of the Service and, day after day, demonstrates that the Army can, promptly and efficiently, meet all the requests of the Country, always doing its utmost with unquestioned skill, deserving constant appreciation and raising the international prestige of our Nation.

Nevertheless we must not forget that we would not have reached these gratifying results without the loyal, generous and unselfish dedication of our personnel. As a matter of fact, the essence of our Institution is Man, the fundamental element of the "soldier system", where top-level physical, professional and moral capabilities must blend with the opportunities offered by the new technologies. The process of development, therefore, cannot prescind from the exploitation of this strategic resource. A utilization which must unfold in all directions: education, training, equipment and legal-economic treatment and, above all, quality of life. As regards this latter objective, and despite the evident scarcity of funds, we are earnestly and firmly committed to get as much as possible near the essential standards of living which are the necessary prerequisite for the serene activity of our Men and Women

These few lines, therefore, summarize the ambitious reformative project in which we are engaged. But we must not delude ourselves: we still have a long way to go, and the route will certainly be characterized by difficult moments and "pauses for reflection" But, confirming what I said on undertaking my new position, I cannot but guarantee my full and total commitment to direct this evolution on a path as smooth as possible.

The premise for a positive and brilliant result in this exacting challenge is represented by the excellent impression I had during my first visits. Seeing our units operate as equals with those of the United States on the impervious Afghan terrain, and with the British ones on the insidious sands of Iraq, and being appreciated and explicitly requested for their special operational capabilities and for the values that our servicemen are able to express, is the concrete confirmation of the validity of the decisions that we have taken up to now. I cannot hide that, as Commander of the Italian Army, I am proud and honoured to represent you, and I am sure that during my mandate I shall be able to rely on your best energies and capabilities, in the loyal and unreserved service of our Country.

Good work to you all!

Lieutenant General Giulio Fraticelli



The whole Country embraced the families of the servicemen who sacrificed their life in Iraq for a profound ideal made of altruism, love and solidarity. The Italian people expressed with flowers and messages their affectionate closeness to the relatives of the Heroes of Peace as well as to the Institutions. These Fallen Soldiers will continue to live in our memory and our ideals.

FOUR-MONTHLY

Supplement to numbers 5 and 6 of Rivista Militare Italian Edition

Editor in Chief:

Giuseppe Maria Giovanni TRICARICO

Management and Editorial Office

8, Via di S. Marco

00186 Rome

Phone 0039 0647357373

Advertising

Care of the Secretariat

of Rivista Militare

Phone 0039 0647358139

Printer

Stilgrafica - Rome

Photoprocessing

Studio Lodoli Sud - Aprilia (LT)

Subscription and forwarding

By mail

Law 662/96, art. 2, para 20/c

Conditions for 2004:

One number: Euro 2,10

One back number: Euro 4,20

Subscription rates

Italy: Euro 11,40 a year

Abroad: Euro 15,50 a year

Payment must be made on postal

account No. 22521009 - SME

Centro Pubblicità dell'Esercito

123/A, Via XX Settembre - Rome

Residents abroad may remit

payment through bank cheque or

international postal order

Authorized by the Court of Rome

under No. 944 of the Registry by

Decree 7-6-1949

2003

© Copyright by

Rivista Militare



ASSOCIATED TO USPI
UNIONE STAMPA
PERIODICA ITALIANA

The production of this magazine
has been supervised
by Omero Rampa

CONTENTS



Number Three 2003

September - October

November - December

Rivista Militare aims at broadening and updating the technical and vocational training of the Army personnel. It is thus a means of propagating the military way of thinking and a forum of study and debate. Through the publication of articles of technical and scientific interest, Rivista Militare also aims at informing the general public on the Army and on military issues.

I Reflections of the Army Chief of Staff

(Lt.Gen. Giulio Fraticelli)

Politics, Economics and Strategy

2 Report on Iraq

(Giuseppe Cucchi)

16 Strategy and Its Most Recent Developments

(Ferruccio Botti)

28 A Very Advanced Recruitment

(Angelo Lunardo)

40 Humanitarian Law: An Asset for All Societies

(Arturo Marcheggiano)

50 Red-hot Lakes

(Serena Sartini)

Science, Technology and Training

62 Investments and Objectives of the Army

(Salvatore Farina)

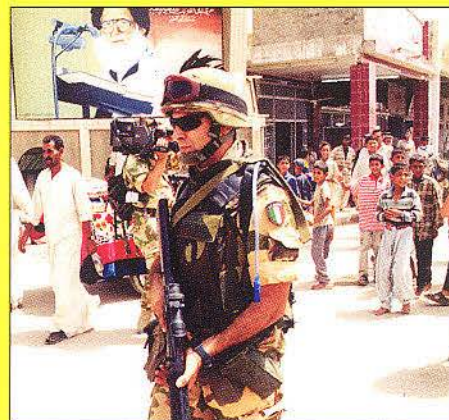
History

SPECIAL REPORT ON THE 60TH ANNIVERSARY OF THE WAR OF LIBERATION

69 The Dawn of the Second "Risorgimento"

(Luigi Poli and Giorgio Donati)

118 Sommario - Summary - Sommaire - Inhalt - Resumen - Sumario



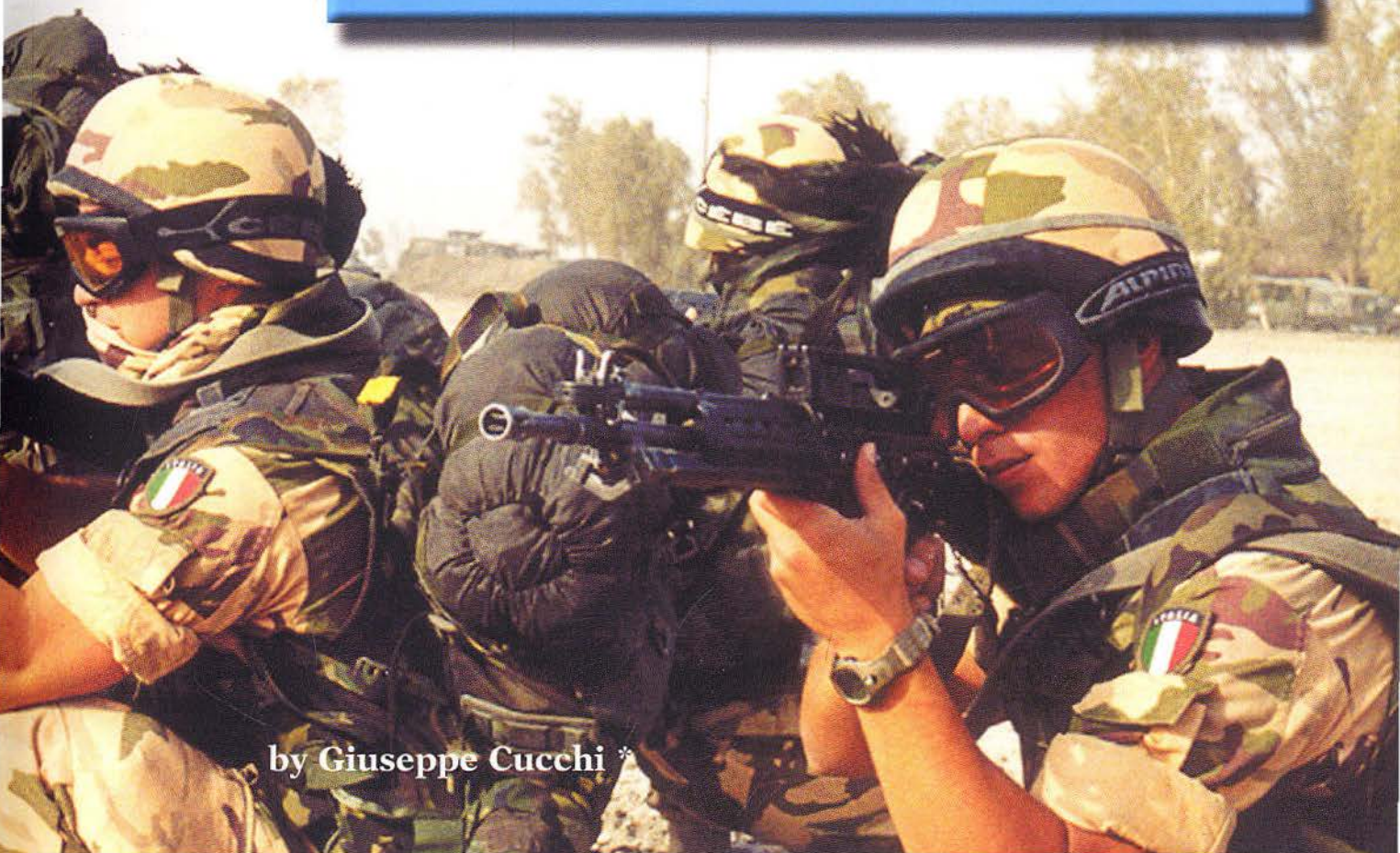
Instructions for Contributors: Anyone may contribute. To guarantee the highest objectivity of information, Rivista Militare leaves contributors ample freedom, though it does not necessarily share their opinions. The Author is thus solely responsible for the articles which, published unedited and without editorial ties, exclusively reflect his personal ideas. Articles must be original in thought and should not exceed ten typewritten pages. Once the Author receives his fee, he loses all exclusive rights. Rivista Militare may then pass the article on to other publications and EMPA (European Military Press Association) periodicals. Articles should be accompanied by suitable photographs, illustrations, explanatory tables, together with a photograph of the Author, a brief «curriculum vitae» and a ten-line typewritten summary. Rivista Militare reserves the right to change the title of articles and choose the typeface deemed most suitable. Rivista Militare is equipped with a computerized system for phototypesetting and videopaging. In order to make the production of the articles more expeditious, it is desirable that the Authors provide, besides the text on paper, also the diskette with the text files of the article. Any system and type of computer can be used.

REPORT ON IRAQ

**IT IS FUNDAMENTAL TO INCREASE
THE DIALOGUE,
SO THAT THE COMPLEX
TRANSITION TOWARDS DEMOCRACY
DOES NOT OFFER THE PRETEXT
TO A FEW OPPOSING GROUPS
TO SADDLE THE LIBERATION
FORCES WITH THEIR OWN
ATAVISTIC CONTRADICTIONS**



Iraq is a wonderful land rich in resources, inhabited by people who are the heirs of the most ancient civilizations of the past. The land that offers hospitality to our soldiers, organized in a multinational coalition, is still troubled by internal problems which could delay the swift achievement of democracy. An achievement that everyone hopes to proceed together with the improvement of the economic situation and conditions of life.



by Giuseppe Cucchi *

Now that the war is over, now that Saddam Hussein's regime has been destroyed by the U.S. with an impeccable demonstration of force and military technique, and the problems linked to the war give way to those of the reconstruction, one cannot avoid asking oneself what could be the questions and problems that will have to be faced in the future in the Mesopotamian and Middle-Eastern contexts. Contexts that, up to now, at least from a military point of view, we

have just faced as spectators and not as protagonists. It is a logic desire, considered that our Country has been politically involved in the war against terrorism since its beginning, when all the NATO Countries agreed to fight against it less than 24 hours after the attack to the Twin Towers.

However it must be underlined that, on that occasion, we probably did not realize how much commitment would be necessary in the future to fulfill our choice and we did

not take into consideration the possible differences of opinion with our best and oldest allies, those with whom we were sitting together both in the European Union and in NATO. Our political commitment was immediately followed by military action. First in the limited context of the air-sea actions conducted by NATO in the framework of Operation "Enduring Freedom", then with a well-weighted crescendo in the Afghan area of operations, in Kabul with ISAF and in Kost,

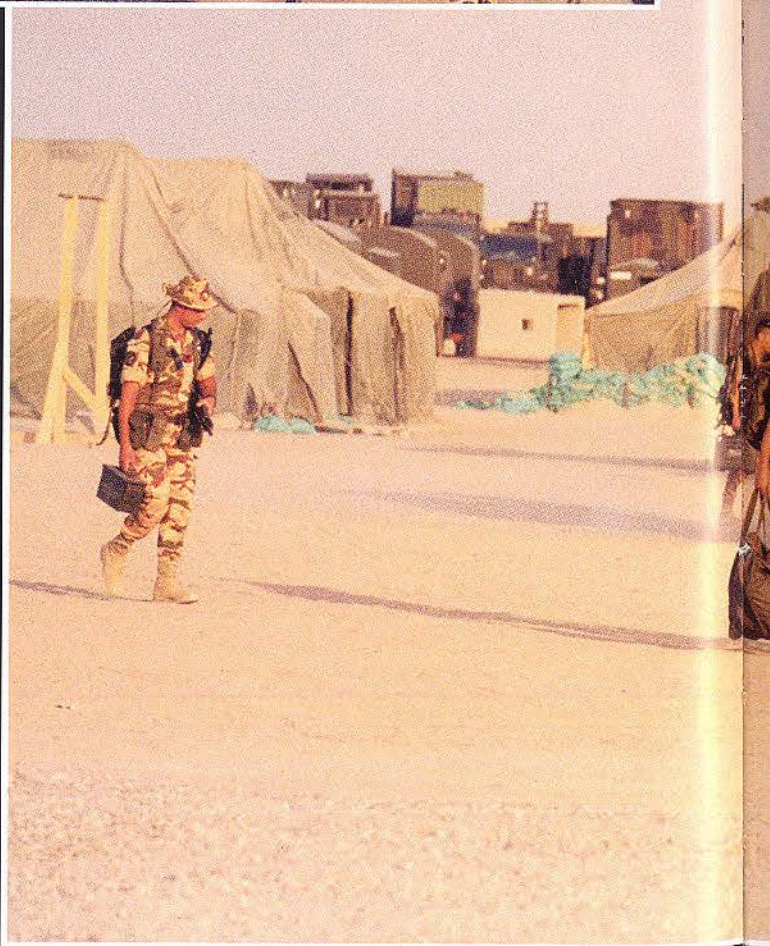


still with "Enduring Freedom", but this time in a different framework, which described the action as a peace mission.

Now we are in Iraq with forces more or less equal to a Brigade, in a new Theatre, with the repute of being the best peace soldiers in the world, a repute laboriously conquered by our Officers, Non-commissioned Officers and Enlisted-men in twenty years of transalpine and overseas operations.

A GENERAL VIEW

What is the operational context? What are the problems to be solved daily, acting with skill and patience without causing any trouble? Iraq is a Muslim country, and this is a first important aspect to consider. We have already had experiences in Muslim countries: recently we have been in North Iraq, Somalia, Albania, Bosnia, Kosovo and Afghanistan. But all these countries were Sunnite countries, or the majority were Sunnite. In Iraq, instead, the majority of the population are Shi'ite. They are numerous especially in the south, which is the part that concerns us, and live in the zone that was initially under



British control. Does it make such a difference if the local population is Sunni or Shi'ite? Yes, it makes a lot of difference. First of all because Shi'ite Islam is not like Sunni Islam, where believers are equal in the congregation and each believer, if he feels inspired by God, can get on the pulpit and talk at the end of the Friday prayer. Shi'ites have a clergy organized in a pyramidal hierarchy. A structure that is perfect to infiltrate in the nerve-centres of power in a very brief time, taking the place of another managerial class deprived of authority, as it happened in Iran some decades ago. Moreover, the Shi'ite schism was caused by a dispute on who had got the best qualifications for leading the community. Was it the people who already belonged to the political and economic managerial class? For the Sunnites, but only for them, the fact that they had been able to take power meant that the *baraka*, the grace of God, was with them.

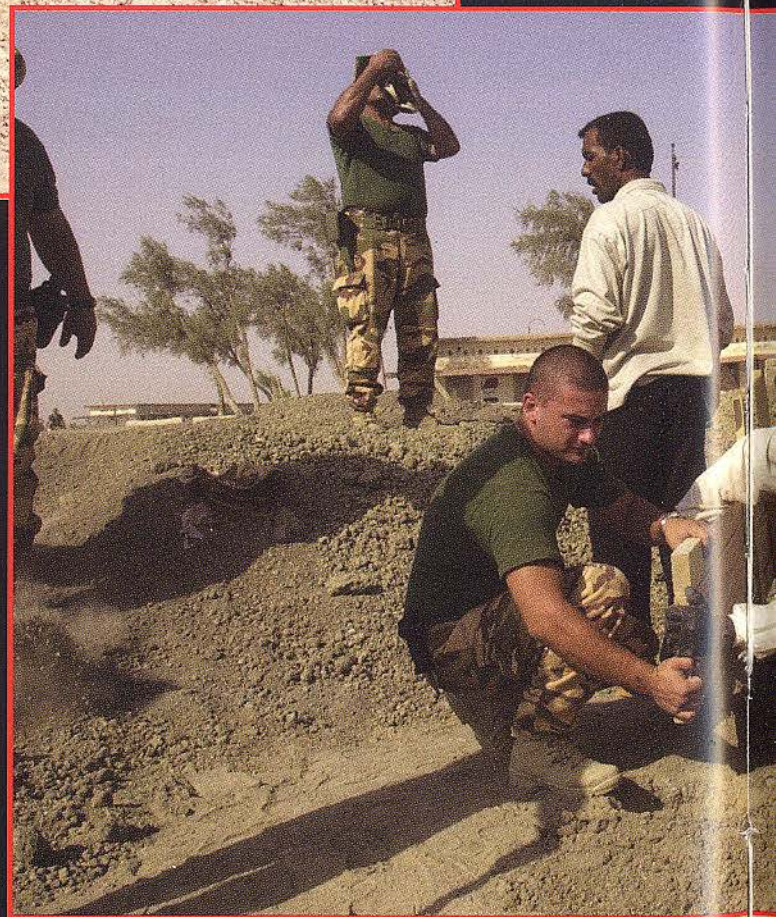




Or was it the people that better knew, interpreted and applied the word of the Almighty? This was the answer that the Shi'ites gave to the question. Operating in a Shi'ite area, it is reasonable to expect that religion and clergy would have a fundamental role, not only inside the mosques but also in politics and administration. Will this role be positive or negative? It will depend both on them and on us. On them, because it would be very easy to use the presence of Christian troops in a land that gives hospitality to the two most sacred Shi'ite towns – Najaf and Kerbela – to instigate hate. In a more generalized context, Osama bin Laden did this, since he invited the Muslims to fight the sacred war because the American troops were walking on the land of the Arabic peninsula, sacred to Islam because of the presence of Mecca and Medina. On us, because we have to consider that we are operating in a different cultural context which we must understand and respect.

SOME SPECIFICATIONS

In the past we Italians were very good at understanding and respecting different cultures. Perhaps because ours was the country of differences, of the eight thousand

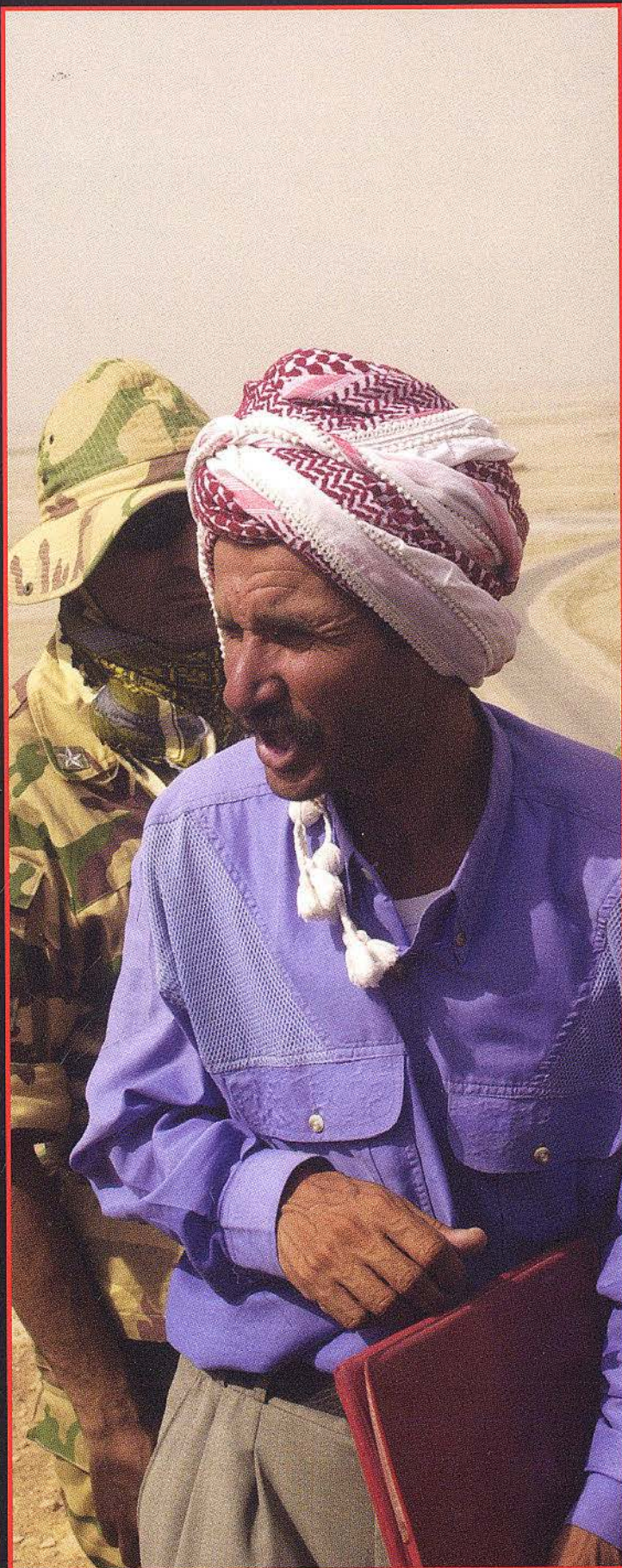


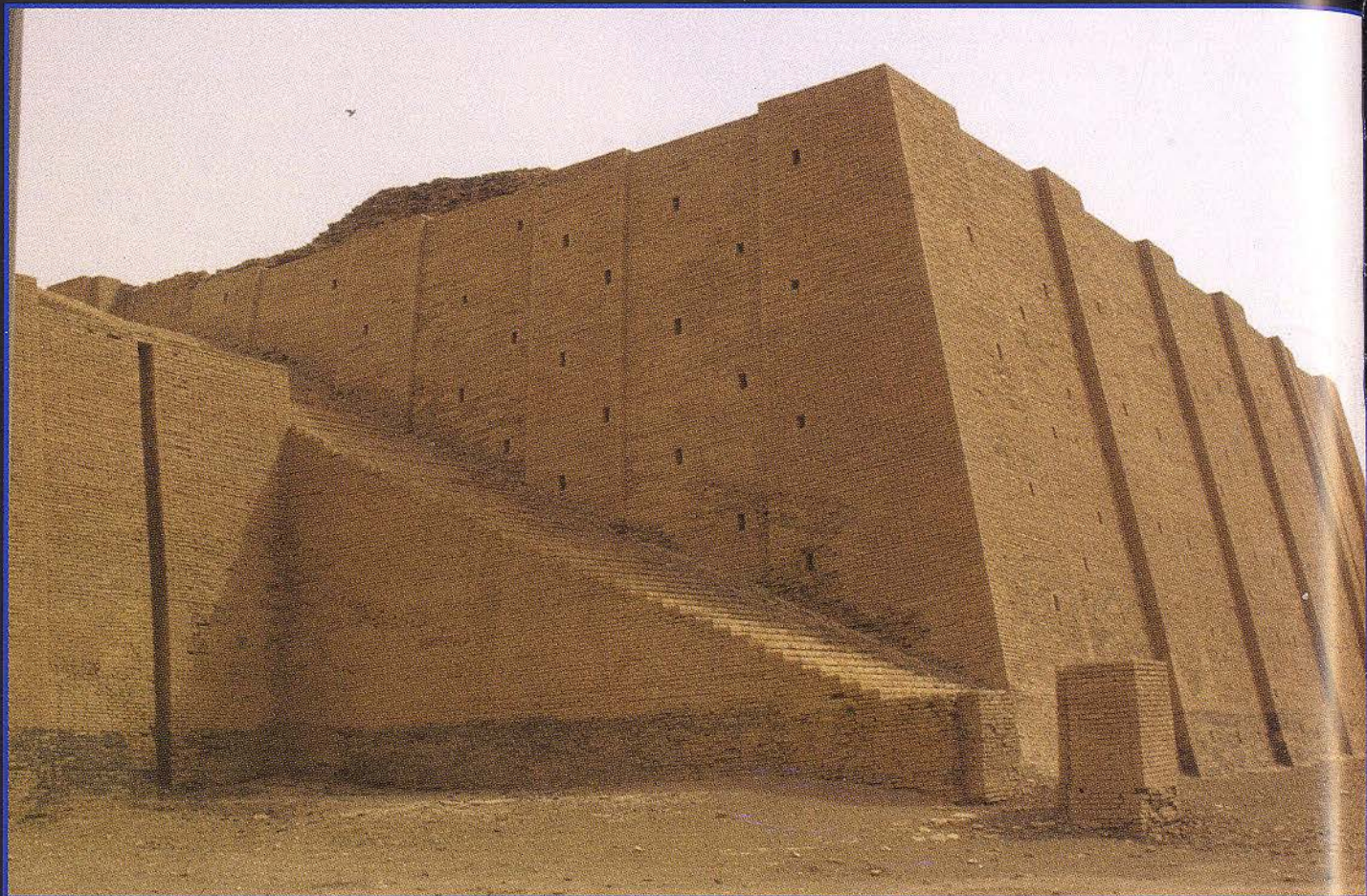
bell towers and, as regards the number of different kinds of cheese, we even managed to outdo the French – who have more than three hundred types. Now that globalization is arrived, our boys, precisely the boys that we send to Iraq, do not drink wine at the mess, but mineral water, fruit juices and Coke, just as the other boys of the same age

do in the rest of the world. Will they be able to understand that when one has the task of rebuilding a country, both materially and morally, strength and technique are not sufficient, but he also needs to know the context and be able to understand the different situations? I suppose so. In a situation like Somalia's which, on the one side had similar aspects and on the other, luckily, had a lot of differences, Italians kept on insisting on understanding and knowledge, even when our allies were relying only on force. Anyway, the possible difference of opinions constitutes a risk that this time we don't have to run. Indeed we are deployed in a sector managed by the British, with whom we worked a lot in the past with



great understanding and respect. Moreover, our qualities and theirs are somehow complementary, so that we are perfect for operating together. The fact that all our contingent is concentrated in one sector, makes us lose some visibility with the media: a MSU - Multinational Special Unit - centred on "Carabinieri" and located in Baghdad,





would have certainly attracted much more attention. However, we have certain advantages in staying together, if anything to avoid improper utilizations of the units. As happened, for example, talking about MSU, when the SFOR HQ ordered the MSU to intervene against the banks controlled by Croat-Bosnian nationalists, without correctly evaluating the level of insecurity of the surroundings. On that occasion, only the high professionalism of our soldiers allowed us to conclude with a partial success what appeared to be a difficult situation from the beginning. Moreover, concentrating the European contingents in a single field, could permit, one day, not to operate under national flags, but in the frame of an operation managed by the European Union. This idea could appear premature, but one should consider that this operation in Iraq is not destined to end in a short period. Both Bosnia – where NATO has been present since 1995 – and Kosovo – where it has been since 1999 – are two examples. In the first case, we have been engaged for eight years, four years in the second case, and we do not yet know





the final date, even if along the years we have succeeded in considerably reducing the number of servicemen in the contingents.

THE POSSIBLE EVOLUTIONARY LINES

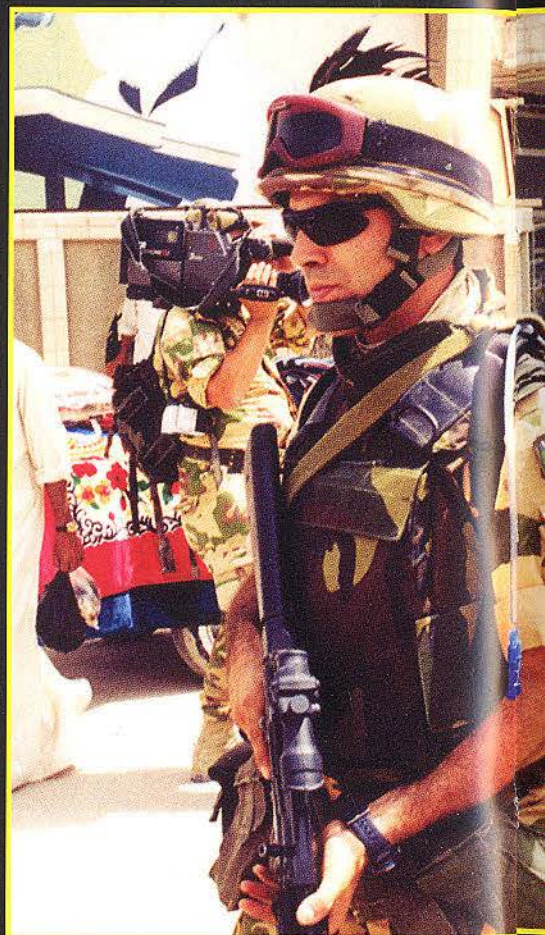
In Iraq the task will be more difficult, more onerous and longer, because of the dimensions of the territory, the bad conditions caused by twenty-years of a cruel dictatorship, three wars and thirteen years of state of war. For this reason it will be necessary to plan for a very long presence, unless the attempts at creating in Iraq an appropriate state structure, a stable government and an efficient administration have a positive outcome: an assumption which, considering the disappointing results, is far from being realized. In view of this, also the prospect of a force under European flag seems logical enough, as it would be framed within a consequential development that has already seen the European Union replace NATO in FYROM, get ready to operate with the UN in Zaire and, moreover, insist on relieving SFOR in Bosnia.

So it will be a long stay and, at least as regards time, particularly onerous. Onerous also from the point of view of the engagement, because the about three thousand men and women we are sending to Iraq must be added to the other thousands of

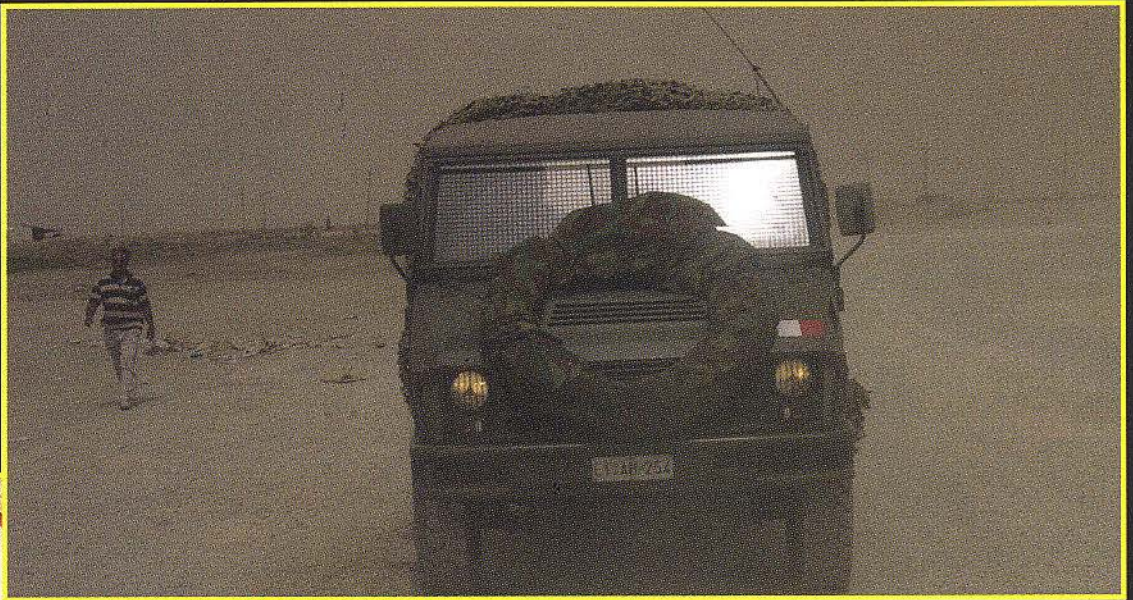


soldiers already engaged in different theatres, in operations which are also going to last a long time. Are we reaching the limit of our capabilities, at least numerically? With a pessimistic view, we could answer that we have already exceeded it a long time ago. Just as we have abundantly exceeded the limit granted by our scarce financial resources. We did not say "no" even to the last requests, concerning the European force in Zaire, even if we could only promise the availability of equipment and the dispatch of observers. However, we have to underline that our effort to participate actively and to assume a role on the international scene, capable of satisfying our national ambitions, is authoritatively acknowledged. Lord Robertson of Port Ellen, the Scotsman who has been NATO Secretary General for almost four years speaks, jokingly but at the same time with great respect, of "the Italian miracle" in the sector of Defence. He talks of a miracle because we manage to do a lot using budgetary parameters that are among

the lowest in the Alliance. Luckily, in this period the problem of the resources begins to be tackled with a new spirit and the real intention of changing a situation that has been blocked for decades, within both NATO and the European Union. The two organizations have gone as far as to coordinate between them the *Prague Capabilities Commitment* (PCC) of the Atlantic Alliance and the *European Capabilities Action Plan* (ECAP) of the EU, i. e. the two programmes for the supply of materials. This could appear just a little step,



but we have to consider that, during the last years, the two Organizations had been engaged in a ferocious competition to get the scarce resources available. Now finally a coordination has been reached and in the international context there seems to be an incentive to equip the common defence at least with the indispensable resources, in order to allow the European allies to remain interoperable with the Americans. The question is whether these international guidelines will be applied also in the national



context. The difficulties that Italy has met in the ratification of the "Letter of Intent" (LOI), drafted together with five other nations, in order to facilitate the production and trade of armaments within Europe, are a clear expression of the fact that, in our country, when one talks about subjects linked not to war but, much more simply, to a military context, there are preclusions which seem to be more instinctive and dogmatic than rational. However, something seems to be changing even with us. But the

situation remains the same, while in Iraq we have to face an environment which, at least potentially, is full of risks. To the instability and uncertainty deriving from the internal situation of that Country - extreme poverty and, in many cases, a desperation that generates widespread crime favoured by lack of control - we have to add the problems deriving from the necessity of forcing three groups to coexist: the Iraqis in the north, the Sunnite Arab tribes in the centre and the Shi'ites in the south. If they could choose, they would never decide to live together. As we have already seen in the Balkans, trying to impose a solution of this kind means to remain just as caretakers and guarantors for a long time, but also to forbear handing over the power to the local forces until they reach an acceptable level of political and democratic maturity. Otherwise, there will be the risk that ideologically oriented majorities could first use democratic means to take power and immediately after destroy the same democracy that would give their adversaries a hope to win. The risk is even bigger in the case of majorities, such as that of the Iraqi Shi'ites, who have been oppressed by a minority for more than twenty years. In this case, the local management of an immature democracy could lead to a long series of vengeance.

THE SCAPEGOAT PRETEXT

All these are valid reasons to favour a period of transition in Iraq. The problem is that



when a transition occurs thanks to a military occupation, as in this case, it becomes very natural and easy to blame others for what doesn't work, especially if they are strangers. In fact, since Biblical times mankind has been using the very convenient system of the scapegoat to lay the most onerous responsibilities on others. This is happening to the American troops, victims of an open and unjustified hostility in several places.

Beyond this and the police problems that could arise in the future, the core of the problem will always be the economic question. Indeed, the internal situation of the country will get better together with the increase of the people's level of income and the improvement of their life conditions. At this point we obviously ask ourselves if Iraq has the resources needed to make the necessary leap forward in a short time.

IT'S ALL A QUESTION OF RESOURCES

We often hear that Iraq is a rich country, but this was true until twenty-five years ago, when the population had not yet increased almost exponentially and both the two



available resources – water and oil – were still intact. Now the water flow is highly influenced by the Ataturk dam system, which diverts the flows of the Tigris and the Euphrates to the Turkish territory. Moreover, Iraq is mostly cultivated using traditional irrigation systems which use abundant water. As a consequence, it becomes evident that water and politics are linked together and water can become a political tool. As far as oil is concerned, it is true that Iraq could again become one of the biggest oil producers in the world in a short time and that its ascertained supplies are second only to those of Saudi Arabia. Moreover, experts believe that prospecting made with more modern means, and in areas that have been inaccessible for a long period, could lead Iraq to reach the first position. However there are at least two important negative things to consider. The first is that the income deriving from Iraqi oil is already heavily mortgaged. Indeed, Iraq has a very high international debt and many among the creditor countries – Russia first of all – do not want or cannot give up their quotas. Then there are the huge war damages that have to be paid to Kuwait and,



finally, the interests of the big oil companies. As a consequence, even if the resolution by which the UN gave the occupants the administration of this resource fixes relatively precise criteria for the management of the relevant income, the risk is that, in the first years, only a part of the oil revenues will benefit the population directly. Finally, it should be underlined that the “relatively brief time” by which Iraq should again reach the peak of production, is still a time that will last years. Iraq will be forced to depend substantially on



international help until (5 years? 10 years?) it is enabled to express its full potentiality. Always in the hope that it will be possible to find donors willing to accept this heavy burden for such a long period. The experience in Afghanistan has somehow cooled down the enthusiasms. The Conference of the donor countries which took place in Tokyo, did not succeed in reaching the levels that were deemed necessary. Moreover, the credit promised to the Afghan Government is coming in very slowly. If in Iraq something similar were to occur, the food and medical help from both the Non-Governmental Organizations (NGO) and the religious or non-religious charitable Organizations would acquire a great importance. This is another problem for our troops. Indeed, NGOs often work in an atmosphere of merry anarchy which does not allow an efficient coordination and makes it very difficult and burdensome to guarantee an adequate level of security. Furthermore, as Iraq is a Muslim country, there will be a great presence of Muslim charities, some of which – as experience in Kosovo and Bosnia taught us – are comfortable covers, difficult to unmask, for terrorist and subversive activities. The problems connected with aid distribution



will be more difficult if the people in charge are dispersed. We risk creating an inefficient and wasteful system, easily infiltrated by those who want to make a personal profit. Then the Iraqis could easily make a comparison with Saddam Hussein, who stole money for himself, his family and his friends, but managed to organize, albeit using the terrible methods of dictatorship, a good system of widespread distribution of the "oil for food" aid, which the UN reluctantly considered the best in the world.

CONCLUSIONS

Perhaps this analysis is not very reassuring, but that was not the spirit of this study, since its intent was rather to examine the difficult context where our troops operate. Besides, when there are difficulties – as in this case – it is better to try to perceive them as soon as possible in order to be ready to face them with serenity. So we go back to the concept of knowledge that supports force in every operation, a



concept that for us Italians has been clear since the beginning of the crisis-management period, and has built through the years the great capabilities of our soldiers as builders of peace.

□

**Lieutenant General,
Former Military Representative,
to the NATO-EU Committees.*

Strategy is a science that was wrongly considered static and immutable. This is how it changed after the great crises of the 20th century

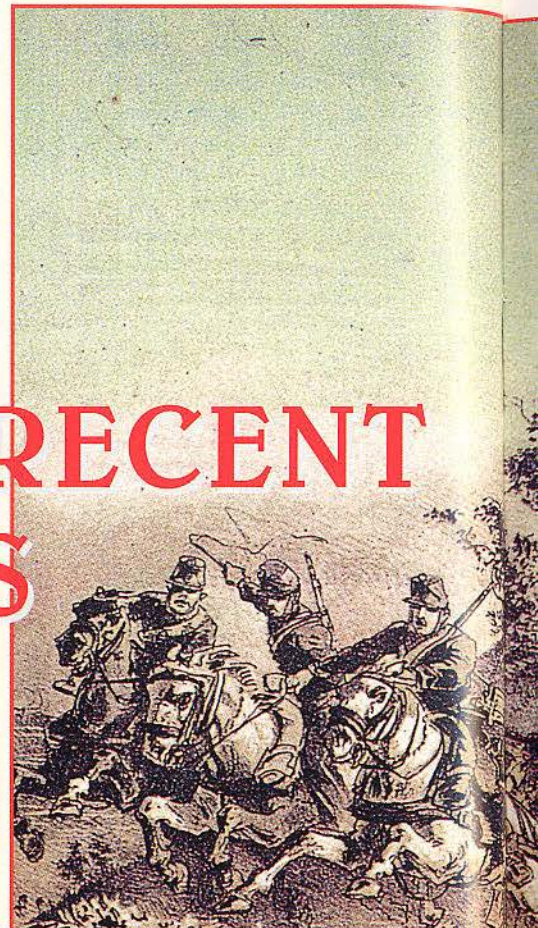
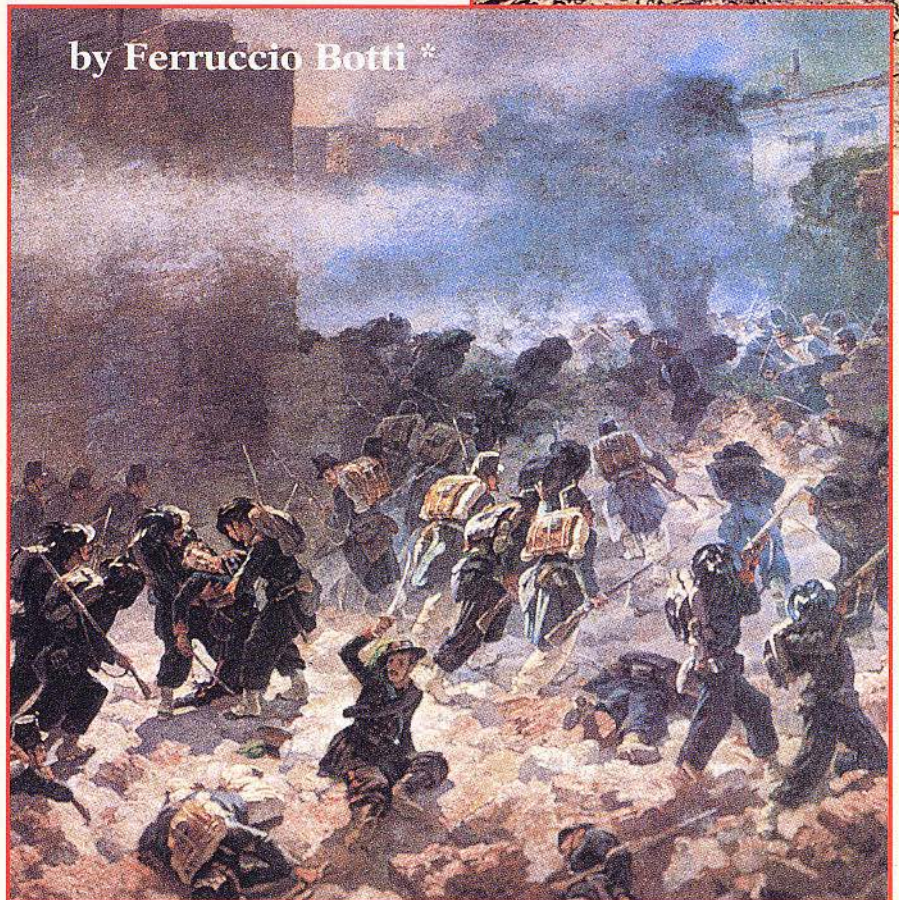
STRATEGY AND ITS MOST RECENT DEVELOPMENTS

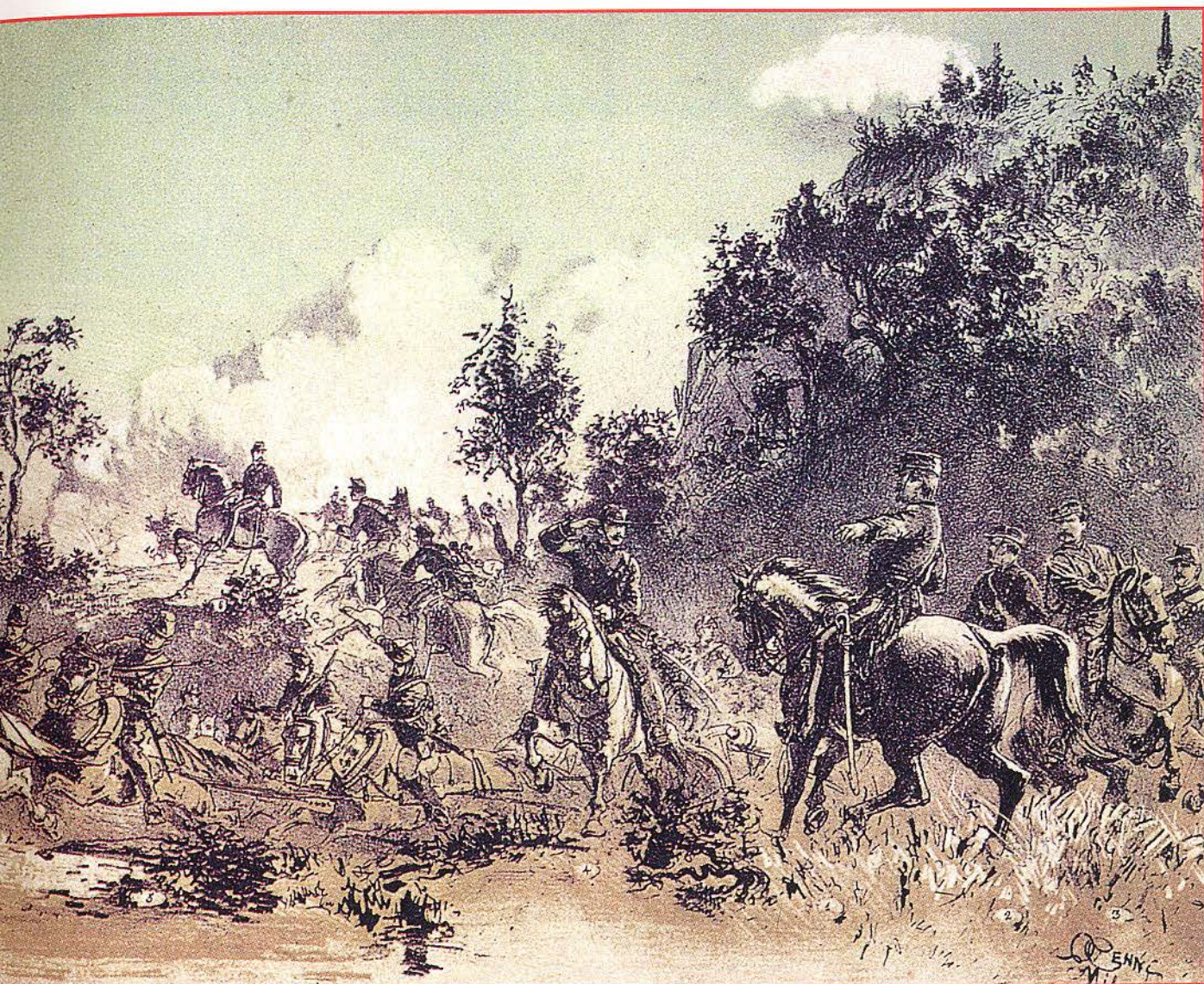
The enemies of peace tend to hit cruelly and by any means in order to affect the morale of fighters and civilians, causing uncertainty and fear

The masses are no longer mobilized for conflicts, but it is mostly specialists who are employed in distant Operations Theatres.

“Strategy consists in conceiving and planning the main lines of the use of force, in order to attain politic goals in conflict situations. This implies choosing among different options and setting priorities”. No one knows if this definition is destined to succeed.

by Ferruccio Botti *





Nowadays, threats, dangers and doubts are a leitmotiv of our lives. According to the White Paper of Defence 2002, *the terrorist attacks of September 11 have upset the geo-strategic balance still further [...]. The traditional threat does not exist anymore; there are area dangers which base their capability not only on armaments, but also on diversified and state-of-the-art instruments [...]* Terrorism is the catalyst and multiplier factor of these risks. Security and defence policies, today, cannot be confined to the traditional sphere of mere war capability, they have indeed to face a transversal, often devious and sometimes immaterial enemy.

We wonder what theoretical repercussions may come out of this extremely variegated and complex picture, that complicates the process of differentiation and division into compartments of the subject, which is the essential premise for defining concepts and stating their meanings and contents. For example the White Paper discusses security and defence policies and, further on, states that *the new configuration of the world picture calls for a continuous and careful reassessment, political first and then strategic, of the defence priorities directed towards the organization of new military capabilities...* But, in this new context, what are the meaning and the contents of old

terms such as Security Policy, Defence Policy and Strategy? The proper meaning of each term can be obtained by its difference from the others. Therefore we should ask ourselves what differences there are at present between Strategy (and global Strategy), Security Policy and Defence Policy.

As far as we know these differences have not been studied yet. Today each author gives the meaning he pleases to these terms. Anyway it would be inaccurate to define each term separately. If there are close links between politics and strategy, as is generally acknowledged, their respective meanings and theoretical contents have to be



Officer of the "Cavalleggeri di Foggia" Regiment, 1864.

State. So, Strategy was born at the end of XVIII century precisely in order to enable the State to better organize and supervise the military activity, linking together politics and tactics, which was, and still is, the art and science of conducting battles and fights against the enemy. To be more accurate: *strategy was born as a theoretical branch of the Art of War, because the attempt to direct the clashes with the enemy towards the political aims of the war has always existed* (Clausewitz), and has led the troops to fight the enemy under the best conditions. This is so true that, for instance, Edward Luttwak has just written a book about the "Great Strategy of the Roman Empire".

Napoleon's campaigns did definitively sanction the birth of the new theoretical discipline, with short wars and decisive battles, from which generations of military chiefs and writers drew their inspiration. All through the XIX century and until the beginning of the First World War, therefore, nothing changed in the concept of Strategy: a concept, which was still essentially a military one and of Napoleonic origin, and consisted in setting the main lines of conduct during the war, in order to defeat (with minimum effort and maximum results) the enemy, in the course of few decisive battles. But after the first bloody and inconclusive fights of the 1914-1918 War, the picture changed dramatically. For a number of reasons (and not only because of the tactical superiority of the defence provided by the famous combination of machine-gun and barbed-wire fence), the short and decisive Napoleonic war was no longer possible. Up to 1917-1918, in Europe, armed masses almost

defined concomitantly and, as we said before, by difference.

In order to do so, the best method seems to be that of a great expert in political affairs such as Raymond Aron and of a great writer and naval strategist like Admiral Romeo Bernotti: to examine the present circumstances in the light of the past, so as to identify and pinpoint the really new facts that otherwise, without a historical basis, would appear distorted and without terms of reference or comparison. Changes concern mostly Strategy: politics has always

retained the same meaning, i.e. *theory and practice which have as their object the organization and rule of the State; the whole of the goals a State aims at, and the means used to achieve them* (Garzanti Dictionary).

Since the Armed Forces have always been a State's primary instrument of power, it goes without saying that the armed component is not separated from politics, being more precisely one of its parts, and therefore everything related to it is but one of the many specialist fields of the organization and activity of a



Arrival of newspapers to the front in 1917.

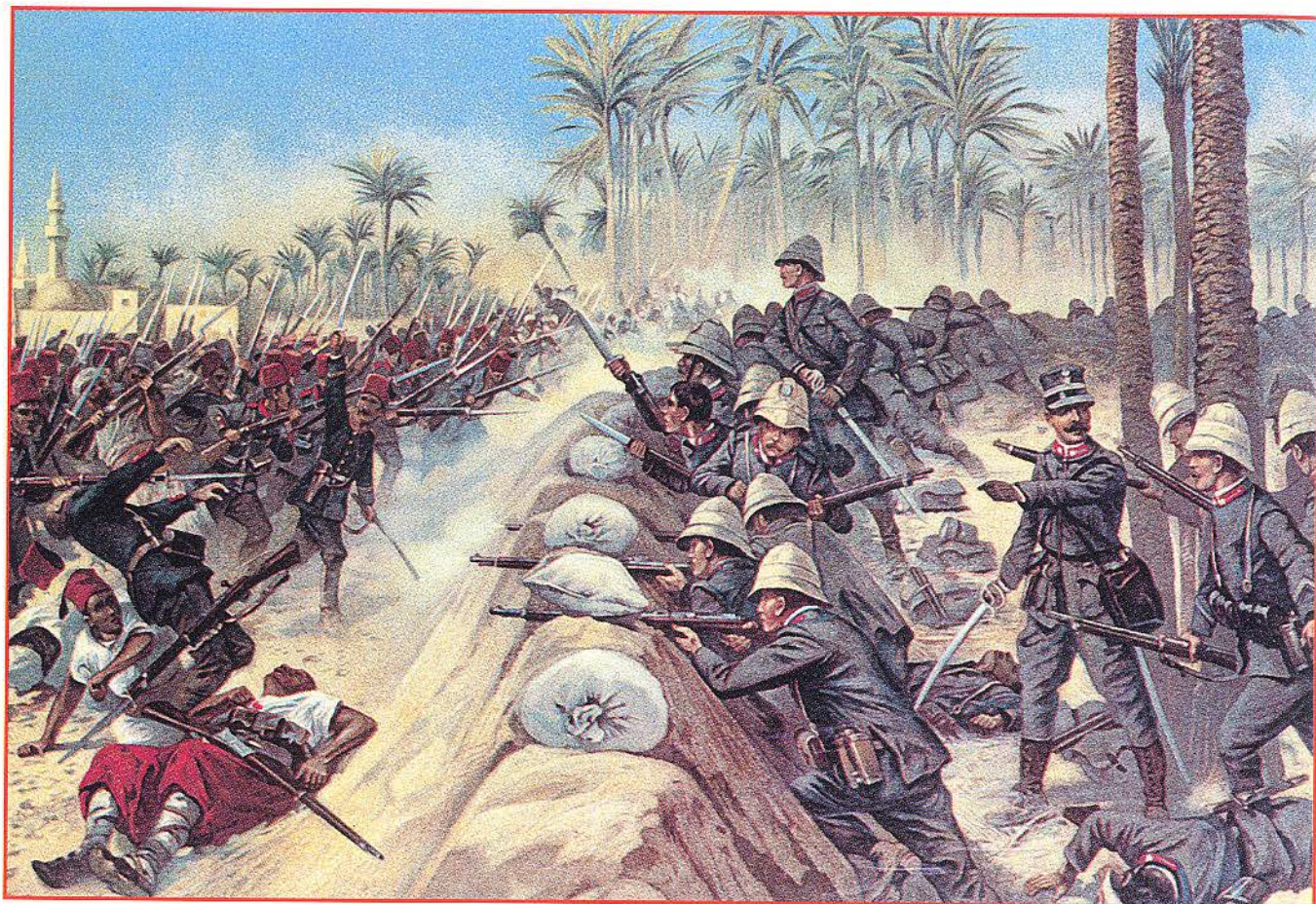
equal in strength faced each other, and in order to have moral and material efficiency it was necessary to mobilize the resources of the entire nation. The fall of Germany and Austria occurred, in the first place, because such resources had become insufficient.

During the Great War, the Generals had the collaboration of businessmen. War became industrial and total at the same time, because it also involved and mobilized civilians as producing and feeding forces. In order to remedy this first great crisis of Strategy, enough to involve the General Staff's credibility, during the twenties and the thirties of the XX century an attempt was made to avoid the massacres of trench warfare, which had left a deep mark on people. Wrongfully blaming Clausewitz' theories for the blood shed during the war,

the English military expert Basil H. Liddell Hart introduced the "indirect Strategy", consisting in the use of other means, besides the military ones, in order to defeat the enemy without many losses, attacking all their weak points (1). Another Englishman, General John Frederick Charles Fuller, proposed mechanized war. The Italian Giulio Douhet theorized the use of masses of heavy bombers, to hit the enemy demographic and industrial centres from the air, in order to cause the material and morale collapse of the opponent nation in a few days. In the twenties the French built the fortified, expensive and powerful Maginot line, with the purpose of dissuading Germany from trying to get revenge and, in any case, blocking any possible German attack and suffer few casualties by keeping their troops sheltered by a wall of iron and cement. In 1939, the then Lieutenant Colonel André Beaufre, who in the post-war period was to be the

father of the French nuclear *Force de frappe*, wrote an article in which he described a preview of a cold war and its characteristics, in order to prevent the devastations of another war and face Hitler's aggressive policy without bloodshed. He therefore spoke of political war, diplomatic war and economic war.

All in vain! At first the 1939-1941 German blitzkrieg seemed to return its wings to the Napoleonic quick and decisive war. But soon, despite the new means, the 1914-1918 long war of attrition came back, mobilizing the same amount of industrial and human resources, suffering less losses among the fighters, but with one element that made things worse: deliberate and massive bombings of civilians, to dispirit them and interrupt the flow of supplies to the Armed Forces, destroying all production sources. Moreover guerrilla warfare, unknown in 1914-1918, revived. War and Strategy, once total, became general, because –



War against Turkey: one of the many battles at the wells of Bu-Meliana (Tripoli).

as a matter of fact – also civilians turned into fighters and therefore prone to war offence. But this is not enough. At the end of the war the atomic bomb dropped on the Japanese densely populated cities of Hiroshima and Nagasaki caused a second unprecedented crisis of the strategic concepts.

The logic of the cold war is well known. War never disappeared: it was fought, using conventional weapons, outside Europe, where the two coalitions faced each other in indirect ways and through third parties. The Western armies had to cope with guerrilla warfare, terrorism and the ambitions of independence of their colonies, and they mostly got the worst of it. In Europe, peace has been kept by threatening mutual nuclear

destruction. As a result, Strategy did not consist in trying to find a way to inflict heavy losses on the enemy, but rather in avoiding to resort to “hot war”, by persuading the antagonist that in this case he would have the worst of it. In the subsequent massive and expensive arms race between the two superpowers, the USSR, economically weaker and technologically less advanced, was overcome. Born with bayonets, the communist system collapsed owing to the economic implosion caused by the new bayonets, i.e. the arms race which it could not afford any longer.

Let us now turn to the present, when – obviously – both the cold war Strategy and the old Napoleonic Strategy are worthless. In the light of historical experience then, what has Strategy ceased to be, and what is it today? Besides, how does technology influence Strategy? First of all we have to

admit that – as convincingly stated by the 2002 White Paper – there are still a security policy, a military policy and a defence policy. In this respect, but with considerable changes, the definitions given in 1989 by General Carlo Jean seem to be valid. Still referring to cold war, he wrote: *security policy includes defence policy, which encloses military policy. Security policy is the answer of a State to all external challenges, which are not only military. On the contrary defence policy and its two military and civil constituents refer only to military threats. In the end, military policy regards the concepts, the strategic planning and the general issues of the Armed Forces.*

The Security and Defence policies evidently concern the government and its global decisions. The Military policy regards primarily – though not exclusively – the Minister of

Defence. But, unlike the previous definition, today the security policy concerns both the external and internal threats. At present the challenges, more than purely military (that is, pertaining only to regular formations) are often armed, i.e. they come from irregular organizations, and their only aim is to exert violence using different means, but generally excluding the kinds of action typical of regular troops and referable to classic strategy and tactics. Also the Defence Policy today refers to generically armed threats, and not only to military ones. Moreover, it can react (not necessarily using arms) to different and not always armed threats (illegal immigration and other unlawful activities, such as arms and drugs trafficking, etc).

If this is the way matters stand, now we have to identify, delimit and define the sector that remains entrusted to strategy. During the cold war, the daily confrontation of the two superpowers influenced and oriented politics, diplomacy, economy, mass-media activities, and what we could call the home front through a real psychological warfare. This somehow led to a supremacy of strategy over politics, sanctioned by the concept of "global strategy", which was given the meaning of *science or art that uses political, economic, psychological and military forces, to guarantee the best support to political action both in peacetime and in wartime*. In its turn, global Strategy has been divided into different types, one of which is the military one.

At this point, we have to acknowledge that this theoretical content of global Strategy collides with the abovesaid concepts of Security, Defence and Military Policies: Strategy becomes much more similar to politics and politics in its turn comes nearer to Strategy, with a mutual loss of specificity. Such

superimposition, or rather confusion of meanings, does not fit with the present strategic picture, obviously very different from that of the cold war. War has become asymmetric: it is not a matter of nations, industrially developed, confronting each other, where classical terms like front, zone behind the lines, contact line, just to mention some, still meant something. The present problem, for the Western societies, is that of consolidating their security structures, without much impact on everyday life, but seeking, on the contrary,

the cold war – but only a reduced number of volunteers.

As a result the prevailing idea is that, while small groups of volunteers and specialists are engaged in far-off wars somewhere in the world, national life has to carry on as usual, more or less like during the pre-Napoleonic cabinet wars of the XVIII century or, more recently, in Kosovo. During this conflict, the military operations concerned a few hundred pilots and a few thousand specialists in charge of the aircraft, which mostly took off from Italian bases, while for the rest of the citizens it



economic development: without mobilizing neither industry nor economy. The military instrument, today, calls more and more for a long-requested quality: flexibility. It has to be able to conduct, with the same efficiency, both classic operations (as in Iraq) and the so-called peace missions. In short, it must be able to give an immediate and diversified answer to any type of threat and risk and, in order to do so, it must develop its own self-protective capability. Finally, armies do not mobilize masses anymore – as was the case until

The column in rescue of the Saati garrison, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel De Cristoforis, 500 men, was attacked and destroyed at Dogali by about 10,000 Abyssinians led by Ras Alula, on January 26, 1887.

was a TV or a live show, since, on Sundays, crowds of spectators watched the airplanes taking off from our bases.

In such a context, it seems possible to give back to politics and strategy what pertains to each of them. If we acknowledge that the terms Security, Defence



and Military Policies are still applicable, we can only bring back strategy to a narrower path and, considering the past, make a distinction between what it cannot be anymore and then determine more precisely what it will have to be.

At the root of the issue there is the fact that strategy and politics cannot be confused. These fields are widely interconnected, but distinct.

Strategy cannot be summed up

generically as the use of force. Politics, too, is the use of force. We talk about strong or weak government depending on the support given to it by the Nation; we talk about the strength of a party, of a parliamentary group, of a lobby. The same thing happens with economic and industrial activities where, in the end, the everyday competition rewards the strongest.

Strategy cannot become militarized once again, as it was

in Napoleonic times, nor can it spread abnormally as in the cold war. But it must always have its reference and basis in the use of the armed force (not military forces). In particular, nowadays, it is the synthesis of different components. But, although with differences in measure and roles, the armed force still has a significant role. The use of the armed force may be partial,



A popular propaganda print, celebrating the Italian victory in Libya.

carried out and the necessary means.

The recent war against Saddam Hussein undoubtedly shows that very little has changed: for the Superpower, as Clausewitz used to say, *war is, as usual, the continuation of politics by other means*. Strategy outlines the procedures for bringing about a successful (political) conclusion of a war, a conflict, a crisis. It operates both in peacetime and in wartime. The strategic element is what weighs heavily on the solution of a conflict or a crisis; on the other hand, what affects the solution of a battle, a fight or a single episode of a war, is a tactical factor.

If – as Clausewitz writes – *war is a chameleon, then strategy is a chameleon, too*. Especially today, it can take the most varied forms, on the sole condition that it may attain its political goal.

Strategy cannot be, as some argue, the mere imposition of somebody's will. For two reasons: the first is that the strategic aim can also coincide with the pursuit of an agreement or a compromise between two opposing wills, in which each party waives some of its initial goals. The second reason is that we always have to consider how and by what means this will is enforced. Obviously by force: but what kind of force? Generally, it is economic power (sanctions) and sheer force. But even in this case the armed component is crucial. Without the backup of a credible military force, economic measures are ineffectual and it may be impossible even to apply them.

The political goal is pre-eminent, but there cannot be bad politics and good strategy.

The use of the word "strategy" in various fields (including the political one: political strategy,

diplomatic strategy) in itself does not mean its demilitarization, as some claim; it only bears witness to the success and the efficacy of such a term (e.g.: the expression "industrial strategy" accounts for the main lines of action which an industry wants to follow in order to expand, pursuing certain basic goals). Even the expression "Board of Directors" has an ancient military origin and is still in use, although the Boards of Directors of the Regiments have disappeared: but this does not mean that the economic and industrial life are militarized.

The expression "military strategy" and "operational strategy" could be pleonastic. Strategy without adjectives should always be military and operational; this quality must be retained. Instead, and with an areal reference, nothing can prevent us from speaking of general strategy or, even better, of national strategy, theatre strategy, zone strategy (especially in the Superpower's perspective, different from that of regional powers).

The levels of responsibility singled out in the conduct of any strategic operation are always: politico-strategic, responsible for the definition of the goals to be attained, the formulation of the mandate, and the allocation of resources; operational, responsible for turning the political mandate into technical military goals and leading the operations through an organic vision; tactical, responsible for conducting the operations by single components or sectors of responsibility.

So, the Security and Military Defence policies are usually placed at the first level. At the second (operational) level there is national strategy and possibly (as regards Italy) zone strategy. At the third (tactical) level we have the conduct of single actions or battles, which must be coordinated by national strategy.

potential, dissuasive, concrete, but strategy cannot exist without an armed or military basis.

In its innermost nature, strategy has always been operational, being the art and science of action. It concerns the planning and conduct of actions, of operations aiming at a political result. Somehow it represents the armed wing of politics and, mainly in this respect, differs from politics, which assigns the task to be

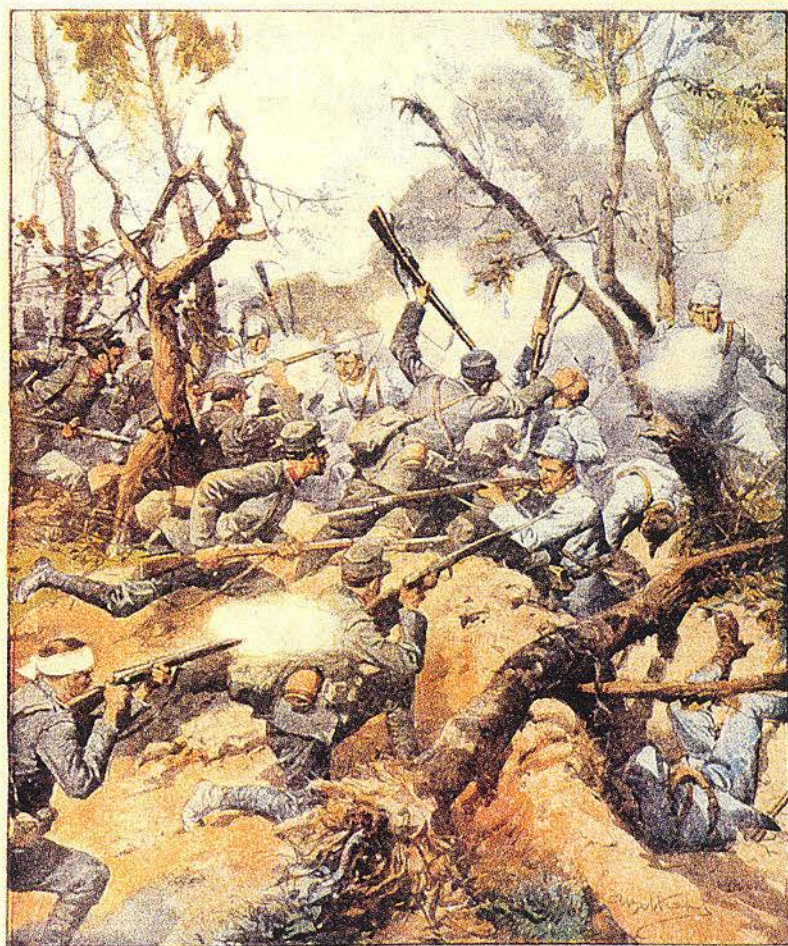
LA DOMENICA DEL CORRIERE

Si pubblica a Milano ogni Domenica

Supplemento illustrato del "Corriere della Sera"

Via Montecitorio, N. 134
MILANO

Per tutti gli abbonamenti e le vendite si rivolga alle principali librerie e edicole, oppure ai seguenti indirizzi: ANNO XVIII - N. 56 - 5 - 17 Settembre 1942 - L. 100.000



La miccia toriosa del 20 agosto, finita con la lega del nemico, in un boschetto del Carso.
(Disegno di G. Bolognini)

Left and facing page.

Covers of "La Domenica del Corriere" magazine, illustrating two engagements on the Austrian front during WWI.

and indication of priorities. With this definition we underline that the significant factor of strategy is the use of force, which is the framework of the remaining activities. Without it, strategy can easily coincide with politics in general. Another relevant element is – and has been since its origin – action. Politics prepares, organizes and directs, while strategy acts and manoeuvres forces and means, whatever they may be.

Obviously, in such a definition there is no room for the peculiar strategies of an Armed Force (land, air, naval, space), since it encompasses them all. Therefore we can correctly talk about air, naval, land components of strategy, without ascribing a priori the decisive character to one of them. Each situation needs a whole body of forces variously composed, exclusively influenced by task, time, natural environment: elements which determine the tactical order of the forces. The main thing is that each unit of force carry out their mission as best as they can, so as to achieve the common goal.

We still have to decide in what way such an idea of strategy could interact with the two topics of the day: terrorism and advanced technologies. Terrorism is a constant factor that we have to reckon with at any time. First of all it requires the combination of the efforts of all components, beginning with information (which often prevails over the others, and this is something new). As it was already pointed out, the regular Armed Forces have to adopt an organization which could be called "total-azimuth", in that it greatly emphasizes the characteristics of

It should be underlined that the competence of each of those bodies is not exclusive, but prevalent. The highest military authorities and, in particular, the Chief of Staff of Defence contribute to the formulation of the Security, Military and Defence Policies, for which the Government is responsible. The national strategy requires the constant involvement of the Ministry of Defence. The tactical level is controlled by the strategic one. In short, there is an interpenetration, a downward and upward current, which pays

off only when there are understanding, harmony and permeability among the different levels, without rigid and aprioristic dichotomies.

After all, if we want to respect the sphere of competence of the Security, Military and Defence policies, strategy can be defined as follows: *formulation and planning of the main characteristics of the use of force (variously armed and of any kind) and its potential and concrete use in order to achieve political aims, in a situation of conflict. It entails choices among different options*

flexibility and self-protection, in order to be able to give an immediate and effective answer to any type of threat. Obviously, this also concerns the logistic units and the infrastructure. In the final analysis, it is a matter of making the proper use of old requirements and old characteristics. For example, the most important weapon of terrorism is surprise: well, here we have to mention Napoleon who, when asked why, in any circumstance, he had in store the right decision, answered: *because whatever happens, I had already foreseen it at some other time of my life, and I had thought how I would behave if it happened.* In short, the increase of terrorism after September 11 has not turned into significant changes in the strategic theory: it only accentuated some modalities of action, which got the regular forces on the rope, and which the great commanders of the past have faced in the best possible way.

Secondly, the very recent war in Iraq proves an old truth, which the charm of the latest technical inventions tends to make us forget: what counts is always "man" and, in particular, the soldier, whom technology can help but not entirely replace. The technological supremacy of the West must be fully exploited, but without attributing it possibilities and capabilities that it cannot have. In short, despite the imposing array of technology and fire fielded by the United States, in Iraq the continuing importance of infantry was very clear, both in quantity and quality. Those long lines of marching marines, carrying heavy rucksacks on their shoulders, could have been part of some war of the past. The unsurpassed American organization of fire, technology and logistics made their task easier and limited the dangers on the battlefield: but only to a certain extent, until the soldiers found

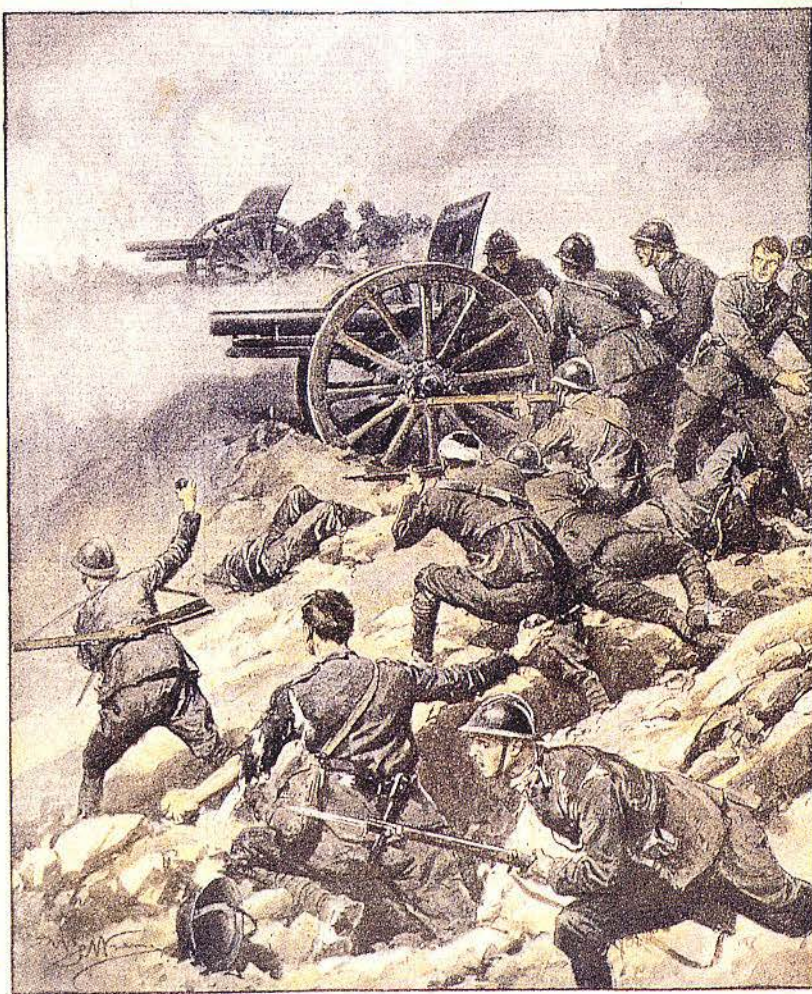
themselves facing the enemy in the old way, and in the old way they had to fight, relying on their courage and talents, on their unit and on their commanders.

Therefore, as Sandro Veronesi recently wrote, technology should not become *the strength of the weak and the wealth of the poor*. According to Veronesi, in the Vietnam war, in order to show that their military and "grimly moral" strength was superior to any technology and to any sophisticated weapon, the Vietcong were so wicked as to cut the arms of the children who had

just been vaccinated by the Americans, and then heap the little arms at the centre of the village, sustaining the indescribable horror of that deed: a gesture that no Western super-technological army would have had (and would have) the strength and the cruelty to make. And this means simply one thing: that from now on, it will be on this unmentionable terrain, where we are weak, that the enemies of the developed West are going to fight us: not being able to confront the weapons, they will try to disarm and

LA DOMENICA DEL CORRIERE

DEL REGNO ESTERO
L. 5 - P. 8 -
PUBBLICITÀ - 375 - 485
Si pubblica a Milano ogni Domenica
Supplemento illustrato del "Corriere della Sera"
Ufficio del giornale:
Via Solferino, N. 28
MILANO
Per tutti gli articoli e illustrazioni è riservata la proprietà fotografica e artistica, secondo le leggi e i trattati internazionali.
Anno XX. - Num. 26. 30 Giugno - 7 Luglio 1918. Centesimi 10 il numero.

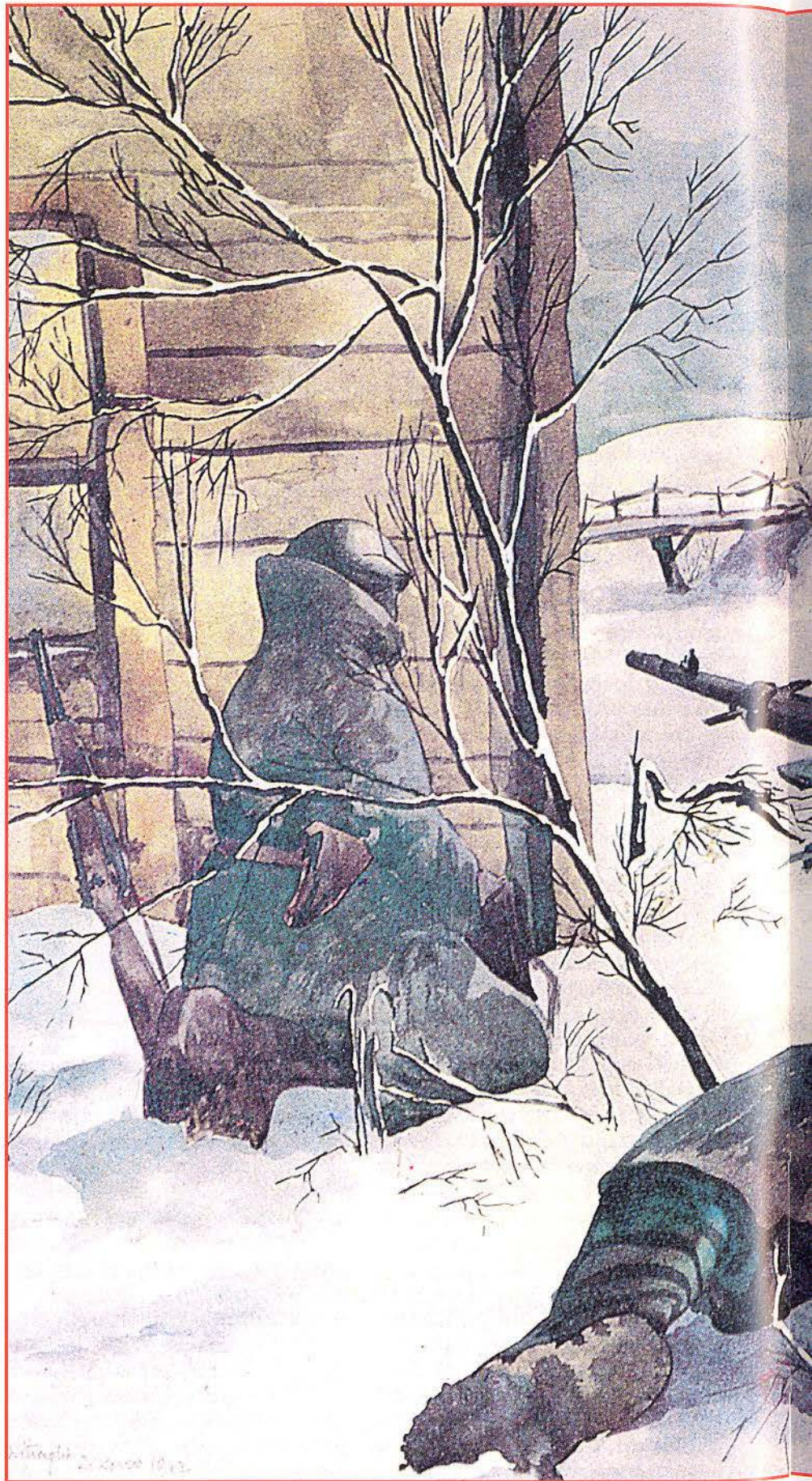


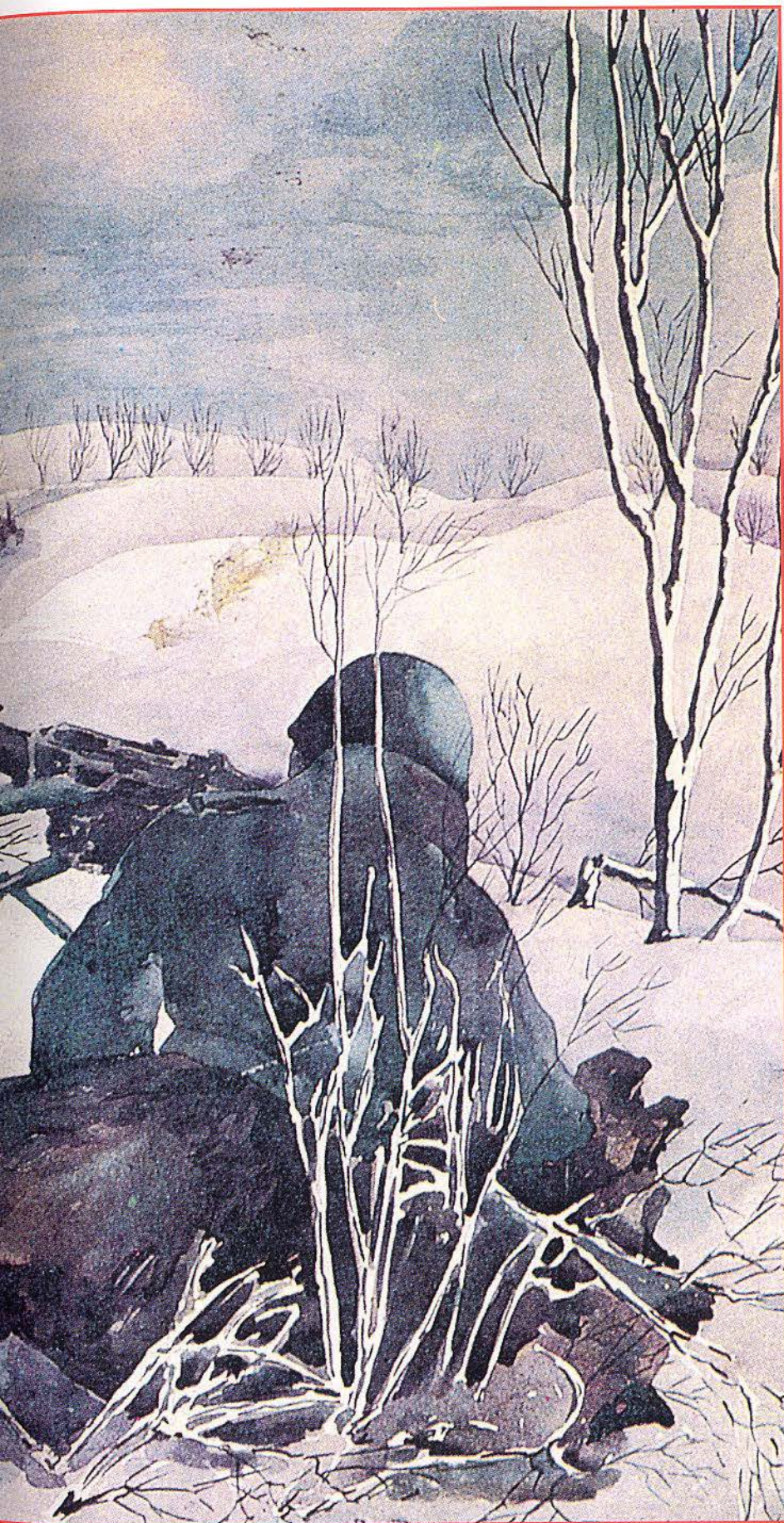
ARTIGLIERI E FANTI SUL COLLE MOSCHIN. "Spedite ancora un pezzo alla 7^a ed 8^a batteria del nostro 56^o reggimento da campagna che, restato impigliato sul colle Moschin circondato, si oppone al nemico sopra un'unica linea, nella quale i fanti dei reggimenti artiglieri e fanti gareggiavano in bravura." (Illustrazione di F. de'... Disegno di A. Bellavere)

demoralize, by any means, those who should use those weapons.

For one thing, the most reassuring result obtained by technology in Iraq is perhaps this: the (relative) limitation of losses and devastations on both sides. In Iraq, the American staff Officers have managed to perform well an extremely difficult task: to conquer the Iraqi centres of power, reducing to a minimum their own losses, the number of civilian victims and the destructions. So we can say that, owing to its precision to the possibility of selecting targets, technology succeeded in making conflicts less bloody. If we think of the great number of casualties among civilians and soldiers, and of the devastations of the past wars, we have but to rejoice at such a result, in which, perhaps, we can see the true progress of strategy, a progress which we can symbolically set against the thousands of victims in just one battle of the First World War, or against the victims and casualties of Stalingrad or Dresden during the Second World War.

To talk about progress or regress in the field of military art is inaccurate. The fact is that even after the shocking events of the beginning of the XXI century, war – and therefore also strategy – remains that which was described at the end of the XIX century by Captain Domenico Guerrini, an infantry Officer and editor of "Rivista di Fanteria": *"the science of war that deserves contempt, and therefore is not worthy of the glorious name of science, is that which withdraws into the pettiness of a narrow-minded idea, and proclaims empirical postulates: it is not science of war that which today says that war is a question of fire, and yesterday said that war was a moral question, and that the day before yesterday had said that war was a question of legs, and still remembers having said, a short*





Russian front: a machine-gun emplacement at Rykowo.

time ago, that war was a matter of a full stomach. War is a matter which includes all these things and many others, and the real science of war is the one which, after having sharply examined all the different factors of the fight, is courageously able to rise to a bold synthesis, in which it gathers them all and sets each in its place, putting them in a right proportion with the others.

This is a severe warning for the lovers of dogmatic assertions, absolute truths and aprioristic strategic conceptions, or for the fans of this or that decisive weapon. To detect something new, without taking sides and not necessarily making it coincide with the progress of technologies or of a given means, is the real challenge that today awaits the high authorities in charge of security. The real problem that confronts the Western military forces is not technological progress, still necessary, but the ability to cope effectively with challenges such as suicide attacks, terrorism and other methods of violence, aberrant or impracticable for us, remaining consistent with the unsuppressable moral legacy of our centuries-old culture and civilization.

□

*Colonel (ret)

NOTE

(1) In the late Twenties, Liddell Hart pointed at the indirect strategy practised by Scipio Africanus in Spain and Africa, an alternative model to Clausewitz's strategy of the opponent's *debellatio*, defining the Roman commander a man greater than Napoleon (see Basil Liddell Hart, "A man greater than Napoleon: Scipio Africanus").

The Army Inspectorate for Recruitment and Completion Forces is the hinge of the fundamental sector tasked with the acquisition and best employment of Volunteers

THE ARMY'S RECRUITMENT IS IN THE FOREFRONT

The Inspectorate uses the latest technological and scientific knowledge in order to have the Army attain the strength of 112,000 effectives by the end of 2006

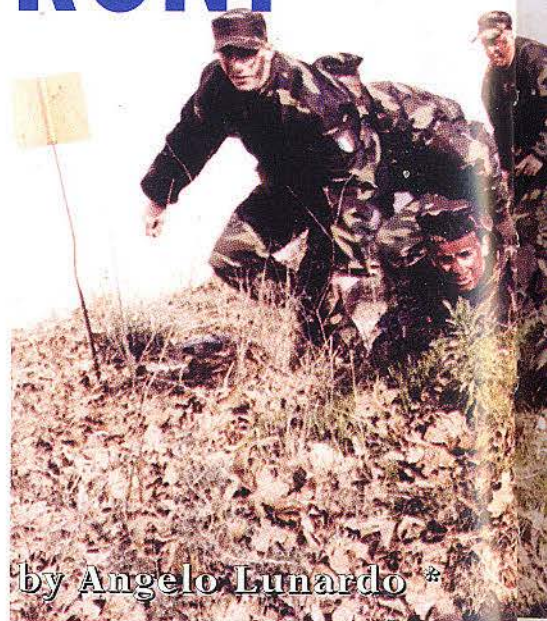
During the last fifteen years the world witnessed some very important events which significantly changed all previous requirements of the international scenario and compelled all the main Nations to review their foreign and military policy.

As a matter of fact, the fall of the Berlin Wall, the Yugoslav tragedy (which later spread to the whole Balkans), the Gulf War and the numerous local conflicts, caused mainly by ethnic, religious and territorial reasons (which used to be controlled by the two superpowers) forced the most important Western Countries to envisage instruments capable of defending their national interests, not only within their own borders, but also outside them.

After that, spurred by continuous international crises, a substantial transformation in the Armed Forces started to take place all over the world, in order to readjust them according to the requests of intervention of multinational contingents, under UN, NATO or EU aegis.

Also our Country answered the call of the International Organizations to help restore conditions of peace and survival in territories where conflicts had already caused thousands of innocent victims.

Italy's response was immediate, but the dispatch abroad of units consisting mostly of



by Angelo Lunardo *

The Inspectorate is a top sector of the Service and, among other things, is in charge of Conscription, Recruitment and Completion Forces. It manages the relations between media and society, carrying out all the legal activities connected with the employment of personnel, including logistics, infrastructure and training of the soldiers who join the recruit Regiments. Furthermore, its responsibilities include the security of every area of employment, with the exception of the operational ones. The Army Inspectorate is well aware that human resources are the most precious ones.

conscripts (even if they expressed their willingness to participate in the specific missions), who in the past were employed in the priority mission of defending the north-eastern

giving a substantial contribution to out-of-area operations, especially to peacekeeping ones.

As a first step, and following politico-military directives, the Service started a thorough

torate for Recruitment and Completion Forces (RFC), one of the top Areas of the Service (the other Areas are: the Operational Land Force Command; the Logistic Inspectorate; the Inspectorate for Schools/Training and the Inspectorate for Infrastructure).

STRUCTURE AND TASKS OF THE INSPECTORATE

As we shall see later, the objective that the Army must achieve by the end of 2006 is a force of 112,000 men, all professionals.

This is, in short, the task of the Inspectorate and of the Commands and Bodies within it. It is certainly an ambitious goal, because it is a matter of recruiting Officers, NCOs and Soldiers who, voluntarily and with strong motivations, decide to go in for military life, for a certain period of time or



borders, started to pose a number of problems.

In practice, the prevailing public and political opinion, having overcome the atavistic mistrust towards fully professional Armed Forces, started to believe that the new security requirements could better be met by making recourse to volunteers and with the introduction of financial measures aimed at reducing and eventually abolishing conscription, also because conscientious objection was gaining an evergrowing number of converts.

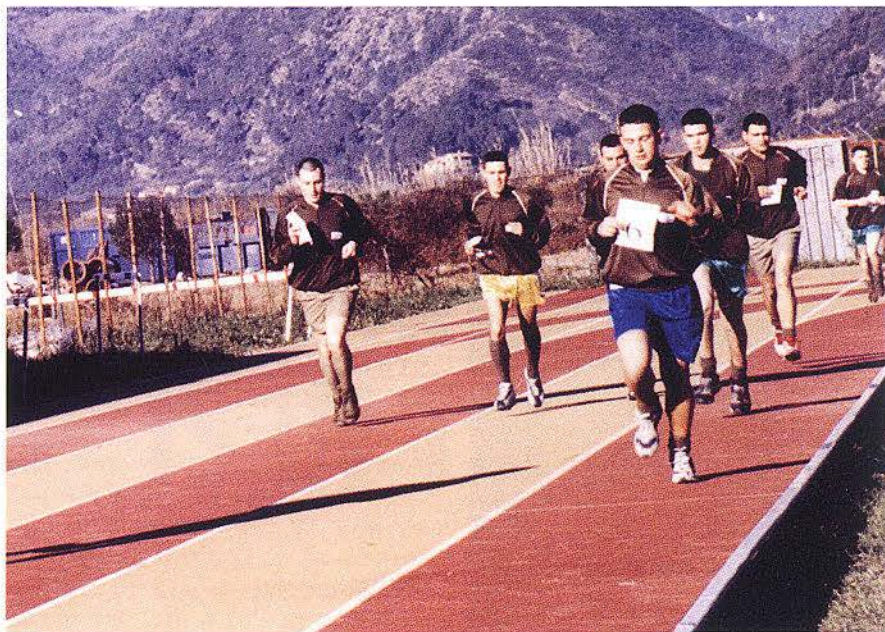
Those years marked the historical beginning of the Italian Armed Forces' professionalization. Of the Army, in particular, which was already



overhauling process, bearing in mind the principle of prevalence of quality over quantity.

Within this process, in compliance with a Decree Law of June 2000, on January 1, 2002, the Central Military Region Command in Florence was transformed into the Inspec-

definitively. This is a very difficult task: suffice it to think that young people often prefer jobs which do not take them far from their families, not risky, and well paid. These are aspects that the Army cannot guarantee, at least at the present moment. In addition, at least at the beginning, many



Left.
Physical training of Volunteers.

Below.
Solemn Swearing-in ceremony at the 1st Regiment "San Giusto".

Facing page.
Recruitment Promotion: A Regimental INFO POINT.

young are willing to join the Police Forces, because they are attracted by the "signalling disk", which gives power to those who are in contact with the public.

Therefore, the question is to find motivated personnel and convince the undecided to join the Army. The objective is to involve a high number of young candidates, both male and female, in order to make an accurate selection of personnel who are suitable, first of all, but also willing and deeply interested in the activities of the Service. Until a short time ago, the Army did not have to worry about the "man" aspect, which was amply provided by conscription; today, the recruitment of human resources is the main factor. Actually, any sophisticated and technologically advanced weapon-system is worthless if there is no man capable of using it.

These are the reasons which prodded the Army to acquire a Body in charge of Recruitment and Completion forces, in a position to ensure a human reservoir from which to draw Cadres and soldiers with a proper culture and a psycho-attitudinal "profile" adequate to the tasks and, after specific training, professionally capable



of working in efficient and reliable units.

The RFC Inspectorate was born with this ambitious assignment and, besides the specific duties that will be detailed later on, is also entrusted with garrison, territorial and security tasks.

Let us now have a quick survey of the RFC organization, which is

divided into subordinate Commands on three different organizational levels.

The Inspectorate consists of four Modules or Offices (Coordination, Management, Development and Security, subordinate to a Coordinating

General) and of the Administrative Service, directly subordinate to the Inspector. In short, one can say that the Inspectorate performs tasks in the sectors of Conscription, Recruitment and Completion; manages relations with the mass-media and promotional activities; provides data-processing, finan-

cial and coordination support; supervises important ceremonies; deals with all legal activities connected with the employment of personnel; takes care of the logistic, infrastructure and training issues concerning all servicemen arriving at the Recruit Regiment; finally, it is responsible for the security of every area of employment, with the exception of the operational areas.

Under the RFC Inspector there are: the Deputy RFC Inspector and Commander of the Recruit Training Group (78th Regt "Lupi di Toscana" in Florence; 123rd Regt "Chieti" in Chieti; 157th Regt "Liguria" in Albenga; 231st



Regt "Avellino" in Avellino and the 1st Regt "S. Giusto" in Trieste); the Coordinating General, who regulates the activity of the Modules and controls the HQ and General Support Unit, which meets the living requirements of the Inspectorate, the "Toscana" Regional Command, the "Florence" Military District and

other organizations stationed in the same city; three Interregional RFC Commands: in Turin (North); Capital's Military Command in Rome (Centre); Sicily's Autonomous Military Command in Palermo (South) which, in their turn, are in charge of the Regional RFC Commands (one for each Administrative Region); Sardinia Autonomous Military Command (Sardinia Autonomous RFC Command) in Cagliari; the Army's National Selection and Recruitment Centre in Foligno. This is to be considered a real filter for the entire Service. In fact, all operations connected with the applications for all types of recruitment are carried out within these structures.

The Regional RFC Commands preside over the Military Districts: fourteen of them are complete-function Districts, i.e. they perform all operations of Call-up, Selection, Recruitment, Records and Registration, while the functions of the other ten are limited to the last two activities. In order to economize, when the Military Districts are located with the Regional Commands, the administrative services, personnel offices and Support Units are unified within the latter.

As regards Conscription, the relevant responsibilities, which used to be assigned to the now-abolished Conscription Commands, are attributed to the Interregional Commands, to which the Military Districts are actually and directly subordinate.

In this picture, the Interregional Commands keep a technical and functional connection with the General Directorate for Conscription (LEVADIFE). This means that the Regional RFC Commands have no responsibility in that sector. But, for accuracy's sake, we should explain that the Interregional RFCs ensure also the management of the ranges, museums, sports installations and Logistic-Training Bases existing on their territory. At the same time, these Commands provide logistic support to the local Bodies that do not belong to the RFC employment areas, such as: Military Judiciary, Infrastructure Commands/Units and Administrative Centres which, as they do not have their own logistic-administrative organs and control personnel, must have recourse to the assets of the RFC Area.

Having outlined the structure, let us now take a look at the



Inspectorate's responsibilities and activities in the sectors of Conscription, Recruitment, Completion forces and Promotion.

CALL UP AND RECRUITMENT OF CONSCRIPTS

At the moment, conscription is – and will be for some years – the main activity of the Military Districts; it will be officially suspended on January 1, 2007, but there is a plan, already submitted to ministerial consideration – and we shall see about it later – which aims at anticipating the closing date by December 31, 2004.

Conscription, together with Recruitment and Selection, operates in the following manner. The Conscription Offices, in agreement with the municipalities, proceed to the compilation of the "conscription lists" of the young men to be examined by the Selection Groups and then enlisted by the Conscription Councils. The Districts, through

the Recruitment Offices, are responsible for the conscripts up to their incorporation in the units. All these structures also deal with conscientious objection.

The Military Districts' organization is therefore very important for achieving the objective pursued by the Inspectorate, i.e. reaching the level of volunteers envisaged for the Service. We could say that these Organizations are the "visiting cards" of the Army vis-à-vis the civilian world. Therefore, the "public relations" organization must take care of the smallest details, with no improvisation or disorganization, since this would create a negative image of the efficiency and reliability of the Service.

In a number of cases, in fact, reporting to the Military District is the first contact of the young man, or woman, with the Army. This is why these Bodies must be well organized and employ personnel with a good communication capabilities, in order to have a good relation with the

123rd Regiment "Chieti": Solemn Swearing-in of Volunteers.

public. Actually, the first approach to the military world is a very useful occasion to inform on the opportunities offered by the Army; the contact must be a positive one, in order to persuade the young conscript to choose a military career.

Within this framework, the Districts, last February, received from the Inspectorate specific directions on how to attract the conscripts' interest for military life. The Districts, together with the call-up notice for the examination, send also a letter describing the advantages and opportunities offered by voluntary service. The same information is repeated by specialized teams at the time of selection. These contacts are particularly valuable considering that one of the offers (one-year volunteer, which we shall describe later) is very convenient for the conscripts, since it guarantees them a salary and the

possibility of serving in a city and a Unit of their choice.

THE RECRUITMENT OF VOLUNTEERS

With the approval of Law 985/86, which permitted to enroll a number equal to 19% of the Sergeants, Corporals and Enlisted Men in service in 1987, the Armed Forces were given the possibility of recruiting 60,000 Volunteers, willing to serve for two or three years.

But the recruitment did not turn out well, considering that in 1991, in the three Services, there were no more than 15,000 Volunteers, most of them in the Navy, owing to their passion for the sea. In general, the young soldiers enlisted not so much for ideal reasons, but rather to find an initial job. Besides scarce motivations and low salaries, the causes of the law's failure can be found also in the almost non-existent prospects of employment at the end of the term and to the very little possibilities of transfer into the regular force.

In 1995, after the approval of the Financial Law of 1994, recruitments were encouraged by envisaging, for the first time, that the Volunteers, at the end of their service, could join the Police Forces, the Fire Department or the Foresters Corps.

Prompted by the International Organizations' more and more pressing requests to the Western Nations for forces to be employed in multinational missions aimed at restoring peace and order in several operational theatres, such as Bosnia and Kosovo, the Italian Parliament approved three important Laws: no. 350 on Women's Military Service, no.

331, on Professional Military Service, and Decree no. 2015, on the progressive transformation of the military organization into a professional instrument.

The first provision gave the possibility to the Italian women to participate, on a voluntary basis, in the competitions for the recruitment of regular Officers, NCOs and voluntary enlisted personnel.

The second Law regulated the progressive transformation of the military instrument from conscription to professional, and the suspension of conscription, which could be restored only in case of war, according to article 78 of the Constitution.

The Decree issued the norms for the gradual replacement of conscripts with volunteers and, besides fixing the suspension of conscription by January 1, 2007, also establishes the strength of the Armed Forces on that date (190,000), 112,000 of whom for the Army, including 12,000 Officers, 24,000 NCOs and regular, short-term and reenlisted volunteers.

The first objective is therefore to reach and keep the authorized levels of force and, at the same time, provide the new soldiers –

excluding Officers and NCOs, who have always been professionals – with the training needed for carrying out the tasks and special assignments envisaged by the organization tables, through appropriate training and school programmes gauged to the Volunteer's term of service.

Going into detail, it can be pointed out that, with particular reference to the length of the term of service and therefore to the training and employment parameters that can be achieved, various types of Volunteers have eventually been introduced.

The Regular Volunteers (VSP) organized in a special roll, can follow a career up to 60 years of age. They can enter this roll only through that of the short-term Volunteers and can carry out any activity, in Italy and abroad, in high- and medium-intensity operational environments.

Short-term Volunteers (VFB) serve for three years, extendable to five: can be employed abroad in any type of mission.

One-year Volunteers (VFA) serve for 12 months, as an alternative to conscription. They earn about _ 450 per month and can also be employed abroad in



Florence: St Caterina Palace, seat of the Inspectorate for Recruitment and Completion Forces.



One-year Volunteers on training.

low-intensity missions.

The recruitment of Volunteers takes place as follows: the Inspectorate, the Directorate for the Defence Personnel and the Army Staff participate in drafting the competition calls and in setting up the examining bodies; the Military Districts receive the candidates' applications for the various types of service; the Army Selection and Recruitment Centre carries out the necessary pre-selective cultural and medical examinations, aimed at ascertaining the candidates' physical and psychic fitness.

What is the real number of volunteers now present in the Army?

I believe that we should refer to the data expounded by the Chief of Staff to the Senate

Defence Committee on January 15. He stated that the established strength envisages 12,300 Officers, 25,800 NCOs and 74,500 enlisted men...Right now there are 18,000 short-term Volunteers and 20,500 regular Volunteers, for a total of 38,500 men, about one half of what is required. At present the shortage is offset by 22,500 one-year Volunteers and 13,500 conscripts. The annual average need of prefixed-term Volunteers is 7000 men.

If we make a few calculations, we can see that, if the present annual trend continues, at the beginning of 2007 there would be approximately 58,000 Volunteers who, compared with the 76,000 envisaged, show a deficit of about 18,000. On the other hand, if the suspension of the draft was put forward to January 1, 2005, the shortage of professional enlisted men would be decidedly higher.

What did we do, and what are we doing, to prevent and make up for these shortages?

In the past years, we tried to face the scarcity of Volunteers through special competitions but, nevertheless, it was impossible to bridge the gap between requirements and availabilities.

A BILL TO MAKE UP FOR THE EARLY SUSPENSION OF CONSCRIPTION

In order to accomplish the progressive transformation of the military instrument into a professional one, a Decree Law will anticipate the suspension of conscription to January 1, 2005 and regulate the recruitment procedures in order to offset the lack of conscripts through the introduction of: pre-fixed term Volunteers (VFP), who will serve for one year, with the possibility of extension of a second year, in



replacement of VFAs; four-year VFPs, who can extend their term for two further two-year stints, in replacement of VFBs.

Furthermore, the Decree considers the one-year VFP service a necessary prerequisite for admittance to the initial careers in the Armed Forces, Police Forces and Fire Department.

PROMOTION AND PUBLIC INFORMATION

On January 1, 2002, the institution of the RFC Inspectorate started an appropriate and strong campaign of promotion and information on recruitments, aimed at shedding the proper light on the typical elements which characterize the life of the military.

As we said, after the suspension of conscription the young soldiers will not join the units as conscripts, but will have to make a

choice after being informed on the possibility of being enlisted for the position, or task, most convenient for them and according to the attractiveness of the choice.

Therefore, the Inspectorate has an enormous responsibility, because it must present and explain the relevant aspects of the Service in order to attract the young to the military profession.

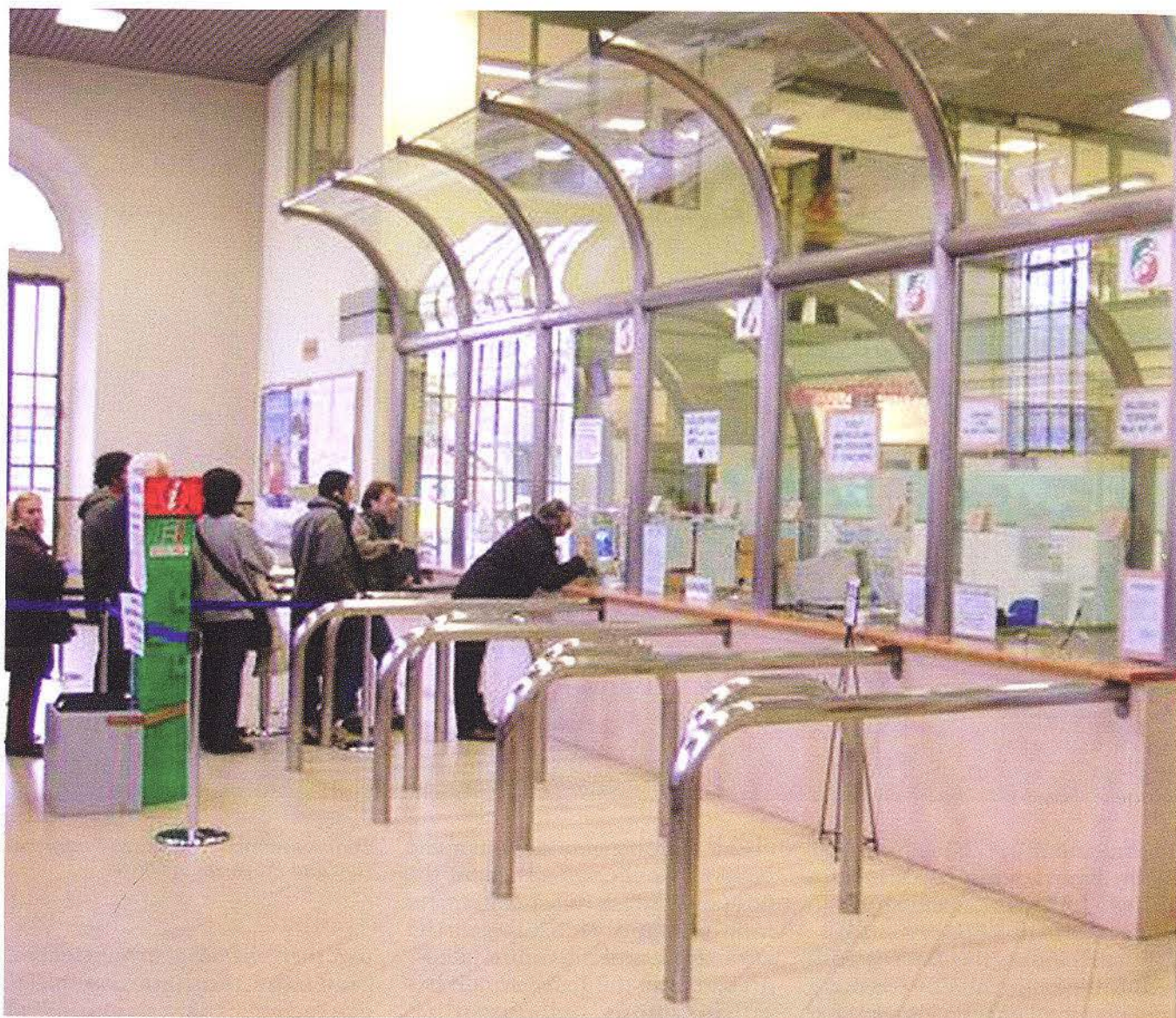
Therefore it is necessary to proceed following two precise guidelines: one directed to avoid a distorted view of the Army and enhance its image through press campaigns that point out the positive aspects of the military (out-of-area missions, assistance to the populations in case of disasters), the other must arouse the interest of the young people through the illustration of the Service's goals, life in the Units, their own possible functions and the future job opportunities. In these sectors some important progress has been made working

Padua Military District: the Information and Propaganda Office.

together with the Army General Staff. The results are good, as proved by the trend of the applications submitted during the first half of this year compared with those of the same period of 2002.

The Army General Staff outlined the contents of the messages and the recruitment strategies, while the RFC Organization worked on the field through the Regional Commands, getting directly in touch with the young in several ways. In particular, the various messages were mostly sent through the mass media but also with direct contacts, a certainly costlier system in terms of time, but probably more gratifying in terms of quality.

In short, every Regional RFC Command established an



Agency for Public Information and Recruitment Promotion which, during important events in the various Italian cities – where the Service must give a univocal response – holds a dialogue with journalists through its Officer-spokesman and supports the Commander of the Unit where the event takes place, in accordance with the intentions of the Army Staff and the Inspectorate.

The Officer, who must have frequent contacts with television and press, attends a preliminary five-week course, held by civilian communication experts, in order to get accustomed to dealing with journalists, coping adroitly with

their questions. The same Agency is responsible for the promotional activity in its Administrative Region. In particular, each Agency takes care of the relations with the local publications and makes a note of the contacts that can be utilized when it is necessary to kindle the interest of the information world, especially at local level. The local press has in fact an ample readership and is held in high esteem.

The information and promotion activity is also carried out through school conferences.

These are the modalities through which the military interact with the world of the

young. As a matter of fact, on the occasion of exhibitions or shows of clear interest for young people, the various RFC Commands organize, on the entire national territory, the so-called RAP-CAMPS (Field Recruitment Promotional Activity) or simple promotional stands, where the personnel establish a first contact and give useful information to the young visitors.

The RAP Teams, made up of male and female Volunteers are trained, by civilian advisers and university teachers, on the techniques of approach to the prospective candidates. In this way, there is a useful exchange of information and, after a certain

Facing page.

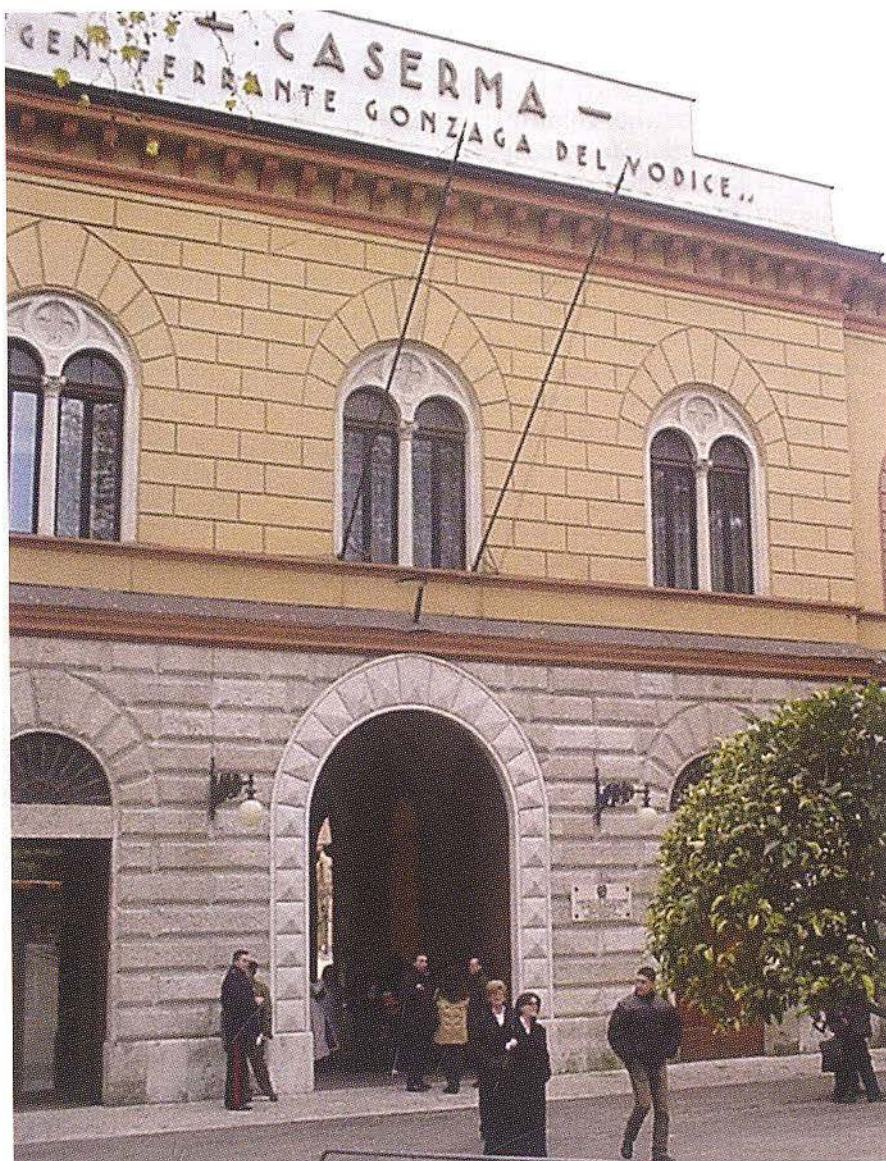
Padua Military District: organization of the windows for the public.

Right.

The Army Selection and Recruitment Centre.

initial mistrust, youngsters come to discover new realities which had often been distorted or ignored. The RAP Teams, especially during the summer, hold itinerant manifestations, with shows of materials and equipment as well as spectacular tactical actions which strike the imagination of the onlookers. The only purpose of all these activities is to lend visibility to the Army and bring it near to the youth-world, trying to offset the former inadequacy of military communication.

The cooperation between the Service and the school world is also rather important. Many lectures are delivered to the students attending the last years of high school, with the purpose of making them familiar with the distinctive features of a new profession and, first of all, to start a constructive confrontation between the military and the civilian world.



THE ARMY ENLISTMENTS IN THE FIRST HALF OF 2003

By comparing the following data, one can notice an increase in the number of applications, by both men and women, for the admission to Modena Military Academy, Viterbo NCO School and to the competitions for short-term Volunteers.

In every case we have seen not only an increase in the number of candidates (macroscopic for VFBs) but also a rise in the number of those who actually turned up for selection.

Just to give a significant datum, suffice it say that, this year, there were 14,170 candidates as

compared with 4720 in 2002.

This result was achieved also because all candidates, after submission of their application, received a letter that invited them to participate and reminded them of the reporting date at the Army Selection Centre in Foligno.

THE PROJECTS FOR FUTURE JOB OPENINGS

In the past, the Service tried to make the competitions for Volunteers more attractive by increasing the number of those who, having served without demerit, could be assigned to the regular service.

It must be pointed out that a sizable number of Volunteers who do not want to join the Armed Forces or the Police, or consider that their experience in the military is finished, do not enjoy any preference and have no guarantee of a decorous continuation of their working activity in the Nation's socio-industrial organization. In those cases, therefore, promoting this aspect becomes necessarily a real priority.

Considering that, at least in the present perception of public opinion, the attractiveness of the competition is closely connected with the certainty of a job, the Inspectorate, together with the

Conscription Directorate, has started a number of contacts aimed at finding stable job opportunities for the Volunteers. These ideas led to constitute, within the Directorate, an Agency for the employment of Volunteers at the end of their service.

In fact, for a young Volunteer, who wants to serve as professional for a limited period of time, the prospect of a sure job, not only in a public Administration branch, is a strong argument in favour of his enlistment.

In view of this, an agreement of July 3 of last year, reached with CONFINDUSTRIA, CONFAPI and CONFCOMMERCIO, gives the discharged Volunteers the opportunity to find a job in medium and small enterprises or in the service sector. This year the LEVADIFE Agency signed two agreements with the National Vigilance Union (UNIV) and with CONFAGRICOLTURA. A third one with CONFARTIGIANATO will follow shortly. The purpose of these accords is to secure job offers and match them with the requests of the Volunteers who leave the Armed Forces.

The Agency avails itself of the Regional RFC Commands for the stipulation of local protocols with the Regions, the Trade Associations and other Organizations, in order to draw a "map" of possible jobs after the Volunteers' experience in uniform.

It must be stressed that the agreements introduce important elements of interest for the entrepreneurial world, since the Armed Forces offer young people who are very valuable, both for their specialization and for the experience matured abroad in peace missions.

In any case, the agreements must be developed through executive measures. At this point, the PIPR Agencies of the Regional RFC Commands come into the picture: they must develop the cooperation with the

different partners at all levels. They are the actual agencies in charge of employment. The whole activity's aim is to create two data banks: one for job requests (Volunteers at the end of their service) and one for offers made by the free market to the discharged servicemen.

It is easy to understand that the tasks of the Inspectorate will go well beyond promotion and selection. In practice, the RFC structure, together with LEVADIFE, will follow the young Volunteer in his transition from the military to the civilian world and subsequently in his reemployment in the labour market.

THE COMPLETION FORCES

After this ample survey of Recruitment and of the Inspectorate's wide-ranging functions, it seems convenient to mention the Army's Completion Forces. The subject has already been discussed in no. 2/2002 of "Rivista Militare".

These forces are employed for the Army's operational requirements, both at home and abroad. In particular, the volunteer Completion Forces consist of personnel who freely offer their professionalism to the Service.

The potentiality of this new form of recruitment was clear from the very beginning, but it needed to be promoted in order to make it known to the public at large. This important project was rightly entrusted to the Inspectorate which, tanks to its widespread presence on the territory, could immediately publicize this new type of enlistment. Adhesions have been plentiful and so were the recalls issued by the Army. This is so true that, at present, it is very easy to see recalled servicemen employed in the units or in missions abroad.

But the Inspectorate's work in this sector is not limited to the



promotion phase. It has actually has set up a data bank with the names of all recallable personnel and has taken charge to constantly update it. Furthermore, through its subordinate bodies (Interregional and Regional Commands, Military Districts), the Inspectorate keeps in direct contacts with the reservists, whose applications are received by the Military Districts, which also give the necessary information.

It is important to underline that the Army strongly believes in the Completion Forces, especially in a moment of transition such as the present one. They can help in offsetting the shortage deriving



The Selection Room of a Military District.

from the suspension of conscription, they represent the future and must be regarded as a very precious asset for the entire Service.

CONCLUSIONS

As we said, the Inspectorate takes care of all types of recruitment, starting with the "approach-learning" phase, when the young persons get to know the opportunities afforded by the Army. This is the promotional phase, probably the most difficult one, since it changes in time. It becomes clear, therefore, that the Service's promotional message

must be suited to the type of public to which it is directed and must necessarily have hold over this public, so as to induce them to ask for more information. Clearly the type and contents of the message fall under the entire competence of the Army Staff, but equally clear is that the diffusion of the message is a prerogative of the Inspectorate.

It is a stimulating and complex activity because, albeit it gives abundant room to initiative, it is governed by binding rules. Well trained persons are essential: partial or inaccurate answers can compromise individual aspirations or discourage a candidate. For this reason, the

Inspectorate makes incessant efforts in motivating its personnel. In any case, it is important to stress the fact that all servicemen are vehicles of information. Probably, without realizing it, we all produce information and, therefore, promotion. All the efforts made by the Service must be aimed at improving its own image, in order to get the approval of public opinion. Approval means also social recognition for those who are already professionals in our Institution.

Probably, when one refers to a Service, the first element considered is its operational component. Today, as never before, we need to recruit men and women, in order to put this component in the best possible operational conditions.

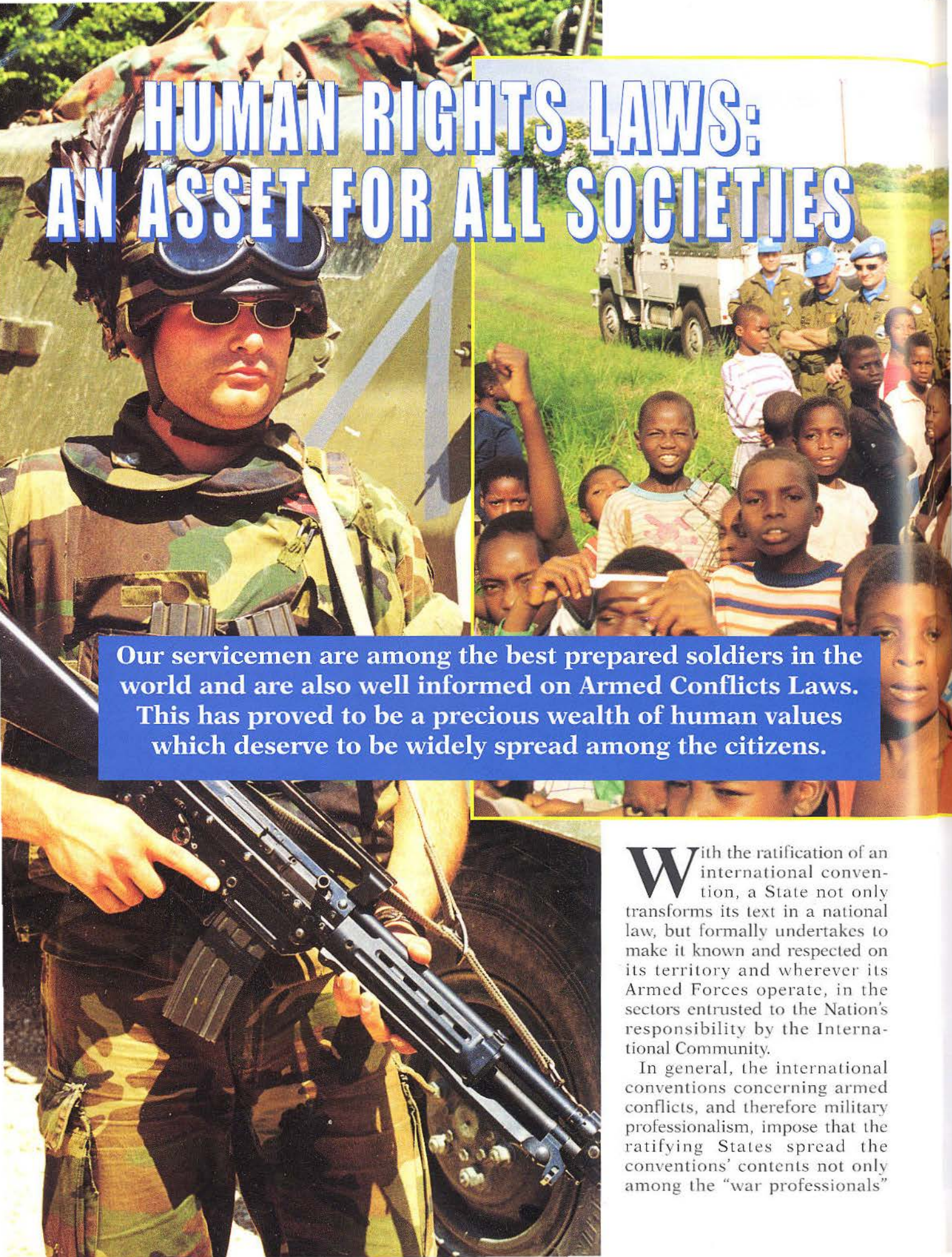
In short, it is a question of managing a complex system which deals with young people in different but equally important ways and intends to reach a single vital objective: the recruitment of Volunteers.

Man is in himself an irreplaceable weapon system, with his ability to employ different components: mind, character, intelligence, learning, force, shrewdness: but there is a difference between him and the most technologically advanced and real weapon systems: only he can use them.

The Army's future, but also that of the other Services, is therefore correlated to the concrete capability of introducing professional personnel into the Units. The Inspectorate and its components are deeply committed to the achievement of this goal.

□

**Lieutenant General,
Inspector, Army Recruitment
and Completion Forces*

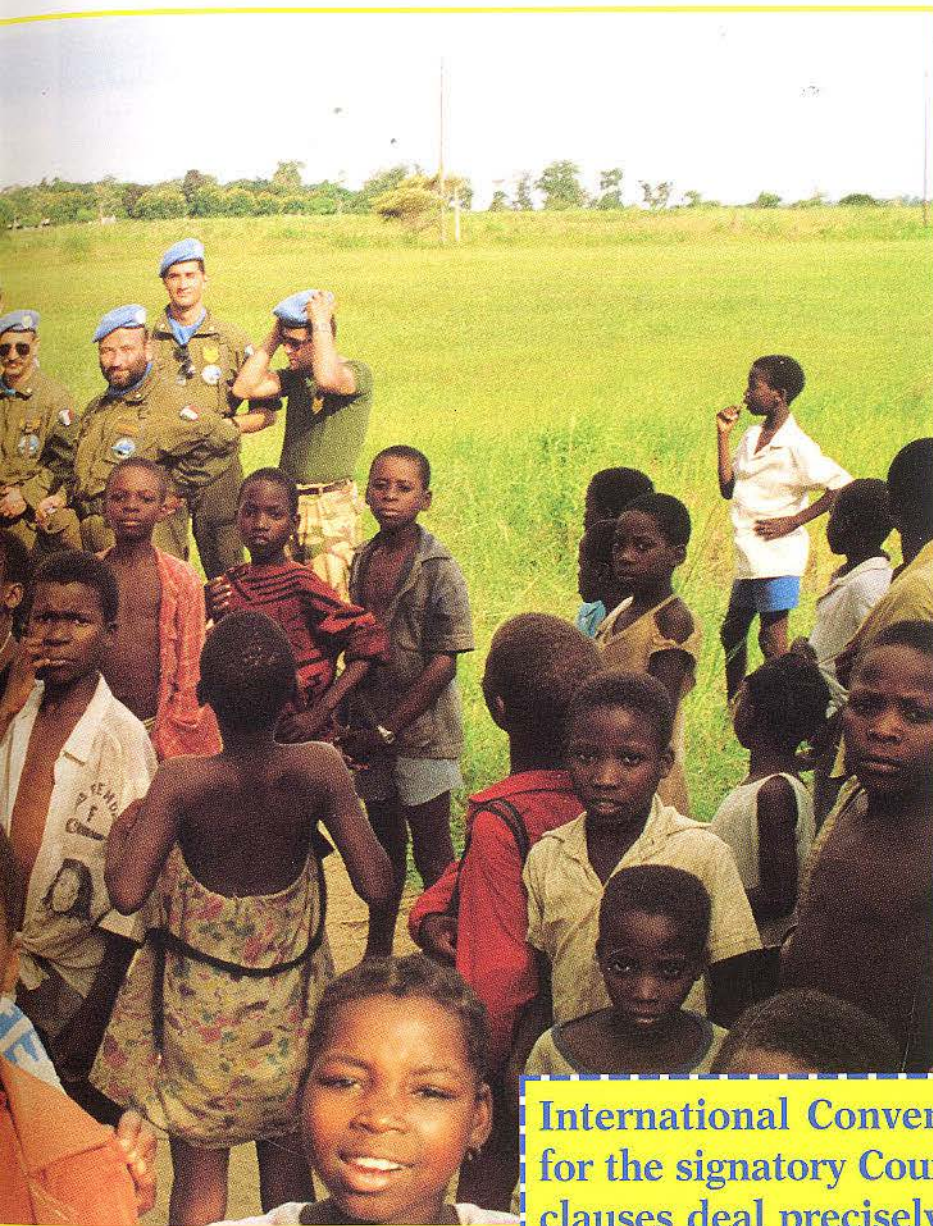


HUMAN RIGHTS LAWS: AN ASSET FOR ALL SOCIETIES

Our servicemen are among the best prepared soldiers in the world and are also well informed on Armed Conflicts Laws. This has proved to be a precious wealth of human values which deserve to be widely spread among the citizens.

With the ratification of an international convention, a State not only transforms its text in a national law, but formally undertakes to make it known and respected on its territory and wherever its Armed Forces operate, in the sectors entrusted to the Nation's responsibility by the International Community.

In general, the international conventions concerning armed conflicts, and therefore military professionalism, impose that the ratifying States spread the conventions' contents not only among the "war professionals"



by Arturo Marcheggiano *

the responsibilities of the military profession. We intend to verify if the rules dictated by the international conventions dealing with war are adequately included in the military-instruction programmes; we want, moreover, to give an account of a recent Austrian experience on this problem and make concrete proposals.

PROCEDURES OF DIFFUSION

The second Convention of The Hague (1899), ratified by Italy in 1900 and still in force (identical to the 4th Convention of The Hague of 1907), on the laws and practices of land war, at art.1 states: *The High Contracting Parties shall give their land armed forces instructions in conformity with the Regulations concerning*

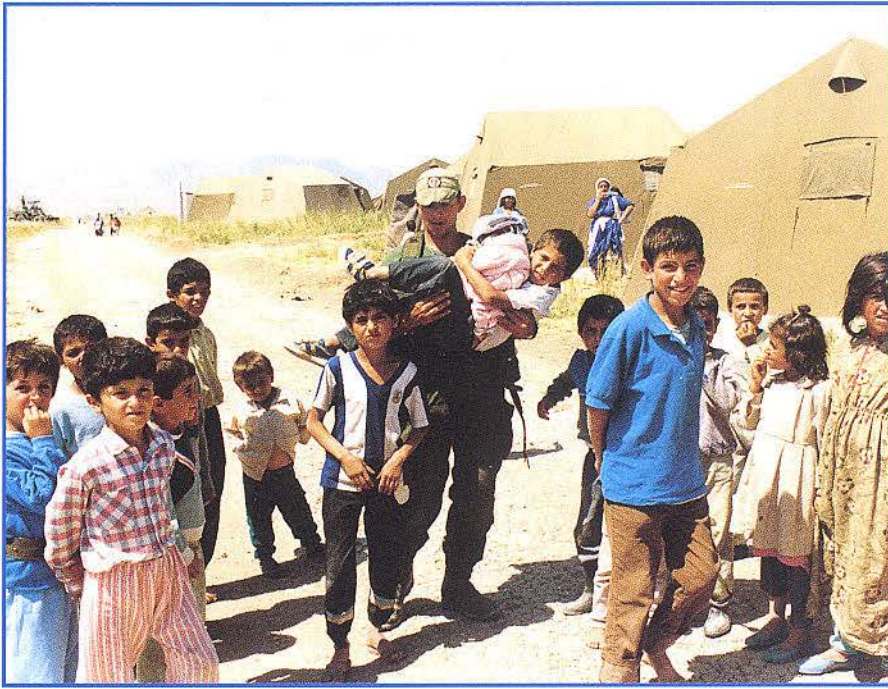
but, if possible, also among the civilian population, including them in school programmes.

While the knowledge about conventions is fairly diffused among the military, the same cannot be said when it comes to civilians. A large number of compulsory-education students do not know very well the organs of the State, the citizen's rights and duties and the Nation's international engagements.

The purpose of this article is to examine the freely-assumed international commitments, at least for what concerns the law on armed conflicts falling within

International Conventions are so important for the signatory Countries that some specific clauses deal precisely with the procedures of diffusion within these Nations. The military, for professional reasons, have long known their importance, owing to the intense and well-established training programmes, which are the necessary prerequisites for their employment in out-of-area missions.

For their formative value, these principles deserve the largest diffusion in every social sector, for they contribute to a better understanding of the human values of tolerance and solidarity.



In out-of-area interventions, our servicemen have always shown high professionalism and a marked humanitarian sense.

the laws and practices of land war attached to the present convention.

This provision was confirmed in the convention of The Hague of 1907, at article 1, similar to

that of 1899, which had already been ratified by Italy.

Only the protocol of 1925 ("Prohibition of employment in war of asphyxiating, poisonous and similar gases and bacterio-

logical weapons) did not include mandatory rules for its diffusion among the military; on the contrary, the norms were included in the Geneva conventions of 1929 which are no more in force (1).

These norms on compulsory diffusion are confirmed in the four Geneva conventions of 1949. As a matter of fact, art.47 of the Convention regarding "the wounded and sick of the fighting forces (1st Geneva Convention)" states: *The High Contracting Parties undertake to diffuse, in the widest possible way, in peacetime and wartime, the text of the present Convention in their respective Countries and, in particular, to include its study in the programmes of military and, if possible, civil instruction, so that*





The operational capability of our units aroused unanimous international appreciation, both in Bosnia (above) and Kosovo (left).

its principles are made known to the whole population and especially to the armed forces, the medical personnel and the military chaplains. Similar provisions are included in art.48 of the 2nd Convention of 1949 on "the wounded, sick and castaways"; and in art.144 of the 4th Convention of 1949 on "civilian populations". The last two should be made known to the military authorities and also to civilian officials, Police, or other authorities who could be called to assume responsibilities for prisoners of war or civilians.

The knowledge of the Conventions would also contribute to the citizens' maturity and make them aware of their rights and duties in wartime. Unfortunately, we must admit that this diffusion among the population and in schools does not take place, and is culpably left in the hands of more or less qualified instructors of the Italian Red Cross.

Also completely disregarded are the orders of diffusion issued by the Convention on the "Safeguard of human rights and fundamental liberties" (Rome Convention of 1950).

Article 25 of the Convention of The Hague (1954) on the "Protection of artistic and cultural assets in case of armed conflict" (2) says that *the High Contracting Parties undertake to*



diffuse in the widest possible way, in peacetime and wartime, the text of the convention and its executive rules in their respective Countries. They especially undertake to include the study of the norms in the programmes of military and, if possible, of civil instruction, so that their principles are made known to the whole population, in particular to the Armed Forces and the personnel in charge of cultural assets.

The Convention is well known and implemented by our Armed Forces, but the same cannot be said of the personnel in charge of cultural assets.

In this regard we can say that also the Protocol of The Hague

Above.

A checkpoint at an important intersection on the Sarajevo-Pale road in Bosnia.

Right.

Controlling the territory in Kosovo.

Opposite

A patrol in the area of the old port of Mogadishu, Somalia.

(1999) (not yet ratified by Italy but already applied, by order of the Chief of Staff of Defence, by our Armed Forces engaged in peace missions abroad) includes a paragraph (3) on diffusion, which declares: *The Parties shall*





endeavour to find appropriate systems, especially educational and informative programmes, apt to make the entire population better appreciate and respect their cultural assets. The Parties shall widely circulate the present protocol both in peacetime and during armed conflicts. The military or civil authorities who may be responsible for the application of this protocol during an armed conflict will have to be perfectly acquainted with its text. To this end the Parties, if they deem it appropriate, should: include in

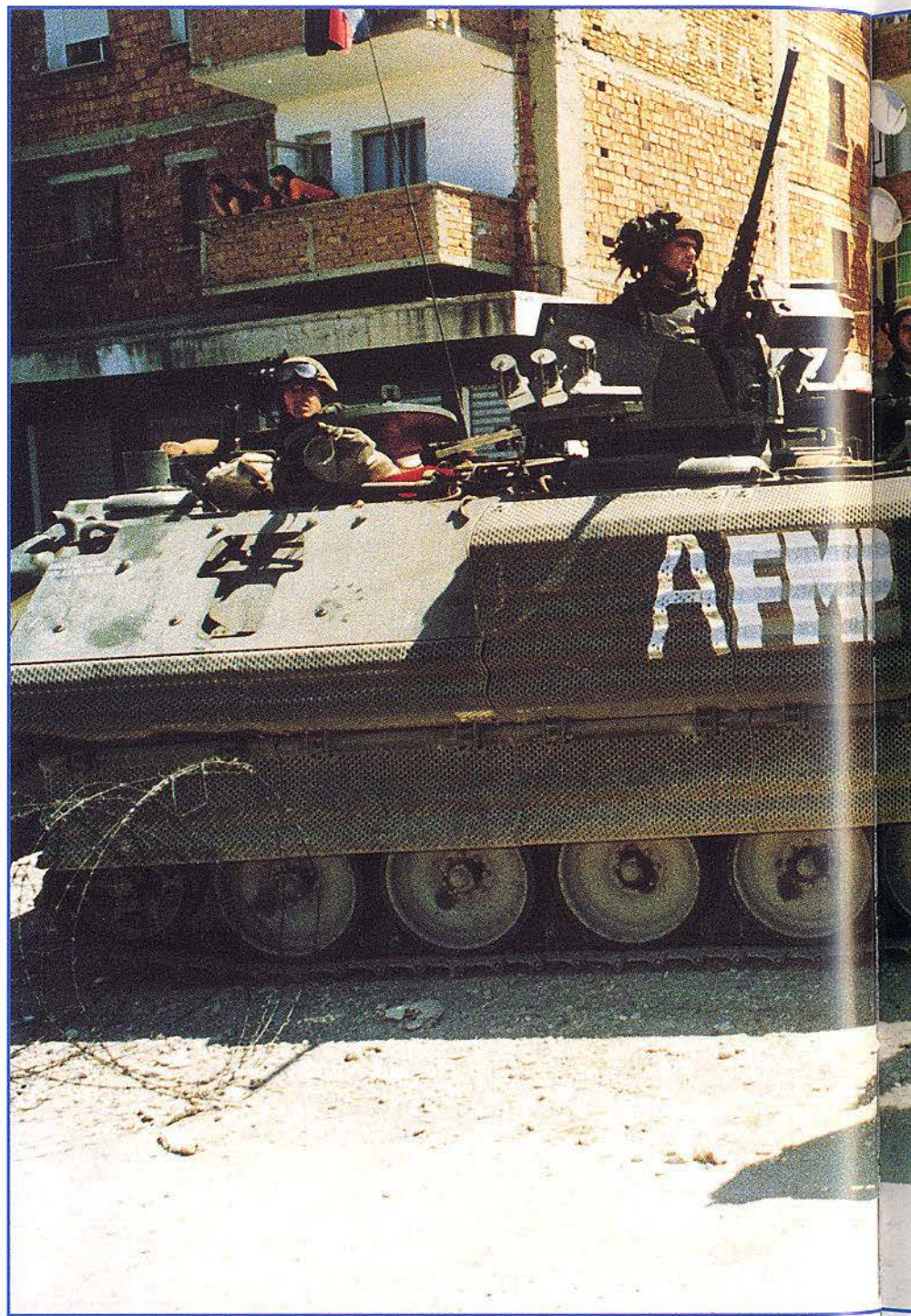
their military regulations, information and instructions about the protection of cultural assets; work out and implement, already in peacetime, together with UNESCO and the appropriate GOs and NGOs, theoretical and practical programmes; inform each other, through the Director General, about the laws, administrative instructions and measures taken in order to implement the abovesaid programmes; inform each other, as rapidly as possible, through the Director General, on the laws and administrative provisions they intend to adopt in order to ensure the implementation of the present protocol. We can add, moreover, that today rapid communications and e-mail are very common and easy.

The additional protocols of 1977 to the Geneva Conventions of 1949 (ratified by Italy in 1985), do not mention diffusion, since they follow the articles of the four Geneva Conventions discussed before, but they include all the norms concerning especially civil protection and civil defence. However, the second protocol, dealing with non-international armed conflicts, prescribes "the widest possible diffusion".

So far we have sufficiently expounded the commitments of the various States to diffuse the international conventions on war and human rights, at least for what concerns the Conventions listed in the "Manual of Human Rights Laws (G-014)" published by the Defence General Staff in 1992 and now in force.

THE SITUATION IN ITALY

In Italy the situation can be considered optimal, especially as



regards the Armed Forces.

After the bipolar era of massive or flexible response with nuclear weapons, and in view of the new conventional operational scenarios, the Army set about diffusing the teaching of the armed conflicts laws. This eventually developed in all directions. Starting from the most qualified Army Cadres

(War College) down to Academy Cadets, Application Schools students and reserve Officers, NCOs and enlisted men engaged in peace missions abroad. Finally, it became a general knowledge. This wealth of information, also acquired by the Navy and Air Force, was greatly developed during the Gulf War. In this sector, our Armed Forces



are today the most knowledgeable among those operating within the international Community.

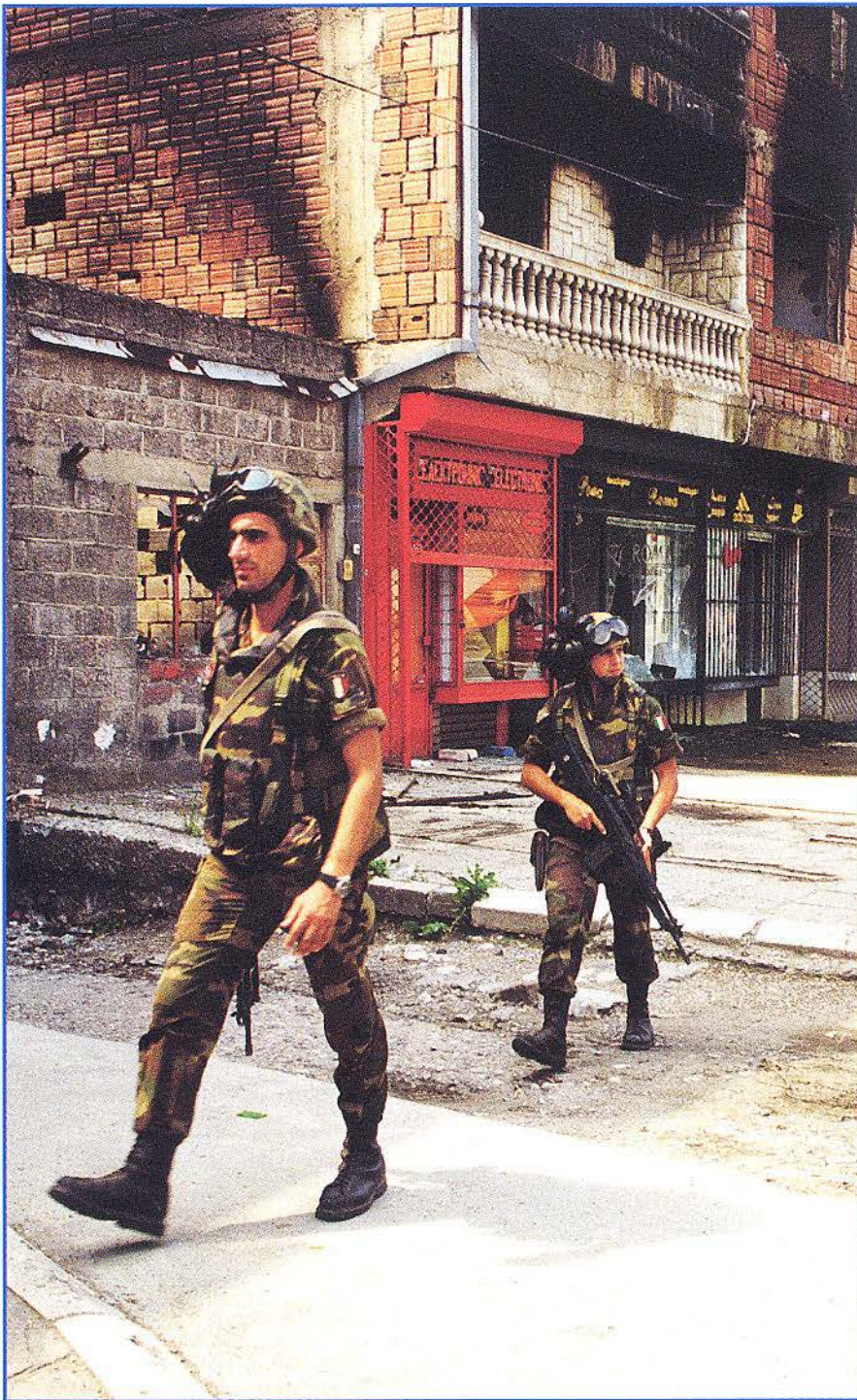
The diffusion of the norms is entrusted to the Red Cross and is sufficient for informing the civilian population of their rights and duties but, considering Italy's increasing engagements in international

activities, possibly these initiatives should be promoted more thoroughly.

A RECENT INTERNATIONAL EXPERIENCE

As International President of the National Societies for the Protection of Cultural Assets in

armed conflicts and public disasters, the writer of this article took part in a seminar on "Protection of Cultural Assets and Education of the Citizen" which took place in Linz (Austria) from 12 to 14 October 2002. The meeting was organized by the Ministries of Equal Opportunities, Education, Science and Culture.



Left.
Control of a built-up area in Kosovo.

Below.
Italian soldiers on surveillance duty in Albania.

Opposite
One of the main characteristics of our soldiers engaged in out-of-area missions is their capability of cooperating in multinational environments.

or more of them are involved. The Ministry of Defence could have a coordinating function, similar to the one performed by the Ministry of the Interior for Civil

The Seminar discussed the International Conventions of 1954 on the protection of cultural assets during conflicts and also the Paris Convention of 1972 on the Patrimony of the Peoples, which celebrated also its thirtieth anniversary (both Conventions had been ratified by Italy and Austria), as well as the obligations that the

Conventions imply for the ratifying States. In practice we tried to find a way to include the safeguard of cultural assets in a school subject similar to what we call "civic education".

A logical solution would require a coordination at Prime Minister Office's level, and a precise definition of the responsibilities of each Ministry, also when two



Protection and public disasters. The various levels of the Ministry of Education should moreover train teachers and prepare suitable study programmes, with the concurrent advice of the Ministry of Health and the Ministry of Culture.

CONCLUSIONS

Italy is increasingly engaged in meeting the international commitments it has freely undertaken. This is not only guaranteed by the Armed Forces but also ensured by the State's civil Institutions.



The right way seems to be that of a closer coordination among the different Ministries, in order to avoid dispersions and overlappings.

Preparing the population to face extreme situations and public disasters, imparting certain principles, such as human solidarity and voluntarism, caring for protection and Civil Defence, being informed of the State's organization and traditions and proud of being Italians, knowing one's rights and duties: these are the fundamentals on which tomorrow's citizens will grow.

This is a rather difficult task which belongs to both State and family but its results would be socially rewarding and far-reaching.

□

**Major General (ret)*

NOTES

- (1) The version now in force is the third draft of the 1949 Convention, amended and ratified by Italy in 1951. The 1929 version was the second draft, after that of 1864.
- (2) Ratified by Italy in 1958.
- (3) Article 30.

RED-HOT LAKES

Do you accept the New Constitution? This is the question to which millions of Rwandan people have been called to answer in the referendum on the New Constitution, that took place on last May, 26.

The referendum was held to approve the New Constitutional Charter, the fifth since the African Country obtained independence from Belgium in 1962, and took place in a regular and peaceful way, calling to the polls a large flow of people.

The New Constitutional Charter, that has become effective after the signature by President Paul Kagame and the approval of the Supreme Court, consists of 203 articles. It presents some significant novelties: for the first time after the genocide of 1994, the election based on

The crisis of Africa's Great Lakes calls again our attention to a region always in the everlasting and difficult search for prosperity and stability

by Serena Sartini *



universal suffrage has been introduced, limited to only one branch of Parliament, which will be bicameral, unlike the present one, composed of just one Chamber. Nevertheless the suffrage will not be extended to the Senate. The President will be elected with a mandate for a seven-year term, renewable only once. The new Constitutional Charter will be drawn up in Kinyarwanda (the local language), French and English, and will envisage a multiparty system, freedom of expression and measures to guarantee the inviolable rights of man.

The European Countries are doing their utmost to give a concrete hope to the territories that have long been the theatre of genocides caused by tribal revenges. The Council of the European Union, in fact, has approved the dispatch of a temporary military mission to Congo, to which France, Great Britain, Belgium, Sweden and Italy have agreed. As regards Congo, Rwanda and Burundi, there is a new hope for a better future. However, this malaise sinks its roots in times and events almost forgotten by the West.

The crisis of the Great Lakes has been "one of the greatest and most complex humanitarian crisis of modern times". This emergency, known as "the catastrophe of Africa's Balkans", which has at first affected Rwanda with the genocide of 1994, and then moved to Burundi and ended in Congo, has not yet found a solution to the complex reality still existing in that region.

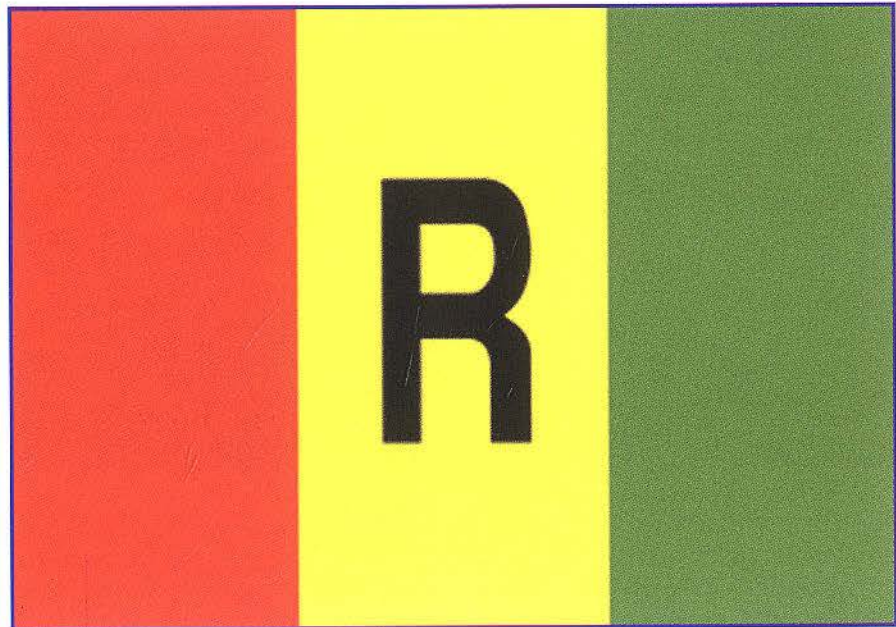
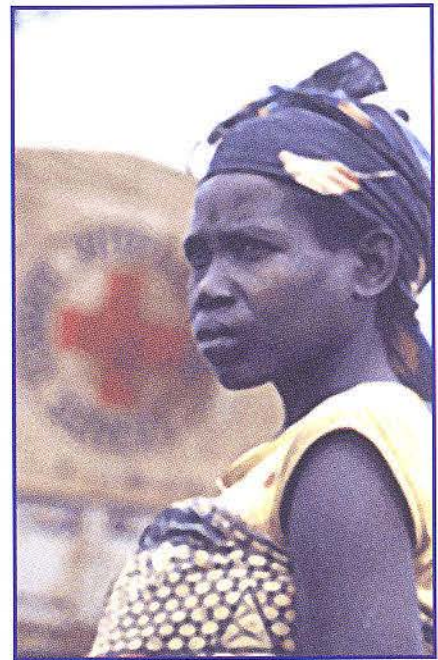
Considering the complexity and the entity of the humanitarian catastrophe, it is necessary to make a time-space demarcation.

The analysis will mainly deal with the two more involved Countries – Rwanda and the Democratic Republic of Congo – taking as initial point of the crisis the conventional date of April 6, 1994, the day on which the airplane on which the Presidents of Burundi and Rwanda were

travelling was shot down. This day also marks the beginning of the genocide of more than one million Tutsis in Rwanda.

It is very difficult to identify the reasons that have caused the 1994 genocide. Social, ethnic, economic and political motivations have intertwined, triggering a war that has involved more and more civilian victims and has become a real African crisis.

The interpretation of this tragic event can be found in competition and hatred between the two ethnic groups living in the same territory: the Hutus and the Tutsis. Ethnic and social matters interlace with economic and political reasons, giving rise to an explosive mixture very hard to control.

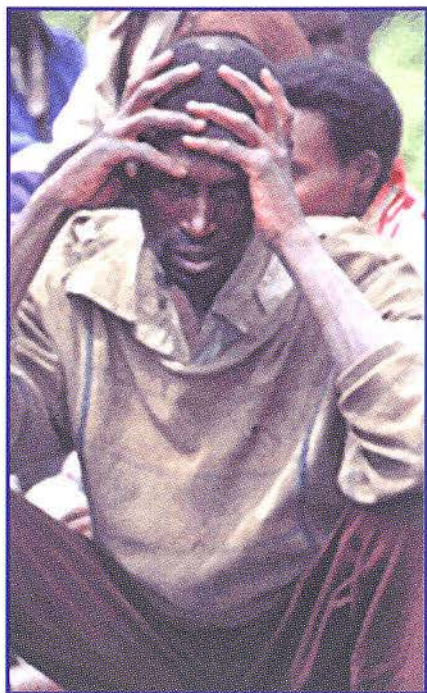


THE TENSION BETWEEN TUTSIS AND HUTUS

At the origin of the political dispute between Rwanda and Burundi there is an ethnic tension associated with an unequal relation between the Tutsi minority and the Hutu majority.

A confrontation comes on top of the whole historical and political situation and becomes a sparking cause, albeit not the only one, of the Great Lakes'

catastrophe. The distinction between Hutus and Tutsis has influenced and still influences the political stability or instability between the two countries. The first inhabitants of Rwanda were the Twas, or Pygmies, who lived on hunting and on what they gathered from the land. Through migrations from the North and the East, farmers and breeders arrived in the country. The former were called Hutus, while the breeders were identified as Tutsis. As time



passed, the idea that the Tutsis were superior to the Hutus gained more and more ground: the former were tall, with aquiline features, the latter were short, with rather marked features. When the Belgian colonizers arrived in 1916, the tension between the two ethnic groups increased. The Hutus and the Tutsis were even issued distinct identity cards, and the latter were considered a superior race, with the total approval of the Tutsis themselves, who for the following twenty years did the most gratifying jobs and obtained better education opportunities if compared to what their Hutu "enemies" could get. Many violent episodes took place against the Hutu farmers: their only alternative was to save enough money to buy a herd, so as to join the Tutsi aristocracy, for whom the discriminating element was represented by wealth and not so much by race.

The Hutus couldn't accept such an unfavourable situation and so, at the end of the '50s, the first reactions began. In 1959 more than 20.000 Tutsis were killed and many of them fled to neighbouring Countries (Burun-

di, Tanzania and Uganda). But with independence, in 1962, the situation turned over, and the Hutus gained a dominant position. As time passed, the economic conditions transformed also the social order and the Tutsis became again the leading race.

The same happened in Burundi, where the Tutsi minority were able to maintain their power also after independence, reached in 1962. A great number of massacres were



perpetrated against the Hutus. They mostly ran off to Rwanda and were to be among the most cruel murderers in the slaughters of 1994.

At present the words Hutu and Tutsi have also a new meaning, related to the atrocities committed in Rwanda and Burundi. Today, to be a Tutsi, means to belong to the community that was massacred by a genocide. On the contrary, to be a Hutu means to belong to the ethnic group who was slaughtered in Burundi in 1972, 1988, 1990 and 1991, in the north of Rwanda between 1990 and 1994, and, subsequently and consequently, in Eastern Zaire.

THE OUTBREAK OF THE CATASTROPHE AND THE RWANDAN CRISIS

Let us get to the cause that has led to the crisis. The attack on the Rwandan President Habyarimana and on the President of Burundi, Ntaryamira, occurred on April 6, 1994. The airplane, that from Dar es Salaam (capital of Tanzania) was returning to Kigali (capital of Rwanda) with the two politicians on board, was shot down. The two Presidents

had been to a meeting with other African leaders, to discuss the way to stop the ethnic conflicts in the two African regions. The specific reasons for the assault are unknown, and also unknown are the attackers.

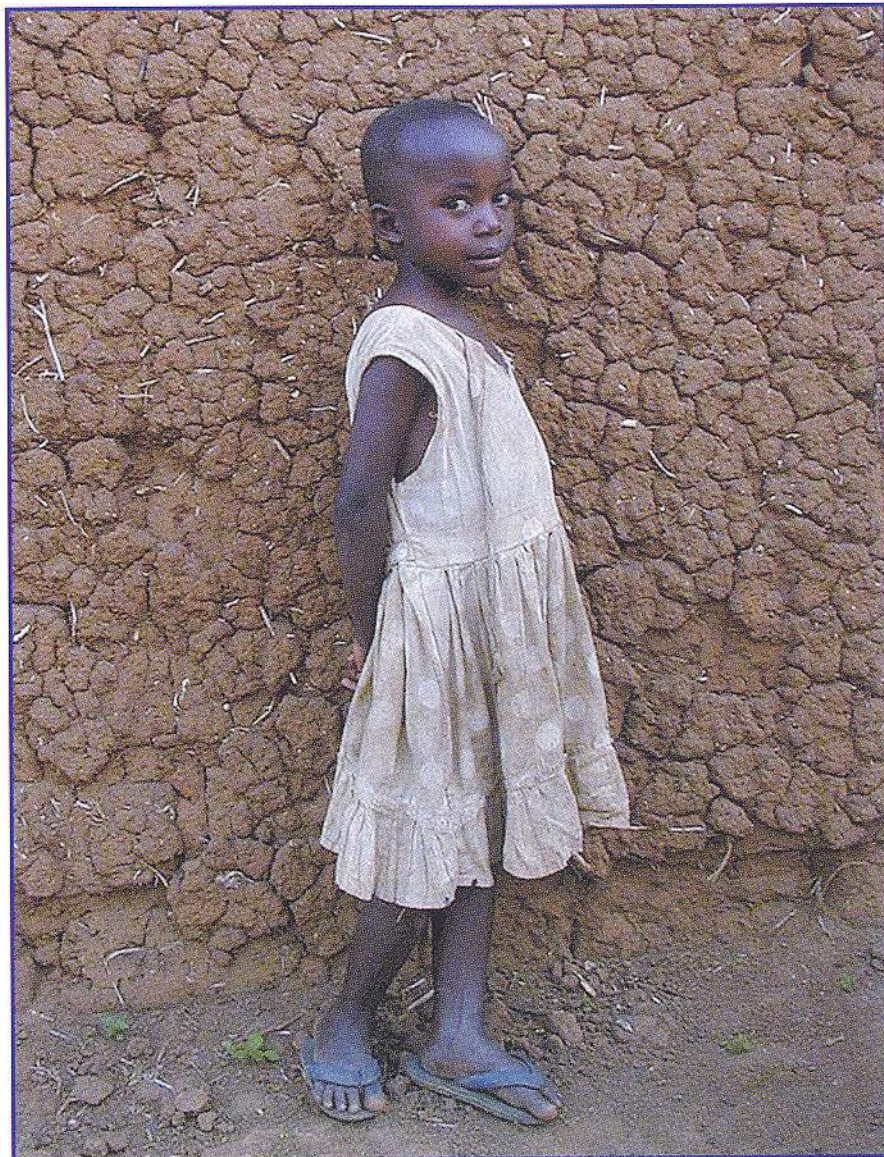
That was the beginning of the "nightmare period" for the Tutsi minority and for the Hutu moderates. The Hutu extremist faction started a systematic action of ethnic cleansing, an unprecedented slaughtering operation. The ethnic extermination caused, according to the present estimates, more than one million deaths in just two months.

Nevertheless, ethnic tension was not the only cause of the

genocide. The murder of President Habyarimana was the last straw. The intermingled political and economic factors which set off the massacre were the President's loss of popularity and the fact that the Tutsis, who had taken refuge in Uganda, had set up the "Rwandan Patriotic Front," with the purpose of overthrowing Habyarimana and return to their country. Most Hutus participated in the genocide. Even the clergy were indicted for crimes against humanity. Also a Hutu radio station, "Radio des Mille Collines", operating in Kinyaranda, urged the Hutus to complete the physical elimination of the Tutsis started in 1959. Everything began on April 7, 1994, when the Tutsis, accused of having attacked Habyarimana, started being systematically killed.

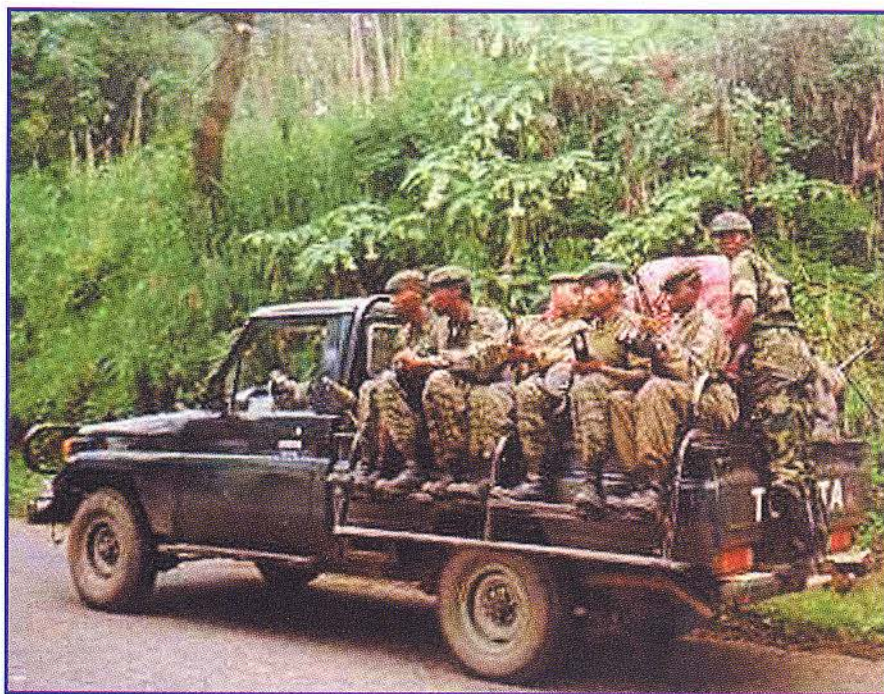
On April 8 about 8000 people left Rwanda for Tanzania. From April 6 to April 26 there were about 100,000 dead, mostly women, children and old people. Besides, about 30,000 refugees fled to neighbouring nations, and Burundi was one of them. While the dead were mainly Tutsis, the refugees were southern Hutus who, once they heard the news that the rebels were advancing, decided to leave the country, for fear of massacres and revenges. The number of dead continued to increase: the humanitarian operators started to talk of genocide.

On May 17 the Resolution no. 918 of the U.N. Security Council extended the mandate of the peace-keeping operation to UNAMIR. Ten Belgian servicemen from the UNAMIR Blue Helmets were killed by the rebels. The U.N. withdrew its mandate, because the situation had become dangerous also for the peacekeeping force. Nevertheless, a new resolution of the Security Council, no. 929, authorized a peacekeeping operation conducted by France. The interest was clear: to support



the forces still loyal to President Habyarimana. On June 23 Operation "Turquoise" began. Resolution no. 929 authorized the deployment of a multinational military force under French command, with the purpose of assisting the population. The operation lasted for two months. A "Humanitarian Security Zone" was created, to protect the refugees from the rebels' violence. The objective was achieved, but the "Turquoise" mission was very soon going to be recorded among the failures of the U.N. peacekeeping operations, because, later, the "Security Area" allowed the slaughterers to cross the boundary and pass off as refugees. At the

same time, between the 17th and 21st of June, the WEU Council met to discuss the Rwanda situation, and agreed on the possibility to set up a humanitarian operation. On July 4, 1994, the Rwandan Patriotic Front (RPF) occupied the capital, Kigali, proclaiming victory and declaring a "cease fire." The coming into power of the Front (dominated by Tutsis), led by General Kagame, put an end to the genocide. On July 17 the RPF conquered Gisenyi, the last stronghold of the Rwandan Government. The next day, Kagame declared a "cease fire" and formed a new multiethnic Government, headed by President Pasteur Bizimungu, of Hutu

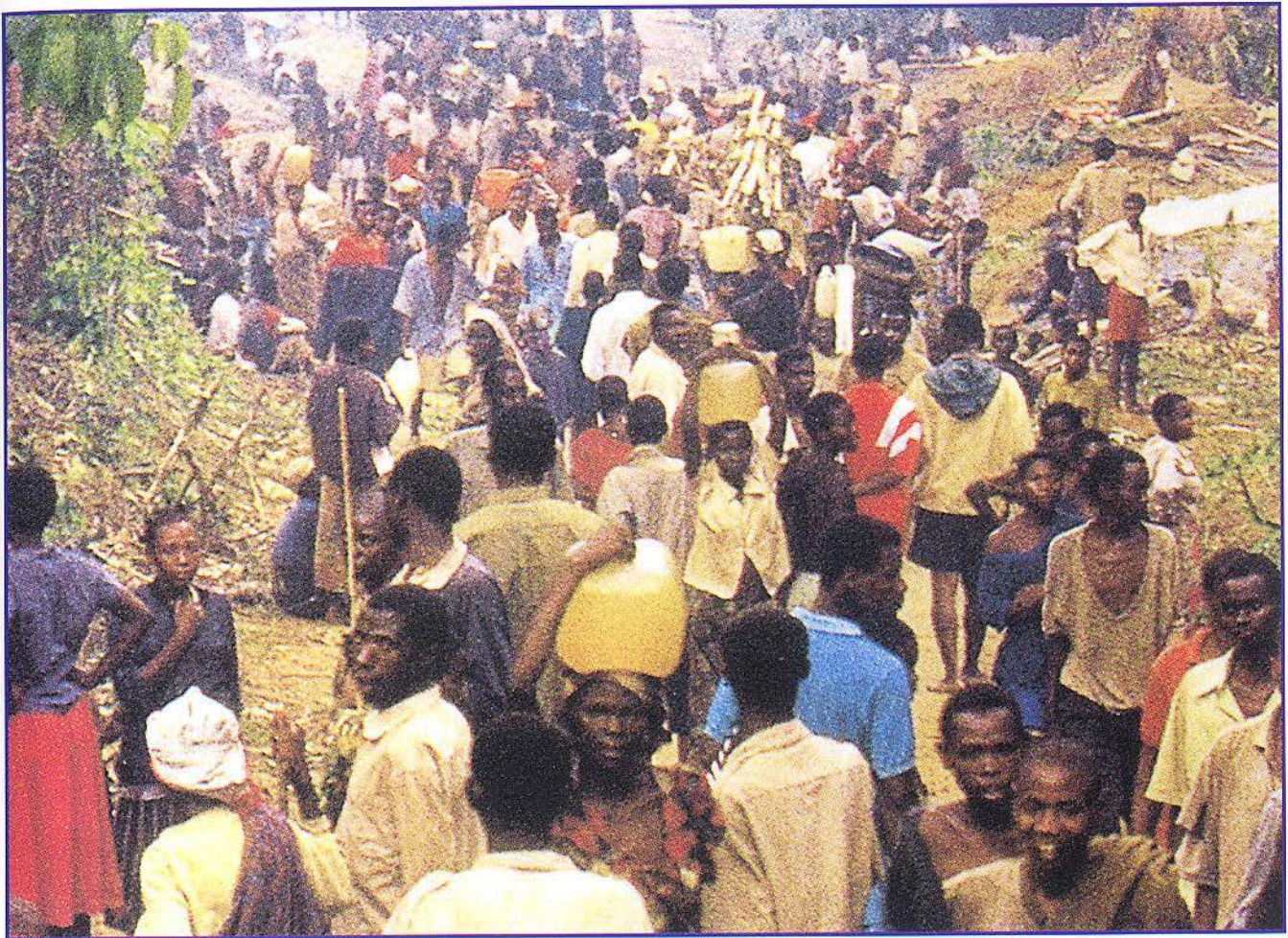


origin, but supported, in the Government, by the majority the Tutsis in the Rwandan Patriotic Front. The International Court for the crimes committed in Rwanda was instituted on November 8, 1994.

THE QUESTION OF THE REFUGEES

The genocide had come to an end, but the crisis continued. One of the more complex problems that the international

community had to face was the question of the refugees. The week from 11 to 20 July was one of the most dramatic periods, also from the humanitarian point of view: the rebels were going towards the border with Uganda and Zaire. Hundreds of thousands of Hutus were compelled to take refuge in Zaire, that in one week received about two million people. A humanitarian operator talked about a real "human wall" walking towards Zaire. The refugee camps of Gorna, Bukavu, by the Kivu and Tanganika lakes, were invaded by Hutus who were looking for refuge in the nearby Country. The humanitarian organizations were on the alert, also because some areas with a big concentration of refugees were not suitable for setting up a refugee camp. As, for instance, the volcanic area surrounding Goma, which is completely inappropriate. About 200 Non-Governmental Organizations (NGO) came to the rescue, but



the humanitarian problems were difficult to solve.

Above all, there was the complex situation of distributing victuals and medicines and it was difficult to ensure medical assistance. The authors of the genocide had also infiltrated among the refugees. For these infiltrators, the Zaire refugee camps became the ideal place where to plan their military strategy. The Country became the main element of the whole crisis of the Great Lakes. At that time Zaire was ruled by President Mobutu, an old and loyal friend of the Rwandan President Habyarimana. The ethnic link was one of the reasons on which their new relationship was based. It was Mobutu himself who gave refuge to the Hutu Rwandan masses who asked for support to the neighbouring nation.

The situation remained critical for about two years, during

which the guerrilla warfare went on along the border areas. During this period the Congolese Government started another campaign of persecution against the Congolese Tutsis, known as Banyamulenge.

The UNHCR (the main organization called to find a solution to the refugee problem) asked the international community to co-operate not only with financial means but also with technical resources. Airlifts were organized, together with a cell to monitor the air situation and mechanisms to control the distribution of essential goods. At the end of July 1995, many UNHCR operators promoted the return of the Rwandan to Zaire. The difficult conditions of the refugee camps, the promise of the new Rwandan Government that it wouldn't take revenge on the Hutus, and the necessity of coming back to

normality and to daily life, constituted its preconditions. But lots of people were still threatened by the representatives of the old regime and the refugee camps appeared to be the only safe hiding places. The forced expulsion of the refugees started on August 19 and was justified by public- security reasons. The operation failed because of the intimidating campaigns conducted by Hutu extremists inside the refugee camps. The situation in the Great Lakes' Region continued to be critical also the following year, and it came to a head in October 1996, when Rwanda occupied the Zairian territory, destroying the refugee camps. It was the beginning of the first civil war in Zaire.

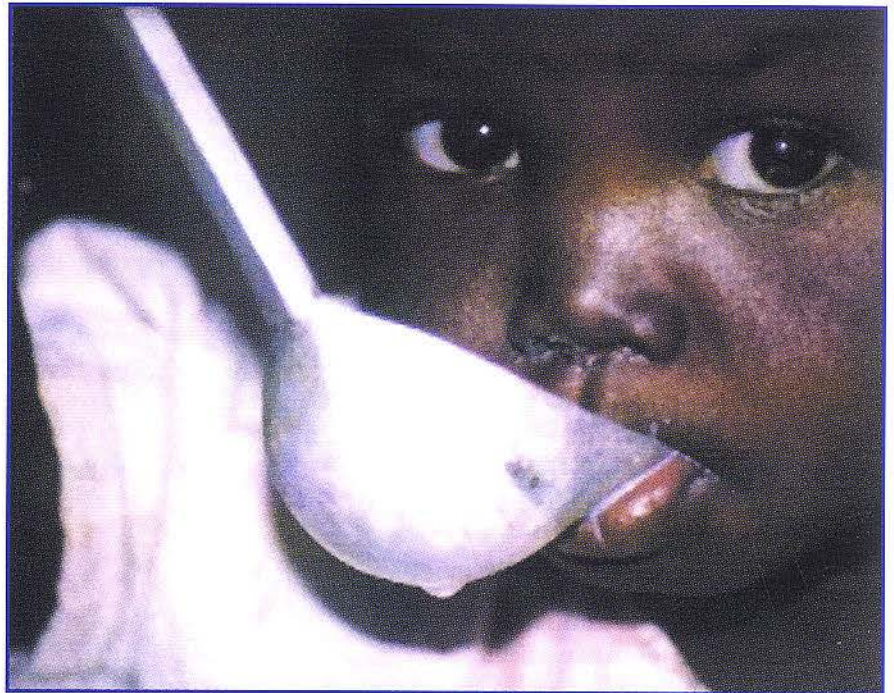
The situation became unbearable. Many people couldn't even get assistance from the humanitarian organizations. The



Forces for the liberation of Congo-Zaire (AFDL), led by Laurent Kabila, conquered Kisangani, considered the stronghold of the Zairian-army counteroffensive. The AFDL entered the refugee camps by force and, within November 1996 and January 1997, more than one million of refugees went back to Rwanda. In their fight against the Mobutu regime, the Rwandan rebels were helped by Rwanda and Uganda. The former mainly provided them with arms and troops (the Rwandan army is among the strongest of the African continent). The latter ensured them technical and strategic assistance. The civil war in Congo continued for about

refugee camp at Mugunga, to the north of lake Kivu, took in twice the expected people.

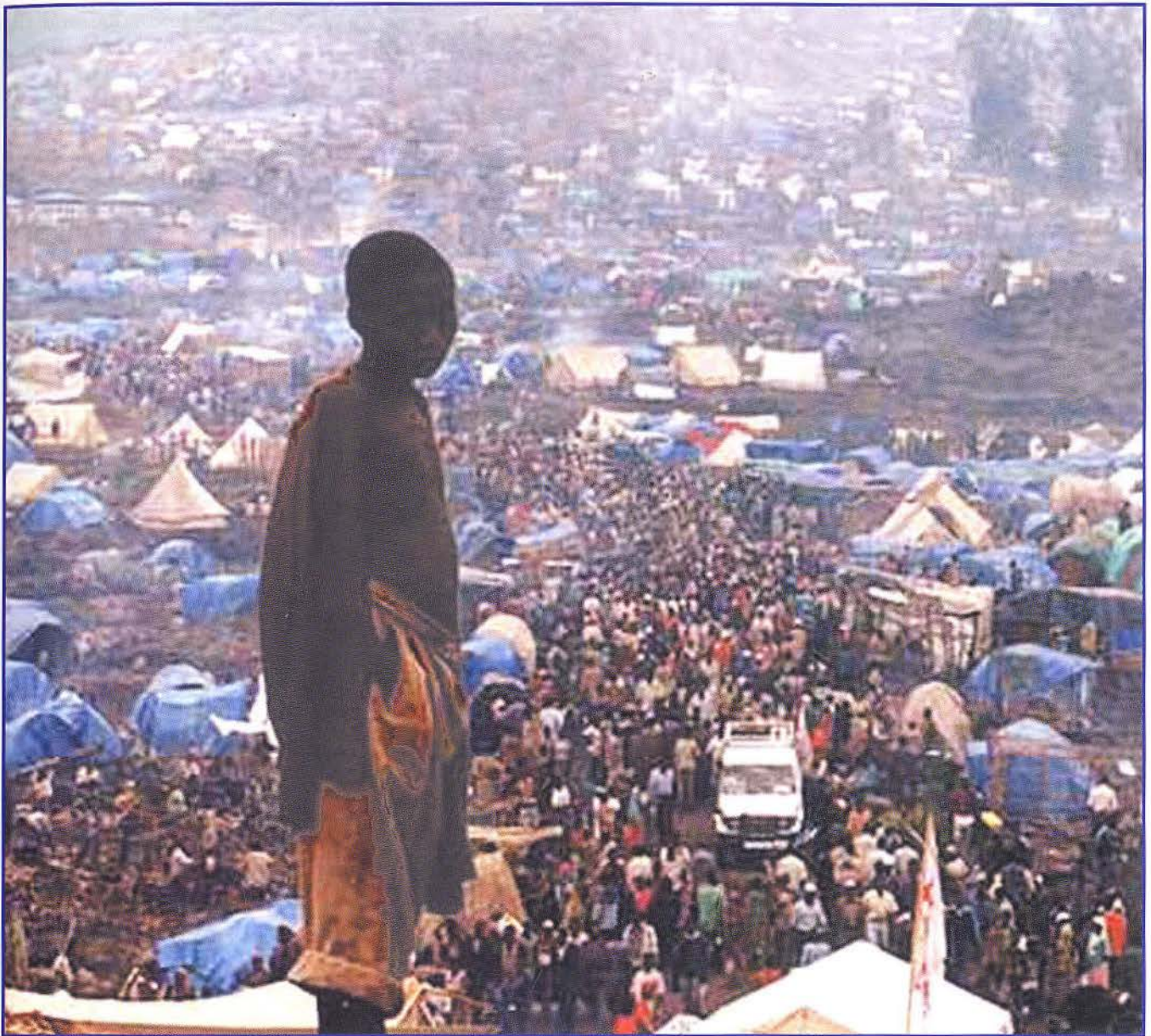
Similarly, it was difficult to get food supplies to Goma, because of the skirmishes along the roads. The UNHCR and the other humanitarian organizations decided to interrupt the supply of food and withdrew their staff. Some humanitarian convoys tried to reach the Mugunga camp, but were attacked by the rebels. On November 4, the Banyamulenge declared a unilateral "cease fire" for three weeks, to allow the refugees to go back home. After about two weeks of exile in Zaire, 500,000 Rwandan Hutus went back to their Country. The humanitarian organizations tried to assist them in the difficult operation of restoring tolerable living conditions. Nevertheless their return was not easy. When they got home, lots of Hutus found their houses and their land occupied by Tutsis. The image of the massacres was still alive in everybody's memory. In December 17, after four months of absence, President Mobutu came back to Zaire. The Government was in a very difficult situation and Mobutu was the only



remaining possibility of reestablishing the institutional stability.

Throughout 1997 the situation remained critical. On January 18, the Hutu Rwandan militia killed three Spanish humanitarian operators and wounded an American in the Ruhengeri area, in northern Rwanda. The events in Zaire followed one another very quickly. The rebels of the Alliance of Democratic

eight months, during which Rwanda, Burundi, Uganda and Angola joined together against the Congolese Government. All the factions opposing Mobutu met in Kinshasa to support Kabila, a person they trusted. But Mobutu's army melted away like snow in the sun, and the President himself was obliged to relinquish his power. On May 16, 1997 Laurent Kabila, leader of the rebels, proclaimed himself

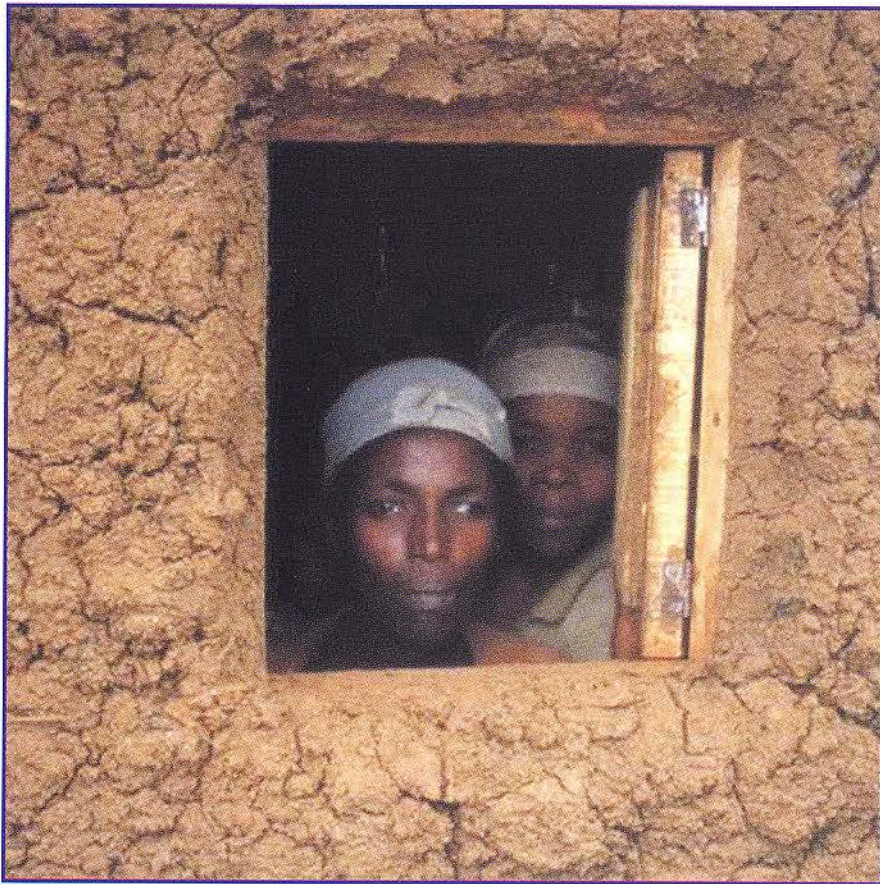


President and changed the name of the Country from Zaire to Democratic Republic of Congo. Besides, he promised to hold elections within two years, during which he would devote himself to the reconstruction of a territory ruined by the refugees' permanence and seven months of civil war. Nevertheless, once he assumed power, the Congolese leader changed completely his attitude towards the Countries that had helped him. Kabila asked Rwanda, Burundi and Uganda to leave the Congolese territory, thus setting off the second civil war in Congo.

THE SECOND CIVIL WAR IN CONGO

The civil war in the Democratic Republic of Congo started on August 2, 1998. It was soon to assume a continental dimension, involving as many as seven Countries. The relations between Kabila and the Tutsi leaders of Uganda and Rwanda worsened very quickly. The Congolese President encouraged the reorganization of the rebel movements in those Countries, among which there were also the perpetrators of the genocide of 1994, i. e. the old Rwandan Ar-

med Forces (former FAR) and the *Interhamwe*, ("Let's fight together", in Swahili). After the umpteenth act of provocation by Kabila – the assault to the Kinshasa barracks, where the Congolese Tutsi soldiers of the Banyamulenge tribe were quartered – Rwanda and Uganda started a spectacular military operation that, in a few days, brought their forces to the gates of Kinshasa. Actually, Rwanda joined forces with the rebels who were trying to remove Kabila and thwart the idea of the Congolese President: to expel from Zaire the Hutu extremist militia. Therefore,



the Rwandan forces joined the Congolese Tutsis of the Banyamulenge tribes, and together gave birth to the Congolese Committee for Democracy (*Rassemblement congolais pour la démocratie – RDC*). The attack on Kinshasa was stopped thanks to the timely constitution of a large African front in favour of Kabila, with the participation of Angola, which wanted to maintain in Kinshasa a government adverse to UNITA (political reasons), Namibia, which had been a trustworthy ally of the Congolese Government (historical reasons), Mugabe's Zimbabwe, for reasons connected with geopolitical influences and control of the Congolese natural resources (economic reasons). Moreover, Kabila intensified his support to all the irregular militias of Hutu origin, where the executors of the 1994 genocide were active, as well as to other Ugandan rebel groups hostile to President Museveni. After a short

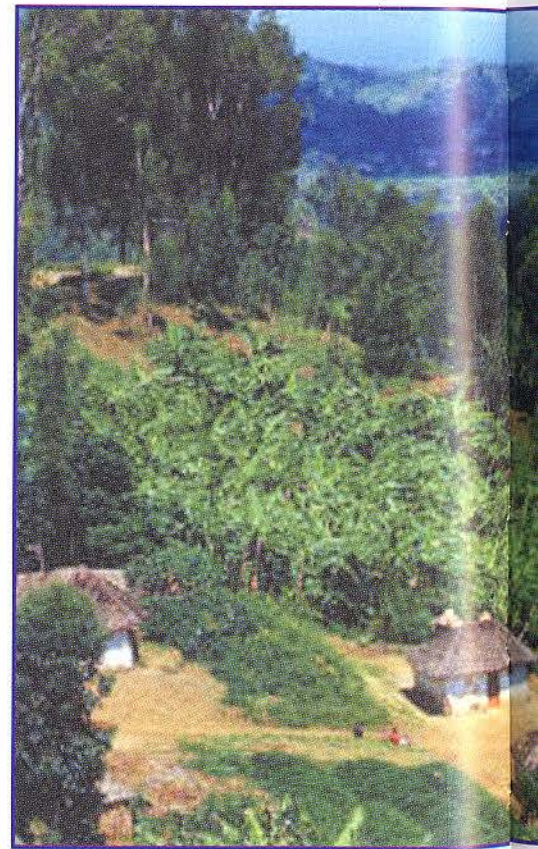
time there was a military deadlock, with the pro-government forces holding the south-western part of Congo, while the north-eastern region was under the control of the Rwandan-Ugandan block. In these territories, separate administrations were soon instituted, controlled by the Congolese political movements supported by Kampala (Uganda) and Kigali (Rwanda). They were, respectively, the Movement for the Liberation of Congo (*Mouvement pour la liberation du Congo – MLD*) and the Congolese Committee for Democracy (*Rassemblement Congolais pour la Democratie – RCD*). No single "rebel" administration was instituted because of the contrasts that had soon arisen also between Uganda and Rwanda for reasons not completely clear, but probably connected with the different occupation policy pursued by the two Countries in Congo. Such contrasts turned into armed

clashes in 1999 and 2000 and the Ugandan forces succumbed. After many episodes of violence, the situation became stable.

THE PEACE AGREEMENTS

Thus the phase of the peace agreements between the Rwandan-Ugandan bloc and the Congolese bloc was reached.

The Lusaka agreements were signed in the capital of Zambia in July 1999 by six African Countries (Congo, Zimbabwe, Angola, Namibia, Rwanda and Uganda), with the aim of ending the civil war in the RDC.



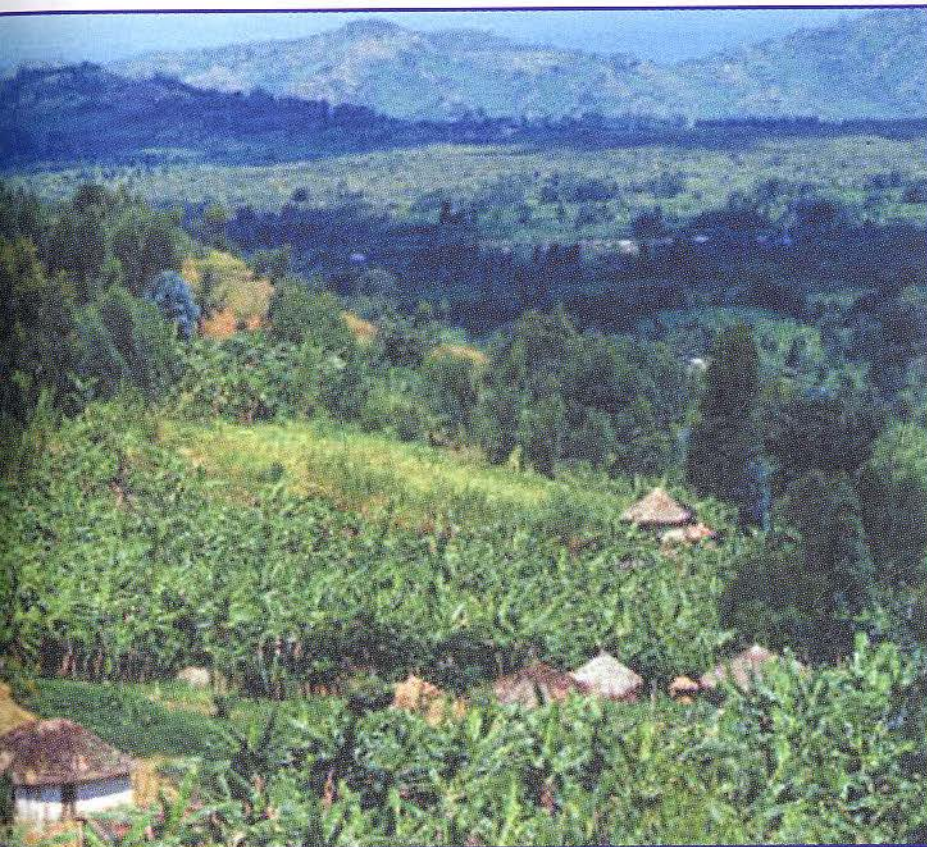
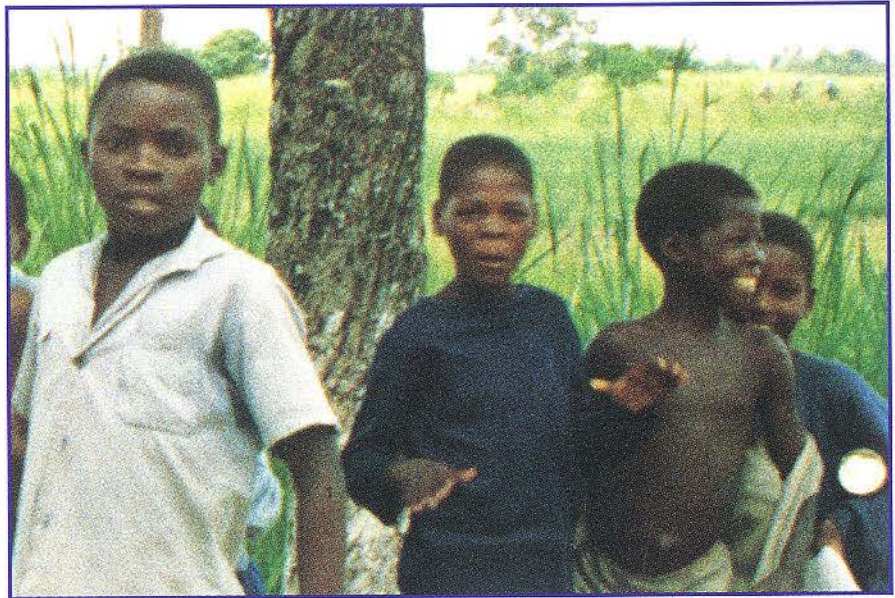
The peace agreements included three sections.

The first referred to the Inter-Congolese Agreement, which provided that the parties (the Kinshasa Government and the rebel forces) should initiate a negotiation, called precisely "Inter-Congolese dialogue", aimed at defining the insti-

tutional foundations of the Country.

The second was about the withdrawal of all foreign armies from the Congolese soil and was monitored by an ad-hoc peace-keeping force, created by the United Nations and known as MONUC – United Nations Organization Mission in the Democratic Republic of Congo.

The third was centred on the disarmament and demobilization of the forces that the agreements called “negative”, i. e. the irregular militias that for a long time had represented a fundamental support for Kinshasa, as well as a constant threat for the bordering



states. These threats included all the anti-Rwandan, anti-Ugandan and anti-Burundian forces, as well as the groups of Hutu origin opposed to the government of Kigali and largely made up of the executors of the genocide of 1994.

The Lusaka agreements were a real capitulation for Kabila, who, in fact, did all that was in his

power to hinder the peace process. According to the Lusaka agreements, Kabila was forced to negotiate with the Congolese movements that opposed him (MLC pro-Ugandan, and RCD pro-Rwandan), without making any distinction between the “good” and “evil” armies that were on the Congolese soil: all,

without exception, had to leave the RCD. Kabila was paying the consequences of Mobutu’s mistakes. The Kinshasa leadership, at the end, was in a situation of serious political weakness, emphasized by the inefficiency of the armed forces.

The Congolese leader strongly opposed the application of the Lusaka Agreements. The dictator even refused the mediation of the former President of Botswana, Masire, representative of the Organization of African Unity, who offered to direct the inter-Congolese dialogue and put an end to the clashes in the RDC. As regards the second pillar, Kabila did not accept any intervention of the United Nations peacekeeping force and thwarted the national dialogue aimed at establishing a period of transition in Congo.

The aversion of the Congolese dictator for the Lusaka Agreements prompted the reaction of the international community, and even that of the bloc once allied to Kabila’s action.

In January 2000, the Presidents of Congo, Uganda, Rwanda, Zambia, Zimbabwe, Angola and Mozambique decided to implement the Lusaka Agreements, declaring that their action would fail without the intervention of the peacekeeping force of the United



dialogue, accepting the withdrawal of his own Armed forces and allowing the deployment of MONUC between the armies of the two factions. Joseph Kabila also visited France, Belgium and the United States, proving that he was the ideal man for dialogue. As regards internal policy, Kabila opted for a government reshuffle, getting rid of the closest collaborators of his father's and opening to the multiparty system and to the safeguard of human rights. Thus, the rise to power of Joseph Kabila unblocked the situation of all three pillars of the Lusaka agreements.

Nations. The Security Council promised to take action as soon as possible, authorizing a mission of military observers. Besides, the Secretary General Kofi Annan recommended the institution of a force of 5000 men in support of the 500 non-military observers. Consequently, on February 24, the Security Council authorized an observer force of 5537 men.

Nevertheless the political situation in Rwanda was in ferment. President Bizimungu, of Hutu origin, accused the Parliament of harassing the politicians of his ethnic group with anti-corruption investigations. The situation worsened and the Ministers members of the Rwandan Parliament ousted Bizimungu and elected Paul Kagame new President of Rwanda.

The Lusaka Agreements remained a dead letter for about one year and a half, till January 2001, an extremely important date that marked the beginning of a further phase of development of the peace process. President Laurent Kabila was killed. The reasons for the murder were never known and unknown remain the killers and the masterminds. Probably, it was a matter inside the Congolese armed forces. Certainly, all the States involved in the crisis, both allies and enemies of



Kabila, welcomed with satisfaction the exit of a man who had become an obstacle not only to the application of the Lusaka Agreements, but also to the normalization of the area.

Then Kabila's son, Joseph Kabila, was elected President of the Democratic Republic of Congo; he inaugurated a dynamic and pragmatic political line, aware that mediation was what Congo needed to get out of the deadlock. Joseph Kabila met the mediator, Masire, recognizing his authority in the inter-Congolese

THE DIFFICULT PRESENT SITUATION

The further efforts towards a conclusion of the crisis resulted in the signature, on June 17, 2002, of the Pretoria Accord, fixing the criteria for the formation of the transitory Government. The accord envisages a quite fair division among the different political factions that have taken part in the dialogue: the pro-Rwandan and pro-Ugandan opposition, the unarmed opposition, the



Kinshasa Government and civil society.

As for the withdrawal of foreign troops, two significant dates were July 30 of last year, day of the signature of the Pretoria Accords, between the RDC and Rwanda, and September 6, day of the Luanda Accords between the RDC and Uganda, which provided for the withdrawal of the troops in exchange for the demilitarisation of the Congolese "negative forces".

On October 5, the Pretoria Accord was officially imple-

mented: Rwanda was to complete the phase of retreat of all its troops from the RDC.

South Africa and the special representative of Secretary General of the U. N. for the Region of the Great Lakes, Moustafà Niasse, decided to establish the so-called "Mediator", a mechanism created for monitoring the application of the Pretoria Accords.

Finally, the Council of the European Union has recently approved a Common Action for sending a temporary military

mission to Congo, led by the European Union, within the framework of Resolution 1484 of last May 30. France provides the Command of the operations and has already sent a first contingent to Bunia. Besides, Belgium, Great Britain and Sweden, as well as our Country, announced their willingness to take part in the operation.

□

** Scholar of History
of Civilizations*

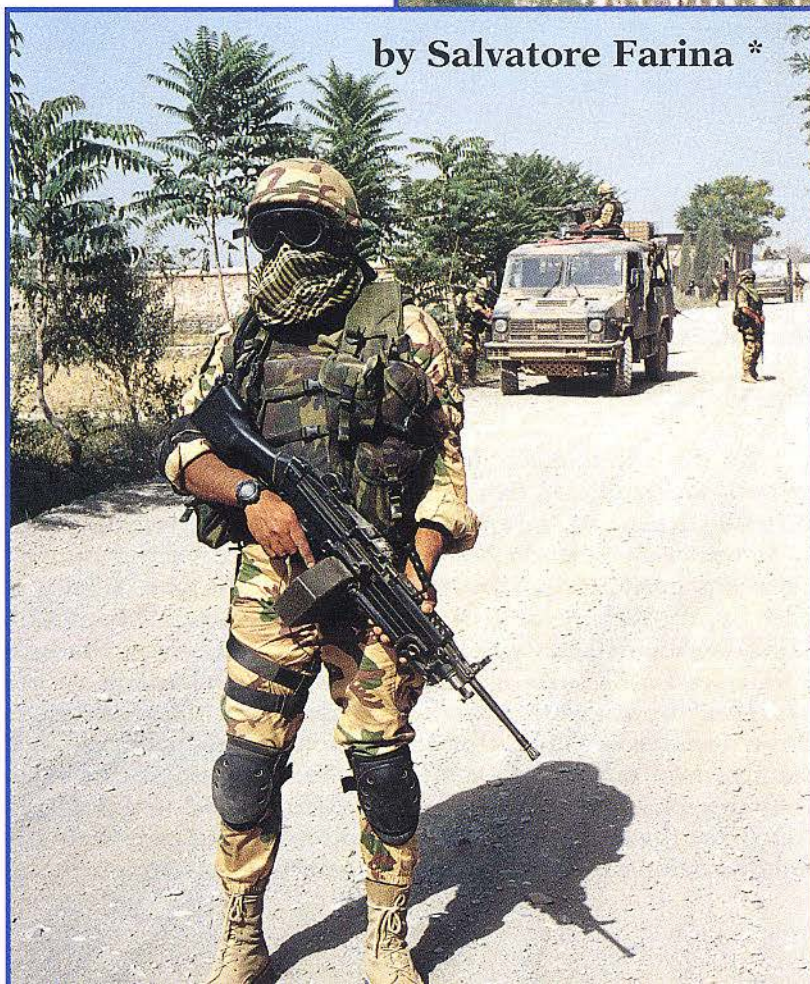
INVESTMENTS AND OBJECTIVES OF THE ARMY

Professionalism and technology are necessary in order to maintain the land instrument at the highest operational levels and to cooperate as best as possible in joint and international environments

Accurate planning studies have permitted to prefigure the evolution of the Italian Army also in a long-term perspective, i.e. up to 2025.

This was made possible by defining three key-elements: completion of the capabilities through Force Packages geared to the mission, gradual and balanced modernization of the forces, programme burden of the objectives as equal as possible for all Services.

by Salvatore Farina *





Within the initiatives taken by the Army General Staff in the area of Investment Planning, the Army's development and programming activities have been recently investigated. These objectives have been expressed only in terms of complete capabilities to be acquired, thus integrating and turning to account the old method based only on the definition of single programmes.

The results of the study have been collected in the "Force/Capability Packages and Operatio-

nal/Programmatic Objectives of the Italian Army", a document providing the basic elements of the Service's contribution to the investment-planning process concerning the highest level of the Defence organization.

THE IMPORTANCE OF PLANNING

Medium and long-term planning are essential components of any organization having to deal with very long acquisition times and with budget limitations.

Although these characteristics have always been typical of the Defence sector and therefore the requirement is not a novelty, only recently the radical politico-strategic changes have imposed a new approach, much more effective and attentive to the process of integrated planning.

Moreover, undoubtedly a modern and credible military instrument must possess complete capabilities in every segment, expressible in the pre-figured operational context and employable in joint and multi-national environments.



Kosovo. Transport of riflemen by helicopter.

In a number of instances, even very "blazoned" armies have had to give up employing certain assets or units, owing to shortages ensuing from delays in the acquisition of modules for ensuring protection, effectiveness or any other function of vital importance for the operations. The introduction of the emerging technologies and their sudden evolution further emphasizes the need to acquire a "package-system" capable of guaranteeing the desired effects, with synchronous times of introduction for all components of the system.

Therefore the planning of investments for the modernization of the Armed Forces should not be limited to the acquisition of assets or weapon systems in the basic sense of the term. If we refer to the Army

Segment, the introduction of a line of mechanized or armoured vehicles, the relevant planning will have to consider not only all possible versions (basic vehicle, antitank, mortar carrier, etc.) but also the internal and external fittings, such as Command-and-Control, RISTA and all that is necessary to achieve the desired outcome (at platoon, company, Regiment and Brigade level).

THE PRESENT SITUATION

With reference to the standards of the weapon systems now in service, the Army is capable of expressing good levels of effectiveness and efficiency for PSO/CRO operations (peace support and crisis management). On the contrary, the effectiveness in high-intensity combat contexts (where high degrees of protection, engagement, command and control mobility are neces-

sary) are barely sufficient and limited to a small number of units.

What is more, the expressible operational level in most cases refers to weapon systems that are to be considered a "legacy", i.e. not equipped with modern C4I and navigation systems. For this reason, our land instrument is not in point of fact in line with the main European Countries'.

The critical elements which weighed on the process of acquisition of assets and systems for the Army are twofold. One is the "dragging forward" of programmes which, for different technical/financial reasons, were not completed in due time. As a matter of fact, they lost their initial operational value, since they were either technologically and functionally obsolete or replaceable with more effective and cheaper new systems. The second factor is the disharmonic balance between programmes, in

REQUIREMENTS

The requirements the Army is called upon to meet are practically included within three main areas:

- defence of the State, which is by far the most important commitment, for which the Service obviously envisages the employment of every available force, appropriately developed and organized to this end;
- defence of the Euro-Atlantic spaces, which includes:
 - NATO engagements, within the level envisaged by the Alliance; this is, in fact, the heaviest load of requirements;
 - contribution to the creation of a common European defence, fixed within the Headline Helsinki Catalogue. It must be noted that the contribution made available for the EU depends on the assets made available for NATO, in order to avoid redundancies (double sets of forces which, on the other hand, could not be afforded);
- contribution to the realization of international peace and security, consisting in the participation, within the management of international crises, in out-of-the-border crisis-prevention and crisis-management operations, with the aim of ensuring peace, security and stability;
- contributions for specific tasks in cases of extraordinary necessity or urgency.

In this context, the offer of forces to NATO is the guiding beacon in the selection of the requirements to be met, as well as a reference for the organizational development of the capabilities of the land instrument.

terms of allocations and returns: also because of the rapid change in the reference scenarios, we have seen the introduction of systems whose characteristics were devised for the emblematic situation of bipolar confrontation. On the other hand, there was an evident lack of programmes aimed at developing the capabilities typical of the projection forces (operational mobility, manoeuvre, integrated C4I, support to deployment and adherence logistics). In this picture one should also situate a number of restraints deriving from the long-term commitments in progress and the inclusion of new programmes, financially significant but not of fundamental value for implementing the most important capabilities.

As a final synthesis of the present situation, especially referred to materials and weapon systems, the image of the service appears like a mosaic lacking some tesserae which do not permit to obtain the final result envisaged by the project.

If one wants to go to the extremes and make a comparison with the Navy, it would be like – in a programme of acquisition of an aircraft carrier and owing to technical-

financial implications – deliberately forgoing some very important capabilities, such as approach systems, air-control radars, missile-defence or communication systems, considering only hull, propulsion systems and aircraft, and then waiting, in vain, for the acquisition of the other modules necessary for a full operational capability.

What has been outlined so far substantially implies the absolute need to concentrate on complete packages based on fixed priorities. Possible reshaping processes due to changes in the financial situation should not be made by amending the single programmes but by giving up the entire specific capability.

FORCE PACKAGES AND PRIORITIES

The completion and modernization of the Force Packages depend on the requirements to be met. They can basically be ascribed to the defence of the State, the NATO commitments, the cooperation for establishing a common European defence and, finally, to the support of peace and international security (see box).

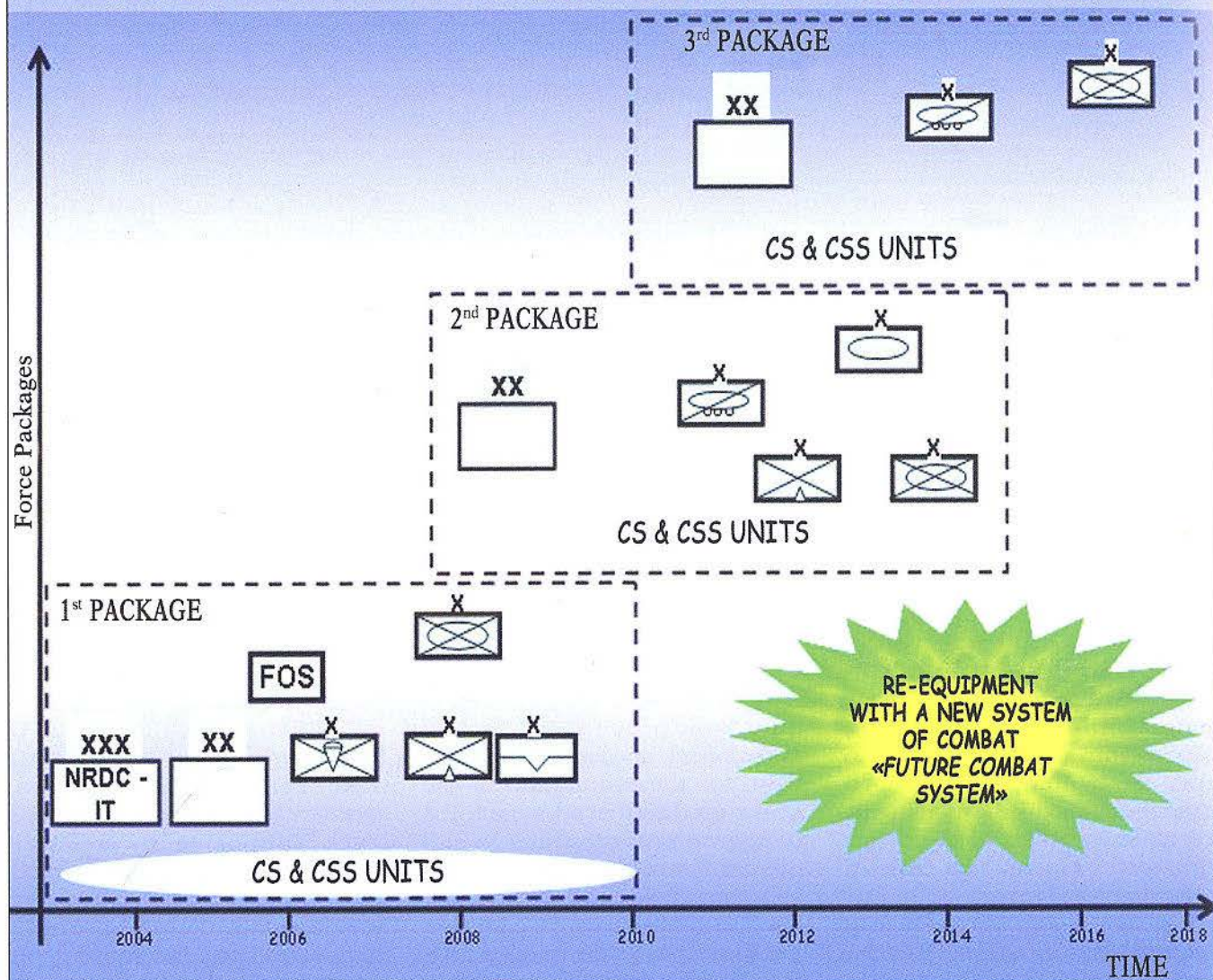
Taking the offer of forces to NATO as a guide for the organizational development of the land-instrument capabilities, we can outline three Force Packages.

The first package is the NATO High Readiness Force (L) HQ (HRF) i.e. a land high-readiness, rapid-reaction force at Corps level, supported by a Force Package hinged on a Division HQ and 4 Manoeuvre Brigades, in addition to the normal, specialist, tactical and logistic supports at the various levels. This package includes also the Special Forces and those for Special Operations, plus a number of units at reinforced-Brigade level, for the establishment of an "Initial Entry Capability" and in a position to provide also the national contribution to the "NATO Response Force" (NRF) with a very short reaction time.

The second Package also belongs to the HRF category and consists of a Division HQ, four Brigades, plus the specialist, tactical and logistic supports of the British-led ACE Rapid Reaction Corps.

The third Force Package includes a Division HQ, several manoeuvre Brigades and some Combat Support (CS) and

EXAMPLE OF PLANNING BY FORCE/CAPABILITY PACKAGES



Combat Service Support (CSS) units, in a pool of low-readiness forces (i.e. with a reaction time longer than 180 days).

Obviously, because of the repeated financial adjustments and owing to the restraints deriving from programmes already contracted or under way, it will be impossible to promptly remodel the whole planning in order to give a complete capability to every Package. Therefore, taking into account the international operational commitments, it was necessary to space out the capabilities still to be completed or upgraded, giving the highest priority to the first Package,

followed by the second and the third.

THE OPERATIONAL AND PROGRAMMATIC OBJECTIVES

The recent provisions issued by the "Internal Control Service" (SECIN) for defining the degree of achievement of the objectives set by the Ministry of Defence, point out a logical and sequential route for attaining strategic and operational goals and implemental programmes.

The strategic objectives are established by the Defence Chief of Staff according to the political

priorities decided by the Minister on the basis of the geostrategic reference scenario.

The Service's operational targets configure, at programmatic and instrumental level, the capabilities necessary for the land component, and must be consistent with the strategic objectives.

The implemental programmes are instead composing and concretizing components of the operational objectives, and provide elements about "what" must be acquired and the relevant times, phases and procedures.

In terms of programmes, this system permits to harmonize the process of objective-achievement

with the resources made available, through careful and periodic reviews and updates of the congruence of the ratio between requirements and possibilities.

A programmatic paper has been drafted on the basis of the SECIN directives. The document, titled "Operational and Programmatic Objectives of the Army" (OBOE), assembles in a single text the main present and future operational requirements of the Service, dividing them into a whole of macro-objectives (see Table), comparable to the concept of "Brigade system or systems", which can be likened to as many "Ship systems". As we said, each Programmatic-Operational objective, in its turn, consists of a whole of assets that can be acquired through implemental programmes and must be introduced in service synchronically, after modernization or recapitalization. Failing this, the objective might not be achieved at the appointed time.

The introduction of OBOES not only does not change, but indeed strengthens the conceptual route directed towards the full implementation of comprehensive capabilities; nevertheless it should not be regarded as a list of priorities.

THE ADVANTAGES OF THE NEW APPROACH

The OBOES are a clear and unambiguous guide for selecting the main systems necessary for the achievement of the future desired capabilities. The adoption of this method has also positive implications for the entire Defence organization. First of all, for the technical operational area, and for the Army in particular, it guarantees the gravitation of resources on certain macro-objectives (comparable to one or more Brigade

OPERATIONAL-PROGRAMMATIC OBJECTIVES OF THE ARMY	
INDIVIDUAL EQUIPMENT -- FUTURE-SOLDIER SYSTEM	1
COMPLETION, MODERNIZATION AND RENEWAL OF PROJECTABLE HEADQUARTERS	2
COMPLETION, MODERNIZATION AND RENEWAL OF SPECIAL FORCES & SPECIAL OPERATION FORCES	3
COMPLETION AND MODERNIZATION OF 3 "LIGHT" BRIGADES	4
COMPLETION AND MODERNIZATION OF 3 "MEDIUM" BRIGADES	5
COMPLETION AND MODERNIZATION OF 3 "HEAVY" BRIGADES	6
CONSTITUTION OF RISTA-EW BRIGADE	7
COMPLETION, MODERNIZATION AND RENEWAL OF "FRIULI" AIRMOBILE BRIGADE & AIR-CAVALRY GROUP IN SUPPORT OF AIR MOBILITY	8
COMPLETION OF CAPABILITIES OF PROJECTION LOGISTIC-BRIGADE	9
COMPLETION OF CAPABILITIES OF ENG BRIGADE AND ESTABLISHMENT OF OPS-COMMUNICATIONS REGT & CIMIC UNIT	10
COMPLETION AND ADAPTATION OF CAPABILITIES OF A/A ARTY BRIGADES, ARTY BRIGADE IN GENERAL SUPPORT & NBC DEFENCE	11
COMPLETION AND ADAPTATION OF C4IEW COMMAND CAPABILITIES	12
ADAPTATION AND MODERNIZATION OF THE ARMY INFRASTRUCTURE	13
ADAPTATION AND MODERNIZATION OF COMPUTERIZATION OF THE SERVICE BODIES, UNITS & HQS	14
... OTHER OBJECTIVES OF THE FUNCTIONAL SECTOR	15

systems) spaced out in time, beginning with those of the First Force-Package. In this way, the haphazard incremental effect on all Army units, which usually requires long periods of time, would be annulled and one could proceed to the complete modernization, in the short-medium-term, of every sector concerning the abovesaid objective: from collective weapons to individual equipment, from combat vehicles to computerized systems, from alarm systems to protection assets, etc. This would not imply weakening or freezing the other packages, since they already have

operational capabilities suited to their employment in medium- and low-intensity conflicts. Actually, for some of these capabilities, various programmes of partial modernization and recapitalization have already been started, according to previous plans.

As regards OBOES not immediately considered by the investment plans, it will be necessary to appropriate some of the budgetary resources in order to maintain the instrument's functionality at high level. Equally important is the fact that, should the financial situation change during the



undertaking, the modernization of that specific "Brigade system" should be given up entirely.

Finally, it would be convenient for the Technical-Administrative area to consider – as is already the case for naval procurements, which are handled exclusively by the General Directorate for Naval Armaments – the necessity to entrust a General Directorate (for example, the General Directorate for Land Armaments) with the full responsibility for achieving the capability objectives, and therefore the aggregation of the various programmes, on the basis of the priorities fixed by the operational area.

CONCLUSIONS

In the light of the above description, we can single out

three main elements that characterize the proposed method: completion of the capabilities with Force Packages suitable for the missions; homogeneous and balanced upgrading of the forces; equal programmatic weight of the Army objectives vis-à-vis those of the other Services.

Only by referring to these three guidelines it will be possible, also in a long-term perspective (2025), to achieve Packages of one or more Brigades, modern and complete, in a position to be fully integrated in a joint environment and with the most advanced allied Armies, in keeping with the emerging model of the so-called "Future Combat Systems".

In another article we shall possibly deal with the evolution of the Service in the medium-long-term, but at present we can

Paratroopers in East Timor.

say that the aggregation of complex capabilities into Brigade Packages and in Division and Corps Packages, is the most suitable way for reaching the final goal of a renovation aimed at creating homogeneous and complete combat forces, optimised for high-intensity conflicts and fit for employment in any type of operation.

This approach also helps and supports the activities of the Defence General Staff, in that, by comparing the resources with the desired capabilities, it facilitates the Staff's evaluations and decisions.

□

* Colonel,
Chief, Plans Office,
Army General Staff

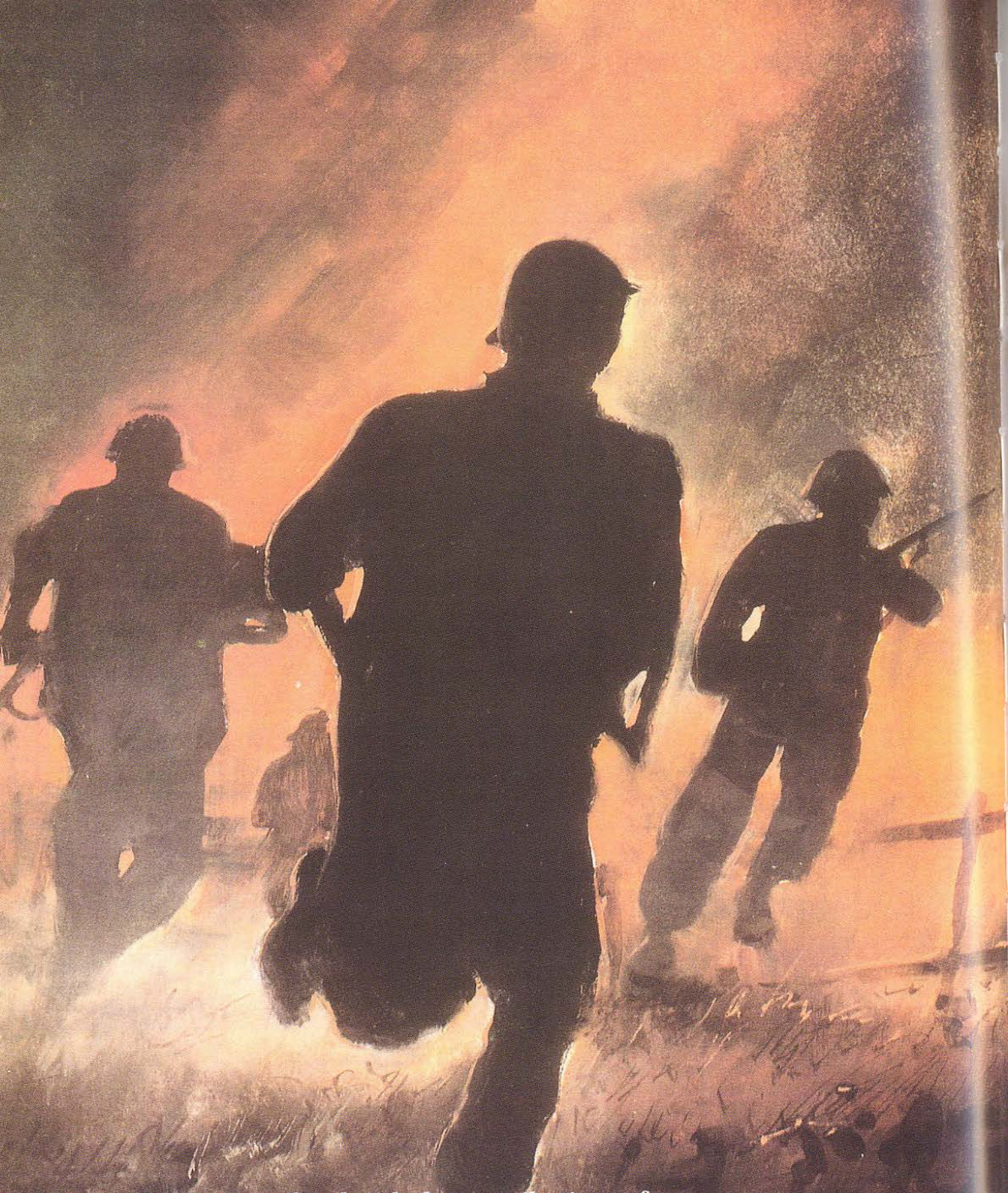
THE DAWN OF THE SECOND "RISORGIMENTO"



On September 8, 1943, with the War of Liberation, the Italian redemption began



The sacrifice of many soldiers led to the rebirth of the new Italian Armed Forces: the whole Country reconquered her dignity, fighting bravely side by side with the Allies, against the occupying forces. Now we relive those days of grief and glory, sacrifices and hopes, directly through the accounts of two veterans, who participated as protagonists in those events.



This report has been realized with the contributions of:
Gen. Senator Luigi Poli, author of "The Second Risorgimento".
Gen. Giorgio Donati, author of "September 8, 1943 – The Frontier of Liberty".

BUT MANY CONTINUED TO FIGHT

by Luigi Poli *



Italy, having achieved the goals of the "Risorgimento", conquered its unity and independence on November 4, 1918, at the end of WWI. Unfortunately, 25 years later, in 1943, the objectives of the "Risorgimento" were wiped out and our territory was militarily occupied

by the Germans who, after the fall of Fascism on July 25, were distrustful of our loyalty to the alliance.

At the same time, our forces in the Balkans and in Greece became directly subordinate to the German military Commands. Faced by the sudden

January 1944. Positioning an artillery piece of the Italian Corps of Liberation.

and paralysing German occupation, Italy was hesitant and engaged in secret nego-



March 31, 1944. Alpini of the "Piemonte" battalion occupy Monte Marone.

tiations with the Allies, hoping (or believing) that the Germans would not notice it.

An armistice was signed at Cassibile, in Sicily, and on Sep-

tember 8 Italy unconditionally surrendered to the Anglo-Americans.

We had conquered our unity with the First "Risorgimento" in 1918 but, alas, 25 years later we found ourselves with two thirds of Italy occupied by the Germans and two thirds of our forces overseas, under direct German control.

DOWNFALL AND REDEMPTION

These were the results of the imperial policy of Fascism and of the alliance with the Nazis.

Inevitably, on September 8 the entire Nation fell apart and the Institutions collapsed. But from the ashes of September 8, like a phoenix (the mythological bird

that resurrected from its ashes) a new "Risorgimento" was born, no less important than the first and characterized by 20 months of resistance intensely wanted by the Italian people.

In September 1943, about 3000 soldiers were killed in combat in Italy, Corsica, Greece and Yugoslavia. Immediately after the armistice, the "Lancieri di Montebello" Regt (8th), the "Granatieri di Sardegna" and the "Carabinieri" engaged in the first combats in the Capital, at Porta San Paolo. The "Acqui" Division, in Cephalonia,

resisted and was wiped out by the Wehrmacht. Those heroes did not fight only because they wanted to defend Rome and Cephalonia, they fought for our Flag and their military honour.

At this point we must remember the most significant data and historical events of our second "Risorgimento", which characterized the Italian resistance in its three components: the War of Liberation conducted by the regular Armed Forces. (527,000 men. – 413,000 of whom from the Army, 83,000 from the Navy and 31,000 from the Air Force), Partisan Warfare ((80,000 fighting men) and the resistance of the internees in the concentration camps (590,000 servicemen).

These numbers show the size of the three components and are engraved as a memento on the marble of the monument erected at Porta San Paolo in Rome.

THEY DID THEIR DUTY TO THE BITTER END

We must remember, in particular, the 87,000 soldiers killed in action and the 299 heroes who were awarded the Gold Medal for Military Valour in the War of Liberation.

The reaction against the Nazis by the many soldiers who, after the armistice, had not gone home, was immediate.

Italian Corps of Liberation. A mule train carrying supplies in the Valle di Mezzo.





November 1943. An infantryman and a "Bersagliere" NCO showing a "Beretta" automatic rifle to an American sergeant.

The first Gold Medal for Military Valour was emblematic: it was awarded to General Ferrante Gonzaga del Vodice, executed on the evening of September 8 for his refusal to surrender the arms of his Division to the Germans.

THE RECOGNITION OF THE ITALIAN VALOUR

The Army was rapidly engaged on the side of the Anglo-American Allies, thus gradually widening the scope of its cobelligerency.

Initially with a Brigade-size force, the 1st Motorized Group, which was immediately launched into the furnace of the battle of the Garigliano, in December 1943.

Later, in the summer of 1944, a Corps was employed which consisted of two Divisions and supporting units – the "Italian Corps of Liberation" – and was to free Central Italy up to the Metauro river and the Gothic Line on the Apennines.

Then it was the turn of an Army of six Divisions (Combat Groups) in the winter of 1944 and the spring of 1945, on the Gothic Line and in the final battle.

A Division, the "Garibaldi", did not surrender to the Germans in Yugoslavia and continued to fight its own guerrilla warfare.

Eight "Auxiliary Divisions", throughout the whole campaign performed important logistic functions, in which the "Combat Mule Trains" and the "Combat Engineers" especially distinguished themselves.

The Navy and the Air Force operated under the Italian

Tricolour, side by side with the Allies, on all fronts.

LET'S NOT FORGET THOSE HEROES

On the 60th Anniversary of the beginning of the War of Liberation, the Liberation Army, the Army vanished from the memory of the Italians of today, must be rightfully evoked from the lost paths of history.

This historical reality loudly belies the two commonplaces of "death of the Motherland" and "everybody home!" which, at the end of the War of Liberation, gained ground among the Italians.

□

**General,
Senator of the Republic,
former Chief of Staff
of the Army*

SIXTY YEARS LATER A TESTIMONY ON THE ROLE OF OUR ARMED FORCES IN THE CREATION OF THE NEW UNITARY AND DEMOCRATIC STATE

by Luigi Poli *



POLITICO-HISTORICAL INTRODUCTION

To celebrate the 60th anniversary of the War of Liberation means to look at those events serenely, without the strong emotions which are gradually assuaged by time. But this passing of time must not

remove the proofs of heroic courage given during twenty months of hard sacrifices that showed the firm determination of the Italian fighters to consolidate the precious patrimony constituted by our "Risorgimento" and our national independence. Now that the great appointments of the 60th anniversary are approa-

An infantry patrol from the "Cremona" Combat Group on the right bank of the Reno. The Combat Groups were armed and equipped with British materials.

ching with the inexorable rhythm of time, this is why we must undertake to give a more complete testimony of the "Second Risor-



On April 10, 1945, units of the "Legnano" Combat Group conquered Hill 459, near Bologna.

published a number of volumes on the subject, and the enthusiasm of associations and veterans produced so many books and studies that would suffice to fill a library. We know everything about single episodes: Montelungo, Monte Marone, Filottrano, Jesi, Alfonsine, Bologna, Grizzano, Poggio Rusco.

During the last months of 1943, through the sacrifice of those soldiers, sailors and airmen, protagonists of the "Second Risorgimento" and of the rebirth of the Armed Forces, Italy regained its dignity as a great Nation. A dignity that our Country has maintained despite its serious moral and political internal vicissitudes. To celebrate the 60th anniversary of the War of Liberation, therefore, is to reconstruct, in a global historical vision, the epic of the rebirth of the Armed Forces.

We should analyse, critically and in depth, the historical moments that preceded and followed the armistice, a dark page of our history, which up to now has been ignored by the majority that refused to remember the sad events of September 8. This would help the historians to make a clearer and well-balanced evaluation of these events.

Let's try then, after 60 years, to examine and assess those events, which are by now history rather than chronicle, by dividing them into two clearly distinct periods: **rupture and rebirth.**

THE BREAK WITH THE NAZI AND FASCIST TOTALITARIAN REGIMES

The break was marked by errors and heroic deeds,

gimento" and of the rebirth of the Italian Armed Forces after the lost war, keeping them at high historical, cultural and military level.

The baptism of fire of the new Italian Army, on December 8, 1943, must be a fundamental celebration of the "Second Risorgimento", which was realized by the Armed Forces and coincides with the consolidation of the unity of the State. These are the reasons of the celebrations of the 60th anniversary; particularly those of September and December will have to be held together with those of the Armed Forces,

symbol and guardians of the national unity which was reconquered with great sacrifices.

We certainly do not want to add more pages to the already abundant, if not always objective, bibliography on the great opportunity lost by Italy on July 25, when Fascism fell, **but rather describe the tragedy experienced by the Armed Forces during the last months of 1943: abandoned in the storm, sent to certain defeat, they rose from their ashes like the legendary phoenix.**

The History Department of the Army Staff has already

especially in September 1943, but the official bibliography on the subject has not always been impartial; mostly because of the fragmentary nature of the official sources. In substance, what has been missing so far was a global and non-episodic knowledge of the events, but only this basic awareness can produce a well-balanced historical evaluation, even when it is tragic and cruel. Also for this reason, the appointments of the 60th anniversary should be above all an incentive to shed a new light on this obscure period of our history.

What were, for example, the causes and consequences of the Italian delays? What were the damages produced by the announcement – unprepared and therefore untimely – of the armistice? But, above all, what caused so much confusion?

The longest four weeks

The weeks are those between August 10 and September 8.

The first official contact with the Allies took place on August 10, and was followed by long discussions. The incomprehension and misunderstandings which marked these negotiations, which lasted about a month, were essentially due to the fact that Badoglio wanted to play the role of “partner” of the Allies and thought to deal with them as an equal, throwing on the scale-pan the advantages of the Italian cobelligerency. The Allies’ position was quite different and is summarized in this evaluation made before July 25: *“For Italy, the only hope of survival is an honourable capitulation to the overwhelming might of the military Forces of the United Nations...All your interests and traditions have been betrayed by the German Nazis and by your corrupt leaders. By destroying both, a reconstituted Italy can hope to have a respected place in the family of the United Nations”*.

THE QUEBEC DOCUMENT

(Suggested action on Italian peace feelers)

The conditions of the armistice do not visualize the active assistance of Italy in fighting the Germans. The extent to which the terms will be modified in favour of Italy will depend on how far the Italian Government and people do, in fact, aid the United Nations against Germany during the rest of the war. The United Nations, however, state without reservations that wherever Italian Forces or Italians fight Germans, or destroy German property, or hamper German movement, they will be given all possible support of the Forces of the United Nations. Meanwhile, provided information about the enemy is immediately and regularly supplied, Allied bombing will so far as possible be directed upon targets which affect the movement and operations of German Forces.

The cessation of hostilities between the United Nations and Italy will take effect from a date and hour to be notified by General Eisenhower.

The Italian Government must undertake to proclaim the armistice immediately it is announced by General Eisenhower, and to order their forces and people from that hour to collaborate with the Allies and to resist the Germans.

The Italian Government must, at the hour of the Armistice, order that all United Nations prisoners in danger of capture by the Germans shall be immediately released.

The Italian Government must, at the hour of the Armistice, order the Italian Fleet and as much of their merchant shipping as possible to put to sea for allied ports. As many military aircraft as possible shall fly to allied bases. Any ships or aircraft in danger of capture by the Germans must be destroyed.

Meanwhile there is a good deal that Marshal Badoglio can do without the Germans becoming aware of what is afoot. The precise character and extent of his action must be left to his judgement; but the following general lines are suggested:

1. General passive resistance throughout the Country if this order can be conveyed to local authorities without the Germans knowing.
2. Minor sabotage throughout the Country, particularly of communications and airfields used by the Germans.
3. Safeguard of allied prisoners of war. If German pressure to hand them over becomes too great, they should be released.
4. No Italian Warships to be allowed to fall into German hands. Arrangements to be made to insure that all these ships can sail to ports designated by General Eisenhower immediately he gives the order. Italian submarines should not be withdrawn from patrol as this would reveal our common purpose to the enemy.
5. No merchant shipping to be allowed to fall into German hands. Merchant shipping in northern ports should, if possible, be sailed to ports South of the line Venice-Leghorn. In the last resort they should be scuttled. All ships must be ready to sail for ports designated by General Eisenhower.
6. Germans must not be allowed to take over Italian Coast Defences.
7. Make arrangements to be put in force at the proper time for Italian formations in the Balkans to march to the coast, with a view to their being taken to Italy by the United Nations.

Both positions remained distant and firm also after July 25. In this climate, certainly unfavourable to any accord, when Fascism fell – but the Germans were still in Italy – the four long weeks of negotiations began.

The attitude of the Allies towards Italy was made clear at

the very beginning, during the first contacts that General Castellano had on the evening of August 19, when he was handed over a long message (approved also by Stalin) which President Roosevelt and Prime Minister Churchill had sent from Quebec (box 1). In particular the document's



On April 16, 1945, units of the "Friuli" Combat Group crossed the Sillaro torrent.

At the time decided by the Allied Command, the following operations will be carried out:

- secondary landings in Calabria of 5 or 6 Divisions from the British 8th Army (Operation Bay zone);
- after a short time, about two weeks: main landing at Salerno (south of Rome) of the 5th US Army (Operation Avalanche);
- air-landing of a paratrooper Division in the vicinity of Rome.

The armistice was going to be announced by Eisenhower before the main landing; the Italian Government was to follow immediately with a similar announcement.

Therefore, since on August 31 the scenario was known and foreseeable, why were the necessary measures not taken in contemporaneity with the negotiations with the Allies, and with the same secrecy? Were the Italian High Commands not trusted? Was the scenario presented by the Allies considered unrealistic?

It was necessary to risk. On the other hand, also the Germans were taking their measures and not even in an excessively secret way.

Nothing justifies the chaos in which the Armed Forces were thrown with the sibylline message of September 8.

The actual facts confirmed two thirds of the scenario: the secondary landings took place on September 3 and the main one on the 9th, within the indicated time limits (1-2 weeks). What did not take place was the air-landing of the 82nd Airborne Division, due both to lack of trust in the Italian cooperation and to the explicit and repeated negative opinion expressed by Gen. Carboni to Gen. Taylor. Nevertheless, the "Ariete" Armoured Division and

preamble said: "The conditions of the armistice do not envisage the active assistance of Italy in fighting the Germans".

"The measure in which the conditions can be modified will depend on the extent of the contribution given by the Italian Government and the Italian people to the United Nations against Germany during the rest of the war".

"However, the United Nations declare without reservations that whenever Italian Forces or Italian individuals will fight against the Germans, destroy German properties or hinder German

movements, they will receive all possible help by the Forces of the United Nations..."

The faint hope of the Italians started here and, from here, Marshal Badoglio's typical and constructive Piedmontese stubbornness took us, step by step, to cobelligerency.

After 10 more days of feverish and uncoordinated activities, Gen. Castellano and Gen. Zanussi met the Allied representatives at Cassibile.

During the meeting, the Italian envoys were informed about the possible sequence of the military operations:

another 5 Infantry Divisions were in Rome and there would have been enough time to call other troops (for example, the "Lupi di Toscana" Division, which had just returned from France and was stationed in Florence). Therefore, there was no shortage of forces.

The armistice

On September 3, at 5:30 p.m., General Castellano signed the "short armistice" at Cassibile. At the same time, after the signature, according to Castellano, General Bedell Smith delivered the additional clauses of the surrender.

As in the new text the conditions of the armistice were deeply changed and Castellano protested, Bedell Smith wrote on the document, in his own hand, for Marshal Badoglio, that the additional clauses would have a relative value if Italy collaborated in the war against the Germans (1).

What Smith wrote below the document actually occurred, and also the Allied landings were made at the appointed times, as announced in the memorandum handed over to Castellano on August 31 (with the exception of the landing of the Airborne Division near Rome).

Thus, on August 31 and September 3 all was clear and agreed upon, and this makes our earlier questions resurface: what were the causes and consequences of the Italian delays? The only explanation emerging from this historical investigation is the uncertainty about the landing of the 82nd Airborne Division near Rome. In view of this, the solution was to organize the defence of Rome within a determined time with the troops available. But Badoglio was unwilling to do even this and continued to beat around the bush for another very precious five days.

TELEGRAM FROM EISENHOWER TO BADOGLIO ON SEPTEMBER 8

Point one. I intend to broadcast the acceptance of the armistice at the appointed time. If you or any part of your Armed Forces fail to cooperate as previously agreed, I shall have the details of this affair published all over the world...

Point two. I do not accept your message of this morning postponing the armistice. Your accredited representative signed an agreement with me, and the only hope for Italy depends on your adhesion to this accord...

Point three. Our plans have been made with the conviction that you were acting in good faith and we are ready to proceed with military operations on these bases.

Any deficiency on your part to meet the obligations deriving from the signed agreement could have very serious consequences for your Country.

RADIO MESSAGE BY EISENHOWER AT 6:30 P.M. ON SEPTEMBER 8

This is Gen. Dwight D. Eisenhower, Commander in Chief of the Allied Forces.

The Italian Government has surrendered its Armed Forces unconditionally. As Allied Commander in Chief, I have granted a military armistice, the terms of which have been approved by the Governments of the United Kingdom, the United States and the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics. Thus I am acting in the interest of the United Nations.

The Italian Government has bound itself to abide by these terms without reservation. The armistice was signed by my representative and the representative of Marshal Badoglio and it becomes effective this instant. Hostilities between the armed forces of the United Nations and those of Italy terminate at once.

All Italians who now act to help eject the German aggressor from Italian soil will have the assistance and the support of the United Nations.

PROCLAMATION BY MARSHAL BADOGLIO AT 7:19 P.M. ON SEPTEMBER 8

The Italian Government, recognizing the impossibility of continuing the unequal struggle against the overwhelming power of the enemy, with the object of avoiding further and more grievous harm to the nation, has requested an armistice from General Eisenhower, Commander in Chief of the Anglo-American Allied Forces. This request has been granted. The Italian Forces will therefore cease all acts of hostility against the Anglo-American Forces wherever they may be met. They will, however, oppose attack from any other quarter.

All this justifies the harshness of the message sent by Eisenhower to Badoglio at 4:30 p.m. of September 8: its text is certainly unequivocal (box 2).

The successive events, albeit well known, are too important not to be mentioned through the official text of Eisenhower and Badoglio's messages, broadcast on September 8, at 6:30 and 7:19 p.m. respectively.

Did we really have to end up with such an absurd epilogue?

Certainly not! What was the damage caused by the unprepared and therefore untimely announcement of the armistice? Destruction of all Army garrisons abroad and in northern/central Italy.

The confusion of the Italians

The armistice could have been announced at the right time, but this did not happen; moreover, its wording, worthy of the Cumaean Sibyl, was certainly not the most suitable for giving orders to the military.

Also Memorandum OP44, issued by the Army Staff between the end of August and the beginning of September, which gave preventive instructions for repelling a possible German attack and logically did not mention the fact that negotiations were in progress for an imminent armistice with the Allies, was extremely ambiguous.

SUPREME COMMAND
OPERATIONS DIVISION

No 1015/C.S.

M. Post 21 , September 11, 1943

Subject: Employment of the Armed Forces.

To H. E. the Chief of Staff, R. Army
To H. E. the Chief of Staff, R. Navy
To H. E. the Chief of Staff, R. Air Force

1° - The Germans have opened hostilities against us; as a consequence they are to be considered enemies and the Armed Forces must fight them resolutely.

2° - The German units are occupying Northern and Central Italy in strength; some formations are still in Southern Italy and Sardinia. It is therefore necessary to assemble the forces at our disposal, in order to:

- oppose the possible further spreading of the enemy forces;
- proceed, in cooperation with the Anglo-American Forces, to the offensive action for the liberation of the entire national territory.

3° - In the present situation it is particularly important to protect the seat of the Government from possible sudden attacks.

4° - Your Excellencies are requested to inform me of the consequent general orders that will be issued in this regard.

AMBROSIO
Chief of the General Staff

The memorandum was to become operational only "upon precise instructions by the Army Staff", or on the initiative of the Commanders on the spot, according to the actual situation.

I believe that this point is of the utmost importance considering that, when the second alternative was adopted, the cases of immediate disbandment, which regrettably took place in many areas of our Country, did not occur.

On the evening of September 8, 1943, many Italians listened to Badoglio's radio message. He, as we said, after announcing the conclusion of the armistice with the Anglo-American Forces, said: "Consequently, any act of hostility against the Anglo-American Forces by the Italian Forces will have to cease in all places. But the Italian Forces will react to any attack coming from any other source."

In these two documents there is the great misunderstanding: to implement OP44, and repel on

one's own initiative any threat of German aggression, or wait for the attack, thus giving the Germans, who undoubtedly had precise orders, the possibility of deploying on the positions most suitable for the attack?

This tragic dilemma goes against any military deontology, which prescribes to follow precise orders. At the same time it permitted the German troops to deploy in the best way, being sure that, if not attacked, the Italians would not react. This idle waiting, full of interrogatives, allowed a few, well placed and resolute Germans, who made clear their intentions only at the moment of action, to eliminate the many confused and doubtful Italians, already attracted by the vision of an armistice that to them meant "end of the war" and "peace".

Some maintain that at first also the Germans were confused and without orders; I believe that this can be excluded, having noticed, after July 25, a conti-

nuous transit of troops entering Italy through the Brenner pass, and having seen these troops in action already on September 8 in Bari, in the deep South. Had the Italian troops attacked the Germans before September 8, as was confusedly envisaged by OP44, instead of only observing their movements, many massacres would have been avoided.

This is the key for understanding this historical period. The episodes that followed could not but have the common background of unlucky heroism: *Cephalonia docet*.

The consequences were immediate and irreparable and only when, after some days, on September 11 the General Staff became aware of them, the Chief of Staff, Gen. Ambrosio, at last issued a clear order, and not an intentionally ambiguous one (box 3).

But at the moment very little could be done: the tragedy of the Italian Armed Forces, left alone in the storm, had already occurred.

The dead were approximately 3000 in the first two days. Later on, about 300 Officers out of 525 and 9250 enlisted men out of 11,500 were slain in Cephalonia; 1256 sailors sank with the "Roma".

THE DEMOCRATIC REBIRTH

A rapid recovery

The stages of the recovery were immediate and fast:

- September 11: first clear directive for the employment of the Armed Forces, issued by Gen. Ambrosio, Chief of the General Staff (box 3);
- September 14: first directive on the collaboration with the Allied troops and provisions against surprises (box 4);
- September 15: reconstruction of a Major Unit (1st Motorized Group), signed by the Chief of the General Staff;

• October 13: Italy declares war on Germany.

The historical reasons for this attitude, so much different from that maintained until September 8, could probably be found in the political and military situation.

On the political plane, Badoglio and the members of his staff, who were not politicians, before September 8 were perplexed by the fact that their interlocutors, ignoring that the Italians had a sense of honour and loved to bargain, were obstinately asking them to kneel down and accept the unconditional surrender. After September 8, both honour and possible discussions found their right setting, considering that neither side really wanted a simple surrender or an irritated Italian neutrality. But the accords were played on the political plane, in a difficult discussion between two parties which were still subjugated by their own propaganda. It was "unconditional surrender" for the Allies, "the war continues" for Badoglio. Later, after the crucial test of fire, the accords went on more expeditiously.

On the military plane, the reconstitution of several operational units after September 8 could seem a miracle, but miracles belong to a faith in the transcendental and not to history.

As a matter of fact, it was not a miracle, because on September 8 the Italian Forces were not completely wrecked: many units remained operational in Southern Italy, in Sardinia and Corsica, and were under control of the Italian General Staff. We should analyse, critically and in detail, the historical moments which immediately followed the armistice: an obscure page of our history, which until now has been ignored by a majority inclined to forget, together with that page, the sad events of September 8. The above reflections will help historians to make a clearer a more balanced evaluation of that period.

Box 4

SUPREME COMMAND
OPERATIONS DIVISION

No. 1104/C.S./4

M. Post 21, September 14, 1943

Subject: Collaboration with the Allied troops. Measures to avoid surprise attacks.

To H. E. the Chief of Staff, R. Army
To H. E. the Chief of Staff, R. Navy
To H. E. the Chief of Staff, R. Air Force

1° - It can be expected that in the near future some of our Major Units, for operational reasons, will come into contact with similar British units. In these cases, our Commanders should immediately get in touch with the Commanders of the British units, in order to reach the necessary agreements with the purpose of working on a plane of active collaboration.

During these contacts it should be avoided to dwell too much on our insufficiencies since, apart from any other consideration, this would automatically diminish the value of our contribution. We shall do what we can. We must meet our deficiencies essentially with makeshift solutions suggested by our will, and with the energy deriving from our innermost and firm belief that the possible better terms offered to our Country when peace is signed will largely depend on the extent of our collaboration.

For the moment we should avoid suggesting that Allied Major Units operate under our orders.

2° - To facilitate the accords with the British, it is advisable that all troops in the area and those which will arrive from Calabria be placed under a single command.

The Command will immediately get in touch with the HQ of the British V Corps, which is soon going to land in Puglia, in order to achieve a full coordination of efforts. The 7th Army will make a similar contact but - unless there are orders to the contrary - the British V Corps will not be subordinate to the Army HQ.

3° - Our will to fight would be inexorably thwarted by the shortage, or worse, by the depletion of ammunition. It is therefore necessary to rake up all the munitions wherever they are and store them in well organized and controlled depots. In other words, it is necessary to economize on this precious material to avoid finding ourselves with empty magazines after a few days of combat.

Another very important element on which I call your attention is the situation of footwear at the units designated for operations. In order to ensure a sufficient availability of these items, I decide that all the enlisted personnel of the R. Navy and R. Air Force be equipped with only one pair of shoes. Those in excess must be put immediately at the disposal of the units of the R. Army.

4° - It is necessary to prearrange to the utmost degree all provisions suitable for preventing surprise attacks in the city of Brindisi. To this end, draconian measures must be adopted: an armed picket must always be kept on the ready in all barracks.

The maintenance of public order in the whole area under our control is entrusted to the R. Army Staff.

In parallel with the above measures, it is necessary to instil in everyone a spirit of prompt reaction to every surprise attempt, repressing in any way the phenomenon of nearly general psychosis diffused in the units, which leads to watch idly the raids of a few individuals who extort money from the population and steal food and vehicles.

5° - I shall be pleased to be informed about the consequent instructions issued by Your Excellencies.

AMBROSIO
Chief of the General Staff

Co-belligerency and alliance

Towards the end of September the situation was stabilized and

the free part of Italy, where the lawful Government had moved, had at its disposal about 420,000 men, i.e. the 7th Army stationed in



April 19, 1945. The "Nembo" battalion fighting for the conquest of Case Grizzano, near Bologna.

Southern Italy and the Forces of Sardinia and Corsica, plus several Air Force units in various locations and the fleet, almost intact in Malta or other Anglo-American ports. At this point another problem comes up: the cooperation of the Italian and the Allied Armed Forces.

"The problem of the Italian cobelligerency – says Historian Norman Kogan – who in 1944 was a serviceman in Naples – is closely connected with that of the alliance. The King's government, already since the first days after September 8, had been urging the British and American Govern-

ments to accept the part of Italy not occupied by the Germans as an ally in the fight against Nazi-Fascism. The most persistent in these requests was the King himself, Victor Emanuel III, very impatient to return to Rome at the Allies' side. The allied Governments were opposed. One of the main reasons for this negative response (reason put forward by the American Government) was that first of all the Italian Government had to become more representative, and that the parties included in the National Liberation Committees should participate in the Government.

The British Government was even more radically opposed. Churchill and many of his close collaborators insisted that if Italy was granted an ally standing, at the end of the war it would be much more difficult to impose to the Italians the type of peace treaty that the British Government had in mind".

The unpublished documents of the State Archives in London clarify Kogan's thesis. After his visit to Badoglio at the Suevian Castle in Brindisi on September 15, the British Minister Plenipotentiary, Harold Mc Millan, wrote: the Prime Minister (Winston Churchill) has sent me the sanction of the War Cabinet which actually approves our suggestions. There is a general agreement on the cobelligerency (and not for the alliance) provided that the clauses of the long armistice are signed and the authority of the Allied Control Commission for Italy is recognized. The Allied Governments will transfer to the Italian administration larger areas of liberated national territory in exchange for operational bases. The Prime Minister concludes by saying that the Allied attitude towards the Italians must in any case follow the principle of paying a reward in exchange for concrete results.

One week after this report (September 29), Badoglio meets Eisenhower in Malta and signs the clauses of the so-called "long armistice". The document, "Norms for the surrender of Italy" begins with the expression "The Italian land, sea and air Forces, wherever they are, must surrender without conditions". Badoglio's protests for the very hard wording and for the general spirit of the long armistice convince Eisenhower to send to Washington the official proposal

On March 24, 1945, units of the "Friuli" Combat Group conquered Hill 106, in the vicinity of Bologna.

of considering the Italian Government as a cobelligerent of the Allied Governments.

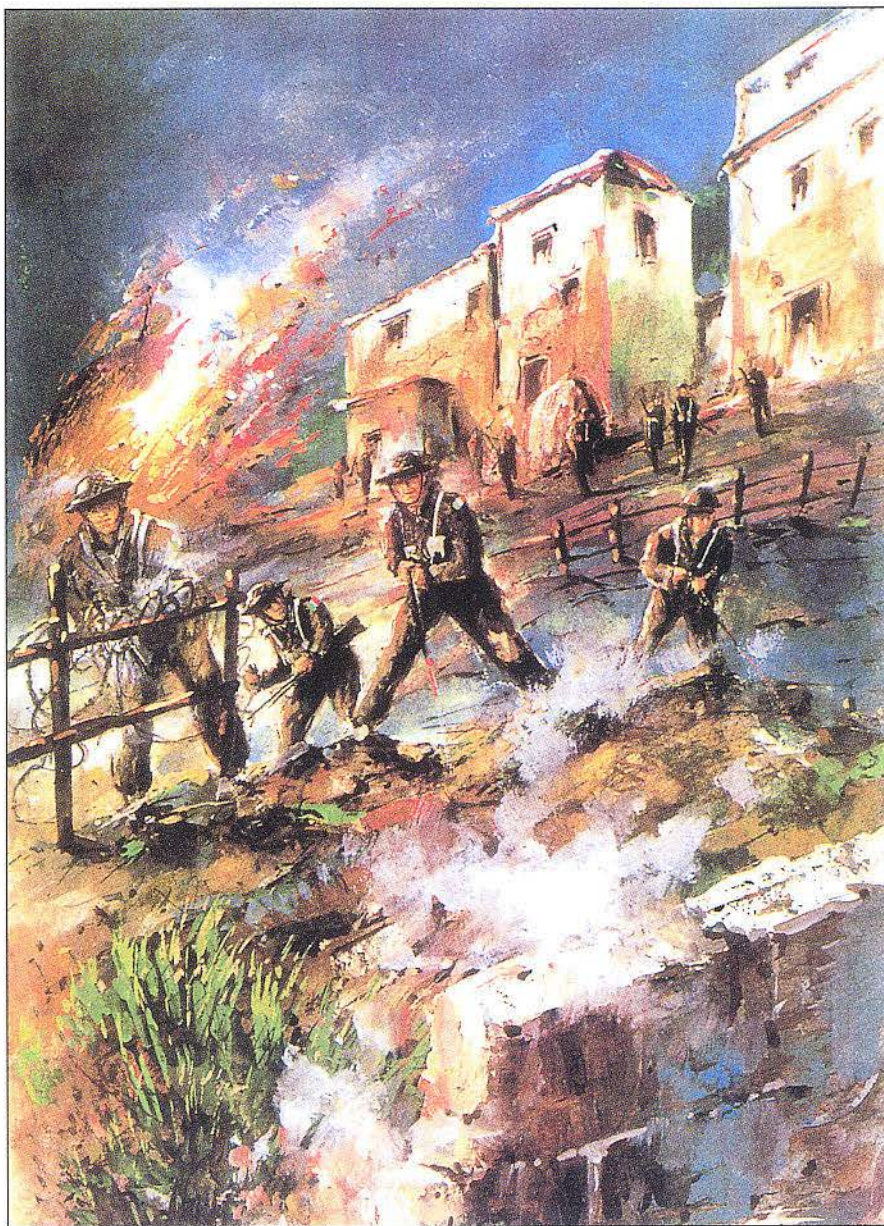
Eisenhower decides to take this step especially because he fears the negative reactions on the morale of the younger Officers of the Italian Army in the liberated part of Italy and on that of the sailors and Officers of the Italian fleet, which had handed itself en bloc to the Allies.

But before obtaining the recognition of its cobelligerency, the Italian Government was to declare war on Nazi Germany.

Here the first stumbling blocks come up. The King refuses to sign the declaration of war in Brindisi. He wants to do it in Rome, at his desk at the Quirinale Palace.

"President Roosevelt's proposal – according to the Foreign Office experts on Italian affairs – to recognise the Italian Government as a cobelligerent seems to be seriously endangered, because it is difficult for the King to declare war on Germany before his authority is restored over a large part of the Italian territory. We will very probably have to postpone any decision on the subject. Besides, Badoglio does not seem too agreeable to our suggestion to form a government with a large antifascist basis".

The Americans would like to accelerate our cobelligerency, not so the British. As for the Italian military, they already feel on the battle front, at the winners' side. Already since the first days after September 8, (September 14) General Ambrosio, Chief of the General Staff, with a good dose of optimism, has been urging the Chiefs of Staff of the three Services to cooperate with the Allied troops, specifying that, for the moment, it was ... "not advisable to propose that Allied



Major Units operate under our orders" (box 4).

People's Army or regular Army?

In Naples, the antifascist political circles insist on the constitution of a "People's Army" made up of (and led by) "people with clean hands – as stated in a document of the Action Party – whose conscience is not burdened by tremendous political and military responsibilities and did not participate in the military, diplomatic and propagandistic conduct of the Axis' war".

Also the clandestine National Liberation Committee broadcasts

from Rome its appeal for the War of Liberation, defined as *"the first task and supreme necessity of the national redemption"* which must be carried out side by side with the United Nations and *"not by the present Government constituted by the King and Badoglio, but by a new government, formed by the forces which have constantly fought against the Fascist dictatorship"*.

When this appeal, published on *"L'Italia del Popolo"*, arrives on Badoglio's desk at Brindisi's Suevian Castle, the war on Germany has already been declared by Badoglio himself,



Infantrymen of the "Legnano" regiment carrying ammunition to the Monte Lungo frontline.

and for a sure success. The experiment must have a very good outcome, otherwise the future will be endangered. Before year's end, the Division can have its baptism of fire".

Meanwhile, already on September 26, the order for the establishment of the 1st Motorized Group had been issued. The focus had been centred on motorization in order not to be inferior to the Allies, while the need of the moment required (as Gen. Taylor said) well-equipped "Alpini", infantrymen used to trench warfare and a large number of mules willing to have their backs well loaded; on the contrary motorization proved indispensable, for it gave our units freedom of movement in a destroyed Country.

The Armed Forces of the Liberation

Some maintain – and have authoritatively done so also on the pages of this magazine on the occasion of the thirtieth anniversary of the War of Liberation – that the old Italian Army gave a further proof of continuity, patriotism and loyalty to the institutions. This is in short the idea of the supporters of Badoglio and of the "royalist Army", which fought only to remain loyal to its oath. But those who lived through that page of history do not like this thesis: they did not accept it then and even less today, after sixty years. It is a reductive thesis which conveys into the river of "accomplished duty" what was instead a rational act of breaking with a past whose inheritance they did not want to accept. It was an outburst of willpower in a Country that was subjugated and resigned after so many tragedies.

who has read the document before a small group of war correspondents and received an energetic handshake by General Taylor. The King had given in, and signed the declaration of war in Brindisi and not at the Quirinale. Badoglio, after the strong handshake of General Taylor, can rightly call himself protagonist of the creation of the new Liberation Army.

Thus any initiative about people's volunteers is abandoned: "the Army will see to it", as Badoglio writes in his own hand. But, once the war is declared, the "green light" to cobelligerency is

late in coming; Badoglio urges Gen. Castellano (detached to Algiers, at Eisenhower's Supreme Command) to inform him about the Allies' decisions.

On October 30, at last, Catelano answers:

"It is clear that the Supreme Command does not have any confidence in the fighting spirit of our troops and had no intention of employing them. But eventually, through the good offices of General Smith, who is certainly a good friend of ours, General Eisenhower has agreed to the constitution of a Division, to be employed in the best conditions

A royalist Army was Badoglio's dream. After the signature of the armistice, he was another man, determined to realize the rebirth of the Armed Forces rather than the rebirth of democracy in a liberated Italy.

This is the thesis of those who want to legitimate an Army loyal to its oath vis-à-vis another Army, that of the Italian Social Republic (RSI), faithful to the alliance with Germany.

But we were not "Badoglites" and probably not even very royalist, at least many of us were not, and were not fighting for the King or Badoglio, but to liberate Italy from a foreign occupation and therefore we were close to the Allies and to our nearest Commanders: Dapino, Utili, Morigi, Boschetti; certainly not to the King, Badoglio or the Prince of Piedmont.

There is no continuity between the Armed Forces of September 8 and the liberation forces; those who have seen the Italian soldiers who fought with enthusiasm, only three months after the armistice, with the units of the 1st Motorized Group on December 8, and the 57 university students who died heroically on the slopes of Monte Lungo, do not need to study those pages of history to acknowledge that it was another army, very different from the army of September 8, which was tired and only wishing to put an end to it all. Let us pay our tribute to the Fallen of Cephalonia and honour the Fallen of Monte Lungo but, at the same time, let us distinguish, in the heroism that they have in common, the difference in their motivations.

The War of Liberation- December 8, 1943 – May 1945

I hope that the history of units, combats and heroic deeds which characterize the events of the War of Liberation will find an



ample coverage in other writings on the 60th anniversary; as for myself I only want to remind, as I have tried to do in this article, that these facts deserve cult and reflection rather than just remembrance.

A few data suffice to outline these facts with a spare but lapidary language (fig.1):

- One Brigade – the 1st Motorized Group – in the furnace of the battle of the Garigliano river, in December 1943;
- One Corps, consisting of two Divisions plus support units – the “Italian Corps of Liberation” – in the summer of 1944, for the

liberation of Central Italy up to the Metauro river and the Gothic Line on the Apennines;

- One Army of six Divisions – the “Combat Groups” – in the winter of 1944 and the spring of 1945 on the “Gothic” Line and in the final battle;
- Eight Auxiliary Divisions, that carried out important logistic functions through the whole campaign; the “Combat Mule-Trains” and the “Combat Engineers” deserve a particular mention;
- Navy and Air Force, in all seas and skies, to contrast the German Forces;



April 10, 1945. Units of the "Friuli" Combat Group fighting for the conquest of Abbazia.

• 600,000 servicemen deported to Germany; they did not surrender and suffered the hunger, hardships and sacrifices of the lagers rather than disown their oath of allegiance to their distant Motherland.

Much blood of Italian soldiers was shed for liberty: 86,000 killed in combat against the Germans; 40,000 dead in concentration camps; 365 Gold Medals for Military Valour.

This fight, these sacrifices merged with the fight and

sacrifices of the Partisan Brigades and the anguish of the population. Never before, in Italian history, Army and people were bound in a common destiny and in a common hope as in the War of Liberation.

THE DAY OF RECKONING 60 YEARS LATER

But do the Italians of today care about all this? What do the young people know about the

second "Risorgimento"? It is true that, in the history of all peoples and all Countries, when war is over the thought of the fighting men is rapidly removed from the memory of their fellow-citizens, together with the reasons that caused the war. But the War of Liberation is another thing. It was not a war of imposition towards the exterior and even less a civil war, but a spontaneous movement of liberation and national independence.

The great tribute of heroism is the holocaust of 86,000 young lives, offered in the nineteen months of hard fighting for the liberation of Italy, together with the sacrifice of the lives of 32,000 partisans, 10,000 civilians and 40,000 dead in the concentration camps scattered all over Europe, is an inestimable price for an inestimable good: liberty.

Sixty years of peace and freedom are the primary goals achieved but the results are not complete; we must remember this, in these celebrations. The Republic needs constitutional and social reforms; peace and freedom must extend to Europe and to the world. It is our duty to promote it in our celebrations, at our meetings, in our documents dealing with the 60th anniversary.

We cannot possibly forget the tragedy which swept away the young lives of our brothers, the sufferings, the humiliations of the prisoners, together with the temptation to ignore the sacrifice of one's life and the steps of death coming every day. We cannot forget!

There is a great longing for September 8 and for December 8, but the distress of the sons cannot be remedied only through the courage of the fathers. The post-war reconstruction was not

On April 19, 1945, the "Aquila" battalion conquered the town of San Chierico, near Bologna.

a miracle but a proof of will-power after the heroism.

Let us pass on a message of firmness and coherence to the many honest people who still exist.

Rather than remembering the past and being anxious about our present, we should openly decide to let egoism die and solidarity prevail; if we choose to tear up falsehood, intrigue and under-hand actions, in order to live with the truth and sincerity of our choices and positions, we shall overcome also this September 8, sixty years later.



**General,
Senator of the Republic,
former Chief of Staff
of the Army*

NOTE

(1)-Gen. Cigliana, "Rivista Militare" no.1-2, 1985: "The most controversial five weeks in the Italian War".

The colour plates of this article are by Amleto Fiore.



Lieutenant General Luigi Poli was born in Turin on August 24, 1923. He attended the Salesian Colleges of San Giovanni and Valsalice in Turin; took part in the War of Liberation (1943-1945) with the 1st Motorized Group at Monte Lungo and Monte Marrone, with the Italian Liberation Corps from Guardagrele to Urbino, and with the "Legnano" Combat Group on the Bologna front. He has been awarded two Crosses for War Merit, the decoration of Knight Grand Cross of the Republic of Italy, and that of Commander of the French Order of Merit for his participation in the War of

Liberation with Marshal Juin's French Corps; Grand Cross with Star of the Federal Republic of Germany, Cross of Merit of the United States, French decoration of "Grand Officier de l'Ordre National du Merite".

Gen. Poli has always commanded units of Alpine troops: 31st, 33rd and 35th mountain-artillery batteries, "Sondrio" mountain artillery battalion of the "Orobica" Alpine Brigade, 6th mountain artillery Regt, "Taurinense" Alpine Brigade and 4th Alpine Corps. He has been the Commander of the Tuscan-Emilian Military Region, Chairman of the

Higher Armed Forces' Council, Deputy Chief of Staff of Defence and Army Chief of Staff. Elected Senator as an independent in the list of the Christian Democracy Party, he has been a member of the 4th Defence Committee and of the North Atlantic Committee; President of the Association of Veterans of the Regular Armed Forces in the War of Liberation. General Poli is an honorary citizen of Mignano-Montelungo, Rocchetta al Volturmo, Cingoli and Polverigi for his merits during the War of Liberation. He is also honorary citizen of Montù, Porto Azzurro and Bracciano.



The Frontier of Liberty
by Giorgio Donati *

September 8, 1943



Undoubtedly, in that period, we all had to make sudden decisions and overcome traumatic moments, with an emotional concentration which was probably excessive if compared to our maturity (I was the youngest with my nineteen years, and you were not much older!).

The first and strangest alternative was our "switch" from allies to "neutrals" and, immediately after, to "enemies" of the Germans. Do you remember the torrid roadblocks on Road 16, north of Bari, on the first days of September, and the many northbound German soldiers from the "Hermann Goering" Division who were controlled by us? We were surprised at these small fast squads, led by an NCO or a corporal, rapidly retreating to assembly areas hundreds of kilometres away. It was a proof of efficiency. But already in your talks there had been surfacing memories about fathers and grandfathers, and of hard fights on the crags of the Dolomites and on the Carso.

On September 8, in Bari, as soon as you heard that the Germans wanted to blow up the harbour installations, you took your "mod.91" rifle and voluntarily ran to the port, almost urged by an ancestral impulse, sensing that it was a gesture that, albeit not very important, would be the first contribution to the "reevaluation of the Italian soldier" by the Allies. The first tiny tessera in a mosaic destined to become larger and brighter with the successive luminous goals of Monte Lungo, Monte Marrone, Filottrano, Musone, Santa Maria Nuova, until the Allies' decision, in 1944, to reconstitute as many as five Italian Combat Groups (corresponding to five Divisions).

Together with the change in "status" vis-à-vis the Germans, there was an opposite change vis-à-vis the new Allies, towards whom you immediately demonstrated that you did not have any inferiority complex. Do you remember the great punch-ups in, Bari's cinemas and taverns, with those who dared smirk at your alpine hat? And what about the subsequent vigorous – and Solomonian – interventions of the Military Police?

Hard and difficult was the period between the armistice of September 8 and the departure for the front. The "Piemonte" Alpine Battalion left in March 1944, after a period of total separation from our families who had remained in Northern Italy,



October 1943. Strange uniforms...but very high spirits!

divided by a front firmly stabilized from Cassino to Ortona (the "Gustav" Line), with no possibility of sending or receiving news.

It was a time marked by acute nostalgia, always present in our chats, songs and thoughts, with a remarkable psychological weight on our "push northwards" and on our wish to advance along the Peninsula and contribute to the liberation of our dear ones, our homes...at all costs!

It was a slow but obstinate maturation, from moral disarmament to sense of duty, from disbandment to desire of asserting the dignity of men who did not fear to face mortal risks in order to show to themselves and everyone that after falling into the gutter one must get up and do it quickly.

The environment around us was certainly not the best for "moral recovery": around us there was poverty, destruction, prostitution, black market, crime, open and sneaking defeatism. Do you remember that evening at Cisternino when, at the entrance of a tavern, we met a "good for nothing" who hissed in the ear of an Alpino, who was rather unsteady on his legs: "Kill your officers and desert..." He had run away after dodging my awkward slap, but after a few hours you caught him and took him to the

March 1944. The "tough guys" carrying the "bold piece" up Monte Marrone by sheer force.



battalion Headquarters, because "the subversive malingeringer deserved a lesson".

I found an old little book where I used to jot down some significant dates, impressions and remarks, that a transcribe word for word:

Salary August 1943: 1530 lire. On **August 15** report to the Depot of the 1st mountain artillery Regt at Alipignano – departure for Montenegro (Good-bye, sweetheart...!) Stop at Mestre; we cannot go on because of the Slav partisans. I am sent to Bari (bombing, and changing at Termoli) for the embarkation; we are almost sure of becoming fish feed because the British are sinking most of the convoys. Infernal heat, sweat and curses at the 8th Muster HQ. Everyday we go out and dig "anti-landing" ditches south of Bari.

September 8, 1943: ARMISTICE!

General bewilderment – Very short skirmish with the Germans at the port: first emotion. Communications to the North completely

cut (what about my family? When shall I see them again?) Just a week ago I'd have considered unthinkable to stroll undisturbed among British, Australian and New Zealander soldiers. We really have to see all sorts of things!

September 19 – Leaving for Lecce with a company. On to Galatone...I ask to be assigned to the 1st Motorized Group (I want to do something, go north). Transferred to Lecce again with some thirty hotheads. I'm given the command of a battery. I insist – unheeded – to go to the 1st Group: I want to leave here, go north.

October 3 – At Salice Salentino with my unit; the new Commander arrives, and I become deputy Commander of the battery.

October 16 – at Zollino, Marshal Badoglio illustrates to the Officers the tragedy of Italy and the Italians: it is easy to convince those who are already convinced. I ask again to join, as volunteer, the "Umberto di Savoia" Group, which will enter Rome after its liberation from the Germans.

November 1 – I leave for the V Artillery Battalion (Francavilla Fontana) – I go on to Locorotondo (the "trulli" are very strange!). Assigned to Roggero's battery on **November 24**, at Cisternino, to set up an alpine battery. – Exhausting work – Morale is low.

Christmas sad and awful. At the battery, enormous difficulties; great discontent, little respect and scarce discipline, also as consequence of a spreading defeatist and pro-Bolshevik poisonous propaganda. We are all the time among the men: listening, talking and convincing. Good-by, ideals! It is better to start thinking about a change of profession when all this is over. There is the possibility to join the Carabinieri: I'd like to continue my career in the "Benemerita" (as they are called), where my father served "with loyalty and honour" for over thirty years.

January 1944 – Usual life of full work, between hopes and disappointments, ups and downs, but things are going better. We are in "high readiness" and training is intense. It rains all the time, lots of mud, but we are stronger and more prepared.

The Allies are 40 kilometres from Rome: what are we waiting for? A long Allied column arrives. Hurrah, we go!

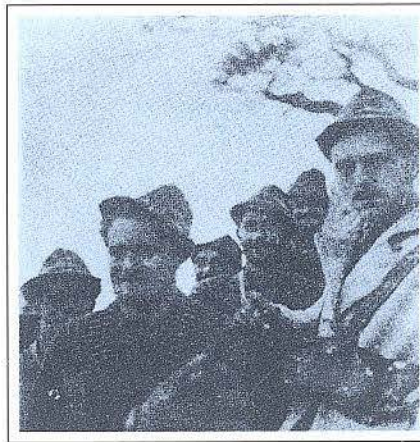
At the battery there is unrest: nerves are tense but morale is firm. The good-byes and the journey are exciting. The Apulian girls, some in tears, ask: "Were are you going?" – To Rome! the "Alpini" answer proudly. We feel long shivers running down our spine.

March, 18 – After passing through Puglia, Molise and Campania, we reach Fornelli-Colli Volturno. Roll call: we are all here!

September 8, 1943

I quoted some parts of my "little diary" because they are the expression of the state of mind of that time. They were written neither for posterity nor for history (I regret not having noted in more detail names, facts and dates). They are genuine drops, naive at times, and come from a nineteen year old boy,

March 1944. The "tough guys" on Monte Marrone.

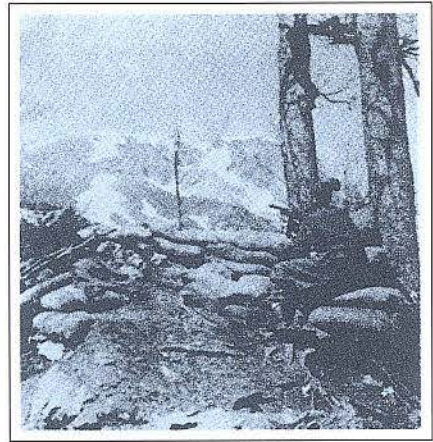


engulfed by an incredible situation of chaos and war.

At times I feel like saying something to the nineteen-year-old youths of today, who complain for so much less, then I hold my tongue because they would probably not understand me. Even if I am convinced that the experiences of our generation deserve to be told and handed down. But you certainly understand, my dear "Mountaineers". You have been simple, wonderful and resolute, you grumbled a lot but did not give in, even in very sad times! When combat started in March 1944 you were all there, everyone of you. And to think that just two months before, you were saying, insistently and monotonously: "We are not going to fight anymore". I was a regular Officer and I was doing my duty: you were not regulars but

reserve Officers and recalled servicemen who had already gone through the war on the western Alps, in Greece and in the Balkans. Then you left for the War of Liberation, with an "inner thrust" difficult to understand by someone who had not lived through those feverish days of late 1943: An inner

March 1944. From the emplacements of Monte Marrone towards Monte Mare.



urge which had the fragrance of distant families and intense nostalgia, an impulse vivified by sense of duty and military honour, strengthened by the desire of being men in front of the enemy of yesterday and today, by esprit de corps and by the pride of contributing to the liberation of the Motherland, which was occupied, destroyed, scorned and outraged every day by foreign Armies of every colour and race!

I am sure that none of you, who have so much experience and common sense, sings the praises of unilateral and indiscriminate disarmament: you have had first-hand proof that peoples who do not want to bear arms to ensure their freedom, sooner or later will have to bear bitter humiliations. You returned to fight on the front-line,

risking your life to give Italy the dignity of an honourable return among the free Nations.

"Where are you going, "Alpini"? To Rome, mother".

And the nostalgic "Tango of Turin" that we used to sing with tears in our eyes at the end of March, after the action of Monte Marrone and our resistance to the German counterattacks, which had attracted a great deal of Allied interest on "the Italian mountain soldiers", had become a proud "Tango of Monte Marrone" which – translated from the Piedmontese dialect – went as follows: "They (the Germans) thought they would find short pastry, but they met with a well stuck feather"(1).

March 1944 – Taking a bite during a break in shelter-digging.

youthful and enthusiastic, with loads of hope for a better future for our unfortunate Country.

A new frontier had opened in the Motherland, after more than three



March 1944 – The "bold-piece" on the frontline of Monte Marrone with the "Alpini".

that of the Resistance, in the Italian regions occupied by the Germans. After sixty years, the combatants of the War of Liberation and of Resistance, even considering the difficulties of the present time, looking back on the road they travelled, separately at first and then together, must acknowledge that from 1943 to 2003, apart from the period of uninterrupted peace it has enjoyed, Italy has turned from a heap of debris into one of the most industrialized Countries of the world. Certainly there are still enormous problems, but we are the ones who once more, as in 1943, must point out the new frontier to our youth: the frontier of liberation from the buboes afflicting our society. We have the right and duty to point out to them the frontier of moral fortification of the national community.

NOTE

(1) The "Alpini" wear a feather on their hat.



But this maturation, this progressive awareness, did not concern only the "Alpini". It was a new spirit of "Risorgimento" which inspired all the soldiers of the Italian Corps of Liberation: old weapons, patched-up uniforms, but the spirit was

years of bloody engagements of our troops in France, the Balkans, Greece and Russia: the Frontier of Liberty. A part of the Italian youth, certainly the best part, rushed to reconquer this liberty, just as the partisans rushed to another frontier,

The Frontier of Liberty

WITH THE ITALIAN CORPS OF LIBERATION IN 1944

Chorus of the Fallen

My colour was only that of war
my song always desperate
my hope raised to sacrifice

My short life an assiduous courtship
to death, as you can see, my brother.

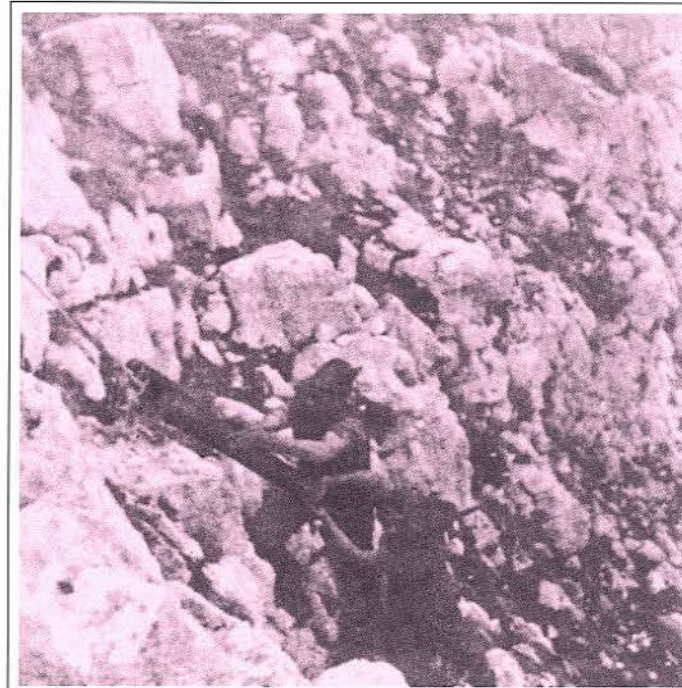
For you who live I remain unknown,
only in God's immense arms
I am recognized.

Filippo Canci

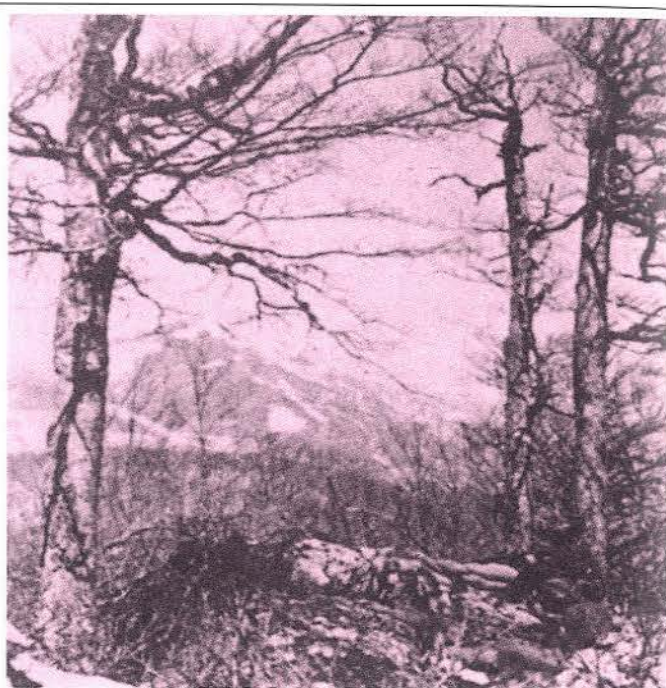
In the article published on no.6/83 of "Rivista Militare", Italian Edition, I attempted to describe the "trauma" of September 8 and how exhausting and slow had been the reconstruction of an operational "Alpini" battalion out of an assorted mass of morally and physically broken-up men.

Here is what Gen. Umberto Utili, the legendary Commander of the Italian Corps of Liberation, wrote in his touching book "The Standing Boys - The Recovery of the Italian Army after September 8" about a visit, in Puglia, at the end of 1943, to the "Piemonte" battalion, which was being reconstituted:

All the "Alpini" from the "Taurinense" Division that we had been able to get back were assembled in the battalion; some of them had escaped from the eastern Adriatic ports where the Division, stationed in Montenegro, had its logistic bases, others were caught by the armistice in the ports of Puglia, where they were either waiting to embark or in transit going on leave. On the whole, since their normal organizational links had ceased to exist, they were a rabble without cohesion; besides, the "Alpini" are difficult people, and the Piedmontese ones even more so.



March 1944 – “Piemonte” alpine battery. Carrying by hand 75mm guns to the top of Montecastelnuovo.



April 1944 – The observatory of Monte Marrone, facing the German positions on Monte Mare, where Lt Guerriera died like a hero (Gold Medal for Military Valour).

In Nardò they had done all sorts of mischief, the local population had protested and even the press had been involved. As a consequence, the battalion was transferred to Cisternino, where they seemed to be more quiet.

I let him know my plans. –“For the moment it is better if you don’t show up” answered Major Briatore, “don’t alarm them”. And went on: “See that the special allowance is granted to the Group. It is as much as forty lire, and they will certainly not give them up, even if it means going back to war. Then, let me have shoes, because they are barefoot, and let me improve the food ration. They will regain their good spirits and the rest will come by itself”. Briatore was right, and exactly two months later the “Piemonte” reached me in perfect order”.

This picture corresponds to reality: my “diary” reports: *March 18, 1944 – After going through Puglia, Molise and Campania we reach Formelli and Colli Volturno. Roll call: we are all here!*

Thus the “Piemonte” alpine battalion joined the Italian Corps of

Liberation at the sources of the Volturno. The Corps was the former motorized group that already in December 1943 had been fighting at Monte Lungo.

After the repeated and useless offensive efforts of the autumn of 1943 against Cassino, in March 1944 the Allies and the Germans were facing each other on the “Gustav” Line, from the Tyrrhenian to the Adriatic.

A little to the north of the sources of the Volturno, at San Vincenzo, the US 5th Army and the British 8th Army were getting in contact through the respective internal wings, i.e. Marshal Juin’s French Expeditionary Corps (CEF) and Gen. Anders’ Polish Corps.

The Italian Liberation Corps took its position between the two Corps and became the right wing of the US 5th Army, with one Infantry Regiment (3 battalions), one “Bersaglieri” Regiment (2 battalions), one “Alpini” battalion with a 75/13 battery, 1 Paratroop battalion, an assault unit, an Artillery Regt (4 battalions), one Engineer battalion, service units and Military Police.

The occupation and defence of Monte Marrone. The spring offensive in the Abruzzi National Park (from the diary of a second lieutenant)

We arrive at Colli di Volturno and go on to Fornelli, “to get used to the frontline”. We are encamped, bad weather, bitter cold.

After some days of reconnaissance (foul weather!) we deploy our battery at Castelnuovo (1 km from the frontline).

We prepare three different deployments, in order to support the “Alpini” in their action against Monte Marrone (an overhanging rocky bulwark: just right for the “Alpini”!).

March 31 – At 3:30 a.m. I leave, as leader of an observation & liaison patrol, with the 3rd company, ready to attack Monte Marrone. We climb impervious gorges, through difficult passages well organized by the scouts. Pitch dark, snow, ice; we are loaded like mules. At 7:00 we reach the top. Surprise is successful. No reaction from the Germans. We are in a thick wood, scarce visibility.

Very rapid consolidation:– mines – entrenchments – shelters.

Our “bold gun” is on the ridge with the “Alpini” emplacements. Accossato, the gun commander, is a strong man and so are the gunners!

Night visits by German patrols: skirmishes, a few prisoners.

The companies take turns, I stay here. The snow is melting.

April 9, 1944 – Easter night (a real pandemonium!).

In the afternoon choruses and toasts. Explosion of two mines, followed by raging bursts from German machine guns. The attack is in full development, with penetrations in some emplacements. The scouts of the 3rd company counterattack. Rockets of all colours, salvoes: our artillery bursts out on the barrages; petards, mortar fire, shrieks, smoke.

I go up to the stronghold of the 1st company, followed by the reserves; the situation is by now settled. The artillery pounds the attacking German formation (2 companies?) now withdrawing towards Monte Altare. Germans dead, wounded, prisoners, booty.

We suffer only a few losses, but how painful! The Officers, NCOs and "Alpini" of the 1st company have been really fantastic. If they had given way up there, behind us we'd have had only the abyss!

But no one can pass here! This is not Puglia: here on this mountain we all feel like lions!

April 15 – The Germans have not come close but they regale us with artillery and mortars every day. It is very difficult to hide emplacements and trenches from the direct observation from Monte Mare.

The Germans are building entrenchments on the eastern slopes of Monte Mare: they are at less than 1 kilometre as the crow flies. Every now and then our artillery fires on the earthworks. One night

The Frontier of Liberty

we hear a distinct shout: "Don't shoot, we are Italians! Our blood freezes: poor Italy! We stop firing (1).

April 22 – A hail of shells! Thirteen wounded, I am one of them. Very long descent downhill, to the 266th field hospital. I am pampered like a half hero, but when I think of my friends who are still on the summit of Monte Marrone, which I clearly see through a small window, I feel like a traitor.

The shell fragments were smart: doctor says that I'll be up and about in a few weeks!

May 11 – Lieutenant Enrico Guerriera dies like a hero on Monte Mare. He was with the 3rd gun, having replaced Lieutenant Tandoj, who had been wounded with me. In the stronghold he spent hours and hours watching the German positions through a binocular. He had something in his mind, but never spoke about it.

He went up to Monte Mare with a patrol of "Bersaglieri"; they occupied the terrible peak 2021, but had to endure a violent German counterattack: wounded, he continued firing to protect the retreat of the "Bersaglieri". His wife and four children are awaiting him, in vain, in Milano.

May, 26 – I return to the battery, limping but healthy; great celebrations. Just in time to leave again as observer and liaison officer with the "Alpini": the spring offensive is about to start. At last we come out in front of Monte Marrone: Selletta Altare, Balzo della Cicogna, Balzo di Conca (several crosses on mounds: we too have caused losses), Val di Canneto. Shoot out at Madonna di Canneto. The National Park of the Abruzzi is a wild and wonderful place. Val di Canneto is narrow, wooded and insidious, we can't see anything: occasional bursts of machine-gun fire cause losses, insecurity and fear. Funny sensation: the broken twigs falling on your back while you are laying on the ground "at lion skin", i.e. flattened as a sheet of paper!

Order to stop, we change front and go back, protected by the scouts: the machine gun fire continues. "Lieutenant, you call this an offensive? They are always glued to our ass, these krauts!" comments Montarino, the radio operator.

Return to Castelnuovo, we are going towards the Adriatic. And we wanted to go to Rome!

(1) Later we learned that they were Italian civilians, forced to work on the frontline.

THE ITALIAN CORPS OF LIBERATION AND ITS OPERATIONS

MILITARY OPERATIONS IN ITALY (July 1943 – April 1945)

REGULAR UNITS OF THE ITALIAN ARMY IN THE WAR OF LIBERATION

1st MOTORIZED GROUP (September 28, 1943 – April 16, 1944)

67^o Reggimento Fanteria Legnano
11^o Reggimento Artiglieria
LI Battaglione Bersaglieri
V Battaglione Controcarrichi cannoni da 47/32
LI Battaglione Misto Genio

ITALIAN CORPS OF LIBERATION (C.I.L.) (April 16, 1944 – September 24, 1944)

Divisione « Nemo »
183^o Reggimento Fanteria Nemo
184^o Reggimento Fanteria Nemo
CLXXXIV Battaglione Guastatori
184^o Reggimento Artiglieria

I Brigata
4^o Reggimento Bersaglieri (battaglioni XXIX e XXXIII)
3^o Reggimento Alpini (battaglione Piemonte e M. Granero)
CLXXXV Battaglione Paracadutisti

II Brigata
68^o Reggimento Fanteria Legnano
Battaglione della Marina Balile
IX Reparto d'assalto (ex I Battaglione Arditi)

COMBAT GROUPS (September 24, 1944 – May 8, 1945)

Gruppo di Combattimento « Cremona »:
21^o Reggimento Fanteria Cremona
22^o Reggimento Fanteria Cremona
7^o Reggimento Artiglieria
CXLIV Battaglione Misto Genio

Gruppo di Combattimento « Friuli »:
87^o Reggimento Fanteria Friuli (con due battaglioni di fanteria di linea e un battaglione di granatieri)
88^o Reggimento Fanteria Friuli (con due battaglioni di fanteria di linea e un battaglione di granatieri)
35^o Reggimento Artiglieria
CXX Battaglione Misto Genio

Gruppo di Combattimento « Folgore »:
Reggimento Paracadutisti Nemo
Reggimento Marina S. Marco (battaglioni Balile - Grado - Caorle)
184^o Reggimento Artiglieria
CLXXXIV Battaglione Misto Genio

Gruppo di Combattimento « Legnano »:
68^o Reggimento Fanteria Legnano (battaglioni Palermo - Novara - battaglione d'assalto Col Moschin - ex IX Reparto d'assalto)
Reggimento Speciale Legnano (battaglione bersaglieri Goito - battaglioni alpini Piemonte e L'Aquila)
11^o Reggimento Artiglieria
LI Battaglione Misto Genio

Gruppo di Combattimento « Mantova »:
76^o Reggimento Fanteria Napoli
114^o Reggimento Fanteria Mantova
155^o Reggimento Artiglieria
CIV Battaglione Misto Genio



- Winter line (Bernard)
- - - Forward margin of the "Gothic" Line
- - - Starting line of the spring offensive
- Advance of the Allied Armies
- Advance of the Italian Army

THE SPRING OFFENSIVE ON THE ADRIATIC FRONT

At the end of May 1944, the Italian Corps of Liberation (C.I.L.), assigned to the 8th Army, was transferred from the upper Volturno to the Adriatic sector, in view of the spring offensive.

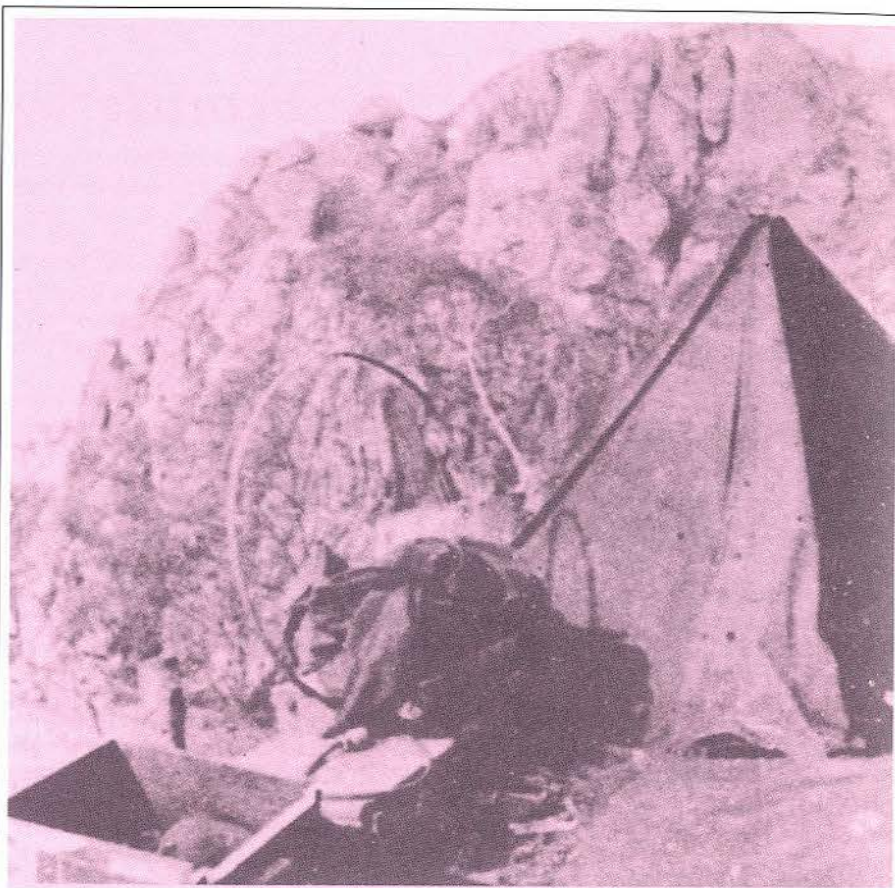
With the strength of about 15,000 men, the Corps was reorganized on two Brigades (the "Nembo" Division) an Artillery Command and logistic supports. After the recent successes, the morale was good and the units, particularly the "special ones" were very reactive and motivated.

Thus started the "Garibaldian" phase of the War of Liberation, a busy and dynamic phase: odd uniforms, sometimes in tatters, but with very high spirits, very motivated, with the subtle taste of adventure, of a romantic epic of the "Risorgimento".

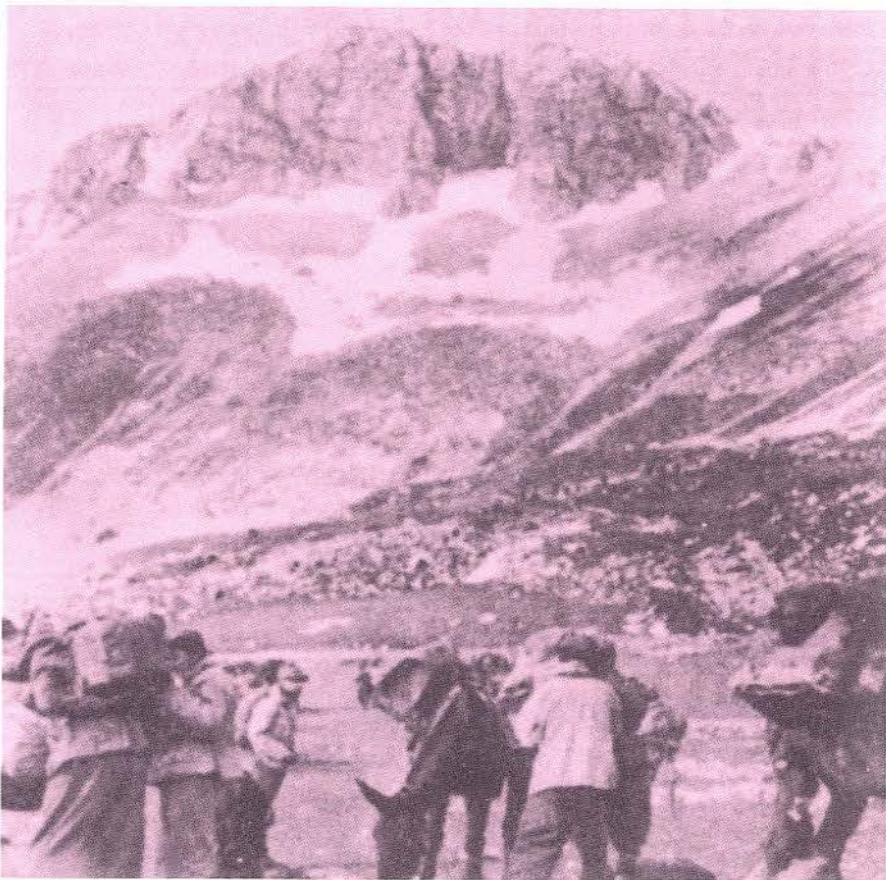
The Italian Corps of Liberation (C.I.L.) moves to the front, in the sector of Lanciano, on June 8 and occupies Orsagna and Guardia-grele, overcoming insidious mine-fields and the vigorous and dynamic actions of the enemy delaying-elements, equipped with automatic weapons and mortars. On June 9 the paratroopers rush into Chieti, crushing the German rearguard and preventing the planned destruction of public works. By the way, Chieti was outside the C.I.L. sector, but was an objective of the Poles, who were bewildered and thanked us.

And then forward! Paratroopers, "Bersaglieri", "Alpini" and infantrymen, in a splendid emulation, ford the swollen Peascara river and reach Sulmona on June 11, L'Aquila on the 13th, Teramo on the 15th, and go north, side by side with the Polish Corps.

The C.I.L. trudges on foot, but keeps pace despite the terrible



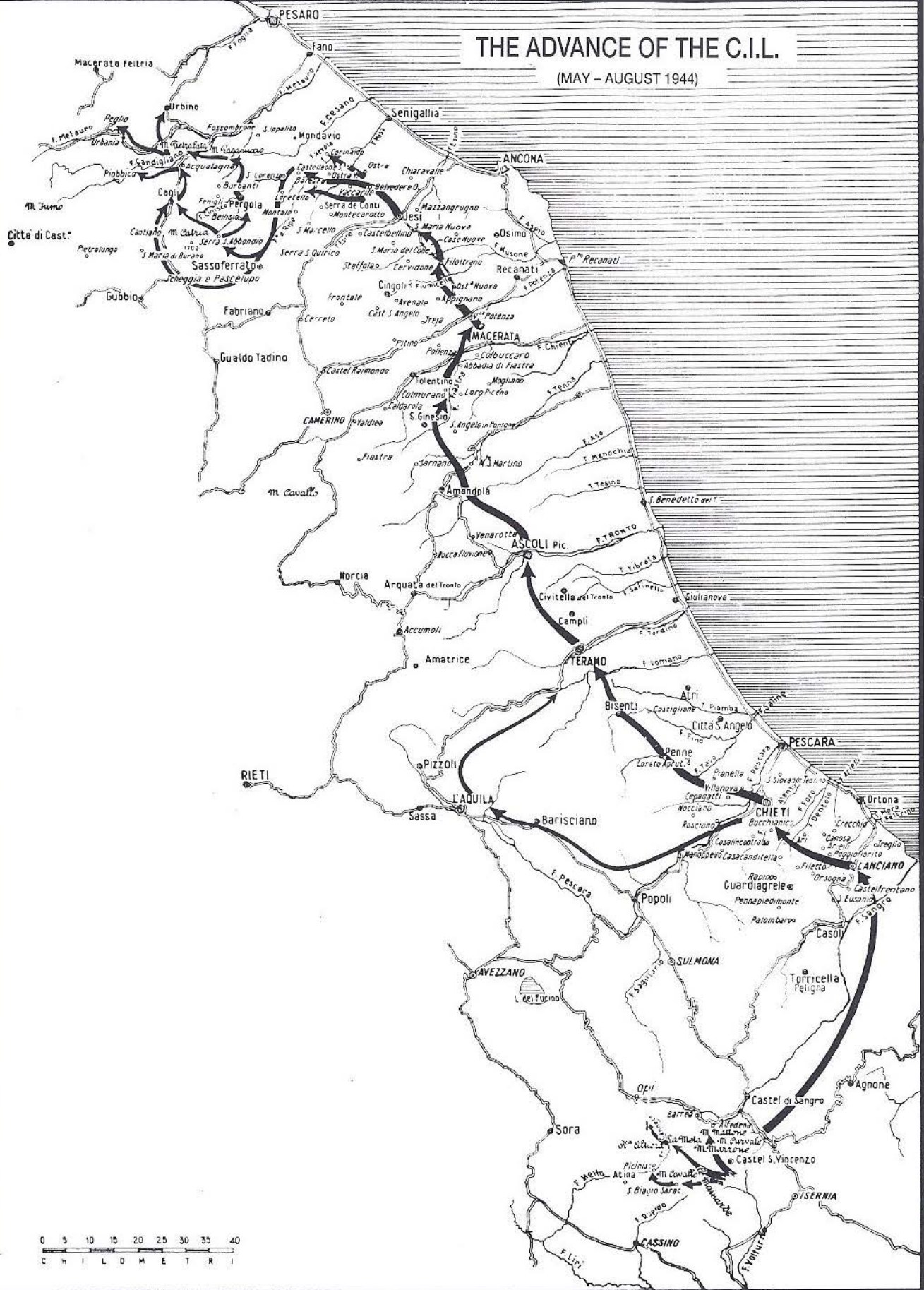
Above: April 1944 – The small tent of the O.C. patrol, with an R.F. 2, on the reverse side of Monte Marrone. (2nd Lt. Donati, cpl. Montarsino).

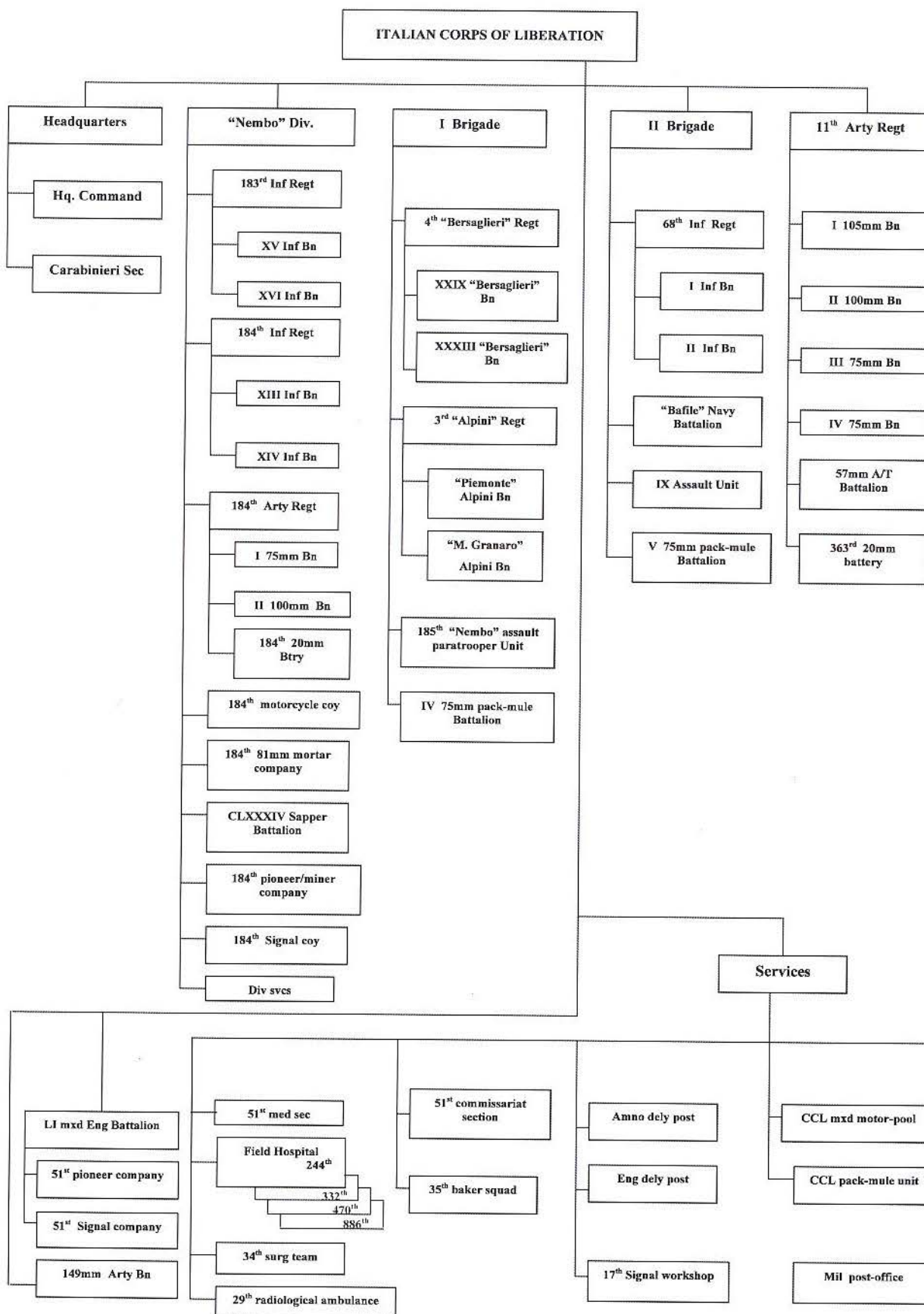


Right: May 1944 – Mule trains following the "Piemonte" towards Val di Canneto (Abruzzi National Park).

THE ADVANCE OF THE C.I.L.

(MAY - AUGUST 1944)





difficulties of the logistic support. Most bridges are destroyed, the few motor vehicles cannot stand the unrelenting pace.

June 18: Ascoli; June 22: we are again in contact with the Germans, who have stiffened their defence on the Chienti river. Macerata and Tolentino are taken. Then comes the epic of the "Nembo" paratroopers in the attack, and then the defence, of the very strong position of Filottrano on June 8 and 9.

It was a Garibaldian combat, wrote General Utili, made of impetus and passion, swift and unconventional: in the evening there was not a single reserve left.

And then forward again, with the bloody fording of the Musone and the conquest of Jesi by the "Alpini", while the Poles, on July 18, reach Ancona.

The units are overtaking each other, from position to position.

Faced with the progressive stiffening of the dynamic contrast carried out by the Germans as the Allies are approaching the "Gothic" Line, the "San Marco" sailors assail Belvedere, the IX Assault Unit make an attack on Collina, the 68th Infantry Regiment on San Marcello, the XXXIII "Bersaglieri" battalion on Montesecco while the Poles, on the left, repeatedly try to conquer Ostra.

After a brief respite, on July 26 the C.I.L. leaps forward again, beyond the Misa and the Nevola, towards Ostra Vetere-Corinaldo on the right, and Barbara-Castelleone di Suasa on the left: several clashes with the obstinate resistance of very strong and resolute delaying German units. Villa Mei, Vaccarile, Acquasanta, Serra dei Conti, Montecarotto, Castelleone di Suasa, Corinaldo.

Many a time the soldiers of the C.I.L. must curb and repel dangerous local counteroffensive returns of the Germans, while mines cause painful losses, insecurity and tension in every unit.

Meanwhile we had been hearing that the Germans were installing ramps for launching deadly missiles in the Po Valley. The secret weapon? There was apprehension and fear. On August 12, while there were insistent rumours about our

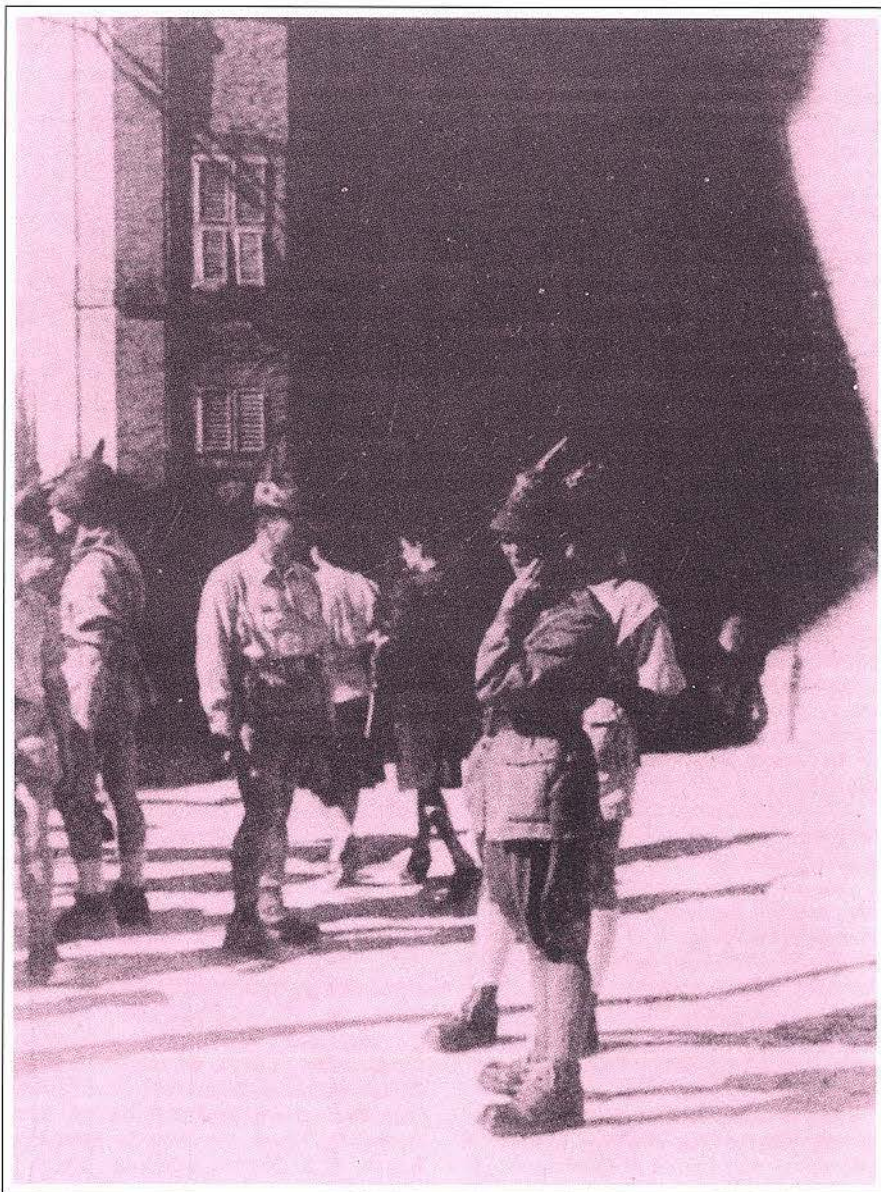
The Frontier of Liberty

withdrawal from the front for a deserved period of rest, we received an order from the Polish HQ: the C.I.L. was to change sector and go to an area between Sassoferrato and Gubbio, from the hills, gently sloping down to the sea, to the Apennines, where the road network had been seriously damaged by the German sappers and only the "motorized on foot" could possibly succeed. Thus the C.I.L. became the left wing of the Polish Corps, in

"loose" contact, to the west, with the British X Corps and with the support of the Maiella partisans. Our objectives were Cagli and the Candigliano river.

Immediately after assuming the responsibility for the new sector, the C.I.L. springs towards Monte Torrino, Col Ventoso, Bellisio. And here, while, at last, half of the C.I.L. men receive orders to go to Macerata for reorganization and rest, the II Brigade, with the "Bafile",

July 1944 - Tolentino. "Chief White Feather", Major Alberto Briatore, with a group of officers.



"Grado", "Monte Granero" battalions, the II Assault Unit, two pack-mule artillery battalions and one A/T battalion, continues the action with the support of four battalions of the 11th Artillery Regt and reaches the Foglia valley, Monte Marcello, Monte San Lorenzo, Monte Savino, Acqualagna, San Marino dei Muri and San Gervasio.

Then, on August 25, the C.I.L. is separated from the Polish Corps and

The "Garibaldian" phase along the Adriatic road (from the diary of a second lieutenant)

Goodbye, mountains of the Abruzzi and Molise! Monte Marrone, goodbye! We arrive at a rest-camp at Treglio, on the Adriatic, with a very long British column (we even manage to take a couple of baths!)

June 7 - The offensive on the Adriatic front begins. The "Piedmont" is in the second echelon.

We enter Guardiagrele, a heap of ruins. We reach Rapino (mothers weeping, youngsters merrily praising the "liberators", we have often tears in our eyes). Casalini Contrada, Fara Filiorum Petri (what names, what towns!) At Casalini Contrada I am with... (hooray for the lost chances!).

Very risky fording of a swollen Pescara river (the Germans did not leave a single bridge intact).

Exhausted, we arrive at Nocciano, under the sweltering June sun, in the dust, with bleeding feet, but firmly determined to follow at the heels of the Germans in retreat.

From Nocciano on to Torre dei Passeri, Popoli, Barisciano, 70 kilometres in 24 hours; men and mules are worn out but the morale is sky-high. Triumphant entrance into Aquila on June 13 under a shower of flowers, accompanied by music, songs and dances. "They are Italians" - shouts the crowd - "they are Alpini, long live Italy!". Indescribable emotions.

But we leave right away. On to San Pelino (crazy night!), Amatrice, Tufo, Comunanza del Littorio.

To accept every invitation and offer we should stay at least a month in each village!...

We go down along the beautiful valley of the Tronto: it reminds me of my valley, and I feel very nostalgic.

We are drawing near the Germans, who have started fighting again to delay the advance of the Allies.

Sarnano, Tolentino (another wild night!), Pollenza, Appignano. At Filottrano, the paratroopers of the "Nembo" have been fighting hard and well - many losses - we are drawn in again; the Germans are holding out.

July 10 - On patrol duty (observation and liaison) with the 2nd company - Colle della Saltregna - stronghold of Cervidone - S. Ignazio.

attached to the 4th Indian Division of the British V Corps. And they called it reorganization and rest!

The soldiers, tired and worn out, set their teeth and go on: Monte Pietralata, Piobbico, Urbino, Urbania.

On August 31, rest for everybody!

The C.I.L. will be disbanded, in order to establish two Combat Groups, "Legnano" and "Folgore" for the successive attack on the "Gothic" Line and the final battle.

Fording the Musone river with the 3rd company - losses in the artillery and mortar units.

The German artillery gives no respite: luckily they do not have many munitions, but their precision is no joke!

Attack on Santa Maria Nuova, we occupy it at dawn. The danger of mines is deadly: it affects our morale.

I choose a ruined house as my observation post: Jesi is just below us! I hear someone calling me by name from the outside. I go out of the house to check, there is no one; at the same moment, four cannon-shots destroy the house completely. When I recount it, nobody will believe me (except my mother, perhaps).

July 19 - Attack on Casa Girolimini with the 2nd company. Mamma mia, what a hail of artillery and mortar whacks! Luckily, only a few losses. We assail the Tower of Jesi. "Bersaglieri" and "San Marco" are decimated. Only the very responsible employment of the 3rd "Alpini" Regiment prevents the "Piemonte" from paying a very high price.

The 1st company attacks Villa Guglielmi: my radio, the only one working, saves the situation (what a satisfaction!).

July 20 - The "Piemonte" occupies Jesi. A triumphal and touching welcome. I look for Andrea Marasca: he gives me a warm and wonderful hospitality. A short moment of domestic paradise: I think of my loved ones.

July 22 - We move with the battery to Montecarotto, Casa Antonelli, Hill 221. How many near misses and how many chickens! We ford the Misa and occupy Barbara. I replace Eraldo at the observation post.

At night, while we are going to the 1st company, someone calls us from a villa: we approach it with caution and find three "gentlewomen" from the north who have decided to cross the frontline. Immediate decision: no stops. I report the presence of suspicious persons to the Military Police. We leave right away, we are...on duty. The three gunners who are with me keep on grumbling for a couple of days. On observation and liaison patrol with the "old boys" of the "Monte Granero" alpine battalion. After fording the Nevola we enter Castelleone di Suasa. At S. Onofrio a German attack is crushed by our battery.

Thus, on September 25, 1944, at Piedimonte di Alice, ended a glorious and romantic epos, full of deeply-felt hopes. On the blood-stained roads of the Frontier of Liberty we had left 400 dead and about 1000 wounded, and spread the seed of moral and spiritual redemption which will have determinant effects on the reconstruction of the Italian Armed Forces.

Casa Primo Monte-Santa Lucia. From the rise of the Bella Luce cemetery, the Germans, defeated, respond with frequent salvoes. Motor column to Leccia: we change front!

We have some painful desertions: the men expected to go on leave. They are tired and worn out. There are strange rumors about German secret weapons. We replace the Poles in the sector of Acqualagna. We occupy Paravento. Some tasty geese and good wine console us for the hails of gunshots that for some days have kept us "revved up": this is a clear sign that we are approaching the new German defensive line, which will bar the access to the Po Valley.

August 6 - We reach Corridonia (Villa B., with a magnificent park). At last, the battery can rest and reorganize, together with the whole "Piemonte" battalion.

It is odd not to hear the "noise of the front". At times, too much silence is disturbing. We learn to find pleasure in little things: a shower, a conversation with "civilized people", a game of bowls with friends, a picnic with the girls under the chestnut-trees. Also the gunners are serene and relaxed. We feel the "northern wind" approaching.

August 10 - I leave on a motorbike with Eraldo for Riccione, which has just been occupied by the Poles. Incredible vicissitudes en route.

At Cattolica, we leave the motorcycle (seized up) and continue on foot. Eraldo cannot meet his family. They left months ago for Trieste. I am more fortunate and find my godmother and her husband; in Rimini we hear cannons again. My godmother has a letter from my family (I had not heard from them since last September), they are fairly well. I feel better.

September 17 - Goodbye, leisures of Corridonia. We leave for Piedimonte d'Alife: we are going to get British weapons and equipment.

The Italian Corps of Liberation is disbanded. Goodbye to the mules and the 75mm guns. All the battery gunners are asked: do you want to continue the war with the 11th field-artillery Regiment, or stay with the "Piemonte" as "Alpini" in the "covering fire" company? Very rapid consultation and unanimous answer: with the "Piemonte", towards Piedmont.

**SOME CONSIDERATIONS
OF A FIGHTER
IN THE C.I.L. OPERATIONS
IN 1944**

- After the heroic cycle of the 1st Motorized Group at Montelungo in 1943, the cycle of 1944, almost completely characterized by the Italian Corps of Liberation, acquires a more technical character, where planning, training, coordinated employment and inter-service cooperation begin to play their role satisfactorily. What the C.I.L. lacked was the continuity of logistic support: despite incredible efforts, C.I.L. logistics was a handicap for the Corps' movements and heavily affected its mobility and operational efficiency.

- In situations of serious interruptions in the road system, only units trained to move on foot and make continuous efforts for long periods of time can survive, provided they have an adequate logistic autonomy and the capability of using at best the local resources. In this picture, even in a dynamic phase more suitable for motorized units, the Alpine units confirmed their operational and logistic high reliability.

- A few men, well trained and resolute, can achieve tenfold greater results-- as compared with heavier and larger, but methodical and slow, units,-- operating mainly by surprise and from unexpected directions. Few but good ones, at night and in foggy weather, and from the less expected side, their success is assured.

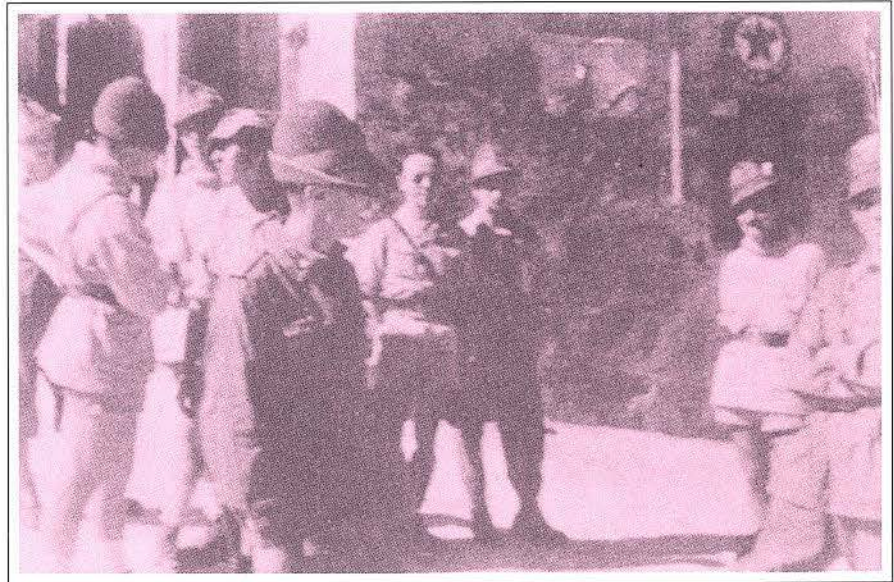
- We have always been commanded "with the heart rather than by the rank". Major Alberto Briatore, whose bark was worse than his bite, promised his "Alpini", before leaving for Cisternino, that he would do his utmost to take home all of them: he kept his promise. We left for the front only when the battalion reached a satisfactory degree of training: even

The Frontier of Liberty

WAR OF LIBERATION

1943 - 1945

August 1944 – Officers of the "Piemonte" battalion in Jesi.



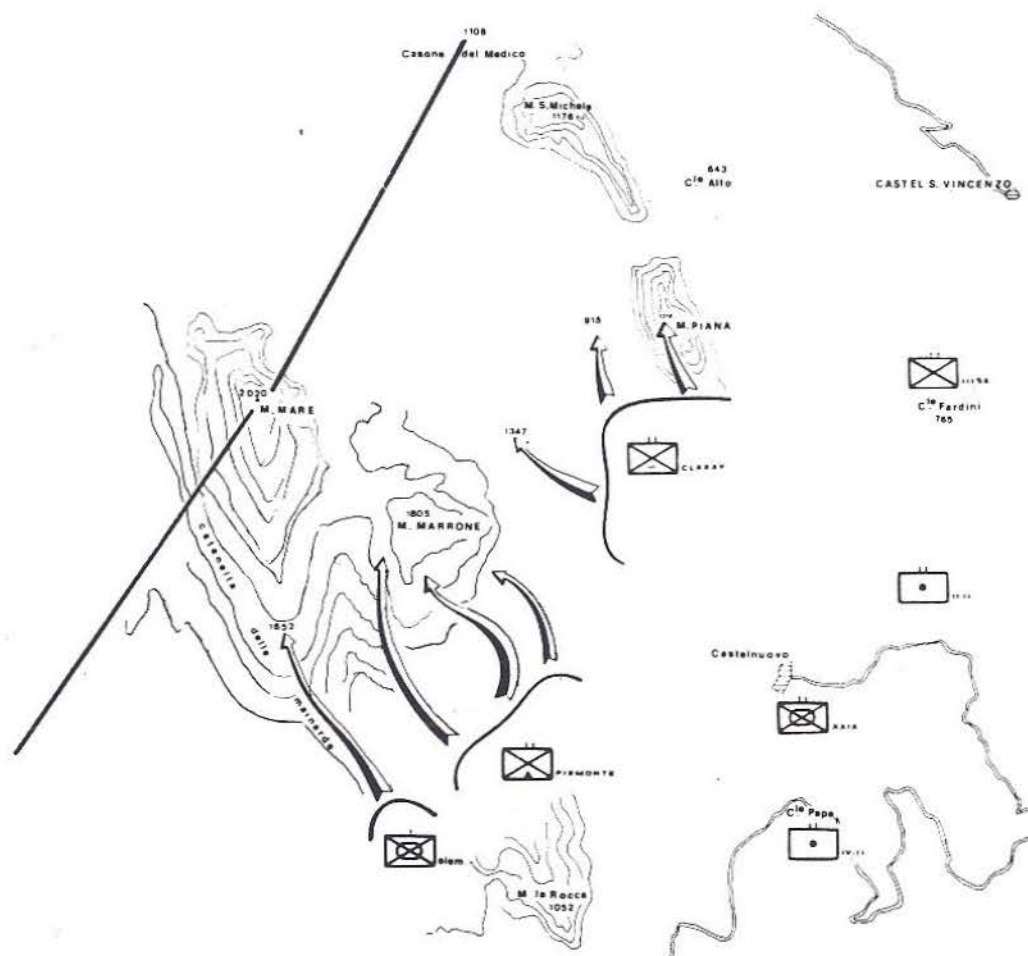
the shortest anticipation would have found us still psychologically immature and scarcely prepared. The battalion has always been employed "after due consideration"; no rash actions, no thoughtlessness, no action without the necessary and accurate organization. Puglia's "more sweat, less blood" has been fruitful.

- It is always necessary to tell the truth to the fighting men; one should never make promises if there is no certainty of keeping them. To promise someone a replacement to get some rest, and then send him to another hot sector, is like striking a tender sapling with a bill-hook. Defeatism and psychological warfare have an easy grip on a tired and demoralized person: a man falls a prey to panic when faced by obscure forces and unknown

weapons. Any "rumour" must be immediately confuted and neutralized.

Mines are a looming and obsessive threat which at times can become very conditioning. The same goes for the employment of chemical agents.

- Superficial or skin-deep training is not enough: training must be intense, repetitive and aimed at perfection, in order to have a reasonable guarantee of average behaviours even in situations of complete operational chaos. Better trained individuals (motivations being equal) hold out longer (and sometimes, five minutes longer than the enemy, is enough). The ultimate purpose of a good tactical training is to teach how to operate when and where others are panic-stricken.



OCCUPATION OF MONTE MARRONE

• The operational cycle of 1944 shaped men trained by the most terrible and unfortunately realistic "opposing-parties" exercise: war against German units consisting of veterans, well armed, dynamic and extremely mobile. In 1945, the men of the "Legnano" and "Folgore" Combat Groups were going to demonstrate very well that they were worthy keepers of the traditions of the "magnificent and prestigious" Italian Corps of Liberation.

FORTY YEARS LATER, IN 1984...

On March 31 they were on the slopes of Monte Marrone, to meet again and to remember.

They are bound together by a real a brotherly friendship, resistant to the assaults of time and distance. They were all over sixty. Thin hair, and white.

A glance, a few words, a handshake and a hug, some tears, the memory of the Fallen or of those who "went ahead", the nostalgia for young age, the melancholy of time going by.

They are bound by many little memories and they talk about them with simplicity and modesty. They look with fatherly pride at the "bocia", the young boys in arms of the "Julia", who have travelled again over the attack lines followed by the "Piemonte" forty years ago. These youngsters are living a better life also thanks to them, the "veci", the old ones.

All are proud and genuinely satisfied for having done something worth doing and for the certainty of having contributed, in different moments, to the spiritual recovery of their Motherland. For these simple and strong men, the words "Country, Duty, Solidarity" still have a meaning.

The Frontier of Liberty

WITH THE ITALIAN CORPS OF LIBERATION IN 1944





The Frontier of Liberty

WITH THE "LEGNANO" COMBAT GROUP IN 1945

**THE ITALIAN
COMBAT GROUPS OF 1945
IN THE WAKE OF THE
1ST MOTORIZED GROUP
OF 1943
AND OF THE ITALIAN CORPS
OF LIBERATION OF 1944**

In 1944, after obstinate requests and laborious discussions with the Allies, aimed at increasing the Italian contribution to the liberation of Italy from the Germans, our military authorities at last succeeded in obtaining the "green light" for the establishment of six Combat Groups. They were real Division-level Units, agile and well organized, equipped by the Allies with the same weapons, vehicles and materials of the British Divisions. Two of these groups, "Mantova" and "Piceno", came in too late for taking an active part in the battle. The "Cremona", "Friuli", "Folgore" and "Legnano" completed a short but intense period of training and, between January and March, were deployed with the Allied units: the first three with the British 8th Army, between the Senio river and the last slopes of the Apennines which descended gradually towards the Senio and the Santerno; the fourth Group joined the US 5th Army, in the upper valley of the Idice. The

Left.

February 6, 1945. A pictorial image of infantrymen of the "Cremona" 21st Regiment in a combat action.

Above.

The "Bersaglieri" of the "Legnano" Combat Group enter Bologna.

following April, when the Allied offensive against the German Armies in Italy resumed, our Combat Groups fought the final battle with decision and determination, against an enemy which, although worn-out and inferior in forces and equipment, was anything but willing to surrender. The "Cremona" shattered the enemy defences on the Senio and the Santerno, overcame the obstacles which the enemy and the terrain opposed to its advance, and reached Mestre and Venice; the "Friuli", "Folgore" and "Legnano", competing with each other in enthusiasm and valour, converged on Bologna and, after freeing the city, poured out north of the Po river, for the liberation of all Northern Italy, together with the forces of the Resistance, until the end of the operations in Italy.

Described like this, in a few lines, everything seems simple and smooth, but at the root of the constitution of the six Combat Groups there was an indescribable toil, with discussions, hopes, bitterness and disappointments, in a sea of objective and psychological difficulties. No Divisions were envisaged (like the Allies') but Combat Groups. The Groups were to be subordinate to the Allied Corps and not to one or two Italian Corps. And no armoured formations in the Groups!

We would have liked to get something more and better.

But did it really matter? We wanted to be on the front, at the Allies' side, to reaffirm the Italian presence in the War of Liberation, started by the glorious 1st Motorized Group and the bold Corps of Liberation. After a long and very hard war which was lost even if honourably fought, we wanted to express the will of redemption and active commitment of the Italian Army, till the complete liberation of the national territory and as a premise of the Nation's future reconstruction.

All Combat Groups worked with enthusiasm and high spirit of sacrifice, and were greatly appreciated by the Allies.

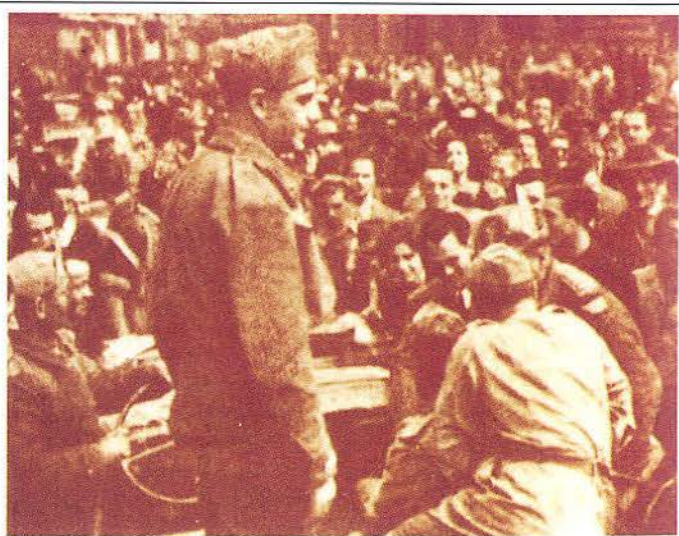
In particular, in this article I propose to recall my own experience with the "Legnano", one of the Combat Groups which, after an organizational transformation, were born of the Italian Corps of Liberation

FROM THE ITALIAN CORPS OF LIBERATION TO THE "LEGNANO" COMBAT GROUP

On September 24, 1944, the Italian Corps of Liberation which had

travelled up the Italian peninsula with enthusiasm and determination, alongside the Poles of General Anders, was disbanded and its units were transformed into the "Folgore" and "Legnano" Combat Groups. The C.I.L. had fought with honour, performing its tasks at the cost of painful losses and had deserved the appreciation and praise of the Allied High Commanders, who initially had not been very tender towards their former enemies. The men of the C.I.L. had reaffirmed their will to fight, in order to contribute to the liberation of the Italian territory. I must underline that, after eight months on uninterrupted operations, this Major Unit, without reserves, with no equipment and with very few vehicles, was really worn out: at the end of the offensive against the "Gothic" Line the men were dead beat. Therefore the provision that sent us to the rear-lines for the units' reconstruction was providential: new weapons, new equipment, British uniforms, and those strange helmets that for years had been called "frying pans" by a propaganda which had shown them worn, tilted rakishly to one side, by long-faced and wild-looking "Tommies". Everything was certainly stimulating and attractive: most of all the idea that we were going to get good weapons and, above all, munitions "without limitations."

Two moments of the liberation of Bologna by the "Legnano" Combat Group. On April 21, 1945, at 9:30 a.m., the "Bersaglieri" of the "Goito" battalion and the "Arditi" of the IX Assault Unit entered the city, welcomed with enthusiastic manifestations of joy.



Behind the lines for the reconstruction of the units (from the diary of a second lieutenant)

September 16 - Corridonia Zone. Back from the mule walk we find the news that tomorrow we go south - some grumbling - the few days in Corridonia have invigorated us - the population has been wonderful and generous - we feel really at home - we work late for the preparations - we say nostalgic goodbyes to friends (and girlfriends) till very late - some tears are shed.

September 17 - On motor column from Corridonia to Piedimonte d'Alife, on the slopes of the Matese range - it is pouring - we pitch our two-men tents in a sea of mud, missing the comforts of Corridonia.

September 19 - The gunners of the "Piemonte" battery are faced by a dilemma: to the 11th Artillery Regiment without feather or to the "Piemonte" covering-arms company with the feather? Very short plenum: unanimously, with the "Piemonte", towards Piedmont.

September 20-October 20 - Weather conditions extremely bad - alternation of rain and snow, with an icy wind coming from the Matese - intense training with the new weapons; it's tiring, we are always wet. Despite everything spirits are high. Our mules depart: in Monte Marrone and Castelnuovo they have done incredible things; during our advance on the Adriatic front we have never been short in ammunition and food, and more than once we have appeased the hunger of motorized comrades awaiting for supplies. Goodbye, dear friends, and thanks! Alvisio and Eraldo leave: they are reserve officers and are discharged at their own request. We, the regular officers, will continue our march towards the North! Eraldo leaves me a letter for his family, who are in a critical situation up North. "Fab", a stout and likeable lad from Abruzzi, arrives as reinforcement: he is going to command the covering-arms platoon. I will command the 76mm mortar platoon. I attended a short but intense course at a British unit and came first: they make it hard for us, with a training which is simple, essential, diabolically repetitive but very effective. The gun is plain and sturdy, the munitions are powerful and servicing the piece is easy. We are astonished at the number of vehicles assigned to the company: motorcycles, jeeps, light and medium trucks, tracked carriers; gasoline in floods. We all become expert drivers. We start seeing with our own eyes the "war without sparing" conducted by the Allies, with superabundance of logistic support and organization.

October 20-November 14 - Training continues very intense but stimulating - we fire with all portable, individual and collective, weapons: the men are excited and resolute. I am pleased with my platoon: with "with ten rapid-fire shots" we get a terrifying convergence of fire. The Boss says that I can be happy that my calibre has increased by 1 mm (from 75 to...76).

November 15-16 - In Rome to hand in the old material; goodbye, old 75/13, I leave you for "force majeure": now I am a mortar-man. A quick plunge into the Roman "life" with Carlo T.; ballerinas at the Sistina theatre, dinners at the Hostaria dell'Orso. In Rome very few people talk about the war, no one knows that Italian units are fighting at the front, which seems to be far away in time and space. I return to Piedimonte embittered.

The Frontier of Liberty

"Legnano" infantrymen fraternizing with the population.



November 17-18 - A trip to Naples: same impression as in Rome, but twice as strong. But now and then a distraction is all right. A chaotic but fascinating city.

November 19 - December 6. Incredible: in two months, we have changed from a mule-pack battery with 140 mules and four 75mm howitzers into a company with 1 Bren tracked platoon, 1 tracked platoon with four 76mm mortars, 1 platoon of 6lb A/T guns, 1 HQ platoon and 1 Svc Platoon, completely motorized. The best drivers of tracked vehicles are two boys from Val d'Aosta, Dialley and Dainé, who had never seen an engine before! The Allied Officers who come to observe our combat training leave saying: "Alpini very good soldiers". Advance notice of transfer to Manziana - Bracciano, north of Rome. We have no regrets about leaving this swamp! We leave again, resuming our march; we are carrying British weapons but our spirit and our "feather" are Italian.

December 7. I leave for Bracciano, as leader of an advance party. Let's hope we don't jump out of the frying pan into the fire. Cantonment very poor: but a mediocre cantonment is better than a good camp. There is snow on the ground and it goes on snowing. Strong and cold wind all the time. We continue our intense training together with the alpine companies. Between "panse lunghe" (long bellies) and "cunici" (rabbits) there is always a perfect understanding. We make some short trips to Rome, but in the evening we return tired and demoralized. This is our second sad Christmas away from our families: we busy ourselves a lot (but this war never ends!). We spend Christmas all together in Bracciano, with some nostalgic singing. Our battery is a big family where we have been living for more than a year, suffering, fighting and rejoicing together. Risks and hardships are a very effective cement. New Year 1945 and Epiphany: at B.'s home and great ball at the Italian Alpine Club. Pleasant diversions.

January 8. I leave for Chianti (enticing name) as leader of an advance-party (Boss says I

am an expert now). The "Piemonte" is assigned the area of Radda, Vagliagli, Castellina. The battery (for me it is still a battery, no matter what the new battalion Commander, Maj. Rossetti - who has replaced the old "Chief White Feather" Briatore - may say) settles at Scopeto, a beautiful Tuscan country villa surrounded by rural buildings. Good accommodation. Intense tactical training. Firing and camouflage training with British instructors; the British training method is systematic and stern; the instructor may be a simple corporal, but he is like a Czar, and before him all jump like springs. The Chianti area is wonderful; we visit villas and castles and are cordially invited by Baron Ricasoli and his family. The Chianti people are genuine and extrovert: they welcome us into their farms like sons or brothers. In the evening these patriarchal families gather around the fireplace and the head of the family tells very brilliant and saucy stories using the appropriate words: we think we are listening to Boccaccio or Sacchetti. Oftentimes some "naughty" words come up and everybody laughs loudly, children included. For us Piedmontese this is a different and cozy world, which soothes our worries about the lack of news from the North, where things are going rather badly, between bombings and roundups. We hear that Italian troops (Alpini?) fighting with the Germans have attacked in upper Garfagnana, routing the Brazilians who where in charge of that sector; I am not sorry about this episode (what a chauvinist!), but then I think that we could find them before us when we go to the front, goodness knows where: Italians against Italians, what a tragedy! Our landlords at Scopeto are extremely hospitable and generous: we sing, dance and are very serene. Chianti is making us fall into bad habits. Some short trips to Siena: it's a pearl! But we smell a scent of departure: we are about to go to the front. We feel in good form and properly trained. Morale is high. But, unlike a year ago, in these last six months the men have "heard" and "seen" that south of Florence nobody cares about the war and the Italian Combat Groups which are preparing to fight: in short, we would like to feel the support of a stronger national consensus.

THE "LEGNANO" RETURNS TO THE FRONT LINE

Between September 1944 and February 1945, the "Legnano", under the energetic command of General Umberto Utili, became a combat-ready operational unit and moved from Piedimonte d'Alife to the Manziana-Bracciano-Triolo area and later to Radda and Castellina in Chianti. From the logistic and tactical point of view, the Group was subordinate to the British 8th Army.

On February 13, the "Legnano" is placed under the operational command of the US 5th Army, with the notice of future employment by March 15, in a mountain and hilly area and with defensive tasks. Target practice, tactical and motor column exercises put the finishing touch to the Group's training.

The Italian Combat Groups are already on the Gothic Line: the "Cremona" (since January), "Friuli" (since February) and "Folgore" employed at the beginning of March.

The "Legnano" is organized as follows:

- Headquarters (with 2 "Carabinieri" mixed sections);
- 68th Infantry Regiment, with 2 Infantry battalions and 1 assault battalion (Col Moschin), 176mm mortar company and one 6lb A/T company;
- Special Infantry Regiment, with 2 "Alpini" battalions ("Piemonte" and "Aquila"), 1 "Bersaglieri" battalion ("Goito"), one 76mm mortar company and one 6lb cannon company;
- 11th Artillery Regiment, with four 25lb battalions, one A/T 17lb battalion, 1 A/A 40mm light battalion;
- LI mixed Engineer battalion;
- Services (1 Medical Section and 2 Field Hospitals, 1 transport and supply company, RR unit, workshops).

On March 15 the "Legnano" moves from Chianti to the assembly area, north of the Appenine watershed (Piancaldoli, La Martina, Tre Poggioli). On March 17 the Group joins the US II Corps and deploys in the Idice sector, between the Indian 10th Division and the

British 8th Army to the right and the US 91st Division to the left. Thus the "Legnano" is deployed exactly on the sensitive area of connection between the US 5th Army and the British 8th Army. The movement takes place with "remarkable regularity and order" (the Germans will notice it only after several days) and ends on March 23. The formation of the "Legnano", about 10 km wide, coincides with the line reached by the Allies with the offensive operations of the preceding year.

The advanced positions were altogether unfavourable, either because they were dominated and observed by the German strongholds or because they were exposed and very close to the enemy positions. They were neither significant for a valid defence nor as bases for re-launching an offensive. The defence was based on strongholds, with large intervals which were mined and covered by fire. The Italian infantry units were in close contact with the Germans', especially at Pizzano; Casa Collina, Poggio: all the advanced area was within the range of the German machine-guns which opened fire only when they considered it convenient, at the longest possible range of the weapons (with considerable effects – also psychological). The German 305th Infantry Division was deployed opposite the "Legnano", with a main defensive line of strongholds going from 500 m to 1 km behind the line of the outposts. Some German strongholds were so close to our advanced positions that large concentrations of artillery fire were impossible for obvious safety reasons. The German observation was perfectly organized and so were their field fortifications (some of them made of concrete), as we were going to find out during the final advance. There were many minefields and explosive traps. Their mortar emplacements were excellent. Frequent counter-slope fire centres. In short, a perfectly organized and difficult terrain. The enemy's weak points were: low

morale, incomplete units, scarce munitions, air and land inferiority. (What a difference from their dynamism and fighting spirit on the Gustav Line and in the delaying manoeuvre between the "Gustav" and "Gothic" Lines!).

Our patrols start a vigorous activity already on the first night; the first skirmishes take place in front of the German positions of Parrocchia di Vignale and Ca' di Razzone: we could smell the spring offensive approaching.

The "Alpini", on the front line from the very beginning, are immediately heavily engaged by an enemy who, albeit strategically on the defensive, operates with highly dynamic tactical concepts: the Germans' intense offensive patrolling is tenaciously opposed by the "Alpini" and, as the days go by, loses its bite and the "black feathers" gain full control of no-man's-land. During one of these patrols, the Commander of the "Aquila" battalion, Major Augusto De Cobelli is killed. He will be awarded a posthumous Gold Medal for Military Valour. General Utili, Commander of the "Legnano", wrote: "I thank him for having sealed with his blood the traditional place of honour of the Italian Officers".

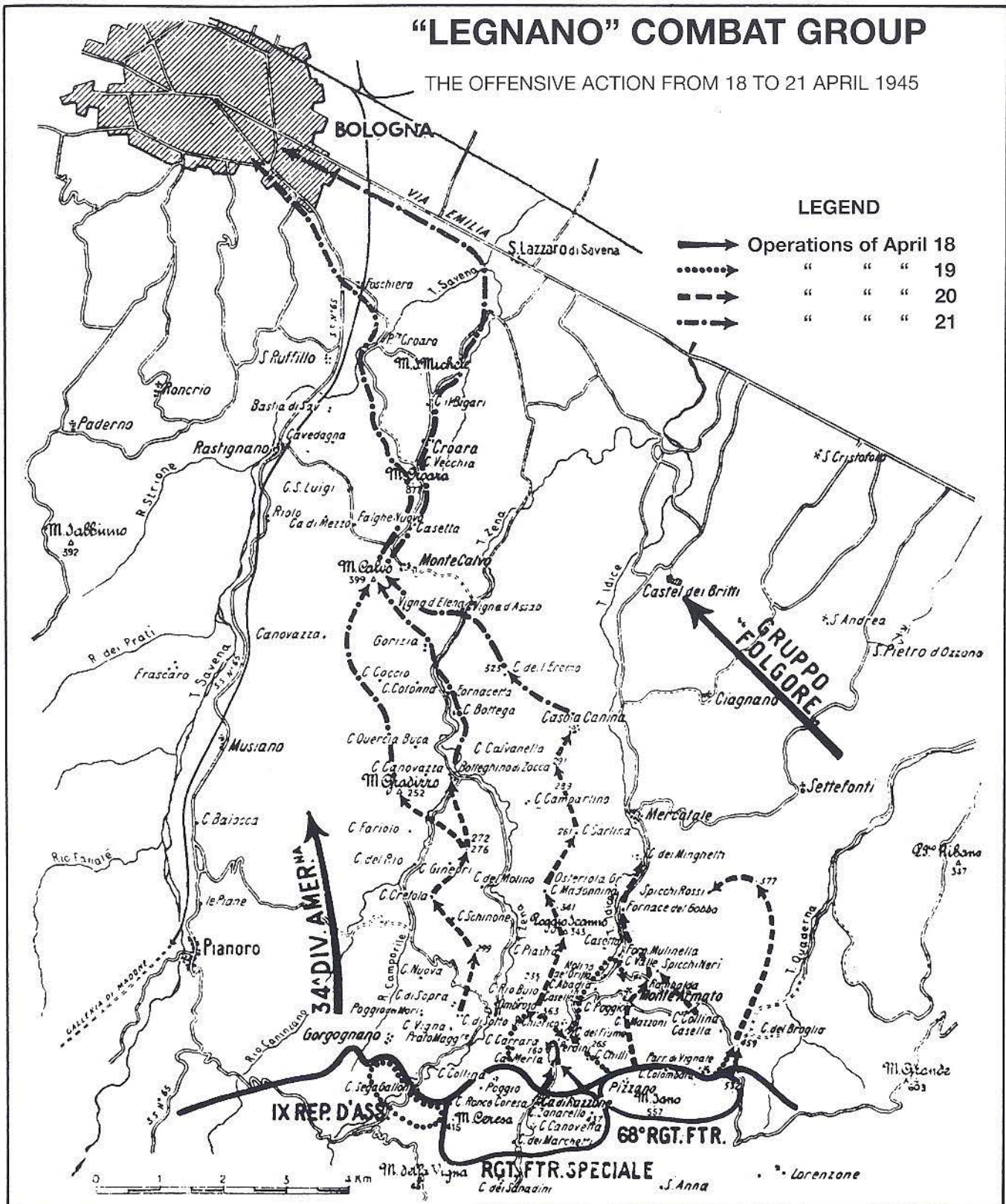
THE SPRING OFFENSIVE AGAINST THE "GOTHIC" LINE AND THE CONQUEST OF BOLOGNA

On March 25 the whole artillery started its concert, with a "gradual increase in the number of targets". These pounding actions lasted until April 7, with an enormous employment of ammunition; starting from that date, every night – always at different times – there was an out-and-out artillery preparation, together with simulated infantry attacks (made by reinforced company-level units) aimed at deceiving the enemy about the possible D-day and H-hour.

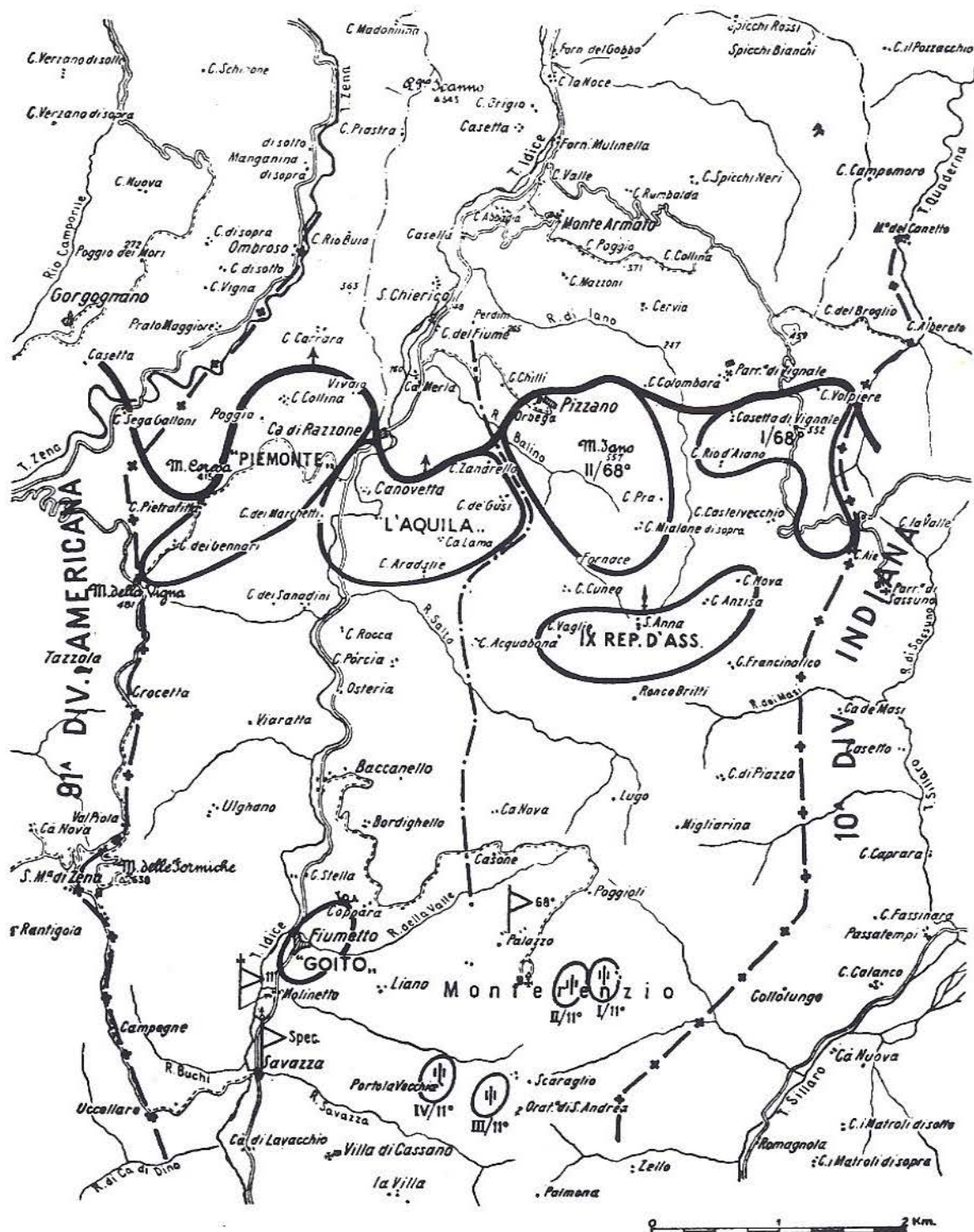
“LEGNANO” COMBAT GROUP

LEGEND

 Operations of April 18
 " " " 19
 " " " 20
 " " " 21



“LEGNANO” COMBAT GROUP DEPLOYMENT ON MARCH 23, 1945



On D-day the US II Corps' task was to attack with four infantry Divisions, and the "Legnano" in the first echelon, keeping astride Road 65 on its way to Bologna, and develop its action from west to east. Within this operational picture, the "Legnano" was initially to contribute with its fire to the action of the US 34th Division (which was on the Group's left, having replaced the 82nd Division), protect the left flank of the II Corps and provide a junction between the US 5th Army and the British 8th Army. Later, the "Legnano" was to take Hill 363 and continue, protecting the right flank of the II Corps with successive adjustments of the "Contact front".

Within this framework, on April 10, the 68th Infantry Regiment successfully launched two simulated attacks on Parrocchia di Vignale and Hill 459 with 2 companies of "Arditi" from the "Col Moschin" battalion; the support fire from artillery, mortars and tanks was very impressive. The whole action deserved the appreciation of General Keyers, Commander of the US II Corps.

On April 16, at 3 a.m., the US 34th Division attacked Poggio dei Mori and Mt Arnigo, which was taken on the 18th with the fire support of the "Legnano"; at the same time, the "Aquila" battalion made raids on Ca' Merla, and the 68th Regt did the same against Hill 459.

We were informed that the British 8th Army was advancing in the plain of Romagna and that the "Cremona", "Friuli" and "Folgore" Combat Groups, deployed in that sector, had been very successful. Also the US 5th Army, with a gradual offensive from west to east with the 91st, 88th and 34th Divisions, had succeeded in "breaking the crust" and had made good progress.

Now the "Legnano" comes into play and General Utili gives the go-ahead on April 19: the first to depart are the "Alpini" of the "Piemonte", who launch an epic assault on hill 363, which is conquered in a bound with hand grenades and bayonets,

The Frontier of Liberty

April 21, 1945. The "Legnano" enters Bologna, merrily welcomed by the population.



while the stronghold is still enveloped in the smoke caused by the bursts of the last massive concentration of fire, which has surprised many Germans still inside the shelters.

The "Aquila" moves towards C. del Fiume and San Chierico; the 68th attacks Roccioni di Pizzano and hill 459, which are defended with clenched teeth by the German garrison. And then, forward: the order is to continue exerting the most vigorous pressure on the enemy, without losing contact. Forward, "Bersaglieri" of the "Goito", forward, "Arditi" of the IX battalion! To Bologna! Poggio Scanno and Casola Canina fall in the hands of the "Bersaglieri", "Monte Gradizzo" is taken by the "Arditi", while the "Aquila" moves towards Mercatale and the 68th heads for hill 377. In the evening of the 20th, our advanced patrols take up positions on the hills overlooking the longed-for city of Bologna, which had been abandoned by the German units during the night.

Forward, men of the "Legnano" Special Regiment! On April 2, at 9:30 a.m., the "Bersaglieri" of the "Goito" and the "Arditi" of the IX assault unit enter Bologna. The city, anxious about its liberation, has spent a passionate vigil at arms and welcomes with wholehearted enthusiasm our soldiers and the Allied Forces. Immediately after, also the "Alpini" of the "Piemonte" enter the city; they had been overtaken on hill 363, and then launched in a hectic motorized gallop towards the final objective. The "Aquila" battalion arrives in the afternoon, after an exhausting march. All the other units of the "Legnano" converge on Bologna, while the Germans, defeated, withdraw beyond the Po river, pursued and attacked by the men of the Resistance who, since the 23rd, date of the general insurrection, had been in action to hasten the liberation of Northern Italy.

On April 23, the "Legnano" (which was ready to move north behind the US 91st and 88th Divisions)

is released from the II Corps and joins the US 5th Army, with the temporary responsibility of maintaining public order in Bologna. The stop is very short: on April 27, the Group begins to move towards Brescia, under the operational command of the US IV Corps.

Brescia is liberated on April 29 by a tactical Group ("Goito", 1st bn of the 68th Regt, IX Assault unit, 1 US tank company), with support of two artillery battalions.

"Goito" and "Aquila" occupy Bergamo on April 30, while one company of the IX unit, together with partisans and Americans, wipes out a barricaded German company at Ponti sul Mincio.

On May 1, the 143rd company of the "Aquila" and the 91st US cavalry squadron head for Pavia to eliminate a large group of Germans, and then goes on to Alessandria, Asti and Torino, which is reached in the afternoon of May 2, just a few hours after the 4th Company of the "Piemonte" which converged from Milano, Novara and Vercelli.

Skirmishes and round-ups are conducted by company-level units at Como, Edolo, Passo del Tonale, Sarnico, Val Sabbia (last encounter: May 2).

In the short (40 days) operational cycle the "Legnano" Group, albeit not engaged in decisive actions (certainly it did not have the strength for conducting major break-through operations), operated with professionalism and determination, earning the Allied Commanders' praise and appreciation.

General Clark, Commander of the XV Army Group, closed with these words a letter of congratulations addressed to General Utili "...It was a privilege to have you with us in the XV Army Group. My heartfelt thanks...".

In those forty days, the "Legnano" Combat Group inherited the legacy of the 1st Motorized Group and the Italian Corps of Liberation – a legacy of sacrifices, valour and painful losses – taking the banner of liberation up to the borders of our Motherland.

On the Bologna frontline and beyond (from the diary of a second lieutenant)

March 13, 1945. Advance party, as usual. Good-bye, gentle hills of Chianti, generous, witty and hospitable people. Back to fighting. From Florence to the Apennines – Futa and Raticosa Passes – there are heaps of munitions, materials, fuel, tracked vehicles. Piancaldo, Val del Seleno (assembly area). We are in the Po basin: we are all a little excited; we can hear, far away, the grumbling of the artillery.

March 15-16. Night reconnaissance in Valle Idice – we are going to replace some American units – we make arrangements and accords (but it is so difficult to understand each other!).

March 17. On the front line with my mortar platoon at Case Croce – today is my twenty-first birthday – the soldiers uncork the "spumante", I am moved. The Germans send us some time-shells: after six months in the deep rear lines we had lost the habit.

March 20. Everything is organized. We are well entrenched and concealed. Above the horizon we can spot San Luca, above Bologna. – we toast to a rapid occupation of the city, to the end of the war, to our return home: we feel spring in the air. Before us, in Val Zena, there are no infantrymen: we are frontline mortar-men! I'll send night patrols.

March 24. A visit by Col Scarpa, Commander of the Special Regiment. On his way up to Casa Croce, the Germans shot at him with machine-guns; he talks to us in a moving way. A great Commander!

March 25. Today we start "rapid fire" to deceive the Germans about the beginning of the offensive: all guns at the same time for 10 minutes, at maximum speed: a dramatic but fascinating performance. The sky is lit by hundreds of flashes, it is like a terrible thunderstorm. I would not like to be on the other side. It will go on like this until the beginning of the general offensive. The last days also airplanes, mortars and tanks will intervene.

April 10. The Val Zena patrol has found in no-man's-land a small depot of American tinned food (with cigarettes): we have established a permanent advanced garrison! In twenty days we fired almost 7000 mortar shells! The gunners could fire blindfold!

CONCLUSION

After the end of the war in Italy, we looked back on the road covered since September 8, 1943 when at Bari's Halting Command, we were convulsively reached by the news of the armistice: in the space of a few days we had witnessed the material

April 11. As of tonight we join the "great night concerto": the offensive is approaching.

April 12. Five American tanks appeared at the edge behind our firing-line, to take part in the great concert. After firing they left, and we got a couple of answering salvoes from the Germans: what a nice service! A small ammunition depot caught fire, but the gunners intervened immediately with great dedication.

April 15. Arrival of about ten 75mm German shells which scatter propaganda leaflets in English, extolling the victory of Nazism. They really must be nearly finished! There are rumours about V2 launching pads in the Po Valley: we talk about them, but they don't scare us anymore.

April 16. At 3 a.m. the Americans of the 34th Division, on our left, attacked in a hell of fire. I followed from the observatory the attack against the Cemetery of Gorgognano: a copybook job! First artillery and mortars, followed by tank fire at close distance up to the last minute, then the infantry jumped in: a very good action; and with very few losses, I believe.

April 18. At Casa Marchetti, Federico Gasca, who replaced Tandoj at the cannon platoon is hit on the head by a fragment. I hope it is not serious. Hard fighting still going on in the American sector. We also intervene, both during the day and at night-time.

April 19. The "Alpini" made a raging attack against Hill 363, and conquered it. Wonderful as usual! Also the mortar-men have done well. We leave, on to Bologna. No food, no sleep. The anxiety about the great event absorbs all thoughts, all energy.

April 21. At 12 o'clock we enter a delirious but still incredulous Bologna. Feelings, scenes, episodes, faces, tears, embraces, shouts, kisses, confusion: there are no words capable of describing the entrance of the Allies and of us Italians in Bologna! And the days we spent in the city!

April 27-May 2. After a short duty trip to Chianti, we leave for Brescia with the "Piemonte" battalion, and proceed to Bergamo. On May 2, the 4th company is detached to Torino – we arrive at Piazza Castello at 5:30 p.m. I had left Torino at the end of August 1943. I meet my family, after twenty-one months of absence: no comments. The war in Italy is over! Now we must "pull up our breeches" and start the reconstruction of our Country.

and spiritual collapse of Italy and its Armed Forces; a fall so dramatic that it seemed complete and hopeless. But our people's capability of endurance and recovery re-emerged, at first in an incoherent and dispersed way, and later with a greater aggregative force. And while a certain propaganda was saying that

the very thought of having Italian units fight at the Allies' side was pure folly, in December 1943 the boys of the 1st Motorized Group were dying on the slopes of Monte Lungo for the redemption of the Motherland, and in 1944 the contribution increased month after month thanks to the Italian Corps of Liberation. Four Combat Groups followed, and in April and May 1945 they stormed into the Po Valley with the Allied Divisions, raising the Italian Tricolour on the passes of the alpine watershed, while the ships of the Italian Navy ploughed again through the waves of the Mediterranean and the Italian aircraft controlled the national space.

Twenty months do not seem much, if seen through the rear-window mirror of man's memory, nevertheless "we found it long" – as they say in Piedmont – to us it was an eternity. Perhaps mostly because of the long separation from our families, with no possibility of exchanging news. For a psychologist it would be easy to describe this phenomenon with technical words. We only knew that the individual and collective barometer of mood usually read black. Act to avoid thinking, that was our remedy.

How many things did we learn during those twenty months!

The first thing was that an individual or a community should never give in: even the most dramatic situation can always be reversed if you don't give up. As our Piedmontese artillerymen used to say in the most difficult moments: "Let's pull up our breeches, lads!"

The second was that the heroic and romantic war belonged to the past: we immediately realized that war is planning and programming, superabundance of everything and not scarcity, organization and industrial effort, cooperation at every level and in any form, and also a common will to achieve the goal.

We immediately verified that modern weapons, ammunition and equipment are a formidable multiplier of grit and drive. We soon understood that the operational

The Frontier of Liberty

effectiveness is the reciprocal interaction of five fundamental factors:

first: physically and spiritually prepared men who enjoy the consent of the community they have to defend;

second: collective and individual training, always in cooperation and in an environment as realistic as possible;

third: armament and equipment which must be functional, simple, strong and modern;

fourth: trained reserves and logistic stocks, to give continuity to the combat effort;

fifth: reliable and redundant command-and-control capability. We also understood that neglecting even only one of these five factors could jeopardize, if not totally annul, the entire operational efficiency.

The third was that war evolves towards increasingly fractioned and episodic forms, where the task is easier for the platoon, company or battalion Commanders who have indeed organizational capabilities, but must also be able to interpret the directives they get and to operate with the "technique of the task", with initiative and independence, in an operational picture ever more fluid, rapid and complicated. In view of this, to conclude, we go back for a moment to the attack of Hill 363.

"We come to the spring offensive of 1945 and, in the comprehensive picture of the action, the "special Regiment" is entrusted with the task of conquering the famous Hill 363, a summit dominating the Idice and Zena valleys, transformed by the Germans into a frightening stronghold, a junction between the 14th and the 10 Army. The "Goito" battalion is chosen for conquering the hill, but on April 19 the play of the unexpected events that always dominates a battle suddenly assigns the difficult task to the "Alpini" of the

"Piemonte", who for a month have been facing the dominant positions of the "363", enduring the intense fire of automatic weapons. The 2nd company of the "Piemonte" moves, attacks, breaks in, stops in a storm of fire. Everybody is on edge: what's happening? All of a sudden, the "Drake" (that is the moniker the Alpini had given to their Commander) asks for ten minutes more of rapid fire and then the immediate lengthening of its range. After as many minutes, which are like years, a laconic communication arrives: "stronghold taken". The action on Hill 363 has been an example of timeliness and synchronism, of capability, initiative and decision.

While the fragments of the last volleys were still rumbling in the air, the Alpini stormed the position with hand grenades, surprising the bulk of the defenders inside the shelters; short but fierce hand-to-hand struggles followed, made with such vehemence that the enemies, resolute as they were, were forced to surrender. A lightning breakthrough deep inside the position, which nipped in the bud any attempt to counterattack. Seventy prisoners (including the Commander of the stronghold). The way towards the plain is open".

Thank you, Men of the War of Liberation. Your sacrifices of yesterday substantiate and nourish our present mission, and give us the force to envision with optimism the future of our Country. This is what we believe we have learnt, and this is what we would like to hand down to our successors, together with the idea that the frontier of liberty is still open and must be defended with the commitment of yesterday, in order to give our children, and to the children of our children, a long, free and secure peace.

**Lieutenant General,
former Commander,
LANDSOUTH*

UNITS OF THE 1ST MOTORIZED GROUP, THE ITALIAN CORPS DECORATED FOR MILITARY VALOUR IN

GOLD MEDAL

67TH "LEGNANO" MOTORIZED INFANTRY REGIMENT

"First Italian Combat Flag in the War of Liberation, it waved in the bloody fight for the conquest of Monte Lungo, among memorable deeds of heroism and sacrifice against a very strong enemy and on a difficult terrain. A symbol of supreme devotion to the resurrection of the Motherland, it fluttered, victorious, with the Allied vanguards on the way to Rome. – Monte Lungo, December 8, 1943 – Rome, June 5, 1944".

SILVER MEDAL

68TH "LEGNANO" INFANTRY REGIMENT AND "LEGNANO" COMBAT GROUP

"The only infantry regiment with the difficult and honorific task of representing the Italian infantry in the ranks of the Allied armies during the entire cycle of the war for the liberation of Italy. Very tough in defence and vehement in attack, in fourteen months of very hard war-operations, it definitely dominated the enemy in all battlefields, paying a generous blood tribute to redeem Italy's destiny. It crushed the obstinate enemy resistance on the Musone river with overwhelming force, giving a decisive contribution to the battle for the encirclement of the defences of Ancona. After hard operations on the central Apennines, it took its flag to the liberated city of Bologna and, with indomitable ardour, it pursued the German Army beyond the Po river, routing the enemy from the last pockets of resistance. It re-consecrated, against the age-old enemy of Italy, the glory of the Piave and once more luminously demonstrated how generous are the impulses which drive the Italian people when they fight for the strength of an idea. – War for the Liberation of Italy, February 1944 – May 1945".

IX ASSAULT UNIT

"During several months of war it gave constant proof of combativeness and audacity. In the course of an offensive action launched against an exposed flank, it developed its manoeuvre with swiftness, decision and energy, succeeding in surprising and disarranging the German formation. Suddenly called to carry out another important task, the unit entered the battle with a splendid dash and, when the outcome of the battle was still uncertain, impetuously broke the enemy deployment and, after an audacious and fragmented close-contact fight, at night occupied all the objectives. Later, it chased the enemy units, giving them no respite. An excellent instrument for war, flexible, tough, very proud and generous, worthy of the legacy of the refulgent traditions linked to its name. – Colli a Volturmo – Guardiaagrele – Cingoli – Musone – Esino, February 11 – July 25, 1944".

SILVER MEDAL

"NEMBO" PARATROOPER REGIMENT

"In the course of a hard campaign, the Regiment stood up to a ruthless enemy who, owing to his atavistic warlike qualities and the sense of desperation for the inevitable end, was particularly obstinate and firm. Many patrol actions and surprise attacks, conducted with unequalled boldness at the heart of very strong enemy positions, had the imprint of the generous and overwhelming ardour of its men. In a very tough offensive action against enemy paratrooper units it conquered, in a violent bayonet and hand-grenade fighting, a strongly organized inhabited area, defended to the end by a determined enemy, overcome only by the irresistible valour of the Regiment's men. In a very brilliant and risky action conducted by paratroopers launched on the enemy rear-lines, it spread panic and terror, capturing more than 1300 prisoners and a large amount of war material. A real synthesis of the best virtues of the Italian paratroopers, it linked its name to the most refulgent glories of the Paratroopers. – Tossignano, March – April 1945 – C. Grizzano, April 19, 1945 – Poggio Rusco, April 23, 1945".

3RD "BERSAGLIERI" REGIMENT, FOR THE "GOITO" BATTALION

"It assembled the men from all the "Bersaglieri" Regiments, thus representing the feats of every "Crimson Badge" in the War of Liberation: the 51st battalion of the 1st Motorized Group, with the heroic holocaust of the reserve cadets at Monte Lungo; 29th and 30th battalion and 1st motorcycle company of the C.I.L., which valiantly defended Monte Marrone and the Mainarde, and sprang on Monte Mare with a lion-like jump, who fought valiantly at Monte Granale di Iesi, chased the enemy like lightning at Urbino and Urbana; "Goito" battalion of the "Legnano" Group, which sacrificed its fearless vanguards on Poggio Scanno. From Cassino to Bologna, always equal to the Corps' prestigious traditions, with vehement ardour and generous, winged boldness. Liberation Campaign, December 6, 1943 – April 30, 1945".

4TH "ALPINI" REGIMENT, FOR THE "PIEMONTE" BATTALION

"Constituted with the members of the "Taurinense" Alpine Division which, from the Adriatic ports of the Balkans succeeded in adventurously reaching Puglia after the armistice, it took part in the whole war of liberation, always reconfirming the fearless character of its mountaineers. To the perennial glory of our Armed Forces it offered two unequalled examples of perfect fusion of skill, valour and fortune: first at Monte Marrone, whose steep face was climbed by surprise and heroically defended on the edge of the ravine at the back; then on Hill 363 of Valle Idice, which was seized from the enemy with a darting and lightning-swift thrust, breaking the hinge of the two German Armies in Italy and overflowing towards Bologna. – Liberation Campaign, March 18, 1944 – May 8, 1945".

OF LIBERATION AND THE "LEGNANO" COMBAT GROUP THE WAR OF LIBERATION (1943 – 1945)

SILVER MEDAL

8TH "ALPINI" REGIMENT, FOR THE "AQUILA" BATTALION

"Revived by a generous impulse of the proud people of the Abruzzi, it mixed intrepid veterans and young fervent recruits, and took part in the final phase of the war of liberation, renewing its radiant laurels. Unswerving in the defence of an important, rough and exposed sector, it took moral advantage over the enemy in a relentless and wearing close-contact trench warfare, and sprang to the attack with a superb dash, routing the enemy and inexorably pressing them up the borders of the Country. – Valle Idice – Bologna – Bolzano, March 20 – May 3, 1945".

IX ASSAULT UNIT

"A veteran unit of the war of liberation, it took part with inexhaustible ardour in the breaking-through battle on the Bologna Apennines, giving a decisive contribution to the city's liberation. With heroic vehemence it bent, smashed and crushed the fanatic resistance of tough German units, deserving the admiration of the Allied units fighting at its side. – War for the liberation of Italy, March 20 – April 30, 1945".

11TH "LEGNANO" ARTILLERY REGIMENT

"Established immediately after the armistice, it was the only unit which had the superb privilege of participating, without interruption, in the whole war of liberation, from Monte Lungo to the successful conclusion of the struggle. In a period characterized by the strain of disconcerting anxiety, of hard and protracted operational effort and a daily overcoming of all kinds of material difficulties, the Regiment maintained an exemplary intangible formal line, a religious sense of duty and an exceptional cohesion. With the technical perfection of its procedures and the daring manoeuvres of its units, guided by audacity of impulse and firmness of heart, it offered, always and everywhere, an unequalled contribution, in attack and defence, to the success of the infantry units. Liberation Campaign, December 6, 1943 – April 30, 1945".

ENGINEER CORPS, FOR THE ENGINEER BATTALION OF THE "LEGNANO" DIVISION

"The only engineer battalion with the honour of representing its Corps from Monte Lungo to Bologna, from the first to the last day of the war of liberation. Hard-working, ardent and firm in performing all its tasks, the battalion launched its sapper patrols, before the infantrymen, into the mortal snare of the minefields, offering its victims with heroic persistence, one after the other, until the passages were open. Under fire, faithful to its duty, it reopened roads, repaired destroyed bridges and connected headquarters with wires and radios. During seventeen months of hard and protracted toil, it gave, with generous abnegation, a high contribution to the success of our arms and to the proud assertion of our will of redemption. – Liberation Campaign, December 6, 1943 – April 30, 1945".

BRONZE MEDAL

"MONTE GRANERO" ALPINI BATTALION – DEPOT, 3RD ALPINI REGIMENT – MOBILIZATION CENTRE, "PINEROLO" BATTALION

"In the dramatic situation prevailing with the conclusion of the armistice, it engaged without hesitation the new but traditional enemy and, together with other units, attacked an enemy garrison, forcing it to surrender after a short but violent struggle. Although constituted by men from older contingents who, after the liberation of Southern Italy, had the right to be discharged, it accepted to join the Italian Corps of Liberation and took part in the pursuit of the enemy, from Abruzzi to the Gothic Line, distinguishing itself for its reliability and serene determination. The unit stood out for its audacity and courage in overwhelming the successive enemy defences and for its steadfastness in repelling all their counteroffensives. – Quenza (Corsica), September 15, 1943 – Abruzzi – Marche, June – September 1944".

CROSS FOR MILITARY VALOUR

184TH "NEMBO" PARATROOPER REGIMENT

"Competing in combativeness and constancy with the other Regiment of the Division, engaged in a hard and decisive attack, it contributed to the action together with a reserve battalion and with another unit originally destined to engage the enemy at the back. With the former, it took part in a succession of attacks and counterattacks and developed the action of the latter with a daring dash, knowing that its effort could not be supported in any way, and trusting only in the motto of the Italian paratroopers: "Our heart is our reserve". The enemy was confused, and the paratroopers' vigilant patrols were the first to hoist the Tricolour on the hard-won objective when the enemy, in order to escape from a hopeless grip, under cover of darkness decided to break contact and give up the fight. Thus a glorious day for the Italian arms and the Italian paratroopers was sanctioned by a brilliant and tangible success. – Filottrano, July 8 – 9, 1944".





Lieutenant General Giorgio Donati attended Rome Military School and Turin Artillery and Engineer Academy. After his commission, he participated in the War of Liberation and, with the rank of 2nd Lieutenant, was the leader of patrols and mortar platoons with the "Piemonte" Alpine battalion of the Italian Corps of Liberation and, later, with the "Legnano" Combat Group.

In 1944 he was wounded in combat and received a Solemn Mention for his valour during the action at Val Canneto (National Park of the Abruzzi).

After the war and until 1955 he served in Alto Adige, as First

Lieutenant and Captain, with the "Bergamo" and "Vicenza" mountain-artillery battalions. Gen Donati attended the War College and the Joint Staffs Institute, as well as many other courses, both in Italy and within NATO.

As General Staff Officer, he held many important positions, such as: Chief, Training and Manoeuvre Section, LANDSOUTH (1961-65); Chief of Staff, "Tridentina" Alpine Brigade (1965-69); Chief, Training Office, LANDSOUTH (1971-73); Chief of Staff, V Territorial Command (1975-76); Chief of Staff, LANDSOUTH (1976-80).

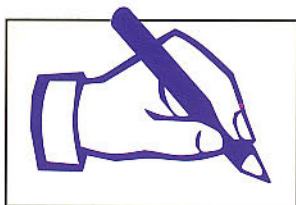
He commanded the "Susa" Artillery battalion of the "Taurinense"

Alpine Brigade, the 3rd "Julia" mountain-artillery Regiment and the "Cadore" Alpine Brigade.

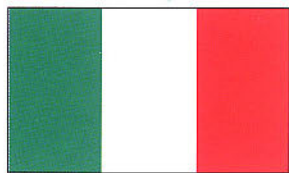
Promoted to the rank of Lieutenant General, Gen. Donati commanded the 4th Alpine Corps and, afterwards, the North-Eastern Military Region. On April 30, 1983, he was appointed Commander of the Allied Land Forces Southern Europe (LANDSOUTH).

Lt Gen. Giorgio Donati has been awarded the Gold Medal for Long Command, two Crosses for War Merit, the "Mauriziana" Medal and the Portuguese Medal of Merit, 1st Class. In 1978 he has been made Grand Officer of the Order of Merit of the Republic of Italy.





SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN SUMARIO



Rapporto sull'Iraq, di Giuseppe Cucchi (p. 2).

L'Iraq è una terra meravigliosa e ricca di risorse, con un popolo che è l'erede naturale delle più antiche civiltà del passato. La terra che da poco tempo ospita i nostri soldati, inquadrati in una coalizione multinazionale, è ancora travagliata da problematiche interne che potrebbero rallentare la rapida affermazione della democrazia. Cosa che tutti, invece, auspicano proceda parallelamente al miglioramento della situazione economica e delle condizioni di vita.

La strategia e le sue più recenti linee evolutive, di Ferruccio Botti (p. 16).

Per i conflitti non vengono più mobilitate le masse, bensì specialisti da impiegare generalmente in Teatri Operativi lontani. «La Strategia consiste nella concezione e pianificazione delle grandi linee dell'uso

della forza, per raggiungere i fini della politica in una situazione di contrasto. Comporta scelte tra diverse opzioni e l'indicazione delle priorità». Chissà se sarà questa la definizione destinata ad affermarsi.

Reclutamento d'avanguardia, di Angelo Lunardo (p. 28).

L'Ispettorato costituisce Area di Vertice della Forza Armata. È preposto, tra l'altro, ai settori Leva, Reclutamento e Forze di Completamento. Gestisce rapporti con i media e con la società, svolge tutte le attività legali riferite all'impiego del personale, senza tralasciare quelle logistiche, infrastrutturali e addestrative dei militari in afflusso ai Reggimenti reclute. Le sue competenze si estendono, inoltre, al campo della sicurezza su tutte le aree d'impiego, fatte salve quelle operative. Con la consapevolezza che, quella umana, è la risorsa più preziosa.

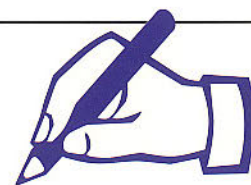
Il Diritto Umanitario è un bene per tutte le società, di Arturo Marcheggiano (p. 40).

Le Convenzioni internazionali hanno una

tale importanza per gli Stati firmatari che alcune clausole specifiche trattano proprio le modalità di diffusione all'interno delle Nazioni. Per ragioni professionali, i militari da tempo ne conoscono l'importanza per via di intensi e consolidati programmi d'insegnamento, a premessa dell'impiego nelle missioni fuori area. Tali principi però, per la loro valenza formativa, meritano la massima diffusione in ogni settore sociale, in quanto aiutano a comprendere meglio i valori umani di tolleranza e di solidarietà.

Laghi bollenti, di Serena Sartini (p. 50).

I Paesi dell'Europa si stanno prodigando per dare una speranza concreta a territori che da lungo tempo sono teatro di genocidi per le vendette tribali. Il Consiglio dell'Unione Europea ha approvato, infatti, l'invio di una missione militare temporanea in Congo alla quale hanno aderito Francia, Gran Bretagna, Belgio, Svezia e Italia. Per Congo, Ruanda e Burundi riaffiora la speranza di un



futuro migliore. Il malessere, però, affonda le sue radici nel tempo e anche in avvenimenti quasi dimenticati in Occidente.

Investimenti e obiettivi dell'Esercito, di Salvatore Farina (p. 62).

Accurati studi di pianificazione hanno consentito di prefigurare l'evoluzione dell'Esercito Italiano anche in una prospettiva di lungo termine, vale a dire fino al 2025. Questo è stato possibile dopo aver determinato tre elementi chiave: completamento delle capacità per pacchetti di forze attagliati alle missioni; ammodernamento graduale e bilanciato delle forze; peso programmatico degli obiettivi il più possibile paritetico per tutte le Forze Armate.

L'inizio del secondo Risorgimento, di Luigi Poli e Giorgio Donati (p. 69).

Fu con il sacrificio di tanti militari, che maturò la rinascita delle nuove Forze Armate. Tutta l'Italia seppe così riconquistarsi la propria dignità lottando,

strenuamente, a fianco degli alleati, contro le forze di occupazione.

Riviviamo quei giorni di dolore e di gloria, di sacrifici e di speranze, direttamente dai racconti di due veterani che vi parteciparono da protagonisti.



Report on Iraq, by Giuseppe Cucchi (p. 2).

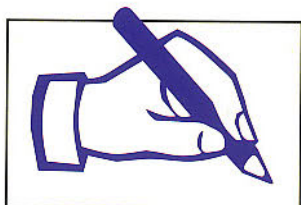
Iraq is a wonderful land, full of resources, with a population who are a natural heir of the most ancient past civilizations. The land which for some time has hosted our soldiers, organized within a multinational coalition, is still suffering from domestic problems which may slow down a speedy achievement of democracy. A thing which, on the contrary, everyone is hoping may be carried on together with the improvement of the economic situation and life conditions.

Strategy and Its Most Recent Developments, by Ferruccio Botti (p. 16).

Masses aren't mobilized for conflicts any more, but rather specialists who are generally employed in far-off operational theatres. «Strategy consists in conception and planning of the great lines of the use of force, to reach the aims of politics in a situation of contrast. It implies the choice among various options and the indication of priorities». May be this is the definition which will take root.

A Very Advanced Recruitment, by Angelo Lunardo (p. 28).

The Inspectorate is the Leadership Area of the Armed Force. Among other things, it is in charge of the Conscription, Recruitment and Completion Forces sectors. It manages relations with the media and society, carries out all legal activities related to staff employment without leaving aside logistical, infrastructural and training activities of soldiers going to Recruit Regiments. Its province reaches out to the security field in every employment



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN SUMARIO

area, except the operational ones. Bearing always in mind that the human resource is the most precious one.

Humanitarian Law: An Asset for All Societies, by Arturo Marcheggiano (p. 40).

International conventions are so important for the signatory States that some clauses specifically provide for the way of diffusion within the nations. For professional reasons, for some time the military have known their importance due to intense and consolidated teaching plans which are preparatory for the employment in out-of-area missions. However, these principles deserve the largest diffusion in every social sector for their formative importance, in so far as they help to better understand the human values of tolerance and solidarity.

Red-hot Lakes, by Serena Sarti (p. 50).

European Countries have been doing their best to give a concrete hope to territories which have been theatres of genocides due to tribal revenges for a long time. In

fact, the European Union Council has agreed to send a temporary peace mission to Congo. France, Great Britain, Belgium, Sweden and Italy have joined to the mission. For Congo, Rwanda and Burundi the hope for a better future comes back. However, this uneasiness plants its roots in time and in events almost forgotten in the West.

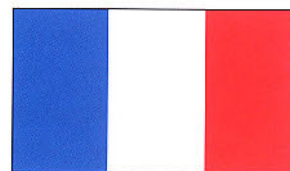
Investments and Objectives of the Army, by Salvatore Farina (p. 62).

Precise planning studies have allowed to prefigure the Army evolution also on a long term perspective, i.e. till 2025. This was made possible after having detected three key elements: completion of capabilities for force packages suited to missions; gradual and balanced updating of forces; planned weight of purposes on a scale as equal as possible for each Armed Force.

The Dawn of the Second "Risorgimento", by Luigi Poli and Giorgio Donati (p. 69).

It was with the sacrifice of many soldiers that the

revival of the new Armed Forces came into force. This way, the whole of Italy could regain its dignity fighting valiantly at the Allied's side against the occupation forces. Let us re-live those days of sorrow and glory, of sacrifice and hope, directly from the recounts of two veterans who took part in them as protagonists.



Rapport sur l'Iraq, par Giuseppe Cucchi (p. 2).

L'Iraq est un pays merveilleux et riche en ressources, dont le peuple est l'héritier naturel de l'une des plus anciennes civilisations de l'histoire. Cette terre qui depuis peu accueille nos soldats, dans le cadre d'une coalition multinationale, est encore tourmentée par suite des tensions internes qui pourraient mettre en danger le processus de démocratisation, lequel, par ailleurs, comme tout le



monde le souhaite, devrait aller de pair avec l'amélioration de la situation économique et des conditions de vie du pays.

La stratégie et son évolution récente, par Ferruccio Botti (p. 16).

Lors d'un conflit il n'est plus question maintenant de mobiliser les masses: on fait appel à des spécialistes qui sont généralement employés dans les théâtres opérationnels éloignés.

«La Stratégie consiste dans la conception et dans la planification, dans les grandes lignes, de l'emploi de la force pour atteindre les objectifs de la politique dans une situation de conflit. Elle implique le choix entre différentes options et la définition des priorités».

Cette définition est-elle destinée à s'affirmer?

Recrutement d'avant-garde, par Angelo Lunardo (p. 28).

L'Inspection est une Section au sommet des Forces armées. Elle est chargée, entre autres, des secteurs Recrutement, Conscription et Forces de réserve. Elle

gère également les rapports avec les médias et avec la société et assure toutes les activités juridiques en matière d'emploi du personnel, ainsi que les activités liées à la logistique, aux infrastructures et à l'entraînement des militaires arrivant aux Régiments des recrues. Ses compétences s'étendent également au domaine de la sécurité dans toutes les zones d'emploi, exception faite des zones opérationnelles. L'homme demeurant toujours la ressource la plus précieuse.

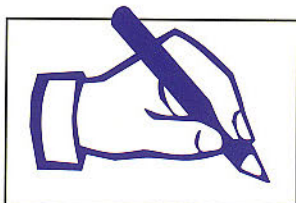
Le Droit humanitaire: un bien pour toutes les sociétés, par Arturo Marcheggiano (p. 40).

Les Conventions internationales revêtent une importance primordiale pour les Etats signataires, au point que des clauses spécifiques en fixent les modalités de diffusion au sein des Nations. Aussi, pour des raisons professionnelles, avant leur emploi dans le cadre de missions hors zone, les militaires, qui n'ignorent point leur

importance, suivent-ils des programmes d'instruction intenses et consolidés. Les principes énoncés dans ces conventions, de par leur valeur formative, méritent d'être diffusés à tous les niveaux de la société, d'autant qu'ils aident à mieux comprendre les valeurs humaines de la tolérance et de la solidarité.

Lacs en effervescence, par Serena Sartinì (p. 50).

Les pays de l'Europe s'emploient actuellement à donner un espoir concret à ces territoires qui depuis des années sont le théâtre de génocides perpétrés au nom de vengeances tribales. Le Conseil de l'Union européenne a en effet approuvé l'envoi d'une mission militaire temporaire au Congo, à laquelle prennent part la France, la Grande Bretagne, la Belgique, la Suède et l'Italie. Aussi, le Congo, le Rwanda et le Burundi recouvrent-ils l'espoir d'un avenir plus prometteur. Il n'en reste pas moins que le malaise a ses racines profondes dans les événements d'un passé lointain que l'Occident a quasiment oublié.



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN SUMARIO

Investissements et objectifs de l'Armée, par Salvatore Farina (p. 62).

Des études approfondies en matière de planification ont permis de prévoir l'évolution de l'Armée italienne à long terme, soit jusqu'à l'année 2025. Ceci a été rendu possible grâce à trois facteurs déterminants: complètement des capacités des forces selon les différentes missions; modernisation progressive et équilibrée des forces; répartition des objectifs selon une programmation aussi paritaire que possible entre toutes les Forces armées.

Le début du deuxième Risorgimento, par Luigi Poli et Giorgio Donati (p. 69).

La renaissance des nouvelles Forces armées a eu lieu à la suite du sacrifice de nombreux militaires. Ainsi, l'Italie a su reconquérir sa dignité en luttant courageusement aux côtés des alliés contre les forces d'occupation.

Ces journées de douleur et de gloire, de sacrifice et d'espoir sont racontées directement par deux vétérans qui vécurent cette expérience sur leur propre chair.



Bericht ueber den Irak, von Giuseppe Cucchi (S. 2).

Irak ist ein wunderschönes Land, reich an Ressourcen und mit einem Volk, das der leibliche Erbe einer der ältesten Kulturen der Vergangenheit ist. Das Land, das seit kurzem unsere in einer multinationalen Koalition eingegliederten Soldaten beherbergt, ist noch von internen Problemen geschuettelt, die eine schnelle Erzielung der Demokratie verlangsamen koennten. Was alle, jedoch wuenschen, ist, dass sie parallel mit der Verbesserung der Wirtschaftssituation und der Lebensverhaeltnisse laeuft.

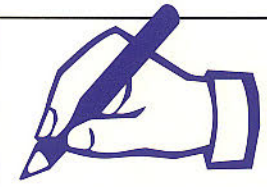
Die Strategie und ihre neuesten Evolutionslinien, von Ferruccio Botti (S. 16).

Bei Konflikten werden nicht mehr die Massen, sondern die Spezialisten mobilisiert, insbesondere jene, die in

entfernten Operationsgebieten eingesetzt werden. «Die Strategie besteht in der Konzeption und Planung der groben Einsatzrichtlinien der Streitkraefte, mit der Absicht, politische Ziele in einer Konfliktsituation zu erreichen. Dies setzt die Wahl zwischen verschiedenen Optionen ebenso voraus, sowie die Indikation der Prioritaeten». Wer weiss, ob diese Definition jene ist, die sich am Ende als die Richtige erweist.

Avantgardistische Rekrutierung, von Angelo Lunardo (S. 28).

Die militaerische Aufsichtsbehoerde stellt ein Oberamt der Streitkraefte dar. Sie ist fuer die Gebiete der Einberufung, der Rekrutierung und der Ergaenzungseinheiten zustaaendig. Sie unterhaelt Beziehungen mit den Medien, leistet Oeffentlichkeitsarbeit und uebernimmt alle rechtlichen Angelegenheiten, die mit dem Einsatz des Personals zu tun haben, ohne Logistik, Infrastruktur und



Ausbildung der Rekrutenregimente auszulassen. Ihre Kompetenzen erstrecken sich, ausserdem, bis zum Sicherheitsbereich auf alle Anwendungsgebieten, zusaetzlich zu den operativen. Mit dem Bewusstsein, dass der menschliche Reichtum der wertvollste ist.

Das Menschenrecht ist ein Wohl fuer die Gesellschaft, von Arturo Marcheggiano (S. 40).

Die internationalen Abkommen haben solch grosse Bedeutung fuer die Signatarstaaten, dass sich einige spezifische Klauseln gezielt mit der Verbreitung innerhalb der Nationen auseinandersetzen. Aus dienstlichen Gruenden kennt das Militaerpersonal seit langer Zeit ihre Wichtigkeit, dank intensiver und gefestigter Ausbildungsprogramme, die eine der Voraussetzungen fuer Einsaetze bei Missionen ausserhalb des eigenen Territoriums sind. Diese Prinzipien verdienen es in jeder Gesellschaftsschicht bekannt gemacht werden, da sie wichtige menschliche Werte wie Toleranz und

Solidaritaet besser verstehen helfen.

Heisse Gebiete, von Serena Sartini (S. 50).

Die europaeischen Laender setzen sich ein, um jenen Territorien, die seit langer Zeit Schauplatz von Voelkermorden und Racheakten sind, eine konkrete Hoffnung zu geben. Aus diesem Grund hat der europaeische Rat die Entsendung einer befristeten militaerischen Mission in den Kongo beschlossen, an der sich Frankreich, Grossbritannien, Belgien, Schweden und Italien beteiligen werden. Fuer den Kongo, Ruanda und Burundi bietet sich dadurch die Chance auf eine bessere Zukunft. Die Unruhe dieser Laender hat aber ihre Wurzeln in der Vergangenheit und in Begebenheiten, die in der westlichen Welt im Laufe der Zeit fast voellig vergessen worden sind.

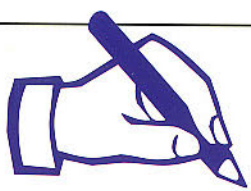
Investitionen und Ziele des Heeres, von Salvatore Farina (S. 62).

Sorgfaeltige Planungsforschungen haben gestattet, die Entwicklung der italienischen

Streitkraefte in einer langfristigen Perspektive und zwar bis 2025 vor auszuplanen. Dies war moeglich nach Festlegung von drei Schlusselelementen: Vervollstaendigung der Faehigkeiten fuer missionsangepasste Einheiten; stufenweise und ausgewogene Modernisierung der Kraefte; gleichwertige Gewichtsverteilung der programmierten Zielsetzung fuer die gesamten Streitkraefte.

Der Anfang des zweiten Risorgimento's, von Luigi Poli und Giorgio Donati (S. 69).

Es war das Opfer von vielen Soldaten, dass die Wiedergeburt der neuen Streitkraefte reifen liess. Ganz Italien konnte damit seine eigene Wuerde wieder zurueckgewinnen, an der Seite der Alliierten, gegen die Besatzungsarmee kaempfend. Wir erleben noch einmal jene Tage von Leiden und Ruhm, Opfer und Hoffnungen durch die Erzaehlungen von zwei Veteranen, die in erster Linie daran teilgenommen haben.



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN SUMARIO



Informe sobre Iraq, por Giuseppe Cucchi (pág. 2).

Iraq es una tierra maravillosa, rica de recursos y cuyo pueblo es el heredero natural de una de las civilizaciones más antiguas de la historia. La tierra que desde hace poco acoge a nuestros soldados, en el marco de una coalición multinacional, sigue estando atormentada por tensiones internas que hacen peligrar la rápida implementación del proceso de democratización al que todos deseamos que se asocie la mejora de la situación económica y de las condiciones de vida el país.

La estrategia y sus líneas evolutivas más recientes, por Ferruccio Botti (pág. 16).

Para encarar un conflicto ya no se movilizan las masas sino especialistas que se habrán de emplear por lo

general en Teatros operativos lejanos. «La estrategia consiste en concebir y planificar, en las grandes líneas, el empleo de la fuerza para alcanzar los objetivos de la política en una situación de conflicto». ¿Es ésta la definición destinada a confirmarse?

Reclutamiento de vanguardia, por Angelo Lunardo (pág. 28).

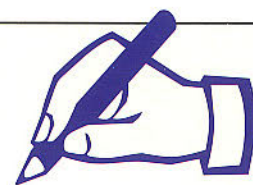
La Inspección representa una sección en la cumbre de las Fuerza armadas. Se hace cargo, entre otras cosas, de los sectores Reclutamiento, Alistamiento y Fuerzas de reserva. Asimismo se ocupa de las relaciones con los medios de comunicación y con la sociedad, desempeña todas la actividades jurídicas relacionadas con el empleo del personal, así como aquellas concernientes la logística, las infraestructuras y la instrucción de los militares que llagan a los Regimientos de reclutas. Sus competencias también se extienden al ámbito de la seguridad en las zonas de empleo, con excepción de las operativas. Siendo en absoluto el hombre el recurso más importante.

El Derecho humanitario: un bien para todas las sociedades, Por Arturo Marcheggiano (pág. 40).

Las Convenciones internacionales cobraron tanta importancia que algunas cláusulas específicas fijan las formalidades de su aplicación y difusión en las Naciones. Por motivos profesionales, y conscientes de su importancia, los militares siguen intensos programas de instrucción previamente a su empleo en misiones fuera de zona. Sin embargo, debido a su valor formativo, los principios enunciados en dichas convenciones, merecen ser difundidos en todos los sectores sociales puesto que ayudan a comprender mejor los valores humanos de tolerancia y de solidaridad.

Lagos en efervescencia, por Serena Sartini (pág. 50).

Los países de Europa se están esforzando por darle una esperanza concreta a aquellos territorios que se convirtieron en teatro de genocidios perpetrados a raíz de venganzas tribales



añejas. El Consejo de la Unión europea aprobó el envío de una misión militar temporaria a Congo, a la que se adhirieron Francia, Gran Bretaña, Suecia e Italia. Así es como Congo, Ruanda, y Burundi vislumbran ahora la esperanza de un porvenir más halagüeño. Sin embargo, el desasosiego radica en acontecimientos lejanos de los que Occidente ya no se acuerda.

Inversiones y objetivos del Ejército, **por Salvatore Farina** **(pág. 62).**

Estudios profundizados en materia de planificación hicieron posible prever la evolución del Ejército italiano a largo plazo, o sea hasta el año 2025. Lo cual fue posible tras determinar tras factores clave: integración de las capacidades de las fuerzas con arreglo a las distintas misiones; modernización progresiva y equilibrada de las fuerzas; repartición de los objetivos según una programación lo más paritaria posible entre todas las Fuerzas armadas.

El principio del segundo Risorgimento, **por Luigi Poli** **y Giorgio Donati (pág. 69).**

Las nuevas fuerzas armadas renacieron a raíz del sacrificio de muchos militares. Así es como toda Italia supo reconquistar su propia dignidad luchando valerosamente con los aliados contra las fuerza de ocupación. Cada día de dolor y de gloria, de sacrificio y de esperanza nos lo cuentan directamente dos veteranos que protagonizaron esta experiencia.



Relatório sobre o Iraque, **de Giuseppe Cucchi (p. 2).**

O Iraque é uma terra maravilhosa e rica de recursos, com um povo que é o herdeiro natural das mais antigas civilizações do passado. A terra que desde há pouco tempo hospeda os nossos soldados, enquadrados numa coligação multinacional, é

ainda atormentada por problemáticas internas que podem vir a atrasar a rápida afirmação da democracia. Coisa que todos, porém, esperam que proceda paralelamente à melhoria da situação económica e das condições de vida.

A estratégia e as suas mais recentes linhas evolutivas, **de Ferruccio Botti (p. 16).**

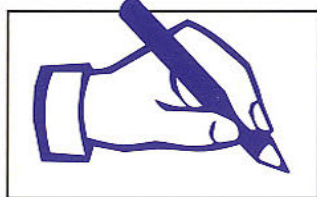
Para os conflitos já não vêm mobilizadas as massas, mas sim especialistas a empregar geralmente em Teatros Operativos distantes.

«A Estratégia consiste na concepção e planificação das grandes linhas do uso de força, para atingir os fins da política numa situação de conflito. Comporta escolhas entre diversas opções e a indicação das prioridades».

Quem sabe se será esta a definição destinada a afirmar-se.

Recrutamento de vanguarda, **de Angelo Lunardo (p. 28).**

A Inspeção constitui a Área de Vértice da Força Armada. Ocupa-se, para além disso, dos sectores de



SOMMARIO SUMMARY SOMMAIRE INHALT RESUMEN SUMARIO

Recrutamento e Forças de Completamento. Gere relações com os media e com a sociedade, desempenha todas as actividades legais referentes ao emprego do pessoal, sem descuidar aquelas logísticas, infraestruturais, e adestrativas dos militares em afluxo aos Regimentos de recrutas. As suas competências estendem-se, para além disso, ao campo da segurança em todas as áreas de emprego, salvo aquelas operativas. Com a consciência que, aquele humano, é o recurso mais precioso.

O Direito Humanitário é um bem para todas as sociedades, de Arturo Marcheggiano (p. 40).

As Convenções internacionais têm uma tal importância para os Estados signatários que algumas cláusulas específicas tratam mesmo as modalidades de difusão ao interno das Nações. Por razões profissionais, há já algum tempo que os militares lhe reconhecem a importância por meio de intensos e consolidados programas de ensino, que antecedem o

emprego dos mesmos nas missões fora de área. Tais princípios, porém, para o seu valor formativo, merecem a máxima difusão em cada sector social, enquanto ajudam a compreender melhor os valores humanos de tolerância e de solidariedade.

Lagos escaldantes, de Serena Sartini (p. 50).

Os países da Europa estão a prodigar para dar uma esperança concreta a territórios que há muito tempo são teatro de genocídios para as vinganças tribais. O Conselho da União Europeia aprovou, de facto, o envio de uma missão militar temporária ao Congo à qual aderiram a França, a Grã-Bretanha, a Bélgica, a Suécia e a Itália. Para o Congo, Ruanda e Burundi reemerge a esperança de um futuro melhor. A inquietação, porém, afunda as suas raízes no tempo e também em eventos quase esquecidos no Ocidente.

Investimentos e objectivos do Exército, de Salvatore Farina (p. 62).

Estudos acurados de

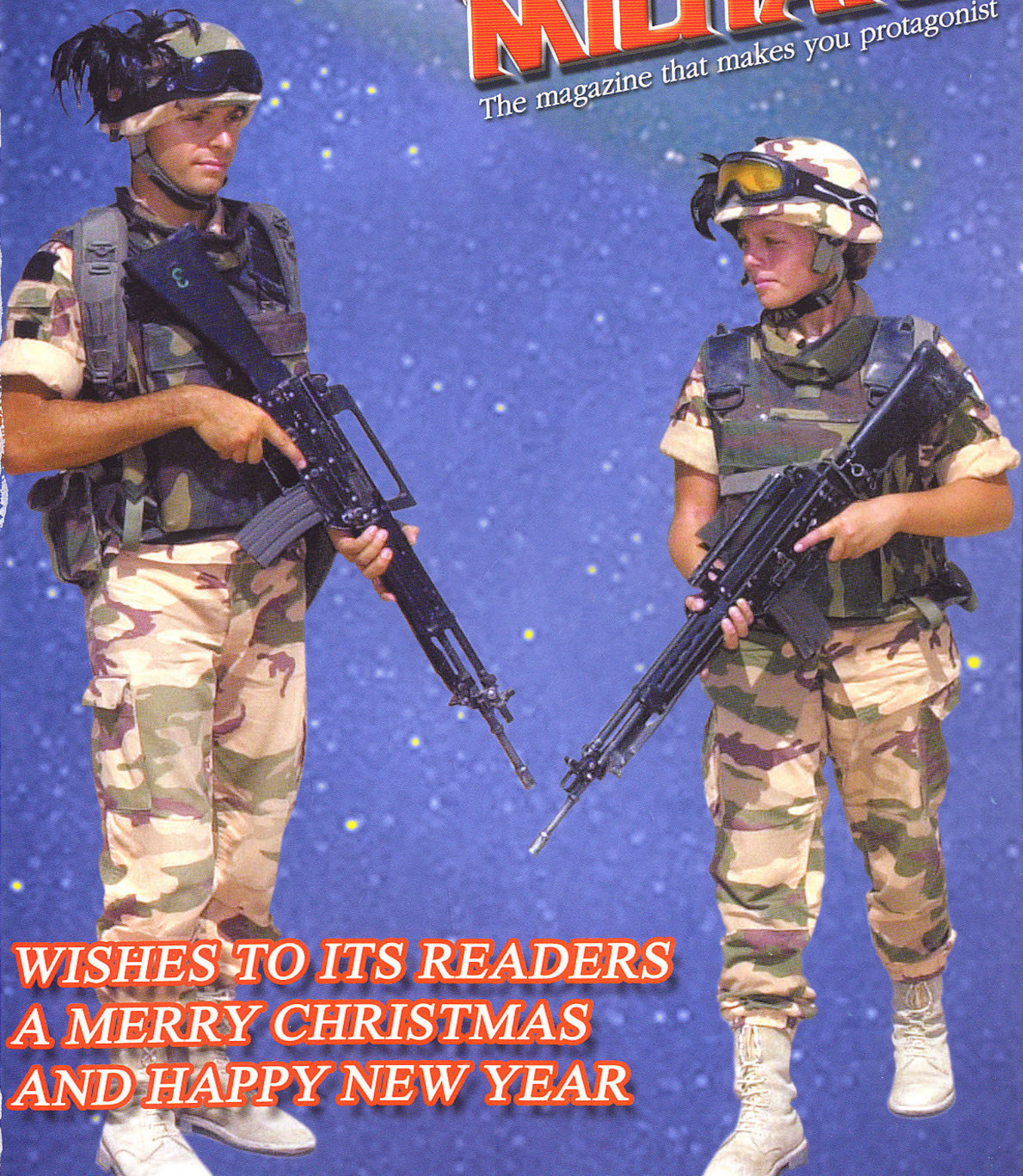
planificação consentiram de pressupor a evolução do Exército Italiano mesmo numa perspectiva a longo prazo, ou seja, até 2025. Isto foi possível após ter determinado três elementos chave: completamento das capacidades para pacotes de forças adaptados às missões; modernização gradual e balanceada das forças; peso programático dos objectivos o mais paritário possível para todas as Forças Armadas.

O início do segundo Risorgimento, de Luigi Poli e Giorgio Donati (p. 69).

Foi com o sacrifício de tantos militares que amadureceu o renascimento das novas Forças Armadas. Toda a Itália soube assim reconquistar a própria dignidade lutando, vigorosamente ao lado dos aliados, contra as forças de ocupação. Revivemos aqueles dias de dor e de glória, de sacrifícios e de esperanças, directamente nos relatos de dois veteranos que neles participaram como protagonistas.

RIVISTA MILITARE

The magazine that makes you protagonist



**WISHES TO ITS READERS
A MERRY CHRISTMAS
AND HAPPY NEW YEAR**

RIVISTA MILITARE

JOURNAL OF THE ITALIAN ARMY FOUNDED IN 1856

